



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

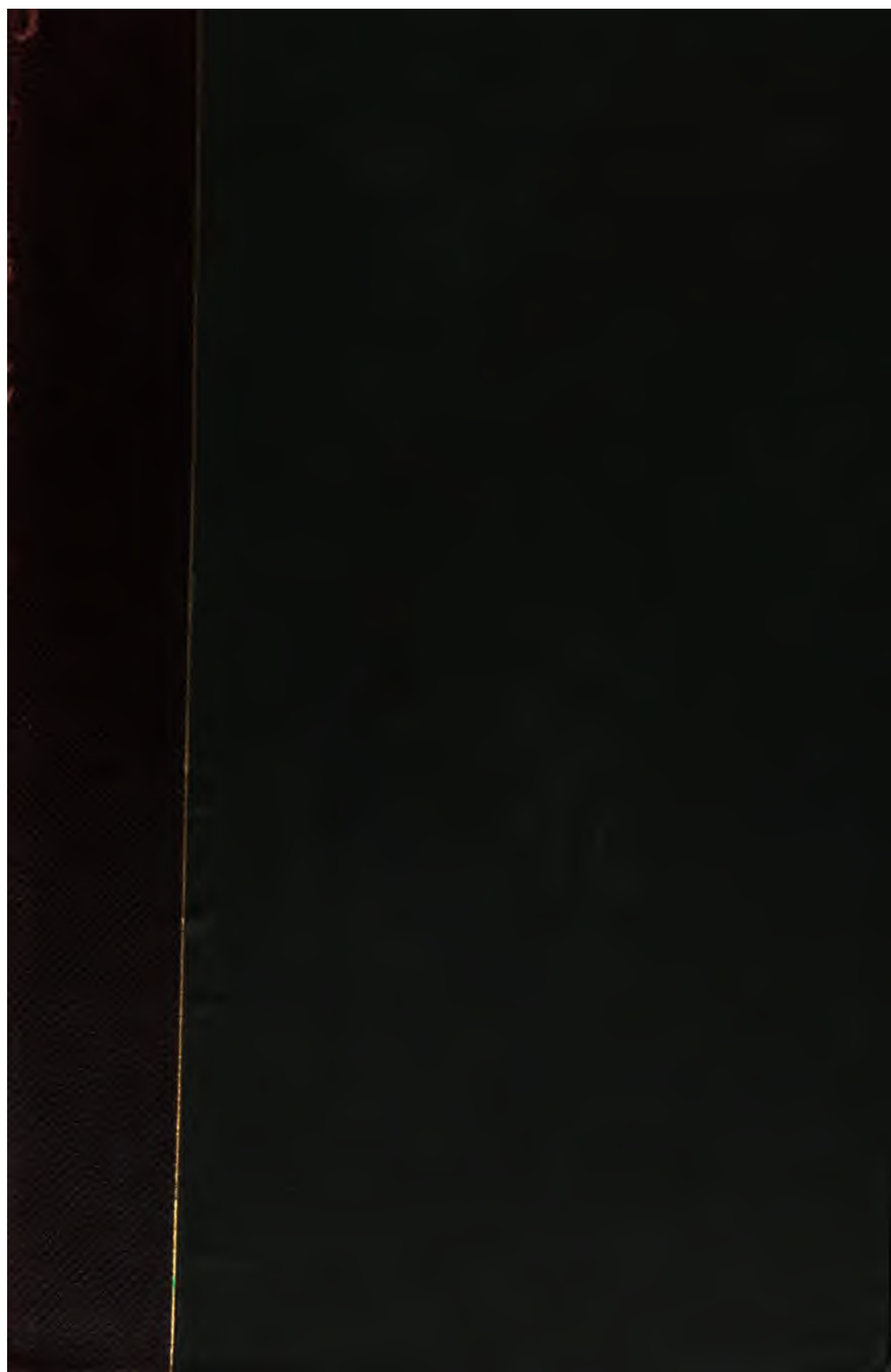
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



820.6

S431h



LELAND STANFORD JUNIOR UNIVERSITY









.

,

The Scottish Text Society

THE BRUCE

BY

MASTER JOHN BARBOUR



# THE BRUCE

OR

THE BOOK OF THE MOST EXCELLENT AND NOBLE PRINCE  
ROBERT DE BROYSS, KING OF SCOTS

COMPILED BY

MASTER JOHN BARBOUR

ARCHDEACON OF ABERDEEN, A.D. 1375

EDITED FROM MS. G. 23 IN THE LIBRARY OF ST JOHN'S COLLEGE  
CAMBRIDGE, WRITTEN A.D. 1487; COLLATED WITH THE MS. IN THE  
ADVOCATES' LIBRARY AT EDINBURGH, WRITTEN A.D. 1489  
AND WITH HART'S EDITION, PRINTED A.D. 1616

WITH A

*PREFACE, NOTES, AND GLOSSARIAL INDEX*

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, LL.D., Litt.D., Ph.D., M.A.

ELRINGTON AND BOSWORTH PROFESSOR OF ANGLO-SAXON, AND  
FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

VOLUME II.

*CONTAINING BOOKS XIV. TO XX., NOTES, AND GLOSSARY*

Printed for the Society by

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS

EDINBURGH AND LONDON

MDCCCXCIV



## CONTENTS OF VOLUME II.

---

### THE BRUCE.

- BOOK XIV. (A.D. 1315).** Sir Edward Bruce sets out for Ireland, which he hopes to conquer. The Scotch defeat the Irish, and retire to Carrickfergus. A truce is made. Two Irish chieftains vainly attempt to stop the advance of the Scotch, who advance to Dundalk. Sir Richard Clare says the Scotch are not enough to afford them half a dinner. Second battle between the Scotch and Irish. The Scotch prevail, occupy Dundalk for three days, and advance to Kilross. Third battle between the Scotch and Irish; the latter flee in disorder. The Scotch advance to meet O'Dymsey, an Irish king, who meditates treachery. The Scotch encamp in a low place, which O'Dymsey causes to be flooded, and so gives them plenty of water to drink. Thomas of Down, with four ships, rescues the Scotch army. Murray defeats an Irish host by a stratagem, and captures some scouts. The Irish are five to one, but the Scotch defy them. (554 lines.) . . . . .
- BOOK XV. (A.D. 1316, 1315).** Sir Philip de Mowbray, who has joined Sir Edward Bruce, gives good advice, which is adopted. The Scotch take the town of Connor. A short truce. Sir Mandeville endeavours to surprise the Scotch, who are warned by Neil Fleming. Sir Edward Bruce slays Sir Mandeville, and the Irish are defeated. He mourns for the death of Neil Fleming. King Robert goes with a host and a fleet to the Tarbert, where he draws the ships overland for a mile, and takes and imprisons John of Lorn. Sir Eumond de Calion issues from Berwick, and harries Teviotdale. Douglas attacks the English at great peril, but defeats them. Sir Eumond is slain. Sir Robert Neville, then in Berwick, challenges Douglas, who advances to-

PAGE

I



wards that town. Severe battle, in which Douglas slays Neville with his own hand. Douglas takes great spoil. The English dread him as the devil, and English nurses frighten children by saying that they will give them to the Black Douglas. (576 lines; 550 lines in P.) . . .

24

BOOK XVI. (A.D. 1316, 1317). Murray returns to Scotland. King Robert passes over to Ireland to help his brother. Description of May. Sir Richard Clare lays an ambush for Sir Edward Bruce. King Robert perceives that there is some stratagem, and knocks down Sir Colin Campbell for being too eager to advance. Severe battle, in which the Scotch are but one against eight; but they are at last victorious. Sir Richard Clare retreats to Dublin. Great depression of the English. The Scotch advance to the southernmost town in Ireland (apparently Limerick is meant). The king hears that a poor laundress, attached to the camp, is in labour. He halts his army, and prepares a tent for her. Nearly all Ireland submits to Sir Edward. An English earl, hearing that King Robert and Murray have gone to Ireland, proposes to attack Douglas, and advances to Jedwood forest, where he is surprised by Douglas and slain. Douglas defeats and slays clerk Ellis, who had a cruel *entremet* at his dinner. Accounts of three feats of arms, each performed by fifty men. Some English land at Inverkeithing, but are repulsed by Sir William Sinclair, and retreat to their ships. King Robert and Murray return to Scotland. (700 lines; 694 lines in P.) . . .

48

BOOK XVII. (A.D. 1318, 1319). Sim of Spalding tells the Scotch how they may take Berwick. Douglas and Murray adopt the plan with success, and occupy the town. King Robert comes up, and takes the castle, which he provides with a strong garrison, and delivers to Sir Walter Stewart. The Scotch are assisted by John Crab, a Flemish engineer, who provides war-engines; but the Scotch have no cannon. King Edward II. hears of the loss of Berwick, and prepares to retake it. The English arrive on Sept. 7, 1319. The town is attacked at all points. One of the English ships is burnt. A five days' truce. King Robert hopes to divert the English from the siege by making raids into England as far as Yorkshire. Battle between the Scotch and English, in which the latter are defeated. "The Chapter of Mitton." At Berwick, the besiegers make an engine called a "sow." John Crab makes a "crane," and attempts to burn the "sow." On Sept. 13, 1319, the English attack

Berwick again. The "sow" is crushed by a missile, and the men inside it rush out. Thus the sow "farrows"; and is afterwards burnt. Great distress of the besieged. Stewart makes a sally, and the English retreat. The English hear of the defeat at Mitton, and are discouraged. The Earl of Lancaster retreats without leave, for which he was beheaded at Pomfret. King Edward retreats from Berwick, and King Robert from Yorkshire; the hosts avoiding each other. King Robert goes to Berwick, and praises Stewart for his defence of it. (950 lines; 946 lines in P.) . . . . .

77

BOOK XVIII. (A.D. 1318; 1322). Sir Edward Bruce rashly resolves to attack a superior force under Sir Richard Clare. His Irish allies withdraw. Sir Edward's armour is worn by Gib Harper. Sir Edward Bruce, Sir John Stewart, and Sir John de Soulis, are all slain. John Thomasson, leader of the men of Carrick, takes refuge with an Irish king, and helps Sir Philip Mowbray to escape to Carrickfergus. Gib Harper's head is sent to England, in the belief that it is that of Sir Edward Bruce. The Scotch retreat to Carrickfergus, and finally to Scotland. Edward II. invades Scotland again, and reaches Edinburgh. They send out foragers, who find only one cow. Earl Warren says it is very dear beef. The English retreat, are surprised by Douglas, and flee. King Robert pursues the English to Byland, where they occupy a hill. Advance of the Scotch and defeat of the English. Sir John Breton and two French knights are taken prisoners. King Edward flees southwards, and the English are chased as far as York. Sir John Breton is ransomed, but the two French knights are set free without ransom. Great rejoicing of the Scotch, who take much spoil. (569 lines; 568 lines in P.) . . . . .

115

BOOK XIX. (A.D. 1320-1327). De Soulis conspires against King Robert, but is captured at Berwick, and confesses all; he is imprisoned in Dumbarton castle, where he dies. Sir David Brechin is hung. Sir Ingram Umfraville gives up his lands in Scotland, and goes to England. The Scotch propose a peace with England, which Sir Ingram recommends. A truce is agreed upon for 13 years. Death of Sir Walter Stewart. The truce is declared to be broken. Accession of king Edward III., who marches northwards. The armies meet in Weardale. The English prepare an ambush; but Douglas perceives the trick, and avoids it. Douglas encamps in a park. He surprises the English

camp, but is in great danger, from which he escapes. Murray consults with Douglas, who tells him the story of 'the fisherman and the fox,' and plans a retreat. At nightfall the Scotch lead their horses across a difficult bog, and make good their retreat. King Robert sends out a host to help Douglas, which meets him in his retreat, and they all return home joyfully. (816 lines; 812 lines in P.).	138
BOOK XX. (A.D. 1327-1332). King Robert harries Northumberland. Edward III. makes peace with him. Robert's son; David, is betrothed to Joan of the Tower, king Edward's sister. The English give up all claim to Scotland, on receipt of 20,000 pounds. The marriage of David and Joan is to take place at Berwick. King Robert falls ill at Cardross. David and Joan are crowned king and queen. King Robert's provisions for the succession. His testament. His disposal of his heart, which Douglas is to take to the Holy Land. Death of King Robert, and lamentation of the people. Sir Thomas Murray is appointed regent. Douglas takes Bruce's heart, and sets sail for the Holy Land. He lands at Seville. His reply to the Spanish knight who wondered at seeing no scars upon his face. The king of Belmarine invades Spain, and Douglas joins the Spaniards against the Saracens. Douglas takes out the case with Bruce's heart, throws it before him, fights his way up to it, and takes it up again. In attempting to rescue Sir William Sinclair, he is at last slain. His body is recovered, together with Bruce's heart. Praise of Douglas for loyalty. Story of Fabricius, who detested treason. Douglas is buried in Douglas church, and Bruce's heart is buried at Melross. Murray is poisoned. Thus died these great lords. (642 lines; 620 lines in P.)	171
HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.	201
'A DIETARY.' (By John Lydgate)	215
SCHEME OF EDITIONS OF 'THE BRUCE'	221
NOTES TO 'THE BRUCE'.	223
NOTES TO 'HOW THE GOOD WIFE,' &c.	296
NOTES TO 'A DIETARY'.	297
INDEX I.—SUBJECTS EXPLAINED IN THE NOTES.	298
INDEX II.—BOOKS REFERRED TO IN THE NOTES	305
INDEX III.—RIME-INDEX.	308
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO 'THE BRUCE'	319
INDEX V.—PROPER NAMES IN 'THE BRUCE'	411
INDEX VI.—GLOSSARY TO 'HOW THE GOOD WIFE,' &c.	421
INDEX VII.—NOTES ON JAMIESON'S DICTIONARY	427

# THE BRUCE.

## [BOOK XIV.]

How the erll of Carrik passit in Irland to vyn it,  
and vith him erll Thomas Randal & schir  
Phillip the Mowbray, schir Iohne Stewart,  
schir Iohne Sowlis, & Ramsay of Ouehtir-  
houss.

Sir Edward, Earl  
of Carrick, who  
was stouter than  
a leopard,

thought Scotland  
too small for  
himself and his  
brother.

He therefore  
treats with the  
Irishmen,  
who offer to  
elect him king,

THE erll of Carrik, schir Eduard,  
That stowtar wes than ane libbard,  
And had no will till be in peß,

Thought that Scotland to litill weß  
Till his brothir and him alsua ;  
Tharfor till purpoß can he ta  
That he of [Irland] wald be kyng.

Tharfor he send and had treteng  
With the Erischry of Irland,  
That in thar lawte tuk on hand  
Of Irland for to mak hym king,

5

10

RUBRIC *in* H — How sir Edward  
tooke on hand For to make weere  
into Ireland.

2. *anc*] a EH. *libbard*] Leopard  
H.  
3. *no*] na. *till*] to EH. *be in*] liue  
at H.

6. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.

VOL. II.

7. [*Irland* E] Ireland H ; yngland  
C.

9. *the*] E om. *erischry*] Irshry H ;  
hyrsery E.

10. *lawte*] leawte.

11. *Irland for*] all Irland E ; all  
Ireland H.

A

## 2 SIR EDWARD LANDS ON THE IRISH COAST. [BOOK XIV.]

if he will drive out the English.	With-thi that he with hard fechtung Micht ourcum the Yngliß men, That in the land war wonnand then ; And thai suld help with all thair mycht.	15
	And he, that herd thaime mak sic hicht, In-till his hert had gret liking ; And with the consent of the king, Gaderit hym men of gret bounte,	
Sir Edward gathers an army, and embarks at Ayr, in the month of May, 1315.	And at Air syne schippit he, In-till the next moneth of Maij ; Till Irland held he straucht his way.	20
	He had thair in his cumpany The erll Thomas that wes vorthy, And gud schir Philip the Mowbray,	25
He takes with him Earl Thomas [Fol. 47. E.] Randolph, Sir Philip Mowbray, [Fol. 106. C.]	That sekir wes in herd assay ; Schir Iohne the Sowlis, a gude knycht ; And schir Iohne Steward, that wes wicht ; The Ramsay als of Ouchtirhouß,	
Sir John de Soulis, Sir John Steward, Ram- say of Ouchtir- house,	That wes richt wicht and cheuelrouß ;	30
and Sir Fergus of Ardrossan.	And schir Fergus de Ardrossaie, And othir knychtis mony aie.	
They arrive safely,	In Vaveryng [Fyrth] arivit thai Sauflly, but bargane or assay,	
and send their ships home.	And send thair schippis home ilkaie. A gret thing haue thai vndertaie,	35

14. *the*] that H. *wonnand*] winning  
H.

17. *In-till*] Into H. *had*] he had  
H.

20. And syne at Air shipped he H.

21. *In-till*] Into H. *next*] neyst  
E; neist H. *mai*] mai E; May H.

23. *He*] And H. *thair*] there H;  
than E.

25. *gud*] E om.

26. *wes*] wes ay C; *but* EH *omit*  
ay.

27. *the sowlis*] the soullis E; Sow-  
les H. *a*] ane. *a—knycht*] that was  
wicht H.

28. *that—wicht*] a good Knight H.

30. *richt wicht*] wicht E; right  
wise H.

31. *de*] off E; of H.

33. *vaveryng*] wokingis E; Wo-  
lyngs H. [*fyrth* E] Firth H; furth  
C.

35. *send*] sent H.

	That with [sa] quheyne as thai war thar, That wes sex thousand men but mar, Schupe for to warray all Irland, Quhar thai sall se mony thousand Cum armyt on thame for to ficht. Bot thouch thai quheyne var, thai var vicht, And, for-outen dreid or effray,	40
They are but 6000 in all, to attack all Ire- land.	In twa battelis thai tuk the way Toward Cragfergus, it to se.	45
They come to Carrickfergus.	Bot the lordis of that cuntre, Mavndwell, Byset, and Logaë, Thar men assemblit euirilkaë ; De Sawagiß wes alsua thair.	
Mandevill and others oppose them,	And, quhen thai all assemblit war, Thai war weill neir twenty thousand. Quhen thai wist that in-till thar land Sic a menzhe arivit war,	50
to the number of 20,000.	With all the folk that thai had thar, Thai went toward thame in gret hy.	55
The Irish advance to the attack.	And fra schir Eduard wist suthly That neir till him cumand war thai, Hiß men he gert richt weill aray. The vaward had the erll Thomas,	
Edward Bruce prepares for defence.		

- 
37. [sa EH] C om. quheyne] 49. De sawagiss] The sawagis E;  
quhoine E; wheene H. thar] H The Sauages H. wes] war. wes—  
om. thair] als was with them there H.  
38. wes] was H; war E. sex] seuen 50. all] E om.  
H. 52. Quhen] When that H. in-till]  
39. for] E om. in H.  
42. quheyne] quhone E; wheene H. 55. gret] H om.  
var] war E; were H (twice). 56. fra] when H. suthly] surely  
43. for-outen] for-owt E; without H.  
H. 57. till] to EH. neir—him] to  
44. thar] E om. him neere H.  
45. to] for to C; but EH omit for. 58. richt] thaim. he—weill] right  
47. Mavndwell] Mandweill E; well he gart H.  
Maudewile H. byset] besat E; Bis- 59. vaward] awaward E; Vanguard  
set H. H.  
48. assemblit] they sembled H.

	And in the rerward schir Eduard was.	60
A battle ensues.	Thar fais approchit to the fichting, And thai met thame but abaysing. Thar mycht men se a gret melle ;	
Earl Thomas and his men [Fol. 106 b. C.] soon slay 100.	For erll Thomas and his menȝhe Dang on thair fais sa douchtely, That in schort tym men mycht se ly	65
The wounded horses rear and kick.	Ane hundreth that all bludy war. For hobynis, that war stekit thar, Rerit and flang, and gret rowme maid, And kest thame that apon thame raid.	70
The Scotch prevail.	And schir Eduardis cumpany Assemblit syne so hardely, That thai thar fais ruschit all.	
Those who fall have small power to rise.	Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall, It was perell of his risyng. The Scottis men in that fechtig Swa apertly and weille thame bar, That thair fais swa ruschit war, That thai haly the flicht has taene.	75
The flower of Ulster perished there.	In that battale wes tane or slaene All hale the flour of Wllister. The erll of Murreff gret priß had ther ; For his [richt] worthy cheuelry Confortit all his cumpany.	80

60. *in*] E *om.* And—*rerward*] In the Reereward H.

61. *Here* H has the *rubric*—The first battell that Sir Edward, Wan in Ireland, with fechtig hard.

63. *gret*] full great H.

64. *For*] The H.

67. *hundreth*] hunder.

69. *Rerit*] Relyt E; Reilled H.

71. And—*Eduardis*] Sir Edward and his H.

72. *syne*] then H. *so*] sa.

73. *ruschit*] there rushed H.

75. *perell*] great perill H.

78. *thair*—*ruschit*] all their faes rushed H.

79. *That*] And H.

80. *In*] That in.

81. *flour*] flur. *wllister*] wlsyster E; Wollistar H.

82. *pris*] price E; prise H.

83. [*richt*] right H; CE *om.*

84. *Confortit*] Comforted H; Comfort E.

It was a good beginning.	That wes a full fair begynnyng ; For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng, In playne ficht thai discomfit thar	85
There foes were 4 for 1. They retreat to Carrickfergus,	Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war. Syne to Cragferguß ar thai gañe, And in the toune has innys tañe.	90
which is be- sieged.	The castell wele wes stuffit then Of-new with wittale and vith men ; Thar-till thai set añe sege in hy. Mony ysche full apertly Wes maid, quhill thar the sege lay,	95
A truce is made.	Quhill trewis at the last tuk thai. Quhen that the folk of Wllister Till his peß haly cummyn wer, For schir Eduard wald tak on hand Till ryde forthirmar in the land,	100
Some ten or twelve chieftains submit to Edward Bruce.	Thair come till hym and maid fewte Sum of the kyngis of that cuntre Weill ten or tuelf, as I herd say ; Bot thai held hym schort quhile thar fay.	
But two of them laid an ambush for him, [Fol. 107. C.]	For twa of thame, ane Makfulchiane, And ane othir, hat Makmartane, With-set añe place in-till his way, Quhar him behufit neyd away,	105

- 
85. *That*] This. 101, 102. *Transposed in EH. Sum*  
87. *ficht*] fegh (*sic*) H ; bataill E. And H ; E *om.* H *has the rubric*—  
88. *Thar fais*] Tha folke H. *ay* The withletting of the passe of End-  
*four*] iiij ay. nellane.  
91. *wel*] new H. 103. *I*] Ik.  
92. *Of-new*] Right well H. 104. *thar fay*] per fay H (*wrongly*).  
94. *Mony ysche*] And mony ishe H ; 105. *makfulchiane*] makgullane E ;  
Mony eschewe E. Makgoulchane H.  
95. *sege*] sege it C ; *but E omits it.* 106. *makmartane*] makartane E ;  
*thar—sege*] the Siege there H. Macarthane H.  
97. *wllister*] hulsyster E ; Wollistar 107. *With-set—place*] With-set a  
H. pase E ; Umbeset him H.  
99. *For*] Then H ; E *om.* 108. *behufit*] behowyt. *neyd away*]  
100. *Till*] To. *forthirmar*] farther- ned away E ; of need to ga H.  
mare H ; furth forthyr E.



with 2000 spear- men and 2000 archers,	With twa thousand of men with speris, And als mony of thair archeris ; And all the cattale of the land War drawin thidder to warrand. Men callis that place Endwillañe ;	110
in a very narrow pass.	In all Irland strater is nañe. For schir Eduard that kepit [thai] ; [Thai] thought he suld nocht thar away ; Bot he his viage soyne has tañe, And straucht toward the plaß is gañe.	115
The Earl of Murray forces his way through.	The erll of Murreff, schir Thomas, That put hym ay first till assayis, Lichtit on fut with his menȝhe, And apertly the plaß tuk he. The Erische kyngis I spak of ar,	120
[Fol. 47 <sup>b</sup> . E.]	With al the folk that with thame war, Met him richt sturdely ; bot he Assalȝeit swa with his menȝhe, That, magre thairis, thai wan the plaß ; Slayñe of thair fayis fele thar waß.	125
The Scotch chase the Irish host,	Throu-out the wod thame chasit thai, And sesit in sic fusiouñe thar pray, That all the folk of thar host war Refreschit weill añe owk or mair.	130

- 
112. *drawin thidder*] driuen hidder H.  
 113. *endwillane*] Innermallane E ; Endnellane H.  
 115. [*thai* E] thay H ; ay C. H *has*—For-thy Sir Edward there kept thay.  
 116. [*Thai* E] He C ; And H.  
 117. *soyne*] sone E ; straight H.  
 118. *straucht*] euen H. *plass*] place H ; pass E.  
 119. *murreff*] Murray H.  
 120. *ay first*] fyrst ay E. H *has*— That first put him to all assayes.  
 121. *Lichtit*] He lighted H.  
 122. *plass*] place H ; pass E.  
 123. *The*] Thir. *erische*] ersch E ; Irish H.  
 124. That in the place enbushed were H. *thame*] him.  
 125. *richt sturdely*] full stoutly H.  
 127. *thai*] he H. *plass*] pass.  
 128. *fele thar*] full mony H.  
 130. *fusioune*] fusoune E ; abundance H. *thar*] the EH.  
 132. *owk*] wouk E ; Oulk H ; weeke A.

and come to Kilsagart. Edward Bruce hears that his foes are gather- ing at Dundalk.	At Kilsagart schir Eduard lay ; And thar weill soyne he haß herd say, That at Dundawk wes aine assemble Maid of the lordis of that cuntre ; In host thai war assemblit thar.	135
Sir Richard Clare,	Thar wes first schir Richard of Clare, That in all Irland luf-tenand [Was off] the king of Yngland.	140
the Earls of Desmond and Kildare,	The erll of Desmownt als wes thar, And the erll alsua of Kyldare ; The Bremayne with the Wardoune ; Thir war lordis of gret renoune.	
Butler, Fitz- thomas, [Fol. 107 & C.] and others, collect a host.	The Butler alsua thair wesß, And schir Moriß [le Fyss] Thomas ; Thir with thair men ar cummyn [thar], A richt gret hoost forsuth thai war. And quhen schir Eduard wist suthly That thar wes sic aine cheuelry, His host in hy he gert aray,	145 150
Edward Bruce comes to Dun- dalk.	And thiddirwardis he tuk the way ; And neir the toune he tuk herbery. Bot for he wist all wtirly That in the toune wes mony men,	155

133. *kilsagart*] kilsagart E ; Kyl-  
sagart H.

134. *thar*] there H ; E *om.*

135. *dundawk*] dundalk E ; Don-  
dalk H. *ane*] an H ; E *om.*

138. *schir*] H *om.*

139. *Irland*] Irland wes C ; *but*  
EH *omit* wes. *luf-tenand*] luftenend  
C.

140. [*Was off* E] Was to H ; Maid  
be C.

141. *desmownt*] desmond. *als*] E  
*om.*

143. *bremayne*] breman E ; Bryane  
eke H. *with the*] and the H ; and E.  
*wardoune*] wodoune E ; Wardane H.

144. *Thir*] That EH.

145. *wess*] was.

146. [*le fyss* E] le fitz H ; besy *or*  
vesy C.

147. *Thir*] Thai E ; That H.  
[*thar* E] there H ; ar C.

149. *quhen*] E *om.* *suthly*] surely  
H.

150. *sic*] swilk. *ane*] a H ; E *om.*

152. *he*] E *om.*

153. *he tuk*] tuk his E ; tooke his  
H.

154. *all wtirly*] all witterly E ;  
right perfitelie H.

155. *wes*] war E ; were H.

	His battalis he arrayit then, And stude arayit in battale To kep thame, gif thai vald assale.	
Sir Richard Clare hears of his approach.	And quhen that schir Richard of Clare, And othir lordis that war thare, Wist at the Scottis men so neir With thar battellis than cummyne weir, Thai tuk to consell at that nycht,	160
They agree not to fight that night.	For it was layt, thai wald nocht ficht; Bot on the morne in the mornyng, Weill soyn eftir the sone-rysing, Thai suld ysche furth, all that war thair; Therfor that nycht thai did no mair, Bot herbreyt thame on athir party. That nycht the Scottis cumpany War wachit richt weill, all at richt;	165
Next morning,	And on the morn, quhen day ves licht, In twa battellis thai thame arayit;	
the Scotch await the attack.	Thai stude with baneris all displayit, For the battell all reddy bouñe. And thai that war within the touñe, Quhen soñe wes rysyn schynand clere, Send furth of thame that with him were Fifty, till se the contenyng Of Scottis men and thar cummyng. And thai raid furth and saw thaim soyñe, Syne come agane, forouten hoyñe. And quhen thai sammyn lichtit war, Thai tald thair lordis that wes thar,	175 180

- 
159. RUBRIC in H—The battell of Dondalk in Ireland, That Sir Edward tooke with his hand.
160. *war thare*] thar war.
161. *at*] that.
162. *than*] EH *om.*
163. *at thar*] that that.
167. *war thair*] thar war E; there were H.
178. *him*] them H; in E.
179. *till*] to.
182. *forouten hoyne*] with - outyn hone EH.
184. *wes*] wer.

who return and say that the Scotch are hardly half a dinner for them.	That Scottis men semyt to be Worthye, and of full gret bounte ; “ Bot thai ar nocht, withouten wer, Half-deill aȝe dyner till vs here ! ” The lordis [had] of this tithyng	185
[Fol. 108. C.]	[Gret Ioy, and gret] reconfortyng ; And gert men throu the cite cry, That all suld arme thame hastely.	190
The English and Irish advance.	Quhen thai war armyt and purvayit, And for to ficht all haill arayit, Than went thai furth in gude aray ; Soyn with thair fayis assemblit thai, [That] kepit thame richt hardely.	195
A great battle ensues.	The stour begouth thair cruelly ; For athir [part] set all thair mycht Till rusche thair fayis in the ficht ; And with all mycht on other dang. The stalward stour lestit weill lang, That men mycht [nocht] persauē, no se, Quha mast at thar abovin mycht be.	200
The battle is doubtful from sunrise to noon.	For fra soyn eftir the soȝne-rysyng, Quhill eftir mydmornē, the fichting Lestit, in-till sic aȝe dout ; [Bot] than schir Eduard, that wes stout, With all thame of his cumpany,	205
At last the	Schot [apon] thame so sturdely,	210

185. *semyt*] so E ; *miswritten* semy  
C.  
186. *full*] right H ; E *om.*  
188. *ane*] a EH.  
189. [*had* EH] herd C.  
190. [*Gret—gret* E] Great ioy, and  
great H ; And had gret Ioy, and C.  
194. *to*] the EH.  
195. *Than—thai*] Thai went thaim.  
196. *Soyn*] Sone E ; Syne H.  
197. [*That* EH] And C.

198. *begouth*] so CE ; began H.  
199. [*part* E] party H ; parteis C.  
200. *Till*] To EH.  
201. *mycht*] paine H.  
203. [*nocht* E] not H ; C *om.* no]  
na E ; nor H.  
204. *at—mycht*] that thar abowe  
suld E ; there at abone sould H.  
207. *sic ane*] sik a H ; swilk a E.  
208. [*Bot* E] But H ; That C.  
210. [*apon* E] vpon H ; on C.

Scotch prevail.	That thai mycht thole no mar the ficht. All in a frusche thai tuk the flicht ; And thai followit full egirly.	
Both hosts enter the town.	In-to the toune all comonly They enterit [bath] intermelle. Thair mycht men felloune slauchtir se ;	215
Thomas Murray slays many in the town.	For the richt nobil erll Thomas, That with his rout followit the chas, Maid sic a slauchtir in the toune, And swa felloune occisioune,	220
The streets are all bloody.	That the rewis all bludy war Of slayne men that war liand thar. The lordis war gottin all away.	
[Fol. 48. E.]	And quhen the toune, as I ȝow say, Wes throu gret forß of fechting tañe, And all thair fayis fled or slañe, Thai herbryit thame all in the toune,	225
The town is taken.		
The Scotch find plenty to eat and drink.	Quhar of vittale was sic fusioune, And swa gret aboundans of vyne, That the gud erll had gret dowtyne	230
[Fol. 108 & C.]	That of thair men suld dronken be, And mak in drunkynneß sum melle.	
The wine is por- tioned out.	Tharfor he maid of vyne lufre Till ilk man, that he payit suld be ; And thai had all yneuch, perfay.	235
The Scotch are at ease.	That nycht rycht weill at eiß war thai, And richt blith of the gret honour That thame befell for thair valour.	

214. *In-to*] In. *all comonly*] com-  
monaly.

215. [*bath* E] baith H ; bot C.

216. *mycht men*] men mycht EH.

219. *sic*] swilk.

228. *fusioune*] fusoun.

229. *aboundanss*] haboundance.  
*vyne*] wyne EH.

230. *gret*] E om.

233. *vyne*] wyne EH. *lufre*] levere  
E ; Lewerie H.

They stay 3 days  
in Dundalk;  
then ride south-  
wards,  
 Eftir this ficht thai soiornyt thair  
In-to Dundawk, thre dais & mar; 240  
 Syne tuk thai southwardis thar way.  
The erll Thomas wes forrouth ay,  
 And as thai raid throu the cuntre,  
Thai mycht apon the hillis se  
 Sa mony men, it wes ferly. 245  
 And quhen the erll wald sturdely  
Dresß him to thame with his baner,  
 Thai wald fle, all that euir thai wer,  
Swa that in ficht nocht aȝe abaid.  
 And thai southwardis thair wais raid, 250  
 [Quhill] till a gret forest coȝe thai;  
Kilroß it hat, as I herd say;  
 And thai tuk all thair herbry thair.  
In all this tyme Richard of Clare,  
 That wes the kyngis luf-tenand, 255  
 Of all the barnage of Irland  
A gret hoost he assemblit had;  
 Thai war v battellis, gret and braid,  
That soucht schir Eduard and his men;  
 Weill neir him war thai cummyn then. 260  
 He gat soyne vittyng that thai weir  
Cumand on him, and war so neir.  
 His men adressit he thame agaȝe,

239. RUBRIC *in* H—The third bat-  
tell in Ireland, That good Sir Edward  
tooke on hand.

240. *dundawk*] dundalk E; Don-  
dalk H. & or H; but E.

241. *thar*] on thar C; but EH *omit*  
on.

242. Erle Thomas rade before them  
ay H.

248. *fle*] E *om.* *euir*] E *om.*

249. *ficht*] fight H; sycht E.

250. *southwardis*] southwart E;  
foorth on H.

251. [*Quhill* E] While H; Quhar  
C.

252. *Kilross*] Kylrose E; Kylros H.  
I] Ik.

256. *all—Barnage*] so H; the bar-  
nagis E.

261. *vittyng*] witting H; witting  
E.

262. In haill battell comming neere  
H.

263. *adressit he*] addressed he H;

he dressyt E.

	And gert thame stoutly tak the plañe ;	
	And syne the erll thar come to se,	265
and sends forward Mowbray and Stewart,	And schir Philip the Mowbra send he,	
	And schir Iohnē Steward went alsua ;	
	Furth till discour, thair way [thai] ta.	
	Thai saw the host cum soyne at hand ;	
	Thai war, to geß, fifty thousand.	270
who report the enemy to number 50,000.	Haym to schir Eduard raid thai then,	
	And said weill, thai war mony men.	
	He said agañe, "the ma thai be,	
[Fol. 100. C.]	The mair honour allout haue we,	
	Gif that we beir ws manfully.	275
Sir Edward Bruce addresses his host.	We are set heir in iuperdy,	
	Till vyn honour, or for till de ;	
	We ar fra hayme to fer to fle ;	
	Tharfor let ilk man worthy be.	
	3oñe ar gadering of the cuntre,	280
	And thai sall fle, I trow, lichtly	
	And men assail [thaim] manfully."	
	All said thai than, "thai weill suld do."	
The 10,000 Scotch attack their enemies.	With that approchand neir thame to	
	The battellis come, reddy to ficht.	285
	And thai met thañe with mekill mycht,	
	That war ten thousand worthy men.	
	The Scottis all on fut war then,	
	And thai on stedis trappit weill,	

264. *tak*] ta.265. *thar*] thaim E. *thar come*] came them H.266. *send*] so CE ; sent H.268. *till*] to EH. *thair*] ther E ; the H. *thai ta*] they ta H ; to ta C ; ta thai E.269. *cum soyne*] sone cum E ; neere come H.271. *to*] till.275. *manfully*] manlyly.277. *Till*] To. *vyn*] wyn EH.*till*] to.278. *fra—fer*] to fer fra hame E ; too far fra hame H.280. *ar*] so E ; ar but C ; are but H ; *which clogs the line. gadering*] gadryngis E ; gaddered H. *the*] this EH.282. [*thaim* E] them H ; C *om. manfully*] manlyly.283. *thai than*] than that.288. *scottis*] scottis men.

BOOK XIV.]	THE IRISH FLEE IN DISORDER.	13
	Sum helyt [all] in irñe and steill.	290
The Scotch, though on foot, prevail against the Irish on horseback.	Bot Scottis men, at thair metyng, With speris perssit thar armyng, And stekit horsß, and men doune bar. Añe fellouñe fechting wes [than] thair; I can nocht tell thair strakis all,	295
	Na quha in ficht gert othir fall; Bot in schort tymē, I vndirta, Thai of Irland war cummyrrit swa That thai durst nañe abyde no mar,	300
The Irish flee in disorder.	Bot fled scalit, all that thai war, And levit in the battell-stede Weill mony of thar gud men ded.	
The field was strewed with dead men and armour.	Of wapnys, armyng, and ded men The feld wes haly strewit then. That gret hoost roydly ruschit weß; Bot schir Eduard leit no man chaß; Bot with presoners that thai had tañe Thai till the wod agañe ar gañe, Quhar that thair harnesß levit wer.	305
The Scotch make good cheer.	That nycht thai maid thame mery cher, And lovit god fast of his grace. This gud knycht, that so vorthy was,	310
[Fol. 100 b. C.]	Till Iudas, Machabeus that hicht,	
Edward Bruce is likened to Judas Maccabeus.	Micht liknyt weill be in that ficht. Na multitud he forsuk of men, Quhill he hade ane aganis teñ.	315

- 
290. [all EH] thame C. 310. *thame mery*] so H; thair men  
294. *Ane*] A. *fechting*] slaughter gud E.  
H. [*than* E] then H; thar C. 312. *This*] The EH.  
297. *I*] Ik. 313. *that hicht*] mycht E; might  
298. *cummyrrit*] cumbred H; con- H.  
traryit E. 314. Be lyknyt weill that in-to fycht  
299. *nane*] than E; them H. EH; (*misuritten* in-to that fycht E).  
300. *that-war*] here and there H. 315. *Na—he*] Forsuk na multitud  
303. *and*] and of E. EH.  
305. *roydly*] rudely E; rudely H.



Sir Richard of Clare	Thus, as I said, Richard of Clare And his gret hoost rebutit war. Bot he about him, nocht-for-thi,	
[Fol. 48 b. E.]	Wes gaderand men ay ythandly,	320
thinks to fight again.	For he thought zeit to cowir his cast. It angerit him richt ferly fast, That twið in-to battell was he Discumfit with aȝe few menȝhé. And Scottis men, that in the forest	325
The Scotch rest for 2 nights ;	War ryddin, for till tak thair rest, All thai twa nychtis thair thai lay, And maid thame myrth, solace, and play.	
then ride to meet O'Dymsey, an Irish king who had vowed fealty to Bruce.	Toward Odymsey syne thai rayde, Aȝe Erische kyng, that ayth had mayd Till schir Eduarde of fewte ; For forrouth that him prayit he To se his land, and na vittale, [Na nocht] that mycht him help, suld fale. Schir Eduard trowit in his hicht,	330 335
O'Dymsey makes the Scotch cross a river,	And with his rout raid thiddir richt. A gret revar he gert hym paß ; And in a richt fair place, that was Lawch by a brym, he gert thame ta Thair herbry, and said, he vald ga To ger men vittale to thame bring.	340
and encamp in	He held his vay but mair duelling ;	

317. RUBRIC in H—How an Irish king, false and froward, Leete out a Loch vpon Sir Edward.  
320. *ythandly*] ythenly E ; ithandly H.  
321. *cowir*] recouer H.  
323. *in-to*] in-till.  
324. *ane*] A.  
325. *in*] to EH.  
326. *till tak*] to mak.  
329. *odymsey*] ydymsey E ; Endrossy H.  
330. *erische*] irsche E ; Irish H.  
331. *Till*] To EH. *of*] of his H.  
332. *forrouth that*] before that time H.  
334. [*Na nocht* E] Nor not H ; C *om. him*] thaim. *that — him*] that they might helpe H. *fale*] nocht fale C ; but EH *om. nocht here*.  
337. *revar*] rywer E ; Riuer H.  
339. *Lawch*] Laigh H. *brym*] bourne E ; Burne H.

a low place. For till betraif thame wes his thought.  
 In sic a<sup>n</sup>e place he has thame broucht,  
 Quhar of Iourneis weill twa & mair 345  
 He removes all the cattle in the neighbourhood. All the cattell withdrawin war;  
 Swa that thai in that land mycht get  
 No thing that worth war for to et.  
 With hungyr he thought thame to febliß,  
 Syne bring on thame thair enymysß. 350  
 This fals tratour his men had maid,  
 A litell owth quhar [he] herbryit hade  
 He then lets out a loch, Schir Eduard and the Scottis men,  
 The ysche of a louch to den ;  
 in order to flood their camp. And leit it out in-to the nycht. 355  
 The vattir than with sic a mycht  
 [Fol. 110. C.] On schir Edwardis men come doune,  
 The Scotch are soon all afloat. That thai in perell war till droune ;  
 For, or thar wist, on flot war thai.  
 With mekill payne thai gat away, 360  
 And held thar livis, [as] god gaf graß ;  
 Bot of thair harnesß tynt ther was.  
 O'Dymsey gave them nothing to eat, but they had plenty of water to drink. He maid thame na gude fest, perfay,  
 And nocht-for-thi yneuch had thai.  
 For thouch thame falit of the met, 365  
 I warne 3ow weill, thai war weill wet.  
 In gret distresß thair war thai stad,  
 For gret defalt of mete thai had ;  
 For thai betuix thai riveris tway

343. *till*] to EH.

344. *ane*] A.

345. *Quhar — twa*] Quhar of twa Iournais wele E; Wherefra twa iourneyes well H.

351. *tratour his*] traytouris E; Traitours H.

352. *owth*] South H; E *om.* [he EH] thai C.

354. *ysche*] ischow E; Ishe H.

*den*] so E; dem H.

356. *vattir*] watre. *sic*] swilk.

358. *till*] to EH.

360. *away*] away.

361. *livis*] lyff. [as EH] and C.

365. *thame falit*] they wanted H.

368. *defalt*] default.

369. *For*] And EH. *thai* (2)] great H; E *om.*

16 THOMAS OF DOWN SAVES THE SCOTTISH ARMY. [BOOK XIV.

	War set, and mycht paß nañe of thai.	370
A river is between them and Ulster.	The Bane, that is añe arñe of se, That with horß may nocht passit be, Wes betuix thame and Wllister. Thai had beyn in grett perell ther, Ne war añe scummar of the se,	375
One Thomas of Down sails towards them,	Thomas of Dwn hattyn weß he, Herd that the host so stratly than Wes stad, and [salyt] up the Ban, Quhill he com weill neir quhar thai lay. Thai knew him weill, and blith war thai.	380
and, with 4 ships, carries them over the river.	Than, with four schippes that he had tane, He set thame our the Ban ilkane. And quhen thai come in biggit land, Wittale and mete yneuch thai fand ; And in a wode thame herbryit thai.	385
None of the Irish know where the Scotch are.	Nane of the land wist quhar thai lay ; Thai esyt thame, and maid gud cher. In-till that tyme, besyde thame ner, With a gret host, Richarde of Clar, And othir gret of Irlande, war	390
The Irish host send out foragers to a town called Conyers (now Connor).	Herbryit in-till a forest syde. And ilke day thai gert men ryde To bring wittalis, on ser maneris, Till thame fra the toune of Coigneris, That weill ten gret myle wes thaim fra.	395
[Fol. 110 b. C.]	Ilk day, as thai wald cum and ga, Thai come the Scottis host so ner,	

371. *of*] of the EH.

373. *wllister*] Wlsistar H ; hulsys-  
ter E.

375. *Ne war*] Were not H. *ane*] a  
H ; E *om.* *scummar*] scummer H ;  
scowmar E.

376. *dwn*] downe E ; Dun H.

378. [*salyt* E] sailed H ; sovit *or*  
sobit C.

382. *thame*] E *om.*

389. *richarde*] schyr rychard.

391. *in-till*] into H ; in E.

393. *wittalis*] wittail E ; vittailles  
H.

394. *Till*] To EH. *Coigneris*]  
Cogners H.

397. *the*] the E ; *printed* to the J.

	That bot twa myle betuix thaim wer. And quhen erll Thomas had persaving Of thair come and thair gaderyng,	400
Thomas Murray takes 300 men,	He gat him a gud cumpany, Thre hundreth on horß wicht and hardy. Thar wes schir Philip the Mowbray, And schir Iohne Stewart als, perfay, With schir Alane Stewart alsua,	405
and sets an ambush for the foragers;	Schir Gilbert Boyde and other ma. Thai raid till meit the vittelleris, That with ther wittale fra Coigneris Com, haldand to the host the way. So suddanly on thame schot thai,	410
whom they sur- prise and take prisoners.	That thai war sa abaysit all, That thai leit all thair vapnys fall, And mercy pitwysly can cry. And thai tuk thame in thair mercy,	
[Fol. 49. E.]	And has thame up so [clenly] tane, That of thame all eschapit nañe.	415
Murray learns that some of the Irish will come to meet the foragers,	The erll of thañe [gat wittering] That of thair host, in the evynnyng, Wald cum out, at the woddis syde, And aganis thair wittale ryde.	420
and dresses his men in the pris- oners' armour.	He thocht than on a iuperdy; And gert his menȝhe halely Dicht thame in the presoners aray;	

399. RUBRIC in H — How Sir  
Thomas of Randell, Wan fra the  
Irishmen their vittell. *erll*] the erle.  
*had*] EH *om.*

400. *Of*] Had off EH. *come*] so H;  
cummyng E. *gaderyng*] ganging EH.

402. *hundreth*] hunder E.

405. *With*] And EH.

406. *gilbert*] robert EH.

407. *till*] to EH.

408. *coigneris*] Cogners H; see l.

VOL. II.

394.

413. *pitwysly*] petously. *can*] gan.

415. [*clenly* E] cleenely H; cleirly  
C.

417. *of*] through H. [*gat witter-  
ing* EH] he had vittyng C.

419. Some wald come out of the  
Wood side H.

421. *a*] ane.

422. *menȝhe*] men all H.

423. *the*] H *om.*

B

	Thair pennownys als with thame tuk thai. And quhill the nycht wes neir, thai baid, And syne toward the host thai raid. Sum of thair mekill host has seyne Thair come, and wende weill thai had beyne	425
The Irish are deceived, and advance without suspicion.	Thair vittelouris ; tharfor thai raid Agane thame scalit, for thai hade Na dreid that thai thair fayis wer ; And thame hungerit alsua weill sair. Tharfor thai come abandonly ; And, quhen thai neir war, in gret hy The erll, and all that with him war, Ruschit on thame with wapnys bar, And thair ensenȝeis hye can cry ; And thai, that saw so sudandly Thair fayis dyng on thame, wes rad, That thai no hert till help thame had ; Bot [to] thar host the vay can ta ; And thai chasit, and feill can sla, That all the feldis strowit war ; Ma than aȝe thowsand ded wes thar. Richt to thar hoost thai can thame chass, And syne agane thair wayis tais.	430 440 445
The Irish are frightened, [Fol. 111. C.] and flee ;		
and lose 1000 men.		

ON this wiss wes the wittal taȝe,  
And of the Erysche men mony slaȝe.

The Earl of The erll syne, with his cumpany,

- 
- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 424. <i>pennownys</i> ] Prisoners ( <i>sic</i> ) H.  | E ; they H.  |
| 428. <i>weill</i> ] E <i>om.</i>   | 442. <i>feill</i> ] sua fele E ; so feill H.         |
| 430. <i>scalit</i> ] safely H.   | <i>can</i> ] gan.                                    |
| 432. And als they hungred very<br>saire H.   | 443. <i>strowit</i> ] ouerstrowed H.                 |
| 437. <i>hye can</i> ] hey gan.   | 444. <i>Ma</i> ] so EH ; May C. <i>wes</i> ]<br>war. |
| 438. <i>And</i> ] Than. <i>so</i> ] sua.   | 445. <i>to</i> ] till. <i>can</i> ] gan.             |
| 439. <i>wes</i> ] were H ; wad sa ( <i>sic</i> ) E.  | 446. <i>tais</i> ] gaes H.                           |
| 441. [ <i>to</i> EH] C <i>om.</i> <i>hoost</i> ] ost E ;<br>Wood H. <i>the</i> ] thar EH. <i>can</i> ] gan | 448. <i>erysche</i> ] Irche E ; Irish H.             |

Murray presents his prisoners to Edward Bruce.	Presoners and wittalis halely Haß brocht till schir Eduard als swith ; And he wes of thair cummyng blith. That nycht thai maid thame merye cher ; Richt all than at thair eiß thai wer. Thai war all wachit sekyrly,	450     455
The Irish deter- mine to go to Conyers,	And thair fais, on the tothir party, Quhen thai herd how thar men waß slañe, And how thar wittal all wes tane, Thai tuk to consell at thai wald Thair wayis towart Coigneris hald,	    460
and do so.	And herbry in the cite ta. And in gret hye thai haue doñe swa ; And raid on nycht to the cite. Thai fand thair wittale of gret plente, And maid thame merely gud cher ; For all trast in the tounne thai wer.	    465
The Irish send out scouts, but they are taken.	Apon the morn thai [send] to spy, Quhar Scottis men had tane herbery. Bot thai war met with all, and tane, And brocht richt till the hoost agane.	   470
Murray gets information from a prisoner,	The erll of Murreff richt mekly Sperit at añe of [thar] cumpany, Quhar thar host wes, and quhat thai thought	

- 
451. *Haß*] Thai E ; They H. *als* taile H.  
*swith*] alswith. 465. *merely gud*] rycht mery E ;  
454. *Richt—than*] For rycht all E ; merie and good H.  
For they euen H. 466. *trast*] traist EH.  
455. *all wachit*] ay walkyt E ; all 467. [*send* E] sent H ; set C. Cf.  
watched ay H. l. 266.  
457. *wass*] war E ; were H. 469. *met*] E om. *all and*] and all  
458. *all*] als EH. H ; all als E.  
459. *to*] their H. *at*] that EH. 470. *agane*] ilkane EH.  
460. *coigneris*] Cogneres H. 471. *Murreff*] Murray H.  
462. *in*] than in. 472. *Sperit*] He sperit C ; *but* EH  
463. *on*] be E ; by H. omit He. [*thar* E] their H ; his C.  
464. *wittale of*] of wictal E ; vit- 473. *wes*] lay H.

	Till do ; and said him, " giff he moucht Fynd that till hym the suth said he, He suld gang hame but ransoune fre."	475
who says,	" Forsuth," he said, " I sall 3how say. Thai thynk, the morn, quhen it is day, To seik 3ow with all thair men3he, Giff thai may get wit quhar 3he be.	480
that all the men of the country are being col- lected in the town. [Fol. 111 b. C.]	Thai haf gert throu the cuntre cry, [On] payne of liff full felonly, That all the men of [this] cuntre This nycht in-to the cite be. And trewly thai sall be so feill, That 3e sall no wi3 with thame deill." " De pardew," said he, " weill may be !" To schir Eduard with that 3eid he, And tald hym wtrelly this taill.	485
The Scotch resolve to encamp near the town.	Than [haf thai tane] for consell haill, That thai [wald] ryde to the cite That ilk nycht, swa that thai mycht be Betuix the toune, with all thar rout, And thame that war the toune without. As thai deuisit, swa haue thai done ; Befor the toune thai come alsoyne, And but half deill a myle of way Fra the cite thar rest tuk thai. And quhen the day wes dawin licht,	490 495

474. *Till*] To EH. *him giff*] gif that H.

477. *Forsuth—said*] He said for-suth EH.

478. *the*] to.

482. [*On* H] Off E ; Vndir C.

483. [*this* EH] his C.

484. *This*] To E ; The H. *nycht*] morne (*wrongly*) H.

487. RUBRIC in H—How Thomas Randell chased hame, The Scurreours that fra Cogners came.

489. *wtrelly*] vtterly H.

490. [*haf* E] haue H ; as C. [*thai tane* EH] thai com C.

491. [*wald* E] will CH.

492. *ilk*] same H. *mycht*] may H.

494. *the toune*] so H ; to cum E.

495. *swa*] so H ; E om. *haue thai*] thai haf.

497. *half deill*] halfindall.

498. *cite*] toun H. *thar*] a EH.

499. *dawin*] dawyn E ; dawning H.

Fifty Irish scouts perceive the Scotch,	Fifty on hobynis, that war wicht, Com till a litill hill, that wes Bot fra the toune a litill spaß, And saw schir Eduardis herbery ;	500
and wonder at their boldness,	And of the sicht had gret ferly, That sa quheyn durst on ony wiß Wndertak sa hye empriß, As for till cum sa hardely Apon all the [gret] cheuelry Of Yrland, for till byde battale. And swa it wes, forouten fale ;	505
since they had against them Richard of Clare, Desmond, Butler, and so many others.	For agane thame war gaderit thair With the wardane, Richard of Clar, The Butler, with [the] erllis twa, [Of] Desmwnd and [Kildar] war tha, Brwman, Wardwn, and syr Waryn, And schir Pascale, [a] Florentyn, That wes aße knycht of Lumbardy,	510
[Fol. 49 b. E.]	And wes full of gret cheuelry. The Mawndwilis [war] thar alsua, Besatis, Loganys, and othir ma ; Sawagis als ; and 3eit wes aße, Hat schir Nycholl of Kyllvanane.	515  520

505. *quheyn*] quhone E ; wheene H. *hame* H. *wardwn*] wedoune EH.  
*durst*] H om. on] vpon H ; E om. *syr*] so CH ; fy3e E. See l. 143.  
506. *Wndertak*] Durst vndertake H. 516. *pascalle*] paschall E ; Plastayne  
507. *till*] to EH. H. [a H] of CE.  
508. [gret] great H ; CE om. ; it 517. *ane*] A.  
*seems required.* Cf. l. 518. 518. *gret*] E om.  
509. *till*] to EH. 519. *The*] And H. *mawndwilis*]  
510. *forouten*] with-owtyn. mawndweillis E ; Maundewell H.  
513. *butler*] Butlers H. *with*] and [war E] was CH.  
EH. [the H] CE om. 520. *Besatis*] Bissatris H. *loganys*]  
514. [Of H] Off E ; C om. *Des-* Loganes H. See l. 47.  
*mwnd*] Desmownd E ; Delmound H. 521. *Sawagis*] The Sauages H.  
Dosmwnd C. [kildar EH] gildar C. 522. *Hat*] That heght H. *nycholl*]  
*war tha*] alsua H. Michell H. *kylivanane*] kylkenane E ;  
515. *Brwman*] Brynrame E ; Brun- Kylcalane H.



	And with thir lordis so feill wes then, That, for aȝe of the Scottis men, I trow that thai war fiff or ma.	525
There were 5 Irish for 1 Scot. [Fol. 112. C.]	Quhen thair discurrewris seyȝe haß swa The Scottis host, they went in hy, And tald thair lordis all opynly, How thai till thame war cummand ner ;	
No need to seek the Scotch.	To seik thame fer wes na myster. And quhen the erll Thomas had seyȝe That thai men at the hill had beyȝe, He tuk with him a gude menȝhe,	530
Murray and 100 horsemen lie in ambush.	On horß aȝe hundreth thai mycht be, And till the hill thai tuk the way. In a slak thame enbuschit thai ; And, in schort tyme, fra the cite Thai saw cum rydand a menȝhe, For till discowir, to the hill.	535
They keep quiet and at last sur- prise some of the Irish,	Than war thai blith, and held thaȝe still Quhill thai war cummyn to thame ner ; Than in a frusche, all that thar wer, Thai schot apon thaȝe hardely. And thai, that saw so suddandly Thai folk cum on, abaysit war ;	540
who partly flee, and partly resist ;	And nocht-for-thi, sum of thame thar Abaid stoutly, to mak debat ; And othir sum ar fled thar gat.	545
but even those	And in-to weill schort tyme [war] thai,	

525. *ma* EH] may C.526. *discurrewris*] Discurreours H.  
*haß*] hes H ; had E.528. *all*] EH *om.*529. *till*] to EH. *cummand*] com-  
ming H ; cummyn E.534. *hundreth*] hunder.538. *rydand*] so E ; rydande C.539. *discowir*] discouer H ; discur E.541. *cummyn* E] comen H ; *mis-*  
*written* cummyne C.542. *frusche*] rush H. *thar*] thai  
E ; they H.545. *Thaȝ*] Tha H ; That E.547. *mak*] make H ; ma E.549. [*war* E] were H ; ar C.

who resist take  
to flight at last.

That maid [arest], cumrayit swa,  
That thai fled halely thair gat ;  
And thai thame chassit richt to the jate,  
And a gret part of thame haß slañe,  
And syne went till thar host agane.

550

---

550. [arest EH] thar rest C. cum- traryit E; disrayed H.  
rayit] miswritten cumrayd C; con- 552. richt] H om.

# [BOOK XV.]

When those within the town see their men slain,	Qwhen thai within haß seyn swa slañe Thair men, and chassit ham agane, Thai war all wa, and in gret hy Till armys hely can thai cry. Thai armyt thame, all at thar war, And for the battale maid thame ȝar.	5
they make a sally.	Thai yschit out, all weill arayit, In battale with baneris displayit, Bowne on thar best wiß, till assale Thair fais in-to fell battale.	10
Sir Philip de Mowbray advises Edward Bruce.	And quhen schir Philip the Mowbray Saw thame ysche in sa gud aray, Till schir Eduard the Bryß went he, And said, "schir, it is gude that we	15
[Fol. 118 & c.]	Schape for sum slicht, that may availl Till help ws in this gret battaill. Our men ar quheyn, bot thai haf will Till do mair than thai may fullfill.	20
Sir Philip's plan.	Tharfor I rede, our caryage, Forouten ony man or page,	20

- 
- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. RUBRIC <i>in</i> H—The feird battell<br>in Ireland, That Sir Edward wan with<br>strang hand. | E; In haill battell with Baner dis-<br>played H. |
| 3. <i>wa</i> EH] way C.   | 10. <i>fell</i> ] so CH; fele E.                 |
| 4. <i>Till</i> ] To H. <i>can</i> ] gan.  | 12. <i>in</i> EH] in-to C.                       |
| 5. <i>Thai</i> ] Than. <i>at</i> ] that.  | 16. <i>in—gret</i> ] so CH; in-to this E.        |
| 8. In-to the bataill baner displayit  | 17. <i>quheyn</i> ] quhoynes E; good H.          |
|   | 18. <i>Till</i> ] To EH.                         |

	By thame-selwyne arayit be ;	
	And thai sall seyme fer ma than we.	
"Let us set up our banners before the baggage,	Set we befor thame our baneris ; 3on folk that cummys out of Coigneris, Quhen thai our baneris thair may se,	25
	Sall trow trastly that thair ar we, And thidder in gret hy [sall] ryde.	
whilst we lay wait for them."	Cum we than on thame at a syde, And we sall be at advantage ; For, fra thai in our caryage	30
	Be enterit, thai sall cummyrrit be ; [And] than with all our mycht may we Lay on, and do all that we may."	
His plan is adopted.	And as he ordanit, done haf thai. And thai that com out of Coigneris	35
The assailants attack Sir Edward's baggage.	Adressit thame to the baneris ; And smat with spures the horß in hy, Ruschand emang thame sodanly. The barell-[ferraris] that war thar Cumrayd thame fast that rydand war.	40
The Scotch issue from their ambush.	And than the erll, with his battale, Com on, and sadly can assale. And schir Eduard, a litill by, Assemblit swa richt hardely, That mony fey fell vnder feit ;	45
	The felde wox soyne of blud all weit.	

---

24. *Coigneris*] so CE ; Cogners H.      And rushed H. *emang*] amang H ;  
26. *trow*] trew.      E *om. sodanly*] all sodanly C ; *but*  
27. [*sall* EH] will C. *ryde*] thai EH *om. all*.  
rid.      39. [*ferraris*] ferraris E ; ferrars H ;  
31. *cummyrrit*] combryt E ; cum- feris (*wrongly*) C.  
bred H.      40. *Cumrayd*] Cumbryt E ; Cum-  
32. [*And* EH] C *om.*      bred H.  
34. *And*] All.      42. *can*] gan.  
37. *smat—horss*] strooke the horse 44. *swa—hardely*] with his com-  
with spurres H.      pany H.  
38. *Ruschand*] And ruschyt E ; 45. *fey*] a fey EH.

26 BATTLE BETWEEN THE SCOTCH AND ENGLISH. [BOOK XV.]

A fierce battle ensues.	With so gret felony thar thai faucht, And sic rowtis till othir raucht With stok, with stane, and with retrete, As athir part can othir bet, [That] it wes hydwiß for to se How thai mantemyt that gret melle So knychtlik apon athir syde, Giffand and takand voundis vyde, That pryme wes passit, or men mycht se Quha mast [at] thair abovin mycht be. Bot soyne eftir that pryme wes past, The Scottis men dang on so fast, And schot on thame at abandoune,	50
It was past prime, before either side got any advantage.	As ilk man war a campioune, That all thar fayis tuk the flicht ; Wes nane of thame that wes so wicht, That euir durst abyde his fere ; Bot ilkane fled thair wayis sere. Till the tounne fled the mast party.	55
[Fol. 113. C.] At last the Scotch prevail.	The erll Thomas sa ynkirly, And his rout, chassit with swerdis bar, That all emang thame mellit war, [And] all to-gidder come in the toune. Than wes the slauchter so felloune,	60
[Fol. 50. E.] Earl Thomas chases the flying army into the town.	That all the rewys ran of blude. Thame that thai gat, to dede all 3ude,	65
Many are killed in the streets.		70

49, 50. H *omit.* can] gan.

51. [That EH] Than C.

52. How] E *om.*

53. So — apon] Sa keenely they  
faught on H.

54. voundis vyde] rowtis roid E ;  
routes red H.

56. [at E] that C. Quha—thair]  
What part soonest H. abovin] abone  
H ; abow E.

60. campioune E] Campeoune C ; yoode H.

Scorpioun (!) H.

63. euir] ewyr.

64. ilkane] ilk man EH.

65. Till] To EH.

66. The] And. ynkirly] egrely E ;  
egerly H.

68. emang] amang.

69. [And H] Bot C ; That E.

71. rewys] ruys E ; rewes H.

72. all] he H. 3ude] 3hud E ;  
yoode H.

	Swa that [than thar] weill neir wes ded Als feill as in the battell-sted.	
Fitzwarine is taken. Sir Richard of Clare escapes.	The Fizwaryne wes taken thar ; Bot so rad wes Richard of Clar, That he held to the sowth cuntre. All that moneth I trow that he Sall haf no gret will for to ficht.	75
Sir John Stewart is severely wounded.	Schir Iohne Stewart, aȝe nobill knycht, Wes voundit throu the body thair With a sper that richt scharply schair. To the Mont-peleris went he syne, And lay thair lang in-to helyne, And at the last helit wes he.	80  85
Edward Bruce encamps within the town.	Schir Eduard than, with his menȝe, Tuk in the tounne thair herbery. That nycht thai blith war and ioly For the victory that thai had thar. And on the morn, forouten mar, Schir Eduard gert men gang and se	90
He finds in it a great quantity of provisions,	All the vitalis of that cite. And thai fand sic fusiounne thar-in Of corn [and] flour [and] wax and vyne, That thai had of it gret ferly ;	95
which he sends to Carrickfergus.	And schir Eduard gert halely [To] cragferguss [it] cartit be. Syne thidder went his men and he,	

73. [*than thar* E] thair wer C. *wes*] wer. H *has*—So that there were als feill dead.

74. *Als feill*] Well neere H.

75. *fizwaryne*] syve warine or fyve warine E ; Swaryne H.

76. *so*] swa. *rad*] feared H. *wes*] wes schir C ; but EH *omit* schir.

77. *held*] so CH ; fled E.

79. *gret*] gud.

80. *ane*] A.

82. *richt*] E *om.*

83. *To the*] Bot to E ; But to H. *mont-peleris*] monpeller E ; Mount Peller H.

84. *in-to*] in-till. *helyne*] Leeching H.

89. *victory*] victour.

92. *vitalis*] wictaill E ; vittaille H.

93. *fusiounne*] foyoun.

94. [*and* EH] C *om.* (*twice*).

97. [*To* H] In-to C ; In-till E. [*it* H] CE *om.* *cartit*] caryit E ; caried H.

A truce is made, to last till Easter Tuesday.	And helde the sege full stalwardly Quhill Palmesonday wes passit by. [Than] quhill the Tysday in Pask-owk, [Fol. 118 b. C.] On athir half thai trowis tuk ; So that thai mycht that haly tyd In pennance and in prayer byd.	100
But on Easter Eve 15 ships arrive from Dublin,	Bot apon Paske evin all richt To the castell, in-till the nycht, Fra Devilling come schippis xv, Chargit with armyt men bedeyne ;	105
with 4000 re- cruits to guard the castle, and Sir Thomas Mandeville at their head.	Four thousand, trow I weill, thai war : In the castell thai enterit thair. The Mawndwell, ald schir Thomas, Capitane of that menzhe he waß. In the castell all preualy Thai enterit, for that thai gert spy That mony of schir Eduardis men War scalit in the cuntre then.	110
Mandeville hopes to surprise Sir Edward.	Tharfor thai thought in the mornyng Till ysche, but langer delaying, And till suppriß thaße suddanely ; For thai thought thai suld trastly [ly], For the trewis that taken war.	115
But such	Bot I trow falsat euirmar	120

101. [*Than* E] Then H ; And C.  
[*tysday*] twysday E ; Tuesday H.  
[*pask-owk*] payss wouk E ; Pasche  
Oulk H.

102. *half*] side H. *trowis*] trewys  
E ; trewes H.

105. *paske evin*] the pasche ewyn  
E ; Pasch-Euen H. *all*] EH om.

106. *in-till*] in-to EH.

107. *devilling*] dewillyne E ; Devil-  
ling H. *come*] come thair ; but EH  
om. thair. xv] fisteene H.

108. *armyt*] armour and H. *be-  
deyne*] bedene E ; bedene H.

109. *Four*] Three H.

110. *thair*] ar.

111. *mawndwell*] Maundwell H ;  
mawndweill E. *ald*] ald or als C ;  
auld E ; alsua and H.

112. *he*] EH om.

113. *In—all*] In the Castell full H ;  
In-till the castell E.

114. *that—gert*] thai had gret (*sic*)  
E ; they gart H.

119. *till*] to EH.

120. *thar*] that thai C ; but EH om.  
that. [*ly* H] CE om. ; but it is neces-  
sary.

122. *falsat*] falset EH.

- treachery always fails. Sall haue vnfair and euill ending.  
Schir Eduard wist of this na thing,  
For of tresoune had he na thought. 125  
Bot for the trewis he lefit noucht  
Wachis till set to the castele ;
- That night Neil Fleming, with 60 men, kept watch ; Ilk nycht he gert men wach it wele.  
And Neyll Flemyng wachit that nycht  
With sixty men worthy and wicht. 130  
And als soyne as the day wox cleir,  
Thai that within the castell weir  
Had armyt thame, and made thame boune,  
And syne the bryg aualed doune,  
And yschit in-till gret plente. 135
- and next morning sees an army in motion, And quhen Neyll Flemyng can thaim se,  
He send aȝe till the kyng in hy,  
Syne said to thame that war hym by,  
“ Now sall men se, I vndirtak,  
Quha dar de for his lordis sak ! 140  
Now beir ȝow weill, for sekirly  
With all thir menȝe fecht will I.
- [Fol. 114. C.] In-till bargaȝe thame hald sall we,  
Quhill that our mastir armyt be.”  
And with that vorde assemblit thai ; 145
- He and his men fight with great courage, Thai war [to] few all out, perfay,  
With sic a gret rout for to ficht.  
Bot nocht-for-thi, with al thar mycht,

---

123. *haue*] E *om.* *vnfair*] mis- brig they let H.  
chiefe H. 136. *neyll*] *nele.* *can thaim*] *thaim*  
126. *trewis*] *trewes* H ; *trew* E. can C ; *gan thaim* E ; *can them* H.  
*lefis*] *lewynt* E ; *letted* H. 137. *till*] *to* EH.  
127. *Wachis* — *set*] *To set wachis* 138. *Syne*] *so* CH ; *And* E.  
EH. 139. *I*] *Ik.*  
128. *men* — *it*] *wake it full* H. 140. *de*] *dey* E ; *H om.*  
*wach*] *walk* E ; *wake* H. 142. *thir*] *this* E ; *yone* H.  
129. *neyll*] *nele.* 145. *vorde*] *word.*  
131. *wox*] *wes* E ; *was* H. 146. [*to* E] *too* H ; *till* C. *to—*  
134. *syne*] *so* CH ; *sone* E. *the—* *our*] *all out too few* H.  
*aualed*] *thar brig awalit* E ; *the draw-*



Thai dang on thame so hardely,  
 That [all] thair fayis had gret ferly, 150  
 That thai war all of sic manheid  
 That thai no dreid had of thar dede.  
 but are all slain. Bot thar fell fayis sa can assaill,  
 That thar mycht no worschip availl,  
 That thai ne war slayn euirilkane 155  
 So cleyn, that thar eschapit nane.

**How the kyng of Irland callit Eduard com apon  
 the Scottis men.**

However, his messenger reached king Edward,  
 And the man that went till the kyng  
 For till warn hym of thair ysching,  
 Warnit him in-till full gret hy.  
 Schir Eduard, that wes comonly 160  
 Callit the kyng of Irland,  
 Quhen that he herd sic hy on hand,  
 In full gret hast he gat his ger.  
 Tuelf wicht men in his chalmer wer  
 That armyt thame in full gret hy. 165  
 Syne with his baneris hardely  
 [The] myddis of the toune he tais,  
 [Fol. 60 b. E.] With that neir cummand war his fais,  
 That had delt all thar men in thre.  
 As Mandeville The Mawndwell, with a gret menje, 170

- 
- |                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 150. [all EH] C om.               | 159. in-till] in EH.              |
| 151. sic] swilk.                  | 160. that wes] wes E; was then H. |
| 152. That] As.                    | comonly] commonaly.               |
| 153. fell] feill H; E om. can]    | 161. of] of all H.                |
| gane.                             | 162. Quhen that] And quhen E;     |
| 154. thar — worschip] na worschip | And when H. herd] hard E; had H.  |
| thar mycht.                       | hy] haste H; thing E.             |
| 155. That] Than E; Bot H. ne]     | 164. wicht men] with him H.       |
| EH om. slayn] slane wp E; slaine  | chalmer] chawmer E; Chamber H.    |
| vp H.                             | 166. baneris] baner EH.           |
| 157. RUBRIC from C. till] to EH.  | 167. [The EH] In C.               |
| 158. till] to EH.                 | 168. With that] Weill.            |

- is advancing, Richt throu the toune his vay held doune ;  
 The layff on athir syde the toune  
 Held to meit thame that fleand war ;  
 Thai thocht that all that thai fand thar  
 Suld de but ransoune euirilkañe. 175  
 Bot othir wayis the gle is gañe ;  
 For schir Eduard, with his baner,  
 And his men that I tald of ere,  
 On all that rout so hardely  
 Assemblit, that it wes ferly. 180  
 For Gib Harpar befor him 3eid,  
 That wes the douchtyest of deid  
 That than wes liffand of his stat,  
 And with añe ax maid him [sic] gat,  
 That he the first fellit to the grounde ; 185  
 And eftir, in a litill stounde,  
 The Mawndwell by his armyng  
 He knew, and roucht him sic a swyng  
 That he till erd 3eid hastely.  
 Schir Eduard, that wes neir hym by, 190  
 Reversit hym, and with a knyff  
 Richt in that place him reft the liff.  
 With that of Ardrossañe Fergus,  
 That wes añe knycht rycht curageouß,  
 Assemblit with sixty and ma. 195  
 Thai pressit than thair fayis swa,

171. *his vay*] the way EH.  
 172. *layff*] lave EH.  
 175. *de*] dey E; die H.  
 178. *men*] twelff E; twelue H.  
*that—tald*] I tauld 3ow.  
 181. *harpar*] Harper H.  
 182. *of*] in.  
 183. *liffand*] leuand. *than—stat*] might be found of his estate H.  
 184. [*sic* E] sik H; C om.  
 185. *the* (2)] E om.

186. *eftir*] syne H; off thre (*wrongly*) E. *in*] into H.  
 187. *by*] be.  
 189. *3eid*] past H.  
 192. *him reft*] reft him. *him—the*] he reft his H.  
 193. *ferguss*] Sir Fergus H.  
 194. *ane*] A. *ane—rycht*] a wight Knight and H.  
 195. *sixty*] sextie men H.

	That thai, that saw thair lord slayne, Tynt hert, and wald haue beyn agane.	
More Scotchmen come up,	And ay, as Scottis men mycht be Armyt, thai come to the melle ;	200
	And dang apon thai fayis swa,	
and at last the enemy gives way.	That thai all hale the bak can ta, And thai thame chassit to the ȝat ; Ther wes hard ficht and gret debat. Thar slew schir Eduard with his hand A knycht, that of all Irland	205
Sir Edward slays Mandeville, as I said ;	Wes callit best, and of mast bounte, [To] surname Mawndwell [hecht] he, His propir nayme I can nocht say. Bot his folk till so hard assay	210
	War set, that thai of the dwngcoune Durst oppyn no ȝat, na bryg let doune.	
and pursues his foes so hard, that none escape.	And schir Eduard, I tak on hand, Soucht thame, that fled thar to varrand, So felly, that of all, perfay,	215
	That ȝschit apon hym that day, Eschapit of thaim neuir ane, That thai ne war outhir tañe or slañe.	
One Macnakill captures 4 or 5 ships.	For to the ficht Maknakill then Come with twa hundreth of gude sper-men,	220

198. *beyn*] bene E ; bene H.

202. *hale*] E *om.* all *hale*] haillie H.

203. *thai thame*] tha men H.

204. *hard*] great H. *gret*] hard H.

208. [*To* EH] Of C. *maundwell*] Maundweill E ; Maundewile H. [*hecht*] heght H (*better spelt* hecht) ; had E ; callit ves C.

209. *propir*] proper H ; awne E.

210. *till*] to EH.

211. *that*] as.

212. *no*] na.

213—215. *One line in* H—Sir Ed-

ward sa then sought perfay.

213. *I*] Ik.

214. *varrand*] warand.

216. *apon*] foorth on H.

217. *Eschapit*] That ther eschapit C (*but* That ther *is not wanted*). E *has*—Thar eschapyt neuir ane (*omitting* of thaim). H *has*—That there escaped neuir ane (*also omitting* of thaim).

218. *thai ne*] thaim (*wrongly*) E. *That—ne*] Bot they H.

219. *maknakill*] Manakill H.

220. *of gude*] of H ; E *om.*

And slow all that thai mycht to vyn.  
 This ilk Maknakill, with a gyn,  
 Wan of thair schippes four or fiff,  
 And halely reft the men thair liff.

[Fol. 115. C.] Quhen end wes maid of this fechtng, 225  
 3eit than wes liffand Neill Flemyng.  
 Schir Edward went him for to se  
 [About him slayne lay his men3e,  
 All in a lump, on athyr hand ;  
 And he, redy to dey, throwand. 230  
 Schir Eduuard had of him pite,]  
 And him full gretly menynt he,  
 And regratit his gret manhede,  
 And his worschip with douchty dede.  
 Sic mayn he maid, thai had ferly ; 235  
 For he wes nocht custumabilly  
 Wount for till meyne ony thing,  
 Na wald nocht heir men mak menyng.  
 He stude thar by quhill he wes ded,  
 And syne had him till haly sted, 240  
 And him with worschip gert he be  
 Erdit, with gret solempnite.

whom he mourns  
for,  
and buries hon-  
ourably.

- 
221. *slow*] thai slew EH. *that*] worship and his H.  
 EH *om. vyn*] wyn. 235. *mayn*] mane H. *thai had*] men had gret.  
 224. *halely*] haly. 237. *till*] to EH. *meyne*] meyne  
 225. *this*] that H. men E ; mene H.  
 226. *liffand*] life in H. 239. *quhill*] while H ; till E.  
 228—231. *From* EH ; C *omits*. 240. *till haly*] to hallowed H.  
 230. *redy—dey*] to die readie H. 241. *him—he*] syne with worship  
 231. *had—him*] of him had great gart him H.  
 H.  
 234. *with*] and. *And—with*] His

**How king Robert Bruce passit throu the Tarbatis,  
and wan the Iles.**

So shall all  
treason fail.

**O**n this wiß yschit the Mawndwele ;  
Bot sekirly falsat and gyle

Sall euir haue aife euill ending, 245

As weill wes seyn by this ysching.

Because they  
attacked the  
Scotch on  
Easter-day,

In tyme of trewis yschit thai,

And in sic tyme as on Paske day,

Quhen god raif for to sauf mankyne

Fra vem of ald Adammis syne. 250

Tharfor sic gret myschans thame fell,

they met with  
failure.

That ilkane, as ȝe herd me tell,

War slane vp, or than takyn [thar].

And thai that in the castell war

War set in-till sic fray that hour, 255

The men in the  
castle yield  
themselves to  
Sir Edward.

For thai couth se quhar na succour

Suld cum to releif thame, that thai

[Shortly] swa tretit, and on a day

The castell till him ȝalde thai fre

Till sauf thame thair liffis ; & he 260

Held thame full weill [all] his cunnand.

The castell tuk he in his hand,

RUBRIC from C. H has—How King Robert wan the Iles to hand, And gart his shippes saile on dry land.

243. *the mawndwele*] maundwill E ; Mandewile H.

244. *falsat*] falset. H has—Bot wit ye well that fraud and guile.

245. *cuir*] all wayis E ; alwayes H.

246. *wes*] was H ; is E. *by*] be.

249. *god*] Christ H. *for*] H om.

250. *Fra* EH] Fra the C. *vem*] wem E ; weme H.

251. *sic*] sa EH.

253. *than*] els H ; E om. [*thar* E] there H ; war C (*but see next line*).

255. *in-till—hour*] in sik a fray that

hour H ; in-till sa gret E (*the rest of the line being blank*).

256. *For*] That H. *quhar na*] na where H.

257. *releif thame*] relieue them H ; releyff E. *thai*] so H ; and E. *thai*] day H.

258. [*Shortly*] C om. Tretyt, & till a schort day E ; That shortly then treitted they H.

259. *thai*] E om. To yeeld the Castell to him free H.

260. *thair liffis*] lyff and lym. To saue their liues, and certes he H.

261. [*all* H] CE om.

And wittalit it weill, and has set  
 A gud wardane, it for to get ;  
 And a quhile thair than restit he. 265  
 Of him no mair now spek will we,  
 Bot till king Robert will we gang,  
 That we haf [left] vnspekyn of lang.  
 Quhen he convoyit had to the se  
 [Fol. 51. E.] His brothir Eduard and his menȝhe, 270  
 [Fol. 115 b. C.] \*With his schippes he maid him ȝar, 271\*  
 \*In-till the Ilis for till fare.  
 He takes Walter \*Walter Steward with hym tuk he,  
 Stewart with \*His mawch, and with him gret menȝhe ; 274\*  
 him. And othir men of gret nobillay.  
 He goes to "the Till the Tarbard thai held thar way  
 Tarbard." In galayis, ordanit for thair fair :  
 He has to draw Bot thame worthit draw thar schippes thar.  
 his ships over- And a myle wes betuix the seis, 275  
 land for a mile. And that wes lownyt all with treis.  
 The kyng his schippis thar gert draw,  
 As the wind was And for the vynd can stoutly blaw  
 strong, he has Apon thar bak, as thai vald ga,  
 some sails set, He gert men rapis and mastis ta, 280  
 And set thame in the schippis hye,  
 And salys to the toppis te,  
 And gert men gang thar-by drawand.

- 
263. *it*] E om. *has*] in it H. 272. *Till*] To EH. *the tarbard*]  
 264. *get*] so CH ; kept (*wrongly*) E. the Tarbarts H ; tarbart E. *held*]  
 265. *thair than*] tharin. *a—than*] tooke H.  
 there a whyle H. 274. *draw—schippes*] their ships  
 267. *till*] to EH. draw H.  
 268. [*left* EH] C om. 276. *And*] Bot. *wes*] is H. *lownyt*]  
 269. *convoyit had*] had conwoyit E ; lompnyt E ; loned H.  
 had conuoyed H. 278. *vynd*] wynd. *can*] couth.  
 270. *and*] with H. 279. *vald*] wald E ; can H.  
 271\*—274\*. *Not* in E ; *but found* 280. *rapis—ta*] Masts, and rapes  
 in CH. ma H.  
 274\*. *mawch*] Maich H. 282. *And*] so EH ; And *the* C.  
 271. *nobillay*] noblay EH. *te*] tey E ; tie H.

which assist the progress of the ships.	The vynd thame helpit, that wes blawand, Swa that, in-till a litill spaß, Thar flot all weill our-drawyn waß.	285
When the men of the Isles hear of this, they are amazed.	And quhen thai that in the Ilis war Herd tell how the [gud] kyng had thar Gert schippis with the salys ga Out-our betuix the Tarbartis twa, Thai war abasit all vtrelly.	290
There was an old prophecy, that whoever should make ships sail there should conquer all the Isles.	For thai wist throu ald prophesy That he that suld ger schippis swa Betuix the seis [with] salis ga Sald vyn the Ilis swa till hand, That nane with strynth suld him withstand. Tharfor thai come all to the kyng; Wes nane that withstude his biddynge, Outaken Iohnē of Lornē alane. Bot weill soyne eftir he wes tañe,	295 300
All submit, and John of Lorn is taken,	And presentit wes to the kyng. And thai that war of his leding, That to the king had brokyn fay, War all ded, and distroyit away.	
and put in prison, first at Dumbarton, afterwards at Lochleven.	The king this Iohn of Lorn haß tañe, And send soyne him till Dumbertañe, A quhile in presone thair till be,	305

284. *vynd*] wynd.285. *in-till*] into H; in E.286. *weill*] there H; E *om.*288. [*gud* E] good H; C *om.* *the*  
—*had*] that the good King H.289. *Gert*] Gert his E; Gart his H.  
*the*] EH *om.*290. *the*] E *om.* *tarbartis*] mis-  
written *tarbatis* C; *Tabarts* H; *tar-*  
*bart* E.291. *all*] *sa.*294. *the*] *so* CH; *thai* E. [*with*  
EH] but C (*an obvious error*).295. *vyn*] wyne.298. *that*] E *om.* *Wes*—*withstude*]

Durst nane gainestand H.

300. *he wes*] wes he.301. *presentit*] presented H; pre-  
sent E. *wes*] *rycht* E; right H.303. *to*] till.304. *ded*—*distroyit*] destroyed and  
dead H.305. EH *put* The king *after* lorn.306. *send*] *so* CE; sent H. *soyne*  
—*till*] hym furth to EH.307. *thair*] for H. *till*] to EH.

And to Louchlevin syne send wes he,  
 [Fol. 116. C.] Quhar he wes lang tyne in festnyng ;  
 Thair-in, I trow, he maid endyng. 310  
 The king takes  
 his pleasure. The king, quhen all the Iles war  
 Brocht till his liking, leß and mar,  
 Still all that sesoun thar duelt he  
 At hunting, and gammyne, and gle.

**The battale betulx the lord Dowglass and the  
 lord Nevell of England.**

Q when the king, on this maner, 315  
 Dantit the Iles, as I tell her,  
 The gud schir Iames of Dowglass  
 In-till the forest duelland waß,  
 Defendand worthely the land.  
 At Berwick, at  
 that time, was  
 one Eumond  
 de Calion, a  
 Gascon. That tyme in Berwik wes wonnand 320  
 Ewmond de Calion, a Gascoun,  
 That wes a knycht of gret renoune ;  
 And in-till Gascone, his cuntre,  
 Lord of gret senzeroy wes he.  
 He had than Berwik in keping, 325  
 And maid ane preue gaddering,  
 And gat him a gret cumpany  
 Of wicht men armyt iolely,

- 
308. *And*] Syne H ; Syn E. *syne*] daunted H.  
 EH *om.* *send*] sent H.  
 309. *lang tyme*] quhill.  
 310. EH *put* Thair-in *after* he maid.  
 313. *Still*] EH *om.* *duelt*] duellyt.  
 314. *and—and*] gamyn, and at E ; and at game, and H.  
 RUBRIC *from* C. H *has*—Lord Dowglas with battell plaine, Reskewed the Pray, and brought againe.  
 315. *Quhen*] Quhill. *on*] apon E ; vpon H.  
 316. *Dantit*] Dawntyt E ; Had  
 319. *worthely*] doughtely H.  
 320. *wonnand*] duelland.  
 321. *Ewmond*] Edmound EH. *de calion*] de calow E ; of Calhow H.  
 322. H *has*—He was a Knight of great Renoun.  
 324. *Lord*] A lord C ; *but* EH *omit* A. *senzeroy*] senzowry E ; Senyeory H.  
 325. *He*] And H. *than*] then H ; E *om.*  
 326. *And*] He H. *ane*] A.



He harries the lower end of Teviotdale.	And the nethir end of Tevydail He prayit doune till him all haill, And of the Merß aȝe gret party; Syne toward Berwik went in hy.	330
Sir Adam of Gordon tells Douglas of this;	Schir Adam of Gordoune, that than Wes becummyne a Scottis man, Saw thame swa drif away thar fe, And wend thai had beyn quheyn, for he *Saw bot the fleand scaill, perfay, *And thame that sesyt in the pray. *Than till schir Iames of Douglaß *In-to gret hye the way he tais, *And tald how Ynglis men thair pray *Had tane, and syne went thar way *Toward Berwik with all thar fee,	335
and says the English are few in number.	*And said, thai quheyn war; and gif he Wald speid him, he suld weill lichtly Wyn thame, and reskew [all] the ky. *Schir Iames rycht soyne gaf his assent *Till follow thame, and furth is went	344*
[Fol. 116 b. C.]	*Bot with the men that he had thair, *And met hym by the gat but mair.	345*
Douglas pursues the English in haste.	*Thai followit thame in full gret hy, *And com weill neir thame hastily;	350*

329. *And*] All H. *tevydail*] tewi-  
dale E; Teuidail H.

330. *doune till*] into (*sic*) H.

334. *a*] EH *om.*

335. *swa drif*] dryf sua E; driue  
sa H.

336. *quheyn*] quhone. *had—for*]  
wheene were for that H.

337\*—344\*. *Not in* E; *found in*  
CH.

337\*. *fleand scaill*] fleeing skail H.

338\*. *sesyt*] seejed H. *in* CH]  
*perhaps it should be on.*

339\*. *Than*] Then H. *till*] to H.

340\*. *In-to*] In full H.

342\*. *went—way*] were went away  
H.

344\*. *quheyn*] wheene H.

338. [*all* EH] C *om.*

345\*—356\*. *Not in* E; *found in*  
CH; *except* 347\*, 348\*, *which* H  
*omits.*

345\*. *rycht*] H *om.*

346\*. *Till*] To H.

347\*, 348\*. *In* C *only.*

350\*. *com*] came H.

	*For, or thai mycht thame fully se,	
	*Thai come weill neir vith thair menȝe.	
	*And than bath the forreouris and the scaill	
	*In-till a childrome knyt all haill,	
	*And wes a richt fair cumpany.	
The English drive the cows on in front, and protect the rear.	*Befor thame gert thai driff the ky	356*
	With knavis and swanys, that na mycht	
	Had for till stand in feild to ficht.	340
	The laiff behynd thame maid a scaill.	
	The Dowglass saw thair purposȝ haill,	
	And saw thame of sa gud cowyne,	
	And at thai war sa mony syne,	
Douglas finds the English host is double his own,	That ay for aȝe of his war twa.	345
	"Lordingis," he said, "sen it is swa	
	That we haff chassit on sic maner,	
	That we now cummyn ar so ner	
	That we may nocht eschewe the ficht	
	Bot gif we fowly tak the flicht,	350
but encourages his men,	Lat ilk man on his luf than meyne,	
	And how he mony tyme has beyne	
	In grat thrang, and come weill away.	

351\*. *thame*] H om.

352\*. *come*] came H.

353\*. *And*] Bot H. *the forreouris*] forray H. (N.B. The line would scan better by omitting *And*.)

354\*. *In-till—knyt*] Were knit into a sop H.

355\*—340. H *transposes the lines, and has—*

But Knaues and Swaines that had na might,

For to stand into field to fight,

Before them gart they driue the Ky,

They were a right faire company.

339. *knavis*] knawis.

340. *till*] to. *to*] &.

341. *laiff—thame*] lave behynd thaim

E; H *has*—And all togidder in a staill. *maid*] thai maid C; but EH omit *thai. scaill*] may be read either *scaill* or *staill*; Jamieson *prints* stale; Hart *has* staill. But see l. 353\*, where H *has* scaill.

342. *purposȝ*] lump all EH.

343. *cowyne*] conuyne H.

344. *at*] saw E; that H.

345. *ay*] thai E; they H.

347. *on*] of.

348. *now—ar*] are now commen II.

350. *tak*] ta.

351. *ilk man*] ilkane. *on*] of H. *luf*] life H. *luf than*] lemman. *meyne*] mene E; meene H.

352. *he—has*] we mony time haue H.

353. *come weill*] weill cummyn.

	Think we till do richt swa this day ;	
	And tak we of this furde heir-by	355
and determines to give battle.	Our avantage, for in gret hy Thai sall cum on vs for to ficht. Set we than will, [and] strynth, and mycht For till meyt thame richt hardely."	
	And with that word, full hastely,	360
	He [hes] displayit his baner ;	
His foes see his men are but few, and attack him vigorously.	For his fayis war cumand neir, That, quhen thai saw he wes so quhoyne, Thai thocht vyth thame soyne till haf doñe, And assemblit full hardely.	365
	Thair mycht men se ficht fellely, And richt aine cruell melle mak, And mony strakis giff and tak. The Douglass thair weill hard wes stad, Bot the gret hardyment that he had	370
[Fol. 117. C.] [Fol. 51A. E.] The Scottish host is hardly bestead.	Confortit his men apon sic wiß, That no man thocht on cowardiß ; Bot faucht so fast with all thar mayne, That thai feill of thair fayis has slayne. And thouch thai wer be full fer ma Than thai, 3eit vre demanyt thaim swa,	375
Yet Sir Eumond is slain,	That Ewmond de Caleone wes ded Richt in that ilk fechting-sted.	

354. *till*] to EH. *this day*] so H ;  
to day E.

355. *furde*] Foord H.

358. [*and* EH] C om.

359. *till*] to EH.

361. [*hes* H] CE om.

363. *Thai*] And H. *he wes*] they  
were H. *quhoyne*] wheene H.

364. *Thai—till*] Thocht thai suld  
with thaim sone E. *vyth—done*] all  
was their awne bedcene H.

366. Thar men mycht se men fecht  
felly E. *se*] see them H.

367. *richt aine*] A rycht EH.

369. *weill*] right H.

371. *Confortit*] Comforted H ; Com-  
fort E. *his men*] them H. *apon—*  
*wiss*] on sic awyss EH.

375. *wer—fer*] be weill fer way E ;  
were full mony H.

376. *vre*] euyr. *vre—thaim*] them  
they demained H.

377. *Ewmond*] Edmound E ; Ed-  
mund H. *Caleone*] cailow E ; Callok H.

378. *fechting*] fechtyn. Through  
Dowglas richt in that ilke stead H.

and all his men flee.	And all the lave, fra he wes doñe, War planly thair discumfit soñe ;	380
The Scotch recover their cattle.	And thai that chassit sum haß slayñe, And turnyt the prayis haill agañe. The hardest fechtig forsuth this wes That euir the gud lord of Dowglaß Wes in, as of sa few menþhe.	385
Had not Douglas killed the leader, his men would all have been slain.	For, had nocht beyne his gret bounte That slew thair chiftañe in the ficht, His men till ded had all beyne dicht. He had in-till custum all-way, Quhen euir he com till hard assay,	390
He often won by killing the enemies' captain.	To press hym, the chiftañe to sla ; And hap him fell, that he did swa ; That gert him victor haue feill siß. Quhen schir Ewmond apon this wiß Wes ded, this gud lord of Douglaß	395
	Till the forest his way he taiß. His fayis gretly can hym dreid ; The word weill fer sprang of this deid, Swa that in Yngland neir thar-by Men spak of it weill comonly.	400
Sir Robert de	Schir Robert de Nevell in that tyde	

- 
379. *he*] this H.  
380. *planly*] all haill H. *thair*] EH om.  
382. *haill*] so H ; all E.  
383. *fechtig*] feghting H ; fycht E. *forsuth*] H om.  
384. *of*] H om.  
385. *as*] and H.  
386. *had nocht*] nocht had.  
387. *the*] that.  
388. *till—all*] had all to dede.  
392. *hap—fell*] her fell hap. H *is corrupt*.  
393. *victor haue*] haff wictour.  
394. *Ewmond*] Edmund E ; Ed-  
mund H.  
395. *this*] the. *of*] H om.  
396. *Till*] To EH. *way he*] wayis.  
397. *can*] gan.  
398. *weill—sprang*] sprang weile fer E ; sprang far H. *this*] his EH. *deid*] manhead H.  
400. *weill comonly*] right commonly H ; commonaly E.  
*Here H inserts a rubric—How Iames of Dowglas slew Newel, That vowed to meete him in battell.*  
401. *de*] EH om. *Nevell*] Nevile E ; Newell H. *in*] at H ; E om.

Neville dwelt then at Berwick,	Wonnyt at Berwyk neir besyde The marchis, quhar the lord Dowglaß In the forest reparande was,	
and is envious of Douglas's fame.	And had at him full gret invy, For he him saw so manfully Mak his boundis ay mar & mar. He herd the folk that with him war Spek of the lorde Dowglaßis mycht, And how forsy he wes in fycht, And how hym oft fell [far] fortouñe.	405      410
[Fol. 117 & C.] He says that, if he can get the chance, he will fight with Douglas.	He wrethit hym thar-at all soyne, And said, "quhat weyn 3he, is thar nañe That euir is worth bot hym alañe? 3e set hym as he war but peir : Bot I avow, befor 3ow heir, Gif euir he cum in-till this land, He sall fynd me neir at his hand. And giff I euir his baneir May se displayit apon wer, I sall assemblill on hym but dout, All thouch 3he hald him neuir sa stout."	   415      420
News of this boast comes to Douglas, who says he will soon show him- self.	Of this avow soyne bodword was Brocht till schir Iames of Douglaß, That said, "giff he will hald his nicht, I sall do swa, he sall haf sicht Of me, and of my cumpany 3eit, or oucht lang, weill neir hym by." His retennew than gaderit he, That war gud men of gret bounte,	   425      430

403. <i>marchis</i> ] march.	EH. <i>hym—fell</i> ] he fell oft.
406. <i>him saw</i> ] saw him. <i>manfully</i> manlyly.	412. <i>hym</i> ] E <i>om.</i> <i>all</i> ] full H.
407. E <i>puts</i> ay before his.	414. <i>hym</i> ] he EH.
409. <i>douglassis</i> ] douglas.	416. <i>I</i> ] Ik.
410. <i>forsy he</i> ] he forsy E; he forcie H.	418. <i>me</i> ] E <i>om.</i>
411. <i>far</i> ] <i>miswritten</i> sar C; fayr	419. <i>I</i> ] Ik.
	424. <i>till</i> ] to EH.
	427. <i>of</i> ] E <i>om.</i>

	And to the marchis in gud aray Apon aȝe nycht he tuk the way ;	
He goes to Berwick, and displays his banner there.	Swa that, in the mornynge airly, He wes, with all his cumpany, Befor Berwyk ; and thair he maid Men to display his baner braid. And of his menȝhe sum send he For till burne townys twa or thre, And bad thame soyn agane thame speid ; Swa that on hand, gif thar com neyd,	435 440
Sir Robert Neville, seeing Douglas's banner,	Thai mycht be for the ficht redy. The Nevell, that wist werraly That Dowglaß cummyn wes so neir, And saw all braid stand his baneir, Than with the folk that with hym war— And he had a gret menȝhe thar, For all the gud of that cuntre In-till that tyme with hym had he, Swa that he with hym thar had then Weill may than wes the Scottis men—	445 450
leads his men up a hill.	He held his way vp till aȝe hill, And said, "lordyngis, it war my will Till mak end of the gret deray That Dowglass makis vs ilk day. Bot me think it speidfull that we	455
[Fol. 118. C.]	Abyde, quhill his men scalit be Throu the cuntre, to tak the pray.	
He waits for Douglas to approach.		

- 
431. *to*] till. *marchis*] march EH. 450. *may*] so CE ; ma H. *wes*] war.  
 432. *ane*] A. 451. *ane*] A.  
 433. *in*] in-to. 453. *Till*] To EH.  
 437. *send*] sent. 454. *makis*] mayis E ; does to H.  
 438. *till*] to EH. *burne*] bryn. 456. *quhill* — *scalit*] till that his  
 440. *on*] at H. Menye H.  
 442. *nevell*] Newell E ; Newell H. 457. *Throu* — *the*] Skailled all, to  
*werraly*] wittily. take our H. *the* (2)] thair.  
 446. *And*] written Ande C.  
 449. *with* — *thar*] thar with him.

	Than fersly schute on hym we may, And we sall haue thame at our will."	
	Thus all thai gaiff consent thar-till, And on the hill abaid huvande.	460
	The men fast gadderit of the land, And drew till hym in full gret hy.	
Douglas cannot wait,	The Douglaß than, that wes worthy, Thought it wes foly mair till byde.	465
but rides towards the hill.	Toward the hill than can he ryde ; And quhan the Nevell saw at thai Vald nocht paß furth to the forray,	
Neville sees that a fight is near.	[Bot] pressit till thame with thar mycht, He vist veill than that thai vald ficht.	470
	And till his menzhe can he say, [Fol. 52. E.] " Lordingis, now hald we furth our vay ; Heir is the flour of this cuntre, And ma than thai alsua ar we.	
He encourages his men.	Assemmyll we [than] hardely ; For Douglaß with 3on 3emanry Sall haf no mycht till vs, perfay."	475
	Than in a frusche assemblit thai.	
The fight.	Thair mycht men heir the speris brast, And men dyng apon othir fast, And blude brist out at voundis vyde.	480
	Thai faucht fast apon athir syde ;	

458. *schute*] schout E; set H. *hym*] thaim E; them H.

460. *Thus*] Than. *consent*] assent EH.

461. *huvande*] howand E; houand H.

466. *can*] gan.

467. *Newell*] Newill E; Newell H. *ar*] that EH.

468. *Vald*] Wald.

469. [*Bot* EH] He (*wrongly*) C. *till*] to EH.

470. *vist*] wyst. 2

471. *can*] gan.

473. *this*] the.

474. *ma*] so CH; may E.

475. *Assemmyll*] Assemblill. [*than*] thame so C; then EH.

476. *3emanry*] 3hwmanny E; Yemanry H.

479. *Thair*] Than E; That H.

480. *men—apon*] ilkane ding on E;

ilkane dang on H.

481. *voundis*] woundis.

	For athir party can thame payne Till put thair fais on-bak agane.	
Neville and Douglas fight hand to hand.	The lordis of Nevell and Douglaß, Quhen that the fichting fellest was, Met to-giddir richt in the preß. Betuix thame than gret bargañe wes; Thai faucht felly with all thair maucht, Gret rowtis athir till othir raucht.	485
Douglas was the stronger; 14	Bot Douglaß sterkar wes, I nicht, And mair vsit alsua to ficht, And he set hert, and will alsua, For till delyuer hym of his fa ;	490
[Fol. 118 b. C.] and slays Neville.	Quhill, at the last, with mekill mayne Throu forß the Nevell haß he slayne. Than his ensenße he can hye cry, And on the laiff so hardely He ruschit, with all his menße, That in-[till] schort tym men mycht se Thair fayis tak on thame the flicht ; And thai thame chassit with all thar mycht.	495
The English are soon put to flight.	Schir Ralf the Nevell, in the chaß, And the baroun of Hiltoun waß Takin, and othir of mekill mycht, That wes slayn thair in-to the ficht, That worthy in thar tyme had beyn. And quhen the feld wes clengit cleyn, Swa that thair fayis euirilkane	500
Sir Ralph de Neville and the Baron of Hilton are taken.		505

- 
- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 483. <i>can</i> ] gan.                        | 497. <i>he—hye</i> ] hey gan E; can he H.         |
| 484. <i>Till</i> ] To EH.                     | 498. <i>laiff</i> ] lave EH.                      |
| 486. <i>that</i> ] at.                        | 499. <i>all</i> ] E om.                           |
| 487, 488. H omits.                            | 500. <i>in-till</i> E] in CH.                     |
| 490. <i>till</i> ] to H; E om.                | 501. <i>on thame</i> ] thaim to.                  |
| 491. <i>sterkar</i> ] starkar. I] Ik.         | 503. <i>ralf</i> ] Rawff E; Ralph H. <i>the</i> ] |
| 494. <i>till</i> ] to EH.                     | E om. <i>Nevell</i> ] Newill E; Newell H.         |
| 496. <i>Throu</i> ] Off E; Of H. <i>the</i> ] | <i>the chass</i> ] that place H.                  |
| then. <i>nevell</i> ] Newill E; Newell H.     | 506. <i>the</i> ] that EH.                        |



Then Douglas ravages the country,  
 War slayn, [or] chassit away, or tane, 510  
 Than gert he forray all the land,  
 And sessit all that euir he fand,  
 And brynt the townys in thar vay ;  
 Syne haill and feir haym cummyn ar thai.  
 and divides the spoil among his men.  
 The pray soyne emang his menzhe, 515  
 Eftir thar meritis, delit he,  
 And held no thing till his behuf.  
 Such deeds endeared him to his men. Sic dedis aucht till ger men luf  
 Thair lorde, and swa thai did, perfay.  
 He tretit thame so wißly ay, 520  
 And with so mekill luf alsua,  
 And sic a countenans vald ma  
 Of thair deid, that the mast coward  
 Stoutar he maid than a libard ;  
 With cherising thusgat maid he 525  
 His men wicht and of gret bounte.

When Neville and Eumond are thus slain,  
 the dread of the Lord Douglas spreads far and wide.  
 When Nevell thus wes brought to ground,  
 And of Calzeoun schir Ewmond,  
 The [dreid] of the lorde Dowglaß,  
 And his renoun, swa scalit waß 530  
 Throu-out the marchis of Yngland,  
 That all that war thar-in duelland  
 Thai dred him as the deuill of hell.

510. [or EH] C om.

512. *he*] *thai*.513. *the*] E om.514. *haym*] E om.515. *pray*] *prayis*. *soyne*] EH om.516. *delit*] *delt* E; *dealt* hes H.518. *till*] to EH.

522. *a countenans*] a - wansement.  
*sic—countenans*] countenance that he H.

524. *Stoutar — maid*] He maid  
*stoutar* EH. *libard*] *libart* E; Leo-

pard H.

527. *Nevell*] *Newill* E; *Newell* H.

528. *calzeoun*] *Cailow* E; *Calhow*  
H. *schir*] *auld schyr*. *Ewmond*]  
*Edmond* EH.

529. [*dreid*] *drede* E; *dread* H;  
*deid* C; *see l.* 533. *the*] the good H.  
*lorde*] *lord* of.

532. *war thar-in*] *thar war in*.  
*duelland*] *dwelland* H; *wonnand* E.

533. *Thai*] EH om. *the*] the fell  
E; the selfe H.

The English  
dread him like  
the devil.

English women,  
to frighten their  
children, say  
they will give  
them to the  
black Douglas.  
[Fol. 119. C.]

He may now  
dwell in peace.

We return to Sir  
Edward at Car-  
rickfergus.

And 3eit haf I herd oftsið tell,  
That he so gretly dred wes than,  
That quhen wiffis vald thar childir ban,  
Thai wald with rycht ane angry face  
Beteche thame to the blak Dowglaß ;  
\*For, with thair taill, he wes mair fell  
\*Than wes ony deuill in hell.

Throu his gret vorschip and bounte  
Swa with his fayis dred wes he,  
That thame grevit till heir his name.

He may at eiß now duell at hame  
A quhile, for, I trow, he sall noch  
With fayis all a quhile be socht.  
Now let him in the forest be ;  
Of him no mair now spek will we.

Bot of schir Eduarde the worthy,  
That with all his gude cheuelry  
Wes at Cragfergus 3eit liand,  
Till spek mair will we tak on hand.

535

539\*

540\*

540

545

550

534. *I*] Ik.536. *thar*] E *om.*537. *with rycht*] *rycht* with E; euen  
with H.538. *Beteche*] Betake H.539\*, 540\*. *In C only.*541. *grevit*] growyt E; groowed H.  
*till*] to EH.544. *all—quhile*] mony dayes H.546. *Of*] And of H. *no—spek*]*spek* now no mar E; speake na mair  
H.548. *gude*] EH *om.*549. *at*] in.550. *Till*] To EH. *will we*] we  
will EH.

# [BOOK XVI.]

When Sir Edward had defeated Richard of Clare,	Quhen schir Eduard, as I tald air, Had discumfit Richard of Clair, And of Irland all the barnage Thriß, throu his worthy vassalage,	
and returned to Carrickfergus,	And syne with all his men of mayne Till Cragfergus wes cummyn agayn, The gud erll of Murreff, Thomas,	5
Sir Thomas Murray returned towards Scot- land,	Tuk leiff in Scotland for till paß ; And he hym levit with a [gruching], And [syne] him chargit to the king Till pray him specialy that he Suld cum in Irland him to se. For, war thai bath in-to [that] land, Thai suld fynd nane suld thaim vithstand.	10
where he soon arrives.	The erll furth than his way has tañe, And till his schippes is he gañe, And salit out weill our the se ;	15
[Fol. 52 <sup>b</sup> . E.]	In Scotland soyne arivit he.	

1. RUBRIC *in* H—Here past in Ire-  
land the Noble King To his brother  
with great gadding. *I*] Ik. *tald*] *said* EH.

7. *murreff*] Murray Sir H.

8. *till*] to EH.

9. *with a*] without H. [*gruching*  
E] grudging H ; grunching C.

10. [*syne* EH] C *om.*

11. *Till*] To EH.

12. *Suld—in*] Wald come in H ;  
Cum in-till E.

13. [*that* EH] the C.

14. *vithstand*] withstand.

16. *schippes*] schipping.

17. *out weill*] weill out E ; well out  
H.

18. *In*] In-till.

<p>He tells the king about his brother's deeds,</p> <p>and says that Sir Edward wishes him to go to Ireland.</p> <p>[Fol. 119 &amp; C.] King Robert makes Walter Stewart and James Douglas wardens in his absence,</p> <p>and goes to Carrickfergus.</p>	<p>Syne to the king he vent in hy ; And he resaut hym gladsumly, And sperit of his brotheris fair, And of Iourneis that he had thair ; And he him tald all but lesyng. Quhen the king had left spering, His charge to the [gud] king tald he. And he said, "he wald blithly se His brothir and als all the effeire Of that cuntre and of that were." A gret menȝhe than gaderit he. And twa lordis of gret bounte, The tañe the Steward Walter waß, The tothir Iames of Dowglas, Vardanis in [his] absens maid he, For till manteym weill the cuntre. Syne to the se he tuk his vay. [And] at Lowchryan in Galloway He schippit, with all his menȝhe ; Till Cragfergus soyne cummy n is he. Schir Eduard of his com wes blith, And went down for to meit him swith, And velcummyt hym with gladsum cher ; Sa did he all that with him wer, And specialy the erll Thomaß</p>	<p>20</p> <p>25</p> <p>30</p> <p>35</p> <p>40</p>
--	---	---

- 
- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>19. <i>to</i>] till. <i>vent</i>] went.<br/>20. <i>he</i>] E <i>om.</i><br/>21. <i>brotheris</i>] brodyr.<br/>22. <i>he</i>] thai EH.<br/>24. <i>had left</i>] left had EH. <i>spering</i>] the spering E ; his speaking H.<br/>25. [<i>gud</i> E] CH <i>om.</i><br/>27. <i>als all</i>] also H ; se E. <i>effeire</i>] offer.<br/>28. <i>of that</i>] what it H. <i>that were</i>] thar wer.<br/>31. <i>The tane</i>] The ane H. <i>the—waller</i>] Walter Stewart H.</p> | <p>32. <i>tothir</i>] other H.<br/>33. <i>Vardanis</i>] Wardanys. [<i>his</i> EH] C <i>om.</i><br/>34. <i>till</i>] to EH. <i>manteym</i>] main-<br/>tane H.<br/>35. <i>his</i>] the.<br/>36. [<i>And</i> EH] C <i>om.</i> <i>lowchryan</i>] lochriane E ; Lochreane H.<br/>38. <i>Till</i>] To EH.<br/>40. <i>for</i>] E <i>om.</i><br/>41. <i>velcummyt</i>] welcumyt.<br/>42. <i>he</i>] so CH ; thai (<i>wrongly</i>) E.</p> |
|---|--|

Of Murreff, that his nevo was.  
 Syne to the castell went thai thar ; 45  
 He maid thame mekill fest and far.  
 Thai sudiornyt thair dayis thre  
 In gret myrth and in rialte.

They feast for  
 3 days.

**How king Robert the Bruce passit in Irland with  
 his brothir Eduard.**

When King Robert had been  
 3 days in Ire-  
 land, 50  
 Kyng Robert, apon [thiskyn] wiß,  
 In-till Irland arivit is ;  
 And quhen in Cragfergus had he  
 With his men sudiornyt dais thre,  
 Thai tuk to consell that thai vald  
 With all thar folk thar vays hald  
 Throu all Irland, fra end to othir. 55  
 Schir Eduard than, the kingis brothir,  
 Befor in the avaward raid.  
 The kyng him-self the reirward maid,  
 That had, in-till his cumpany,  
 The erll Thomas, that ves vorthy. 60  
 Thair wayis furthwarde haf thai tañe,  
 And soyne ar passit Inderwillane.  
 This wes in the moneth of May,  
 Quhen byrdis syngis on the spray,  
 Melland thair notys with syndry sowñe 65

they all set out  
 to explore the  
 country.

King Robert  
 commands the  
 rearguard.

Description  
 of May.

45. *thar*] there H ; *thar* or *yar* E ;  
 yar J.

46. *He*] And EH. *fest—far*] feast  
 and fare H.

47. *sudIornyt*] sojournt E ; so-  
 iournde H ; and so in 52. *thair*]  
 therein H.

48. *In gret*] And that in. *gret—in*]  
 mirth, solace, and H. *in rialte*] royal-  
 tie H ; Iolite E.

49. *apon*] now upon H. *[thiskyn*  
 E] this CH.

53. *vald*] wald.

54. *vayis*] wayis.

55. *to*] till.

57. *avaward*] awaward E ; Vangard  
 H.

58. *reirward*] Reeregard H.

61. *furthwarde*] forward H ; south-  
 wart E.

62. *Inderwillane*] euerilkane H ; E  
 om.

63. RUBRIC in H—Here faught  
 King Robert in Ireland, With 5 thou-  
 sand against 40 thousand.

64. *on the*] in ilk E ; on ilk H.

65. *syndry*] seymly EH.

	For softnes of that sweit sesounē ; And lewis on the branchis spredis, And blomys bricht besyd thame bredis, And feldis florist ar with flowris, Weill savourit, of seir colowris, And all thing worthis blith and gay, Quhen that this gud king tuk his vay To ryd furthward, as I said are. The vardane than, Richard of Clare,	
Fields and flowers.	Wist the kyng wes arivit swa, And wist that he schupe for till ta His way toward the south cuntre. Of all [Ireland] assemblit he Till him a full gret cheuelry Of squyaris, burgeß, and 3emanry, Quhill he had neir fourty thousand. Bot he vald nocht 3eit tak on hand With all his fayis in feld to ficht, But vmbethought him of a slicht ; That he, with all that gret men3he, Vald in a vode enbuschit be, All preuely besyde the way, Quhar at thair fayis suld paß away, And let the vaward paß fer by,	70
[Fol. 120. C.] Richard of Clare assembles 40,000 men ;		75
yet is afraid of open battle.		80
He lays an ambush in a wood,		85

66. *that*] the EH.  
67. *lewis*] levys E; Leaves H. on] of EH.  
68. *besyd*] about H.  
69. *florist ar*] strowed are H; ar strowyt E.  
70. *savourit*] sawerand E; sauour- ing H.  
73. *furthward*] southwart E; South- ward H.  
76. *that*] H om. *for till*] him for to H; him to E.  
78. *Of*] And of. [*Irland* EH] Ing- land C.  
79. *Till—gret*] Bath burges and E; Baith Burgesses and H.  
80. *Of—burgess*] And hobilleris and EH.  
84. *Bul*] Bot he. *a*] ane.  
86. *Vald*] Wald. *a*] E om. *vode*] wod.  
87. *All*] And.  
88. *as*] that. *pass*] E om. H *has*—Where their faes behouued to ga.  
89. *vaward*] awaward E; Vangard H.

intending to  
attack their  
rearguard.

And syne assemmyll hardely 90

On the reirward, with all thar men.

Thai did as thai deuisit then ;

In a wode thai enbuschit wer.

The Scottis hoost raid by thame nere ;

For thai na schawing of thame maid. 95

Sir Edward rides  
past the place  
of ambush.

Schir Eduard weill fer forrourth raid

With thame that war of his menjhe,

To the reirward na tent tuk he.

And schir Richard of Clare in hy,

Quhen schir Edward wes passit by, 100

Send wicht zhomen that veill couth schut,

To bikkir the reirward apon fut.

Two archers  
shoot at the  
Scottish host.

Than twa of thame that send furth war

At the wode-syde thame bykkirrit thar,

And schot emang the Scottis men. 105

The king, that had thar with him then

V thousand wicht and ek hardy,

Saw thai twa sa abaundonly

Schut emang thaim, and cum so neir ;

King Robert  
perceives that  
some stratagem  
is intended,  
and keeps his  
men back.

He vist richt weill, withouten weir, 110

That thai weill neir [suppowal] had.

Tharfor a bydding has he mad,

That no man [suld] be so hardy

Till prik till thame ; but sarraly

Ryde reddy ay in-till battale, 115

Till defend gif men vald assale.

90. *assemmyll*] assembl.

91. *Reirward*] Reeregard H.

93. *a*] ane.

94. *hoost*] ost E ; men H.

95. *For*] Bot EH.

96. *fer forrourth*] foorth before H.

98. *To*] so EH ; And to C.

101. *wicht*] lycht E ; light H.

*zhomen*] zomen. *veill*] weill.

105, 109. *emang*] amang.

107. *V*] Weill v E ; Well neere  
fue H. *ek*] EH om.

111. *weill*] rycht. *suppowal*] sup-  
powall E ; swm power C ; some power  
H ; see l. 139.

113. [*suld*] sould H ; sall E ; C  
om.

114. *Till*] To EH. *till*] at EH.

115. *in-till*] in-to EH.

116. *Till*] To EH. *vald*] wald.

	"For we sall soyne, I vndirta,"	
	He said, "haf for till do vith ma."	
[Fol. 120 b. C.]	Bot schir Colyñe Cammell, that ner	
[Fol. 53. E.]	Wes by, quhar thai twa ʒhomen wer	120
But Sir Colin Campbell presses forward,	Schutand emang thame hardely,	
and slays one of the archers.	Priket on thame in full gret hy,	
	And soyne the tañe he haß our-tane,	
	And with his sper him soyne haß slayñe.	
	The tothir turnyt and schot agayñe,	125
The other kills Sir Colin's horse.	And at a schot his hors has slayñe.	
	Vith that the king come hastely,	
	And in his gret malancoly,	
King Robert knocks Sir Colin down for dis- obedience,	With añe trunsiouñe in[till] his nave,	
	To schir Colyne sic dusche he gave,	130
	That he dynnyt on his arsouñe.	
	The king bad smertly tyt hym douñe,	
	Bot othir lordis that war [him] by	
	Avisit the king in sum party.	
and says that such disobe- dience is full of danger.	He said, "the breking of bydding	135
	Micht cauß be of discomfiting.	
	Weyn ʒhe ʒon rebaldis durst assale	
	Vs so neir in-till [our] battale,	
	Bot gif thai had suppowale neir?	
	I wat richt weill, forouten weir,	140

117. *I*] Ik.  
 118. *till*] to EH.  
 119. *cammell*] Cambell E; Camp-  
 bell H.  
 120. *ʒhomen*] ʒhumen E; Yemen H.  
 123. *tane*] ane H.  
 124. *his*] the E; a H.  
 128. *in—gret*] in-till his E; into  
 his H.  
 129. *ane*] A. *intill* E] into H; in  
 C. *nave*] new E; neefe H.  
 130. *he*] did H. *gawe*] gewe E;  
 giue H.  
 131. *dynnyt*] fell downe H.

132. *The—bad*] Then bad he EH.  
 133. *[him EH]* C om.  
 134. *Avisit*] Ameyssyt E; Hes  
 meased H. *in sum*] in-to.  
 135. *He*] And he E; Bot he H.  
*the*] EH om.  
 136. *be of*] be of thar C; all our  
 E; H *has*—Might be cause of dis-  
 confiting.  
 138. *in-till our*] so E; C *omits* our;  
 in our awne H.  
 139. *suppowale*] suppowail E; sup-  
 plee right H.  
 140. *forouten*] with-owtyn EH.



He advises his men to be wary.	That we sall haue till do in hy; Tharfor luk ilk man be reddi."	
Then 30 of the enemy's archers appear, and shoot some of the king's men.	With that weill neir xxx and ma Of bowmen com, and bykkyrrit swa That thai hurt of the kyngis men. The king haß gert his archeris then Schute for till put thaim than agayne. With that thai enterit in ane playne,	145
Soon the Scotch see 40,000 men against them.	And saw arayit agane thame stand In four battellis fourty thousand. The king said, "now, lordingis, lat se Quha worthy in this ficht sall be! On thame forouten mair abaid!"	150
The Scotch make the attack.	So stoutly than on thame thai raid, And assemblit so hardely, That of thair fayis a gret party War laid at erd at thar meting;	155
There is great breaking of spears.	Thar wes of speris sic bristing, As athir apon othir raid, That it a veill gret frusche haß maid. Horß com thair fruschand, hed for hed, Swa that feill on the grund fell ded.	160
[Fol. 121. c.] Many are slain or severely wounded.	☞ Mony a wicht and worthy man, [As] athir apon othir ran, War duschit ded doune to the ground; The rede blude out of mony a wound Ruschit in sa gret fusioune than, That of the blude the stremes ran.	165

- 
- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 141. <i>till</i> ] to EH.                         | 160. <i>veill</i> ] wele E; full H.              |
| 143. <i>and</i> ] or.                             | 161. <i>fruschand</i> ] so CE; rushing H.        |
| 146. <i>gert</i> ] sent H.                        | 162. <i>fell</i> ] lay H.                        |
| 147. <i>Schute</i> ] To shoot H. <i>till</i> ] to | 164. [ <i>As</i> EH] Haiss ( <i>wrongly</i> ) C. |
| EH. <i>thaim than</i> ] thai men E; them          | 166. <i>rede—of</i> ] blood ran out at H.        |
| H.  | 167. In sik effusion, that euen than             |
| 148. <i>ane</i> ] A.                              | H.   |
| 153. <i>forouten</i> ] withoutten H.              | 168. <i>That of the</i> ] Of very H.             |
| 157. <i>War</i> ] Were H; Was E.                  |  |

	And thai, that vrath war and angry, Dang on othir so hardely With wapnys that var bricht & bar, That mony a vicht man ded ves thar.	170
	For thai, that hardy war and wicht, And frontly with thar sayis can ficht, Pressit thame formast for till be. Thair mycht men cruell bargane se, And hard battall, I vndirstand.	175
The battle is very severe.	In-till [all] the weir of [Irland] So hard ane fechtig wes nocht seyñe.	
Sir Edward won 19 battles in 3 years,	The quhethir of gret victoriß nynteyñe Schir Eduard had, withouten wer, In-till leß than in-to thre 3eir ;	180
sometimes defeating 20,000 men.	And in syndry battelis off thai He vencust twenty thousand & ma, With trappit horß richt to the feit. Bot, in [all] tymis, he wes 3eit	185
He had always more than 1 against 5, but King Robert had here only 1 against 8.	Ay añe for v, quhen lest wes he. Bot the kyng in-to this melle Had allwayis aucht of his famen For añe, bot he swa bar him then That his gud deid and his bounte Confortit swa all his men3he, That the mast coward hardy wes.	190

169. 170. H. omits.  
 169. *wraeth*] wraith.  
 172. *vicht*] gud E; good H. *ded*  
*ves*] deyit E; died H.  
 174. *frontly*] frouthly or frontly C;  
 frontlynys E; *printed* stoutlynys J;  
 stoutly H. *can*] gan.  
 175. *till*] to H.  
 176. *bargane*] battell H.  
 177. *battall*] bargain H. *I*] Ik.  
*undirstand*] tak on hand EH.  
 178. *In-till*] In EH. [*all* EH] C  
*om.* of] of all C; *but all should pre-*  
*cede the weir, as in EH.* [*Irland* EH]  
 Ingland C.  
 179. *hard*] great H. *ane*] A.  
 180. *victoriss*] wictours.  
 181. *had*] has.  
 182. *In-till*] And in-to E; And  
 that in H. *in-to*] in EH.  
 184. *He vencuss*] He vanquisht H;  
 Wencussyt E. *twenty*] xxx E; twentie  
 H.  
 186. *in all tymis*] in all tymys E;  
 in to tymis C; in all that time H.

King Robert was always in the thick of the fight.	For, quhar he saw the thykkest preß, So hardely on thame he raid, That ay about hym rowme he maid, *[That he slew all he might ourtak, *And rudely rushed them abak.]	195 197* 198*
Sir Thomas Murray was always close to him.	And erll Thomas, the worthy, Wes in all tymis neir hym by, And faucht as he war in a rage ; Swa that, throu thar gret vassalage, Thar men sic hardyment can tak, That thai no perell wald forsak. Bot thame abaundonyt so stoutly, And dang on thame so hardely, That all thair fayis afrayit war.	200 205
[Fol. 121 b. C.] The English and Irish begin to give way,	And thai, that saw weill, by thair fair, That thai eschewit sum deill the ficht, Thai dang on thame with all thar mycht, *And pressit thame dyngand so fast, *That thai the bak gaf at the last.	209*
and at last take to flight.	*And thai, that saw thaim tak the ficht, *Pressit thame than with all thar mycht, And in thair fleying feill can sla. The kingis men haß chaßit swa, That thai war scalit euirilkañe.	212* 210
Richard of Clare retreats to Dublin.	Richard of Clare the vay has tañe To Devillyng, in full gret hy,	

- 
196. *ay*] thar. H *has*—And sa on.  
 great roome about him made. 209\*—212\*. In CH ; E *omits*.  
 197\*, 198\*. In H *only*; CE *omit*. 209\*. *thame dyngand*] dinging on  
 In H, *ourtak is spelt* ouertake, and them H.  
 abak *is spelt* aback. 212\*. Here H *repeats* l. 208.  
 198. *tymis*] time. 209. *can*] gan.  
 200. *throu*] for. 211. *war — euirilkane*] discomfist  
 201. *sic*] sic gret. *can*] gan E ; did them ilkane H.  
 H. 212. *vay*] way.  
 203. *abaundonyt*] abandound. 213. *devillyng*] dewillyne E ; Deuil-  
 208. *Thai—thame*] Than dang thai ling H. *in*] in-to.

	With othir lordis that fled him by, And varnyst bath castell and townys	215
	That war in thair possessiownis.	
His men are much scared,	Thai war so felly fleyit thar, That, [as] I trow, Richard of Clar	
[Fol. 63 b. E.]	Sall haf no will to faynd his mycht In battell na in forß of ficht,	220
and are afraid to face King Robert.	Quhill king Robert and his menzhe Is duelland in-to that cuntre ! Thai stuffit strynthis on this viß ; And the king, that wes sa till priß, Saw in the feild richt mony slayn.	225
Robert sees a prisoner weep- ing, and asks him why he weeps.	And ane of thame that thar ves tane, That wes arayit iolely, He saw gret wondir tendirly. He askit him, "quhy he maid sic cher ?"	
"Sir, it is no wonder, for the flower of all North Ireland lies dead here !"	He said him, "schir, forouten wer, It is no vonder thouch I grete, I se heir feill fellit to fete, The flour of [all north] Irland, That hardyest wes of hert and hand, And mast doutit in hard assay."	230
"Thou hast more cause for mirth, having yourself escaped death."	The king said, "thou haß vrang, perfoy ; Thou haß mair cauß myrthis till ma, For thou the ded eschapit swa."	235

- 
215. *varnyst*] warnysyt E ; garnisht H. *castell*] so H ; *castellis* E.  
 217. *felly*] fellounly H.  
 218. [as H] CE om. Richard] *schir* Richard.  
 220. *forss of*] field to H. *of*] to.  
 222. *in-to*] in.  
 223. *viß*] wiss.  
 224. *sa*] E om. *till*] to EH.  
 226. *ves*] wes.  
 228. *gret*] greyt E ; him weepe H. *wondir tendirly*] right dulefully H.  
 229. *He*] And.  
 230. *forouten*] with-owtyn.  
 231. *vonder*] wondre.  
 232. *heir—fete*] fele her lossyt the suet E ; sa mony slaine at my feete H.  
 233. [all north EH] the north of all C.  
 234. *wes*] war. *hert and*] thair.  
 236. *hass*] dois. *vrang*] wrang.

	Rychard of Clare on this maner, And all his folk, discumfit wer	240
	With [few] folk, as I [to] ȝow tald. And quhen Eduard the Bruce so bald	
When Sir Edward hears of his brother's success in his absence, he is very wroth.	Wist at the king had fouchten swa With sa feill folk, and he thar-fra, Micht no man se aȝe vrathar man.	245
	But the gude king said till hym than, That it wes in his awȝe foly, For he raid sa vnvittandly, So fer befor, and no awaward Maid to thame of the reirward.	250
Robert reproves him for his carelessness.	For he said, "quha on were vald ryde, In the vaward, he suld na tyde Presß fra his rerward fer of sicht ; For gret perell so fall thar mycht."	
	Of this ficht will we spek no mair.	255
Thereafter, the Scottish host held better together.	The king and all that with him war Raid furthwarde in-to bettir aray, And neir to-giddir than ere did thai. Throu all the land planly thai raid ; Thai fand nane that thame varnyng maid.	260
They pass Drogheda and Dublin.	Thai raid evin forrourth Drouchyndra, And forrourth Devilling syne alsua ;	

241. [*few* EH] feill (*wrongly*) C. Reeregard H. *of*] fra H ; from A.  
[*to* E] haue to H ; C *om.* 254. *so*] swa.  
242. *so*] sa H ; the E. 256. *The*] Bot the EH ; But the A.  
245. *no*] na. *vrathar*] wraither H ; *with him*] thar.  
waer E. 257. *furthwarde*] furthwart E ; ford-  
ward H. *in-to*] in E ; in a H.  
248. *vnvittandly*] vnwittely E ; 258. *neir*] neere H ; nerar E.  
vnwittely H. 260. *varnyng*] obstakill E ; obstacle  
H.  
249. *awaward*] waward. *and* — 261. *evin*] ewyn. *forrourth*] before  
*awaward*] making na ward H. H. *drouchyndra*] drochindra E ; Dro-  
chynda H.  
250. To them that were in the 262. *forrourth*] before H. *devilling*]  
Reeregard H. dewillyne E ; Deuilling H ; Deviling  
251. *vald*] wald.  
252. *the vaward*] a waward E ; the  
Vangard H.  
253. *Presss*] Pass EH. *rerward*] A.

- Bot to gif battale nane thai fand.  
 Syne thai went forthwarde in the land,  
 And sowth till Lwnyk held thair way, 265  
 That is the southmast toune, perfay,  
 That in Irland may fundyn be.  
 Thair lay thai dayis twa or thre,  
 And buskit syne agane to fare.  
 And quhen that thai all reddy war, 270  
 The king haß herd aine woman cry  
 And askit quhat that wes in hy.  
 "It is aine landar, schir," said aine,  
 "That hir childyne richt now haß tañe,  
 And mon lewe now behynd vs her, 275  
 Tharfor scho makis 3on euill cher."  
 The king said, "certis, it war pite  
 That scho in that poynt left suld be,  
 For certis, I trow, thar is no man  
 That he ne will rew vp-on voman." 280  
 His host all than arestit he,  
 And gert aine tent soyne stentit be,  
 And gert her gang in hastely ;  
 And othir women till be hir by,  
 Quhill scho delyuer wes, he bad ; 285  
 And syne furth on his wayis raid :  
 And how scho furth suld caryit be,  
 Or euir he fure, than ordanit he.

263. *Bot*] And.264. *forthwarde*] southwart EH.265. *sowth*] rycht E; right H.  
*lwnyk*] Lynrike H; Lymrik A; Kyn-  
rike E.271. *herd*] hard. *ane*] A.272. *And*] He EH.273. *ane* (1)] a H; the E. *landar*]  
layndar E; Lauender H.274. *childyne*] child-ill E; child-  
euill H.275. *lewe*] leve E; leaue H.280. *vp-on voman*] a woman than E;  
of women than H.281. *hosf*] ost. *than*] thar.282. *ane*] A.284. *till*] to E; H *om*.285. *delyuer wes*] wes deliuer E;  
deliuered was H.288. *fure than*] furth fur E; fure

[Fol. 122 <sup>b</sup> . C.] This was a courteous deed of a king to- wards a poor laundress.	This wes a full gret curtasy, That sic a kyng and swa mychty Gert his men duell on this maner Bot for a full pour laynder. Northwarde agane thai tuk the vay ; Throu all Irland thus passit thai Throu Conage richt to Dewilling,	290
They pass through all Meath, Munster, Leinster, and Ulster unop- posed.	And throu al Myth and Irell syne, And Mwnser and [throu] Lainenser, And syne haly throu Vllister To Cragfergus forout battell ; For thar wes nane durst thame assale.	295
All the Irish kings submit to Sir Edward.	The kingis than of the Eryschrye Com to schir Eduarde halely, And thair manrent till him can ma, Bot gif that it war afe or twa. Till Cragfergus thai come agane ;	300
There was but little fighting.	In all that vay wes no bargane, Bot gif that ony pwnȝhe wer That is nocht for till spek of her.	305
The Irish kings return home.	The Erische kyngis than euirilkafe	

290. *sic*] swilk.

292. *full*] EH *om.* *laynder*] launden EH.

293. *Northwarde agane*] Norvarde agane C; Agayne northwart E; Againe Northward H. *the*] thair EH.

294. *thus*] then H. *thus — thai*] than per fay.

295. *conage*] all connach E; all Connoch H. *richt*] H *om.* *dewilling*] dewillyne E; Deviline II.

296. *myth*] methy E; Mich H; Meath A. *Irell*] Iereby E; Irrelle H; Tyrrell A.

297, 298. *Transposed* in E.

297. *And*] Through H. *mwnser*] monester E; Monaster H; Munster

A. [*throu*] through A; CEH *om.* *lainenser*] lenester E; Lawester H; Linster A.

298. *vllister*] wlsister E; all Vlsister H; all Ulster A.

299. *forout*] for-owtyn E; without H.

301. *than*] EH *om.* *the*] E *om.* *eryschrye*] Irchery E; Irishry H.

303. *manrent*] so H; *spelt* mantrent C; manredyn E. *till — can*] can to him H; gan him E.

306. *vay*] way. *no*] nane.

307. *thai*] it H. *pwnȝhe*] poynt E; Skirmish H.

308. *till*] to EH.

309. *erische*] Irsche E; Irish H. *than*] H *om.*

	Hayme till thar awne repar ar gañe,	310
	And vndirtuk in all-kyn thyng	
	For till obeyß till the biddying	
	Of schir Eduard, that thar king call thai.	
Sir Edward is now in a good position,	He wes weill set now in gud way	
	To conquest the land all halely ;	315
	For he had apou his party	
	The Eryschry and Vllister,	
having passed over all Ireland.	And he wes swa furth of his wer	
	That he wes passit throu all Irland	
	Fra end till end throu strynth of hand.	320
[Fol. 54. E.]	Couth he haf gouernit hym throu skill,	
If he had used some tact, he might have conquered all Ireland.	And fallowit nocht to fast his will,	
	Bot with mesour haf led his deid,	
	It wes weill lik, withouten dreid,	
	That he mycht haff conquerit weill	325
	The land of Irland euirilk deill.	
	Bot his outrageous succudry	
His own pride prevented that.	And will, that mar wes [than] hardy,	
	Of purpoß letit hym, perfay,	
	As I heir-estir sall ȝow say.	330

- 
312. *obeyss till*] obey to EH.  
 313. *call*] callit E; called H.  
 314. *weill — now*] now weill set.  
*in*] so EH; and in C; *but* and *is not*  
*wanted*.  
 315. *conquest*] conquer E; conquesse  
 H. *all*] EH om.  
 317. *eryschry*] Irschery E; Irishry  
 H. *vllister*] wlsystyr E; all Vlsister  
 H; all ulster A.  
 318. *of*] on EH.
319. *all*] E om.  
 320. *end (2)*] wthyr E.  
 322. *fallowit*] folowyt E; followed  
 H.  
 325. *conquerit*] conquessid H.  
 326. *euirilk*] ilka.  
 327. *succudry*] sucquedry E; suc-  
 cudry H.  
 328. *mar wes*] wes mar. [*than* EH]  
 and C.  
 330. *I*] Ik.



How the gud Dowglass slew the erll Richmonde  
of Yngland.

Now leiff we heir the nobill king  
All at his eifß and his liking,

[Fol. 123. C.] And spek we of the lord Douglaß,  
Meantime Lord Douglas is left  
to defend the  
Scottish border. That left to kep the marchis waß. 335  
And in the hawch of Lyntoun-le  
He gert thame mak a fair maner.  
And quhen the housis biggit wer,  
He gert purvay hym richt weill thar.  
For he thought for till mak infair, 340  
And till mak gud cher till his men.

An English earl,  
named Sir  
Thomas, living  
at Richmond,  
is envious of  
Douglas. In Rychmond wes thar wonnand then  
Ane erll, men callit schir Thomas ;  
He had invy at the Dowglas,  
And said, " gif that he his baner 345  
Micht se displayit apon wer,  
That soyn assemble on it suld he."  
He herd how Dowglaß thought to be  
At Lyntoun-le aße fest till ma ;  
And he had wittyng weill alsua, 350

He learns that  
King Robert  
and Sir Thomas  
Murray had  
gone away. That the king and a gret menße  
War passit than of the cuntre,  
And the erll of Murref, Thomas.  
Tharfor he thought the cuntre was

---

RUBRIC *in* H—How Dowglas slew 341. *till* (1)] to EH. *till* (2)] to  
Richmond, syne at meat In battell H.  
their harbreours serued in seat. 342. *thar*] E *om.*  
333. *lord*] lord of. 343. *men callit*] that men callit E ;  
335. *get*] so CH ; set E. *ves sle*] that called was H.  
war sleye. 349. *lyntoun-le*] lyntainley E ; Lyn-  
336. *hawch*] halche E ; hawgh H. talle H. *ane*] and E ; a H. *till*]  
*lyntoun-le*] lyntaile E ; Lyntalle H. to EH.  
338. *housis*] hous (= housis) C ; 350. *had*] gat H. *wittyng*] witting  
howssis E ; houses H. H ; wittering E.  
340. *for—mak*] to mak ane EH.

	Febill of men, for till withstand	355
	Men that thame soucht with stalvard hand ;	
	And of the marchis than had he	
	The gouvernale and the pouste.	
He gathers 10,000 men, and proceeds to Jedwood forest, to hew down the trees there.	He gaderit folk about hym then,	
	Quhill he wes neir ten thousand men,	360
	And wode-axis gert vith hym tak ;	
	For he thought he his men wald mak	
	Till hew doune Iedward forest cleyne,	
	That na tre suld tharin be seyne.	
	Thai held thaim furthward on thar vay ;	365
	Bot the gud lord of Dowglaß ay	
	Had spyis out on ilka syde,	
Sir James of Douglas hears of this, and assembles 50 men and some archers.	And had gud witting that thai vald ryde,	
	And cum apon hym suddanly.	
	Than gaderit he richt hastily	370
	Thame that he mycht of his menȝe ;	
	I trow that than with hym had he	
	ȚFifty, that worthy war and vicht,	
[Fol. 123 b. C.]	At all poynt armyt weill and dicht ;	
	And of archeris a gret menȝhe	375
	Assemblit als with hym had he.	
	A place than wes thar in the way,	
He lays an ambush in a pass that grew narrow like a shield,	Quhar he wist weill thai vald away,	
	That had wode apon athir syde ;	
	The entre wes weill large and vyde ;	380

355. *till*] to EH.356. *thame soucht*] them sought H ;  
suld E (*the verb being omitted*). *vith*]  
with EH.361. *gert*] gert he C ; *but* EH *omit*  
he. *vith hym*] them A.362. *he* (2)] E *om.*363. *Till*] To EH. *doune*] E *om.*  
*Iedward*] Iedwort E ; Iedburgh H.  
*cleyne*] sa clene.365. *vay*] way.366. *of*] EH *om.* *ay*] that ay EH.368. *And*] EH *om.* *had*] Gat H.  
*witting*] wittering. *vald*] wald EH.371. *mycht*] mowcht.372. *had he*] wald be.373. *vicht*] wicht.377. *than*] thar.378. *wist*] thoct. *thai—away*] thai  
suld away E ; that passe wald they  
H.380. *vyde*] wid.

	And as aȝe schelde it narrowit ay Quhill that, in-till aȝe place, the vay Wes nocht a penny-staȝe cast of breid. The lord of Douglaß thidder ȝeid, Qohen he wist thai war neir cumand,	385
and tells his archers to wait for his order.	And in a clewch on the ta hand All his archeris enbuschit he, And [bad] thame hald thame all preue Quhill that thai herd him raiß the cry, And than suld thai schute hardely	390
He twists together the birch-trees on each side of the path.	Emang thar fayis, and hald thame thar Quhill that he throu thame passit war ; And syne with him furth hald suld thai. Than byrkis on athir syde the way, That ȝoung and thik wes growand ner,	395
When Richmond approaches, Douglas waits till he enters the pass.	He knyrt to-giddir on sic maner, That men mycht nocht weill throu thaim ryde. Qohen this wes done, he can abyde Apon the tothir half the way ; And Richmond in-till gude aray	400
Then the Scotch all rush upon him at once, crying "Doug- las ! Douglas !"	Com rydand in the first battale. The lorde Dowglaß haß seyn veill all, And gert his men all hald thame still, Quhill richt at hand thai com thaȝe till, And enterit in the narrow way.	405
	Than with aȝe schout on thame schot thai, Cryand on hicht, "Douglaß, Douglaß !"	

- 
- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 381. <i>ane</i> ] A.                                   | sow thaim sar E ; saile them saire H.        |
| 382. <i>ane</i> ] A.                                   | 395. <i>wes</i> ] war.                       |
| 384. <i>ȝeid</i> ] he ȝeid C ; but EH omit             | 398. <i>he</i> ] E om. <i>can</i> ] gan.     |
| he.  | 399. <i>half</i> ] side of H.                |
| 386. <i>in</i> ] E om. <i>clewch</i> ] Cleugh H ;      | 400. <i>in-till</i> ] in EH.                 |
| louch E.   | 401. <i>battale</i> ] escheill E ; Eshell H. |
| 387. <i>All</i> ] Has.                                 | 402. <i>veill all</i> ] him weill EH.        |
| 388. [ <i>bad</i> E] bid C.                            | 404. <i>richt at</i> ] at thair EH.          |
| 389. <i>herd</i> ] hard.                               | 406. <i>ane</i> ] A.                         |
| 390. <i>thai</i> ] E om.                               | 407. <i>Cryand</i> ] And cryt E ; And        |
| 391. <i>Emang</i> ] Amang. <i>hald—thar</i> ] cried H. |  |

Than Richmonde, that [rycht] worthy waß,  
 Quhen he [has] herd sa riß the cry,  
 And Dowglaß baner saw planly, 410  
 He dressit him thiddir-ward in hy.  
 And thai com on sa hardely,  
 That thai throu thame maid thame gud way;  
 All at thai [met] till erd bar thai.  
 Douglas kills Richmond with a dagger,  
 The Richmond borne doune thar was ; 415  
 On hym arestit the Dowglaß,  
 [Fol. 124. C.] And him reuersit ; syñe with a knyff  
 Richt in that place hym reft the liff.  
 [Fol. 54 & E.] Añe hat apon his helm he bare,  
 And that tuk Douglaß with him thar 420  
 In taknyng, for it furrit waß.  
 and takes away his furred hat.  
 And syne in hy his way he tais,  
 Quhill in the wode thai enterit war ;  
 The archeris weill has borne thame thar ;  
 For weill and hardely schot thai. 425  
 The English are dismayed.  
 The Yngliß rout in gret effray  
 War set, for Douglaß suddandly,  
 Vith all thame of his cumpany,  
 Or euir thai wist, war in thar rout,  
 And thrillit thame weill neir throu-out ; 430  
 And had almast all doñe his deid,  
 Or thai till help thame couth tak hede.  
 Seeing their lord slain,  
 And quhen thai saw thar lord ves slayñe,

408. [rycht] right H ; than E ; C om.

409. [has E] had H ; C om. herd] hard. riß] rise H ; raiss E.

410. saw] he saw C ; but EH omit he.

411. him] E om.

413. gud] the. H has — That through them haue they made their way.

414. [met EH] mycht C. bar] dang H.

416. On — the] And soone arested him H.

417. syne] and E ; H om.

418. hym reft] reft him.

420. douglass—him] with him douglas.

422. his—he] thair wayis E ; his wayes H.

429. war] wes.

430. thrillit] thyrlit E ; thirled H.

432. Or] Ere H. till] to EH.

433. ves] was H ; E om.

they retreat a little,	Thai tuk hym vp, and vent agayne Till draw thame fra the schot away ; Than in aȝe playne assemblit thai. And, for thar lord that thar wes ded,	435
and take up quarters for the night.	Thai schupe thame in that ilke sted For till tak herbery all that nycht. And than the Douglas, that wes wicht,	440
Douglas hears that a clerk named Ellis, with 300 men, have taken up their quarters near him.	Gat wittering that aȝe clerk, Elyß, With weill thre hundreth enymys, All straucht till Lyntoun-le war gaȝe, And herbery for thair host had taȝe, Than thiddir is he went in hy, With all thame of his cumpany, And fand clerk Eliß at the met, And all his rout about him set.	445
Douglas and his men attack Ellis as he is at meat, and slay him and nearly all his men.	And thai com [on] hym stoutly thair, And with suerdis that scharply schar Thai seruit thame full egyrly. Thai war slayn doune so halely, That thar weill neir eschapit naȝe. Thai seruit thame in sa gret wayne With scherand swerdis and with knyvis, That weill neir all lesyt thar livis.	450 455
They had a cruel <i>entremet</i> at their dinner !	Thai had aȝe felloun eentremaß, For that su[r]charge to charge and waß !	

434. *vent*] turnyt E ; turned H.  
 435. *Till*] To EH.  
 436. *ane*] A.  
 438. *Ilke*] Ilk EH.  
 439. *till*] to EH.  
 441. *wittering*] wit H. *that*] E om.  
*elyss*] ane elyss C (*but* EH omit 2nd  
 ane) ; Elyss E ; Eleis H.  
 443. *till*] to EH. *lyntoun-le*] lyn-  
 taile E ; Lyntalle H.  
 447. *Ellys*] Ellys E ; Eleis H.  
 448. *all*] E om. *rout*] round.  
 449. *[on* EH] C om. *hym*] thaim

- EH.  
 452. Slayn war thai full grewously  
 E.  
 453. *thar*] E om.  
 454. *in*] on. *sa*] full H.  
 456. *lesyt*] left E ; leessed H. *thar*]  
 the.  
 457. *ane*] A. *entremass*] estremess  
 E ; Intermais H.  
 458. For that subcharge too charg-  
 ing was H ; That sowrchargis to  
 chargand wes E.

	Thai that eschapit thair throu caß	
[Fol. 124 & C.]	Richt till thar host thair wayis tais,	460
	And tald how that thar men war slayne	
	So cleyne, that neir eschapit nane.	
When the rest of the English hear of this,	And quhen thai of the host has herd	
	How that the Dowglaß with thame ferd,	
	That had thar herbreouris all slayne,	465
	And ruschit als thame-self agane,	
	And slew thar lord in-myd thar rowt,	
	Ther wes nane of thame all sa stowt,	
	That mair will had than till assale	
	The Dowglaß ; tharfor till consale	470
they propose to return home with all speed.	[Thai] 3eid, and till purpoß haß taie	
	Till wend hamward, and haym [ar] gaie ;	
	And sped thame swa apon thair way,	
	That in Yngland soyne cummyn ar thai.	
They left Jed- wood forest untouched.	The forest left thai standand still ;	475
	Till hew it than thai had no will ;	
	And specialy, quhill the Dowglaß	
	So neir hand by thair nychtbour waß.	
Douglas now perceives that the man whom he killed was Richmond himself.	And he, that saw thame turn agane,	
	Persauit weill thair lord ves slaie,	480
	And by the hat that he had tane	
	He wist it alsua weill ; for aie,	
One of the prisoners recognizes	That takyn wes, said him suthly,	
	That the Richmond commonly	

- 
460. *thar*] the. *Richt* — *thar*] To *Thai 3eid*] That time H.  
their great H. *thair*] the EH. 472. *haym*] hamwart. [*ar* E] are  
462. *neir*] ner E ; there H. H ; is C.  
463. *the*] thar. *has*] had EH. 474. *in*] to H.  
465. *herbreouris*] herbryouris E ; 476. *Till*] To EH.  
herbryours H. *all*] E om. 477. *And*] E om.  
466. *als*] all EH. 480. *ves*] wes.  
469. *had than*] than had E ; had 482. *it*] E om. ; right H. *alsua*  
them H. *weill*] well also H.  
470. *The—tharfor*] Therefore they 483. *suthly*] surely H.  
haue tane H. *till*] to EH. 484. *the richmond*] Rychmound E ;  
471. [*Thai* E] He C (*wrongly*). Richmond ay H.

Richmond's furred hat.	Wes wount that furrit hat to were. Than Dowglaß blithar wes than ere ; For he weill wist that the Richmond, His felloun fa, wes broucht to ground.	485
Thus did Sir James of Douglas defeat 10,000 foes with only 50 men.	<b>S</b> chir Iames of Dowglaß on this viß, Throu his vorschip and gret empriß, Defendit worthely the land. This poynt of weir, I tak on hand, Wes vndirtane so apertly, And eschevit richt hardely ; For he stonayit, withouten weir, The folk that weill ten thousand weir With fifty armyt men, but ma.	490
I can tell you of two other fights fought by 50 men.	I can als tell 30w othir twa Poyntis, that weill eschevit weir With fifty men ; and, but all weir, *Thai war done swa richt hardely, *That thai war prisit soueranly	500 501*
[Fol. 125. C.]	*Atour all othir poyntis of wer *That in thar tym eschevit wer.	504*
This one was the first.	This wes the first, that sa stoutly Wes broucht till end weill with fifty.	
The second was in Galloway, when Sir Edward	In Galloway the tothir fell ; Quhen, as 3e forrouth herd me tell,	

- 
487. *the*] EH *om.*  
 490. *vorschip*] worschip. *gret*] his  
 EH.  
 493. *so*] full E; right H.  
 494. *eschevit*] eschewyt E; en-  
 cheeued H; *and so in l.* 499.  
 495. *stonayit*] na stonayit (!) E;  
 astoneyed H. *withouten*] for-owtyn.  
*weir*] wer E; weere H.  
 496. *The*] That.  
 500. *all*] E *om.*  
 501\*—504\*. *Not in E. Found in*  
 CHJ.  
 501\*. *done—richt*] all done sa H.  
 502\*. *prisit*] praised H.  
 504\*. *eschevit*] encheeued H.  
 501, 502. H *has*—This was the  
 first : that with fiftie Was brought to  
 end, and sa stoutly.  
 502. *till*] to EH.  
 503. *In*] In-to E. *tothir*] other H.  
 504. *forrouth—me*] heard me be-  
 fore H.

defeated Aymer St John and 1500 men.	Schir Eduard the Bryß with fifty Vencust of Saint Iohnē schir Amery And xv hundreth men be tale.	505
The third was in Eskdale, by Sir John de Soullis.	The thrid fell in-to Eske-dale, Quhen that schir Iohnē de Sowlis waß [The] gouernour of all that plaß, That to schir Androu the Herdclay With fifty men withset the vay, That had thar in his cumpany Thre hundreth horsit iolely.	510
[Fol. 55. E.]	This schir Iohnē, in-to plane melle, Throu hardyment and souerane bounte Vencust thame sturdely ilkañe, And schir Androu in hand haß tañe. I will nocht reherß all the maner; For quha sa likis, thai may heir	515
Sir John, with but 50 men against 300, had the best of it.	3oung women, quhen thai will play, Syng it emang thame ilke day. Thir war the worthy poyntis thre, That, I trow, euirmar sall be Prisit, quhill men may on thaim meyn.	520
Young women still sing about it in ballads.	It is weill worth, forouten weyn, That thar namys for euirmar, That in thar tyme so worthy war	525
It is very fit that the names of such heroes should obtain lasting praise.		

- 
505. *Schir*] How Sir H. *bryss*] 515. *in-to*] in-till.  
bruyss E; Bruce H. 516. Throu sowerane hardiment  
506. *Vencust*] Wencussyt E; Van- that felle E; Through Soueraigne  
quisht H. *amery*] amy (*miswritten* hardement, and bountie H.  
*for amery*) C; Amery E; Aymery H. 517. *Vencust*] Wencussyt E; Van-  
507. *xv*] fiftene H; fyfty E. quisht H.  
508. *in-to*] in-till E. *Eske dale*] 519. *all*] now H; E *om.*  
Esdaill E; Eskdaile H. 521. *women*] *miswritten* woman C;  
509. *de*] the E; of H. *sowlis*] wemen E; women H.  
soullis E; Sowles H. 522. *emang*] amang. *ilke*] ilk E;  
510. [*The EH*] C *om.* euerilk II.  
511. *the*] EH *om.* *herdclay*] hard- 525. *Prisit*] Praised H. *meyn*]  
clay E; Hardeclay H; Herkelay A. mene EH.  
512. *withset*] beset H.





<p>The Earl of Fife opposes them.</p>	<p>The erll of Fiff and the schirreff Saw till thar cost schippes approchand, Thai gaderit till defend thair land, And ay forgane the schippis ay, 555 As thai salit, thai held thar way, And thought till let thame land to tak. And quhen the schipmen saw thame mak Sic contenanß in sic aray, Thai said emang thaim all that thai 560 Vald nocht let for thame land to ta. Than to the land thai sped thame swa, That thai com thair in full gret hy, And arivit full hardely.</p>	<p>555 560</p>
<p>The Scottish host is seized with a panic, though there are 500 men of them.</p>	<p>The Scottis men saw thair cummyng, And had of thame sic abasyng, 565 That thai all sammyn raid thame fra, And the land letleß leit thame ta. Thai durst nocht fecht vith thame, for-thi Thai vithdrew thame all halely ; 570 The quhethir thai var v hundreth ner. Quhen thai away thus ridand wer, And na defens begouth to schop, Of Dunkelden the gude bischop, That men callit Willjame Syncler, 575 Com with a rout in gud manere, I trow on horß thai war sixty. Hym-self wes armyt iolely,</p>	<p>565 570 575</p>
<p>But William Sinclair, bishop of Dunkeld,  comes up with 60 knights, wel armed.</p>	<p>Of Dunkelden the gude bischop, That men callit Willjame Syncler, 575 Com with a rout in gud manere, I trow on horß thai war sixty. Hym-self wes armyt iolely,</p>	<p>575</p>

---

552. *schirreff*] schyrryve. to ; see l. 588. *letless*] but stop H.  
554. *till*] to EH ; and in l. 557. 571. *var*] war. *hundreth*] hunder.  
555. *ay forgane*] aforgayn E ; they 572. *away*] away.  
for-gane H. 573. *schop*] schape E ; shape H ;  
556. *held*] tooke H. *misspelt* scop C.  
559. *Sic*] Swilk. *in*] and H. 574. *dunkelden*] dunkeldyn EH.  
560. *emang*] amang. *all*] H om. *bischop*] byschap E ; Bishop H.  
567. *sammyn raid*] haill did ryde 575. *syncler*] the sanctecler E.  
H. That William was called of Sincler  
568. *And*] And to C ; but EH omit H.

	And raid apon a stalward steid ; A chemeyr, for till heill his veid, Aboue his armyng had he then ; And als weill armyt ves his men.	580
[Fol. 126. C.]	The erll with the schirreff met he Awayward with [thar] gret menȝe. He askit thame weill soyn, "quhat hy Maid thame till turne so hastely?"	585
He reproves the Earl of Fife for his cowardice,	Thai said, thair fais with stalvard hand Had in sic fusioune takyne land, That thai thocht thame allout to fele, And thame to few with thame to dele.	590
telling him he is a fine guardian of the country,	Quhen the bischop herd it wes sa, He said, "the king aucht weill to ma Of ȝow, that takis sa weill on hand In his absens till wer the land ! Certis, gif he gert serwe ȝow weill, The gilt spuris, richt by the heill, He suld in hy ger hew ȝow fra ; Richt vald with cowardis men did swa. Quha lufis his lord and his cuntre, Turne smertly now agane with me !"	595     600
and ought to have his gilt spurs cut off.	With that he kest of his chemer, And hynt in hand a stalward sper, And raid toward his fayis in hy. All turnyt with hym halely ; For he had thame repreuit swa,	605
Then the bishop leads his men to the attack in good order.		

580. *chemeyr*] chemer E ; Chimmer H.

581. *Aboue*] Apon E ; Abone H. *armyng*] armour EH.

582. *als-ves*] armyt weill als war E ; armed also were H.

583. *with*] and EH.

584. *Awayward*] Awaward C ; Awayward E ; Ryding away H. [*thar* E] their H ; a C.

585. *He*] And.

586. *till*] to EH ; and in l. 594.

587. *stalvard*] stalwart.

588. *fusioune*] foyssoun. *land*] the land.

594. *the*] his EH.

595. *serwe*] serff E ; serue H.

598. *vald*] wald EH ; should A.

599. *and*] or.

605. *repreuit*] repropwt.

That of thame all nane vent him fra.  
 He raid befor thame sturdely,  
 And thai hym followit sarraly,  
 Quhill that thai com neir approchand  
 To thar fais that-had tane land. 610

[Pol. 55 & E.] And sum war knyt in gud aray,  
 And sum war set to the forray.

The bishop  
 exhorts his men. The gud bischop, quhen he thame saw,  
 He said, "lordingis, but dreid or aw  
 Prek we apon thame hardely; 615  
 And we sall haf thame veill lichtly.  
 Se thai vs cum but abaysing,  
 Sa that we mak heir na stynting,  
 Thai sall weill soyne discumfit be.  
 Now dois weill, for men sall se 620  
 Quha lufis the kyngis mensk to-day!"

The bishop and  
 his men set on  
 the English,  
 [Pol. 120 & C.] Than all to-giddir, in gud aray,  
 Thai prekit apon thame sturdely.

[Pol. 120 & C.] The bischop, that wes richt hardy,  
 And mekill and stark, raid forrouth ay. 625  
 Than in a frusche assemblit thai,  
 And thai that, at the first metyng  
 Of speris, feld so sair sowing,  
 Vayndist and vald haf beyn away;  
 who retreat to  
 their ships. Toward thar schippis in hy held thai, 630  
 And thai com chassand felonly,  
 And slew thame sa dispitfully,

606. *vent*] went H; fled E.

608. *hym—sarraly*] followed full E; Felt of their speares H.  
 manfully H.

612. *set*] went EH.

616. *veill*] wele. *lichtly*] hastily  
 H.

617. *Se thai*] Gif they see H.

620. *sall*] soyn sall C; *but* EH  
 omit soyn. See l. 619.

625. *forrouth*] forward H.

628. *Of—feld*] Feld off the speris

E; Felt of their speares H.

629. *Vayndist*] Wandyst E; Van-  
 isht H; Vanquisht A. *vald*] wald.

630. *thar*] the.

631. *com chassand*] thaim chassyt  
 E.; them chased H.

632. *sa*] sua E; full H. *dispit-  
 fully*] despitously EH.

Many English are slain ;	That all the feldis strowit war	
	Of Ingliß men that slayn wes thar ;	
	And thai that 3eit held vnslayn	635
	Pressit thame to the se agane.	
	And Scottis men, that chassit swa,	
	Slew all that thai mycht our-ta.	
but some get away.	Bot thai that fled [3eit], nocht-for-thi,	
	Swa till thar schippis can thame hy,	640
	And in sum bargis sa feill can ga,	
	For thair fais thame chasit swa,	
	That thai ourtumylyt, and the men	
	That war thar-in all drownit then.	
One Englishman did a great feat ;	Thar did ane Yngliß man, per fay,	645
	A weill gret strynth, as I herd say.	
	For quhen he chassit wes to the bat,	
he seized a Scotchman who was handling him hotly,	A Scottis man, that hym handlyt hat,	
	He hynt [than] by the armys twa ;	
	[And], war him weill or war him wa,	650
	He evin apon his bak hym flang,	
threw him over his back, carried him off, and threw him into a boat.	And with hym till the bat can gang,	
	And kest him in, all magre his.	
	This wes ane weill gret strynth, i-wiß.	
	The Yngliß men, that wan away,	655
	Till thair schippes in hy vent thai,	

- 
634. *wes*] war.  
 635. *So* CH. *that 3eit*] 3eyt that.  
 636. *thame*] E *om.*  
 638. *that*] that euir.  
 639. [*3eit* E] yet H ; C *om.*  
 640. *can*] gan.  
 641. *bargis*] barge E ; baittes H.  
 642. And thair fayis hastyt thaim  
 sua.  
 643. *ourtumylyt*] ourtumblyt.  
 644. *thar-in*] thar. *all*] war E ; went EH.  
 were H.  
 645. *per fay*] that day H.  
 646. *I herd*] Ik hard.  
 647. *to the*] till his.  
 649. [*than* E] vp H ; hym C.  
 650. [*And* EH] For C.  
 651. *flang*] so E ; flang or slang C ;  
 slang H.  
 652. *till*] to E ; in H. *can*] gan.  
 654. *ane*] A.  
 655. *wan*] went H. *away*] away.  
 656. *Till*] To E ; Toward H. *vent*]



	And agane to Cragfergus raid.	680
When Sir Edward has all Ireland at his command,	And quhen his brothir, as he var king, Had all Erischry at his bidding, And halely Vlister alsua,	
King Robert returns to Scotland,	He buskit hame his way to ta, Of his men that war mast hardy And prisit of all cheuelry	685
leaving some men behind him.	With his brothir gret part left he, And syne he went on to the se. Quhen thair levis on athir party Wes tane, he vent to schip in hy.	690
Sir Thomas Murray goes with him. They arrive safely in Galloway.	The erll Thomas with him he had ; Thai rasit salys but abaid, And in the land of Gallowa, Forouten perell, arivit thai.	

681. *var*] war.682. *erischry*—*his*] the Irschery at E ; the Irishry at H.683. *halely*] haly. *vlister*] wlsistretre E ; Vlsister H ; Ulster A.684. *ta*] ga H.686. *of all*] mast of E ; als of H.688. *he—to*] is went him to E ; is went vnto H.690. *vent*] went. *to*] to the.693. *the*] E om.694. *Forouten*] For-owt E ; With-out H.

## [BOOK XVII.]

**The vynnynge of the toun of Berwik be the  
Scottis men throu the menys of Sym of  
Spaldyn.**

The Scottish lords gladly welcome King Robert on his return.	The lordis of the land wes fayne	
	Quhen thai wist he wes cummyn agane,	
	And till him went in full gret hy;	
	And he resaut thame richt gladly,	
	And maid a fest and gladsum cher.	5
	And thai so wondirly blith wer	
	Of his come, that na tounge mycht say;	
	Gret fest and fair till him maid thai.	
	Quhar-euir he raid, all the cuntre	
	Gaderit in daynte hym to se.	10
	Gret gladschip than wes in the land;	
	All than wes wonnyne till his hand.	
Fol. 127 b. C.]	Fra Redis swyr till Orkynnay	
[Fol. 56. E.]	Wes nocht of Scotland fra his fay,	
He possesses all Scotland except Berwick.	Outaken Berwik it allane.	15
	That tyme thar-in wonnyt ane,	

- 
- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>wes</i> ] war EH.                           | ming, as man H.   |
| 4. <i>richt gladly</i> ] hamlyly E; tenderly H.   | 8. <i>and—him</i> ] to him for-thy H.   |
| 5. <i>a</i> ] thaim EH.                           | 11. <i>gladschip</i> ] gladnesse H.   |
| 6. And then sa wonder blyth they were H.          | 13. <i>redis swyr</i> ] the red swyr E; the red Swyre H. <i>till orkynnay</i> ] to orknay E; vnto Orknay H. |
| 7. <i>tounge</i> ] man. <i>come—tounge</i> ] com- |   |



	That capitane wes of the touñe.	
The captain of Berwick is hated by the Scotch.	All Scottis men in suspicioune He held, and tretit thame richt ill. He had ay at thame hevy will, And had thame fast at vndir ay. Quhill that it fell, apon a day,	20
Sim of Spalding,	That a burgeß, Sym of Spaldyng, Thought it wes richt aine angry thing Ay swagat till reboytit be ; Tharfor in-till his hert thought he, That he vald slely mak cowyne	25
who had married the marshal's cousin,	With the marschall, quhais cosyne He had weddit on-till his viff ; And as he thought, he did beliff. Letteris till him he send in hy With a trast man all preualy,	30
tells him to come at night to the Cowport, stealthily.	And set hym tym to cum at nycht With ledderis and gud men & vicht Till the Kow-3et all preuely, And bad him hald his trast treuly ; And he suld meit thame at the vall ; For his vach thar that nycht suld fall.	35
The marshal reads the letter,	Quhen the marschall the letteris saw, He vmbethocht him than a thraw ; For he vist, by him-selvin he Micht nocht of mycht na power be For till eschewe so gret a thing ;	40

20. *at*] to EH. *hevy*] right ill H.21. *fast*] all H.24. *it*] that It EH. *ane*] EH *om.*  
*angry*] heaue H.25. *Ay swagat*] Swagate ay E ; On  
sik sort H. *till*] to EH. *reboytit*]  
rebutyt E ; rebuted H.27. *vald*] wald. *cowyne*] covyne  
E ; conuyne H.29. *on-till*] till E ; to H.33. *at*] A E ; ane H.34. *gud — vicht*] with gud men  
wicht.38. *vach*] walk E ; watch H. *his*  
*—nycht*] on that night his watch H.39. *letteris*] lettre E ; letters H.41. *he*] that he C ; but E *omits* that.  
*vist*] wist. *him-selvin*] himselfe that  
H.42. *na*] no E ; nor H.43. *eschewe*] escheyff E ; encheeue  
H.

	And gif he tuk till his helping, Ane or othir suld wrethit be.	45
and consults King Robert.	Tharfor richt till the king 3eid he, And schawit him betuix thai twa The lettir, and the charge alsua. Quhen [that] the king herd that this trañe Wes spokin in-to sic certane,	50
The king tells him he has done well.	That him thought thar-in [na] fantyß, He said him, "certis, thou vroucht haß viß, That thou discouerit first till me ; For gif thou had discouerit [thee]	
[Fol. 128. C.]	Till my nevo, the erll Thomas, Thou suld displeß the lord Douglaß ; And him alsua in the contrer. Bot I sall wirk on sic maner, That thou at thine entent sall be, And haue of nane of thame magre.	55 60
"I bid thee keep to the agree- ment.	Thou sall tak kep weill to thi day, And with thame that thou purchesß may At ewin thou sall enbuschit be In Dwnß park ; bot be prewe.	
I will send Murray and Douglas after thee."	And I sall ger the erll Thomas, And the lord alsua of Dowglaß, Athir with añe quheyne of men, Be thair till do as thou sall ken." The marschall than, but mair delay,	65

45. One, another sould wraithed  
be H ; E *has*—Ane othyr lettir suld  
writtyn be (!)  
46. *till*] to EH.  
47. *him*] It him.  
49. [*that* E] CH *om.*  
50. *Wes*—*sic*] Spokyn wes In-till.  
51. [*na* EH] no A ; C *om.*  
52. *viß*] wiss.  
53. *thou*] has E ; hes H. *first*] the  
fryst E ; it first H. *till*] to EH.

54. [*thee* H] the E ; hye C.  
55. *Till*] To EH.  
61. *thi*] thy H ; the E.  
63. *erwin*] Euen H.  
64. *dwnss*] dwns E ; Duncce H.  
*prewe*] priue E ; priue H.  
67. *ane quheyne*] A sowme E ; a  
certaine H.  
68. *till*] to EH.  
69. *than*] E *om.*

	Tuk leif, and held on furth his vay,	70
	And held the spek preue and still,	
The marshal, with some men of Lothian, keeps his tryst.	Quhill the day that wes set him till. Than of the best of Lowdyañe He with him till his trist haß tañe ;	
	For schirreff thar-of than wes he.	75
	Till Dwns park with his menze He com at evyn, all preuely. And syne, with a gude cumpany,	
Murray and Douglas follow him.	Soyne eftir come the erll Thomas, That wes met with the lord Douglas ;	80
	A richt fair cumpany thai war, Quhen thai war met to-giddir thar.	
The marshal tells them of the plot.	And quhen the marschall the cowyne Till bath the lordis lyne be lyne Had tald, thai went on furth thar vay ;	85
	Fer fra the toun thar horß left thai. Till mak it schort, swa thai vroucht than	
They all come unseen to the town-wall,	That, but seying of ony man, Outane Sym of Spaldyne allañe, That gert the deid be vndirtane;	90
climb over	Thai set thair ledderis to the wall ; And, but persaving, com vp all ;	
and hide within the town.	And held thame in ane nwke preue, Quhill at the nycht suld passit be. And ordanit, that the mast party	95
	Of [thair] men suld gang sarraly	

70. *on furth*] furth on EH.71. *the*] his EH.73. RUBRIC *in* H—The winning of Barvike & the feghting That was in the toun at the winning.74. *with*] E *om*.76. *dwns*] duns E ; Dunc H.77. *all*] full H ; E *om*.83. *cowyne*] covyn E ; conuyne H.84. *Till*] To EH ; *and in l.* 87.85. *on furth*] furth on EH. *vay*] way.87. *thai vroucht*] wrought thai EH.90. *the*] that.92. *vp*] wp E ; in H.93. *ane nwke*] A nuk.94. *at*] that EH.96. [*thair* EH] *thai* C. *sarraly*] sikkerly H.

[Fol. 198 & C.] With thar lordis, and hald a staill,  
 And the remanand suld all haill  
 Scaill throu the toun, and tak and sla  
 The men that thai mycht our-ta. 100  
 Bot soyn thar ordinans brak thai;  
 At daybreak, For, als soyn as it dawit day,  
 The twa part of thair men and ma,  
 they rush from All scalit, throu the toun to-ga.  
 their hiding- So gredy war thai till the gude, 105  
 place, That thai ran richt als thai var woude,  
 and slay many. And sesit housis and slew men ;  
 And thai, that saw thair fais then  
 Cum apon thame so suddanly,  
 The English- Throu-out the toun thai rasis the cry, 110  
 men rally. And schot to-gidder heir and thair.  
 [Fol. 56 & E.] And ay, as thai assemblit war,  
 Thai vald abyde and mak debat.  
 Had thai beyn warnyt, weill I wat,  
 Thai suld haf sald thair dedis der ; 115  
 For thai war gud men, and thai wer  
 Fer ma than thai war at thame soucht ;  
 Bot thai war scalit sa at thai moucht  
 On na maner assemblit be.  
 Thar wes gret melleis twa or thre ; 120  
 Bot Scottis men so weill thame bar,  
 The Scotch put That thair fais ay ruschit war,  
 the English to fight. And cumrayit at the last war swa,

97. *staill*] so H ; stale E.  
 100. *The*] All the CH ; but E omits  
 All.

101. *thar*] this E ; his H.

102. *dawit*] dawan was H.

103. *part*] partis.

104. *to-ga*] gan ga E ; can ga H.

see l. 575.

105. *till*] to. *war—till*] for to get rayed H.

H.

106. *war*] war.

107. *sesit*] sieged H.

113. *vald*] wald.

115. *dedis*] liues H.

117. *ma*] so E ; may C. *at*] that.

118. *sa*] E om.

120. *wes*] war.

123. *cumrayit*] contraryt E ; dis-

	That thai haly the bak can ta.	
Some escape.	Sum gat the castell, bot nocht all, And sum ar slyddin our the wall, And sum war in-to handis tañe, And sum war in the bargane slañe. On this viß thame contenit thai, Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day;	125     130
Those that are in the castle,  being numerous,	Than thai that in the castell war, And othir that fled to thame thar, That war a richt gret cumpany, Quhan thai the baner saw sympilly Swa standand, stuffit with sa quhoyn,	    135
sally out.	Thar 3ettis haf thai opnyt soyn, And yschit on thame hardely.	
Murray and Douglas meet them. [Fol. 129. C.]	Than erll Thomas, that wes worthy, And als the gude lord of Douglasß, With the few folk that with thame waß,	  140
	Met thame stoutly with vapnys seir. Thar men mycht se, that had beyn neir, Men abaundouñe thame hardely.	
There is hard fighting.	The Yngliß men faucht cruelly, And with all mychtis can thame payñe Till rusche the Scottis men agañe. I trow thai had swa doñe, perfay, For thai war fewar fer than thai,	  145
Sir William of Keith and Gaulistoun	Gif it ne had beyn añe new maid knycht, That till his name schir Vilzhamne hicht	 150

- 
124. *can*] *gan*. *haly*—*bak*] all hail a E. *quhoyn*] wheene H.  
the flight H. 136. *opnyt*] apnyt.  
127. *in-to*] in-till. 139. *als*] *follows* lord in EH.  
128. *in the*] in-till. 143. *thame*] E om.  
130. *noyne*] none. 145. *can*] *gan*.  
134. *baner*] *baneris* E; Baners H. 146. *Till*] To EH.  
*saw*] sa H. *sympilly*] simply H; 149. *Gif*—*had*] Had it not H.  
simply E. *ane*] A.  
135. *Swa standand*] Standand and 150. *wilzhamne*] wilzam E; William  
E; Saw stand, and H. *sa*] so H; H.

performs  
wonders. Of Keth, and of the Gawlistounē  
 He hecht, throu differens of sur-noune,  
 That bair hym sa [rycht] weill that day,  
 And put him till sa hard assay,  
 And sic dyntis about him dang, 155  
 That, quhar he saw the thikast thrang,  
 He prikit with sa mekill mycht,  
 And sua enforsaly can ficht,  
 That he maid till his menzhe vay;  
 [And] thai that neir war by hym ay 160  
 Dang on thair fais sa hardely,  
 At last the Eng- That thai haf tane the bak haly,  
 lish give way, And till the castell held thair vay,  
 and escape to And at gret myscheiff enterit thai.  
 the castle. For thai war pressit thair so fast, 165  
 That thai feill lesit of the last ;  
 Bot thai that enterit, nocht-for-thi,  
 Sparit thair zettis hastely,  
 And in hy to the wallis ran,  
 For thai war nocht all sekir than. 170

Thus was the  
town taken.

THE toune wes takyn on this viß,  
 With gret vorschipe and hye empriß ;  
 And all the gud that thai thar fand  
 Was sesit smertly in-till hand.

Much spoil is Wittail thair fand in gret fusiounē, 175

151. *keth*] keyth E; Keith H.  
*the*] E *om.* *gawlistounē*] gallistoun  
 E; Gallistoun H.

152. *sur-noune*] *miswritten* sur-  
 renoune C; sournome E; Surnoun H.

153. *sa*] H *om.* [*rycht* E] right H;  
 C *om.*

157. *prikis*] pressit E; preassed H.

158. *enforsaly*] enforslye E; en-  
 forcedly H.

160. [*And* EH] *That* C. *thai*] E  
*om.* *by*] to H.

162. *the*] thair. *haly*] in hy EH.

163. *thair vay*] the way.

166. *feill lesit*] left mony H.

168. *Sparit*] Closed H.

171. RUBRIC *in* H—Here sent they  
 word to the King, That came to the  
 Castell yeelding. *viss*] wiss.

172. *With*] Throu E; Through H.  
*empriss*] emprise H; priss E.

173. *thai*] E *om.*

174. *smertly intill*] hailly in their H.

175. *fusiounē*] foyoun.

found in it.	And all that fell till stuff of toune ; Thai kept that fra distroying, And syne haß vord send to the king. And he wes of that tithing blith,	
The king advances to Berwick. [Fol. 129 A. C.]	And sped him thiddirward full swith. And as he throu the cuntre raid, Men gaderit till him, quhill he had A mekill rout of worthy men. And the folk that war wonand then In-till the Merß and Tevidail,	180     185
Many other Scotchmen advance against the town.	And in the forest alß all hail, And the est end of Lowdiañe, Befor [that] the king com, ar gañe To Berwik with a stalward hand, That nane that wes that tyme wonand On 3ond half Tweid durst weill apeer. And thai that in the castell weir, Quhen thai thair fais in sic plente	     190
The English are discouraged,	Saw forrouth thame assemblit be, And had na hope of reskewyng, Thai war abasit in gret thing.	  195
but hold the castle for five days more, when they yield.	Bot thai the castell, nocht-for-thi, Held thai fiff dayis sturdely, Syne 3ald it on the sext day, And till thair cuntre syne vent thai. Thus wes the castell and the toune Till Scottis men possessioun	    200

176. *till*] to. *fell—of*] served to

stuffe a H.

177. *Thai—that*] That kept thai

EH.

178. *vord*] word.180. *full*] E *om.*187. *And*] And in C; *but* EH *omit*  
in. *lowdiane*] lothiane.188. [*that* EH] C *om.* *ar*] and ar  
C; *but* EH *omit* and.189. *a*] sa.191. *half*] side H.194. *forrouth*] before H.198. *thai*] so CE; H *om.* *sturdely*]  
right sturdely H.199. *3ald*] 3auld.200. *vent*] went.201. RUBRIC in H—Here Walter  
Stewart took of the King Baith Town  
and Castell in keeping.

	Brought; and soyn eftir the king	
The king enters Berwick.	Com ridand with his gadering Till Berwik, and in the casteill He herbryit is, bath fair and weill, And all his gret lordis hym by. The remanand all comonly Till herbry in the toune ar gañe.	205
He determines not to destroy the walls,	The king haß than till consell tañe, That he vald nocht brek douñe the vall, Bot castell, and the toune with-all,	210
[Fol. 87. E.]	Stuff weill with men and vith vittail And alkynd othir apparail	
but to garrison the castle.	That mycht avall, or 3eit mysteir Till hald castell or touñe of wer.	215
Walter, Steward of Scotland,	And Valter, Steward of Scotland, That than ves 3oung and avenand,	
the king's son- in-law,	And sone-in-law wes to the king, Had sa gret will and sic 3arnyng Neirhand the marchis for till be,	220
undertakes to guard Berwick.	At Berwik to 3emsall tuk he; And resauit of the kyng the touñe, Bath the castell and [the] dwngeouñe.	
Bruce sends men on a foray into England. [Fol. 180. C.]	The king gert men of gret nobillay Ryde in-till Ynglande, for till pray, That brought out gret plente of fee;	225

- 
205. *Till*] To EH.  
 206. *herbryit is*] wes herbrid EH.  
 207. *gret*] E om.  
 208. *all comonly*] commonaly.  
 209. *in*] till.  
 210. *till*] to EH.  
 211. *vald*] wald.  
 214. *alkynd*] alkyn.  
 215. *3eit*] yet H; ellis E.  
 216. *Till*] To EH.  
 217. *valter*] waltir.  
 218. *ves*] wes. *avenand*] vailyeand  
 H.
219. *sone—law*] sonne in law H;  
 syne in laucht (!) E.  
 222. *At*] That EH. *to 3emsall*] to  
 3emsell E; in keeping then H.  
 224. *Bath*] Bath of C (*but* of *is*  
*not wanted*); And EH. [*the* E] CH  
 om.  
 225. *nobillay*] Nobillay H; noblay  
 E.  
 226. *till*] to EH. *pray*] take Prey  
 H.  
 227. *That*] And H.



	And sum cuntreis trewit he [For] vittale, [that in] gret foysoûne	
He garrisons the town, and victuals it for a year.	He gert bring smertly to the toune, Swa that bath toun and castell war Weill stuffit for aȝe zeir and mair. The gude Steward of Scotland then Send for his frendis and his men,	230
Besides archers, townsmen, and crossbow-men, Walter has 500 men with him ;	Quhill he had vith him, but archeris, But burgeß and but oblesteris, Fiff hundreth men wicht and worthy, That armys bar of ancistry.	235
also John Crab, a Flemish engineer.	Iohne Crab, a Flemyne, als had he That wes of gret subtilite, Till ordane till mak aparale For till defend and till assale Castell of wer or than cite, That nane slear mycht fundin be.	240
John Crab makes various engines of war ;	He gert engynis and trammys ma, And purvait gret fyre alsua ; Spryngaldis and schotis on seir maneris, That till defend castell afferis, He purvait in-till full gret waȝe,	245
but he had no cannon,	Bot gynis for crakkis had he nane.	250

228. *trewit*] tholyt. And with some  
Countries trewes tooke he H.

229. [*For* EH] And C. [*that in*  
EH] in-to C.

231. *toun* — *castell*] castell and  
toun.

232. *ane*] so CH ; A E. *and*] or  
H.

236. And but burdowys and aw-  
blasteris E ; And but Burgesses and  
Aulisters H.

238. *armys bar*] bar armys EH.

239. *flemyne*] flemyng EH. C *bad-*  
*ly puts als before a.*

240. *gret subtilite*] sa gret sutelte  
EH.

241. *till* (2)] and E ; and to H.

245. *trammys*] trammys or crammys  
C ; cranys or tranys E ; Traines H.  
(*The word is uncertain.*)

246. *gret*] so CE ; great H. *Perhaps*  
*it should be grek* (Greek) ; *which*  
*might have been written grec, and read*  
*as gret.*

247. *Spryngaldis*] Fire-galdes H.  
*schotis*] schot E ; shot H.

248. *till*] to EH.

249. *wane* EH] *badly spelt* vayne  
C.

250. *gynis*] gynyns E ; gunnes H.  
*nane* EH] nayne C.

as the use of  
them was then  
unknown in  
Scotland.  
 For in Scotland ȝeit than, but wene,  
 The oyß of thame had nocht beyn sene.  
 And quhen the tounne apon this viß  
 Wes stuffit, as I heir deuiß,  
 The nobill king his vay haß tañe, 255  
 And ryddin toward Lowdiane;  
 And Valter Steward, that ves stout,  
 He left in Berwik with his rout,  
 And ordanit fast for apparail,  
 Till defend gif men vald assaill. 260

When the King  
of England hears  
that he has lost  
Berwick,  
 Q when till the king of England  
 Wes tald how that, with stalward hand,  
 Berwik wes tane, and stuffit syne  
 With men and vittale and armyne,  
 He wes anoyit gretumly, 265  
 And gert assemblill hastely  
 His consale, and haß tane to rede  
 That he his host wald thiddir leid,  
 And, with all mycht that he mycht get,  
 To the tounne aße assege set, 270  
 And [ger] dik thame so stalwardly,  
 That, quhill thame likit thair to ly,  
 Thai suld fer out the trastar be.

251. *wene* EH] *weyne* C.252. *oyss*] *wss* E; *vse* H. *sene* E] *H.*  
scene H; *seyne* C.253. *And*] E *om.* *viss*] *wiss.*254. *I*] *Ik.*255. *vay*] *way.*256. *lowdiane*] *lowthiane.*257. *valter*] *waltir.*258. *in*] *at.*260. *Till*] To EH. *vald*] *wald.*261. RUBRIC in H—The King of  
England his power Gaddered to siege  
Barvike but weere. *till*] to EH.264. *vittale*—*armyne*] *wictaill* ofarmyn E; armour and vittaille fyne  
H.265. *anoyit*] *anoyit* richt C; *but*  
EH *omit* richt.266. *assemblill*] *be* summond H.  
*hastely*] *all* halely.268. *wald*] *so* CH; *will* E.270. *So* E; C *has* he set *for* set  
(*wrongly*); H *has*—Vnto the toun a  
Siege set.271. [ger] *such* *must* *be* the  
*reading*; gert CE; gart H (*all*  
*wrong*).273. *trastar*] *traister* E; *surer* H.

	And gif the men of the cuntre With strynth of men vald thame assale	275
	At thair dykis in-to battale, Thai suld advantage haue gretly ; And thought all suth, for gret foly War till assaill in-to fechting At his dikis so stark a thing.	280
that the Scotch might not dare attack him.	Quhen his consell on this maneir Wes tañe, he gert bath fer and neir His host haly assemblit be ; A gret folk than with him had he.	
This decided on, he collects his host.	Of La[n]cister the erll Thomaß, That syne wes sanctit, as men sais, In-till his cumpany wes thar, And all the erllis als that war In Yngland worthy for to ficht, And baronis als of mekill mycht	285
Earl Thomas of Lancaster goes with him, and other earls and barons.	With him to that assege had he ; And gert the schippes by the se Bring schot and othir apparale, With gret varnysing of vittale. To Berwik with all this menze, With his vittalis arayit, come he ; And till gret lordis, ilkane syndri, Ordanit añe felde for thar herbry.	290
Several ships sail thither at the same time.	Than men mycht se soyne palzeonis	295
So many tents		

275. *men*] folke II.278. *And—suth*] Thocht all scot-  
tis E ; Although forsooth H. *for*] it  
H.281. *his*] this.283. *host*] ost E ; men H.284. *A*] Ane. *folk*] Oast H.285. *lancister*] longcastell EH ; *mis-*  
*written* lacister C.286. *sanctit*] sanct EH.287. *In-till*] In.288. *als that*] that als.292. *the* (I)] his.294. *With*] And EH. *varnysing*]  
warnysone E ; Garnisoun als H.295. *this*] his.296. *With* E] With all C ; And  
with H. *vittalis*] bataillis. H *has*  
—And with his battels arriued came  
he.298. *ane*] A.299. *Than*] That E. *se soyne*]  
sone se E ; see their H. *palzeonis*]  
pailzownys E ; Pauilliouns H.

BOOK XVII.] THE SCOTCH PREPARE FOR DEFENCE. 89 .

are pitched round Berwick, that they form a town.	Be stentit on syndry fassownys, So feill, that thai a toune maid thair Mair than bath toune and castell war. On othir half syne, on the se,	300
The ships arrive.	The schippis com in sic plente, Vith vittale, armyng, and vith men, That all the havyn wes stoppit then. And quhen thai that war in the toune Saw thair fais in sic foyssoune By land and se cum sturdely,	305
The Scotch pre- pare for defence. [Fol. 181. C.]	Thai, as wicht men and richt worthy, Schupe tharne for till defend thar stede, That thai in auentur of dede Suld put thame, or than rusche agane Thar fais ; for thair capitane	310
They are fond of their captain.	Tretit thame sa lusumly, And thar-with-all the mast party [Fol. 57 b. E.] Of thame that armyt with hym wer War of his blude, and sib men ner ; Or ellis thai war his allye. Of sic confort men mycht thaim se, And of sa richt fair contenyng,	315
None are afraid .	As nane of thame had abasing. On dayis arayit weill war thai, And on the nycht weill wachit ay.	320
They watch for 6 days, un- assailed.	Weill sex dais thai swa abaid, That thai na full gret bargane maid.	325

---

300. <i>on</i> ] of.	320. <i>confort</i> ] comfort EH.
301. <i>So—toune</i> ] That thai A toune all sone.	323. <i>arayit</i> ] armyt E ; armed H.
311. <i>for till</i> ] soone to H ; to E.	324. <i>wachit</i> ] walkyt E ; watched H.
315. <i>lusumly</i> ] luffely E ; louingly H.	325. <i>thai swa</i> ] sua thai.
318. <i>and</i> ] or H. <i>men</i> ] him.	326. <i>thai</i> ] E <i>om. maid</i> ] haid E ; had H.
319. <i>thai</i> ] E <i>om. his allye</i> ] his elye E ; of his ally H.	

How Valter Steward ves assalzeit in Berwik be  
the kyng of England.

The English intrench them- selves.	In-till this tym that I tell here, That thai withouten bargane wer,	
	The Ingliß-men sa closit had Thar host with dikis at thai maid,	330
	That thai war strynthit gretumly. Syne with all handis besaly	
	Thai schupe thame with thar apparale Thame of the toune for till assale.	
	And on our Ladeis evin Mary,	335
On the Eve of the Nativity of the Virgin, Sept. 7, 1319, the English	That bare the byrth that all can by, That men callis hir Natiuite,	
	Soyn in the mornyng men mycht se The Yngliß host arme thame in hy	
	And display baneris sturdely,	340
	And assemmyll till thar baneris With instrumentis on seir maneris,	
	As scaffatis, ledderis, and coueryngis, Pykis, howis, and ek staff-slyngis ;	
display their banners,	Till ilk lord and his battale	345
	Wes ordanit quhar he suld assale.	
	And thai within, quhen that thai saw [That] menze raynge thame swa on raw,	
	Till thar wardis thai went in hy, That war stuffit richt stalwardly	350
	With stanys, schot, and other thing,	
and advance with all their apparatus of siege.		
The Scotch assemble at their posts.		

327. RUBRIC from C. H has—  
How Englishmen dyked them about,  
And syne went to the Siege but dout.  
330. *as*] that EH.  
335. *on*] of. *ladeis evin*] ladys ewyn  
E; Ladies Euen H.  
336. *can*] gan.  
340. *display*] displayit.  
341. *till*] to EH; and in ll. 352,  
360.

342. *on*] of.  
343. *scaffatis*] scaffaldis E; Scaf-  
folds H. *coueryngis*] couering E;  
Couerings H.  
344. *ek staff-slyngis*] with staf-  
slyng.  
348. [*That* E] Thai C; Tha H.  
*menze*] men H.  
351. *schot*] & schot.

	That nedit till thair defending ;	
[Fol. 181 & C.]	And in-to sic maner abaid	
	Thair fais that till assayl thame maid.	
	Quhen thai without war all redy,	355
Trumpets sound to the assault.	Thai trumpit till aȳe sawt in hy ;	
	And ilk man with his apparale,	
	Quhar he suld be, vent till assale.	
	Till ilk kyrneill that wes thair	
Archers are sent forward.	Archeris till schute assignit war.	360
	And quhen on this viß thai war bouȳe,	
	Thai went in hy toward the touȳe,	
	And fillit dykis richt hastely.	
The assailants try to plant their ladders,	Syne to the wallis hardely	
	Thai went with ledderis that thai had ;	365
	Bot thai so gret defens haß maid,	
	That war abovin apon the wall,	
which are thrown down.	That [oft] ledderis and men with-all	
	Thai gert fall flatlynges to the grounde.	
	Than men mycht se in litill stound	370
	Men assalȳeand richt [hardely],	
	Dressand vp ledderis douchtely,	
	And sum on ledderis pressand war.	
	Bot thai that on the wall ves thar	
	Till all perellis can abandoune	375
	Thame, till thair fais war dounȳyn douȳe.	
The besieged are	At gret myschef defendit thai	

- 
354. *till—thame*] to them sailyie hardy C.  
H. 372. *Dressand*] Preassing H.  
356. *till—sawt*] till A salt E ; to 373 — 376. H *has two differing*  
the assault H. *lines here*—And them abone defend-  
358. *vent*] went EH. ing well, Tumbling them downe to  
363. *richt*] E om. their vnseill.  
364. *wallis*] wall rycht. 374. *ves*] war.  
366. *defens hass*] defend that. 375. *can*] gan.  
368. *[oft E]* baith H ; *miswritten* 376. *dounȳyn*] dounȳyn.  
of C. 377. *At — myschef*] With great  
370. *in*] in a. annoy H.  
371. *richt*] E om. [*hardely* EH]

in great danger, the walls being very low.	Thair toune ; for, gif we suth sall say, The vallis of the toune than wer Sa law, that a man with a sper Micht strike aȝe othir [vp in] the face. And the schot als so thik thar was That it wes wonder for till se.	380
Walter Steward rides round continually.	Walter Steward, with a menȝe, Raid ay about, for to se quhar That for till help mast myster war; And quhar men pressit mast, he maid Succoure till his that myster had. The mekill folk that wes vithout	385
The town is attacked at all points.	Had enveronyt the toune about Swa that na part of it wes fre. [Thar] mycht men assailȝeouris se Abandoune thame richt hardely ; And the defendouris douchtely Vith all thar mychtis can thame payȝe	390
[Fol. 182. C.]	Till put thair fais forȝ agaȝe. On this viȝ thame contenit thai Quhill noyne wes passit of the day ; Than thai that in the schippes war Ordanit a schip vith full gret far Till cum with all hir apparale Richt to the vall, for till assale. [Till myd-mast wp thair bat thai drew,] With armyt men tharin enew ;	395
The besiegers prepare a ship,  in which they lift up a boat, full of men, half-mast high.		400

381. [vp in H] wp in E ; in-to C ;  
see l. 731.

383. *wes*] war.

386. *till*] to EH.

388. *till his*] to them H.

389. *mekill*] mony H.

392. [Thar E] Their H ; That C.  
*assailȝeouris*] the assailiaris.

395. *can*] gan.

396. *forss*] force H ; with force E.

397. *viss*] wiss.

398. *noyne*] none E ; Noone H.

400. *vith*] with EH.

401. *Till*] To EH.

403. And in that schip thai maid  
gret glew C ; Till myd mast wp thair  
bat thai drew E ; To the mid Mast  
their bate they drew H.

	A brig thai had, for till lat fall	405
	Richt fra the bat apon the vall.	
	Vith bargis by hir can thai row,	
The ship approaches the wall,	And pressit thame full fast to tow	
	Hir by the brighouß to the wall ;	
	On that entent thai set thame all.	410
	Thai broucht hir quhill scho com veill neir ;	
	Than mycht men se on seir maner	
	Sum men defend, and sum assale	
	Full besaly with gret trawale.	
	Thai of the toune so weill thame bare,	415
	That the schipmen sa handillit war	
but cannot get so near as to let fall the drawbridge from the boat to the wall.	That thai the schip on na maner	
	Micht ger cum till the vall so neir	
	That thair fall-brig mycht reik thar-till.	
	So lang abaid thai fechtand still	420
	Quhill that scho ebbit on the ground ;	
[Fol. 58. E.]	Than mycht men, in a litill stound,	
	Se thame be fer of war cowyne	
	Than thai war eir, that war hir in.	
The tide ebbs, and the ship is left aground.	And quhen the se wes ebbit sa,	425
	That men all dry till hir mycht ga,	
	Out of the toune yschit in hy	
	Till hir a weill gret cumpany,	
	And fyre till hir has kendlyt soyne.	
The ship is burnt.	In-till schort tyme swa haf thai doñe,	430

- 
407. *can*] gan. *hir—row*] they can H.  
her tow H.  
408. *thame—tow*] her right fast to 418. *cum—vall*] to cum the wall E;  
row H. *full*] rycht EH. come to the wall H.  
409. *Hir by*] Beside H. 419. *reik*] reeke H ; neych E.  
411. *veill*] well. 420. *So in* CH ; For oucht thai  
412. *seir*] sic. mycht, gud or ill E.  
414. *gret trawale*] hard bataille H. 423. *cowyne*] conuyne H.  
415. *So in* CH ; With in sa stoutly 424. *eir*] er E ; euer H.  
thai thaim bar E. 426. *till—mycht*] mycht till hyr.  
416. *handillit*] handlyt E ; handled 429. *till*] in H.  
430. *In-till*] In-to EH.



	That thai in fyre has gert hir [bryn],	
	And sum war slayn that var hir in ;	
	And sum fled and away ar gane.	
The Scotch capture a clever engineer,	Ane engynour thair haf thai tañe,	
	That sleast wes of that mister	435
	That men vist, outhir fer or ner ;	
and retreat into the town, [Fol. 122 A. C.] only just in time.	In-to the toun syne enterit thai.	
	It fell thame happely, perfay,	
	That thai gat in so hastely ;	
	For thair come a gret cumpany	440
	In full gret hy vp by the se,	
	Quhen thai the schip saw byrnand be.	
	Bot or thai com, the tothir var past,	
	The 3het thai barrit and closit fast.	
There is hard fighting.	The folk assalzeit fast that day,	445
	And thai within defendit ay	
	On sic a viß, that thai that var	
	With gret enforß assalzeand thar	
	Micht do thar will on na maner.	
At evening, the besiegers grow weary.	And quhen that evynsang-tym ves neir,	450
	The folk without, that war wery,	
	And sum woundit full cruelly,	
	Saw thame within defend thaim swa,	
	And saw it wes nocht eyth till ta	
	The touñe, with sic defens wes maid	455
	[By thaim] that it in stering had.	

431. *thai*—*has*] into fire they H.  
[*bryn* E] byrne C ; birne H ; see ll.  
457, 467.

432. *sum war*] mony H.

435. *sleat wes*] wes sleat EH.

436. *vist*] wyst. *outhir*] ony.

438. *perfay*] that day H.

442. *byrnand*] brynnand E ; burn-  
ing H. *be*] hie H.

444. *3het*—*closit*] 3at and barryt It  
rycht.

445. *The*] That.

447. *a viss*] a wise H ; awiss E.

448. *gret enforss*] sik a force H.

454. *till*] to.

455. *with*] quhill E ; while H.

456. [*By thaim*] By them H ; And  
thai CE. H *has*—By them that with-  
in the steering had ; E *has*—And thai  
that in-till faring had (*which makes  
little sense*).

The English see their ship is burnt,	The host saw that thar schip wes brynt, And of thame that thar-in war tynt, And thar folk woundit and very;	
and retreat.	[Thai] gert blaw the retret in hy. Fra the schipmen reboytit war, Thai let the tothir assale no mar. For throu the schip thai wend ilkañe That thai the tounne weill suld haf tañe.	460
Some say more ships than one approached the town.	Men sais that ma schippis than swa Pressit that tyme the tounne till ta; Bot for that thar ves brynt bot añe, And the gynour tharin wes tañe,	465
I mention but one.	Now heir tharfor mencione maid I Bot of a schip all anerly.	470

	<p>When thai had blawen the ratret, Thai folk, that tholit had panys gret, Vithdrew thame haly fra the wall; The assalt haf thai levit all.</p>	
The besieged are glad to see their foes retreat,	And thai within, that very war, And mony of thame voundit sar, War blith and glad quhen at thai saw Thair fais swagat thame vithdraw. And, fra thai wist suthly that thai	475
[Fol. 138. C.]	Held to thair paljeonys thair vay,	480

- 
457. *wes*] was H; war E. H *has*— yn had.  
And of their men in hy were tynt. 472. *Thai*] Thair E; Tha H. *had*] H *om*.  
459. *very*] wery. 474. *levit all*] left all E; left with-  
460. [*Thai* E] They H; The C. all H.  
461. *reboytit*] rebotyt E; rebuted  
H. 475. *very*] wery.  
466. *till*] to EH. 476. *voundit*] woundyt war.  
467. *ves*] wes. 477. *at*] that. *at thai*] they them  
468. *gynour*] engynour E; In- H.  
gynour H. 478. *Thair—swagat*] Thair fayis on  
469. *Now*] EH *om*. *tharfor*] befor. that wiss E; Sa in haill battell H.  
471. *thai—blawen*] that thai blaw- 480. *vay*] way EH.

	Thai set gud wachis to thar wall ;	
and refresh themselves.	Syne to thar innys went thai all, And esyt thame that very war.	
	And othir, that war woundit sar, Had lechis gude forsuth, I hicht,	485
	That helpit thame as thai best mycht.	
Men are weary on both sides,	On athir syde wery war thai ; That nycht thai did no mair, perfoy.	
and there is a 5 days' truce.	Fiff dayis thar-efter thai war still, That nane till othir did mekill ill.	490
	Now leiff we thir folk heir liand All still, as I haf borne on hand, And turn the courß of our carpyng Till schir Robert the douchty king, That assemblit bath fer and neir	495
King Robert, hearing of King Edward's approach,	Ane host, that, quhen he vist but weir That the king swa of Ingland Had assegit with stalward hand Berwik, quhar Valter Steward waß, Till purpoß with his men he tais,	500
	That he vald nocht sa soyne assale The kyng of Ingland with battale, And at his dykis specially, For it mycht weill turn to foly.	
determines not to attack him in his trenches ;	Tharfor he ordanit lordis twa,	505
but sends Murray and Douglas to	The erll of Murreff wes ane of tha, The tothir wes the lord Dowglaß,	

- 
481. *Thai*] E om.  
 482. *to*] till.  
 483. *very*] wery.  
 484. *othir*] als them H. *war*  
*woundit*] had woundis.  
 485. *I*] Ik.  
 486. *as—best*] with all their H.  
 489. *thar-efter*] efter E ; after H.  
 490. *mekill*] great H.  
 491. RUBRIC *in* H—Here sent King  
 Robert in England, Dowglas and  
 Mvrray with stalward hand.  
 492. *All*] And. *I*] Ik.  
 494. *Till*] To EH ; and *in* l. 500.  
 496. *that quhen*] and when H ;  
 quhen that E. *vist*] wist EH.  
 501. *vald*] wald.  
 506. *murreff*] Murray H.  
 507. *lord*] lord of.

ravage England,	With xv thousand men to paß In Yngland, for till burn [and] sla, And swa gret ryot thar till ma,	510
in the hope that the English may take alarm,	That thai that lay segande the touñe, Quhen thai herd the distructione, That thai suld in-till Ingland ma, Suld be sa dredand and sa wa For thair childir and [for thair] wiffis, That thai suld dreid suld leiß thar liffis, And thar gudis alsua, that thai Suld dreid [than] suld be had away,	515
and raise the siege.	That thai suld leif the sege in hy And wend to reskew hastely	520
[Fol. 188 A. C.]	Thair gude, thair frendis, and thair land. Tharfor, as I haf borne on hand, [Thir] lordis send he furth in hy ;	
They advance into England,	And thai thair way tuk hastely, And in Ingland gert byrn and sla,	525
[Fol. 58 B. E.]	And vroucht tharin so mekill wa	
and lay waste the country,	As thai forrayit the cuntre, That it wes pite for to se	
doing great damage.	Till thame that vald it ony gude, For thai distroyit all as thai zude. So lang thai raid distroyande swa, As thai trauersit to and fra, That thai ar cummyne till Repouñe,	530
They advance to Ripon ;		

509. *till*] to EH. *burn*] bryn. [*and*  
EH] to C ; see l. 525.

510. *till*] to EH.

511. *segande*] segeand E ; sieging  
H.

512. *herd*] heare H.

515. [*for thair* EH] eke C.

516. *suld leiss*] to lese E ; to losse  
H.

518. [*than* E] that C ; they H.

519. *That*] And H ; E om. *the*]  
thair.

520. *hastely*] thaim hastily C ; but  
EH omit thaim.

522. *I*] Ik.

523. [*Thir* EH] The C.

524. *way tuk*] wayes held H.

525. *byrn*] bryn E ; burne H.

526. *vroucht*] wroucht.

527. *forrayit*] fure through H.

529. *vald*] wald EH.

532. *As*] That H. *to*] oft to H.

533. *That*] Sa that H. *till*] to EH.  
*repoune*] repoun EH.

	[And] distroyit haly the touñe.	
then to Borough- bridge and Mitton.	At Burrow-brig syne thar herbry Thai tuk, and at Mytoun thar-by ; And quhen the men of that cuntre Saw thar land sa distroyit be,	535
The Yorkshire men assemble in great numbers and of all trades,	Thai gaderit, in-till full gret hy, Archeris, burgeß, with þhemeny, Prestis, clerkis, monkis, and freris, Husbandis, and men of all mysteris,	540
till at last they number 20,000 men.	Quhill at thai sammyn assemmyllit var Weill twenty thousand men and mair. Richt gud armyng eneuch thai had,	545
The Archbishop of York com- mands them.	The archbischof of York thai maid Thair capitañe ; and to consale Haß tane, that thai in playn battale Wald assale the Scottis men, That fer fewar than thai war then.	550
They attack the Scotch,	Than he displayit his baneir, And othir bischoppes that thar ver Gert display baneris alsua.	
on the way to Mitton.	All in a rout furth can thai ga Toward Mytounie the reddy vay ; And quhen that Scottis men herd say That thai war till thame cumand neir,	555
The Scotch are divided into two hosts.	Thai buskit thame on thar best maneir, And delit thame in-till battellis twa.	

- 
534. [*And EH*] That thai C. *the* that EH. 545. *armyng*] armys E ; armour H. *eneuch*] Inew E ; aneugh H.
535. *burrow-brig*] borowbrig E ; Borrow-brig H. *herbry*] so E ; her- 552. *thar ver*] were there H.
- bery C ; harbery H ; see ll. 209, 298. 553. *Baneris*] thar baneris E ; their Baner H.
536. *mytoun*] Midtoun H. 554. *can*] gan.
539. *in-till*] in-to EH. 555. *mytoun*] Midtoun H. *vay*] way EH.
540. *with*] and EH. 556. *thar*] the EH.
541. *monkis and*] Abbots H. 557. *Thar*] E om. *till*] to.
542. *mysteris*] maneris. 559. *in-till*] into H ; in E.
543. *at*] that. *Quhill — sammyn*] While they togidder H.

Dowglaß the vaward he can ma ; 560  
 The reirward maid the erll Thomas,  
 For chiftane of the host he was.  
 Aud, sua ordanit in gude aray,  
 Toward thair fais thai held their vay.  
 [Fol. 184. C.] Quhen athir had of othir sicht, 565  
 The battle is Thai pressit on bath halfis to ficht.  
 joined. The Ingliß men com on sadly  
 The English ad- With gud contenans and hardy,  
 vance steadily, Richt in a frount vith a baner,  
 Quhill thai thair fayis com so neir 570  
 That thai thar visage veill mycht se ;  
 but, when only Thre sper-lynth, I trow [weill] mycht be  
 at a distance of Betuix thame, quhen sic abasing  
 three spear- lengths, are Tuk thame, but mar, in-to a swyng,  
 seized with a Thai gaf the bak all, and to-ga. 575  
 panic, and flee. Quhen Scottis men haß seyn thame swa  
 Affrayitly fle all thar [way],  
 In gret hy apon thame schot thai,  
 And slew and tuk a gret party.  
 The laiff fled full effrayitly 580  
 As thai best mycht, to seik varrand.  
 Nearly 1000 Thai war chassit so neir at hand,  
 Englishmen That weill ane thousand deit thar ;  
 perish ; And of [thaim] 3eit thre hundreth war  
 of whom 300

560. *vaward*—*can*] awaward gan E;  
 the Vanguard can H.

561. *the*] EH om.

565. *athir*] that they H.

566. *halfis to*] half to the E ; the  
 halfes to H.

567. *on*] rycht EH.

569. *frount*] so CH ; frusch E.  
*vith*] with EH. a] thair EH.

570. *thai*] that H ; E om.

571. *veill*] well H ; E om.

572. *lynth*] lenth. *I trow*] trow I H.  
 [weill E] it H ; well A ; C om.

574. *but—into*] that but mar in E.  
*but—swyng*] that but assonyeing H.

575. *gaf*] tooke H. *all and*] and  
 all H.

576. *hass*] had.

577. [way EH] away C.

578. *schot*] set H.

581. *mycht*] moucht E ; mought H.  
*varrand*] warand.

582. *war*] E om.

583. *weill ane*] well a H ; ner A E.

584. *And*] E om. [thaim E] thai  
 C ; tha H.

were priests.	Prestis, that deit in-to that chaß.	585
This skirmish was therefore called the "Chapter of Mitton."	Tharfor that bargaïne callit waß "The Chaptour of Mytounē"; for thare Slayn sa mony prestis ware.	
	Q when thir folk thus discumfit was, And Scottis men had left the chaß,	590
	Thai went thame furthwarde in the land Slayand, distroyand, and byrnand.	
The besiegers of Berwick are again on the move.	And thai [that] at the sege lay, Or it wes passit the fift day, Had made thame syndry apparale	595
	To gang eftsonis till assale.	
They make a "sow," full of armed men,	Of gret gestis aīe sow thai maid, That stalward heling owth it had, With armyt men enew thar-in, And instrumentis als for to myne.	600
and many scaffolds higher than the wall.	Syndry scaffatis thai maid vith-all That war weill hyar than the wall, And ordanit als that by the se The tounne suld weill assalzeit be. And thai vithin, that saw thame swa	605
[Fol. 134 & C.] John Crab pre-	So gret apparale schap till ma, Throu [Crabbis] consale, that ves sle,	

585. *into*] in E.H. *chass*] place H.586. *Tharfor*] That for.587. *chaptour*] chaptur E; Chapter  
H. *mytounē*] Midtoun H.589. RUBRIC *in* H—The other as-  
sault of Barvike, That was right sharpe  
to Scots kinrike. *thir*] that thir H;  
this E. *thus*] H *om.*591. *furthwarde*] forthward E;  
fordward H.592. *distroyand—byrnand*] destroy-  
ing and burnand H; swa and destroy-  
and E.593. [*that* E.H.] C *om.* *sege*] sege  
E; Siege H.594. *Or*] Ere H.597. *ane*] A.598. *owth it*] outwith H; abowyn  
It E.599. *enew*] Inew E; anew H.600. *als*] EH *om.*601. *scaffatis*] scaffaldis E; Scaf-  
folds H.602. *weill*] far H.604. *weill assalzeit*] right well  
sailyied H.605. *And*] E *om.*606. *schap till*] to them H.607. [*crabbis*] *miswritten* craggis C;  
crabys E; Crabbes H.

<p>pare a "crane," running on wheels;</p>	<p>Añe cren thai haf gert dreß vp hey Rynand on quhelis, that thai mycht bring It quhar neid war of mast helping.</p>	<p>610</p>
<p>they also prepare pitch, tar, lint, hards, with brimstone, and dry sticks,</p>	<p>And pik and ter als haf thai tane, And lynt [and] hardið with brynstañe, And dry treis that weill wald [brin], And mellit syne athir othir in ; And gret flaggatis tharof thai maid,</p>	<p>615</p>
<p>bound together with iron bands.</p>	<p>Gyrdit with irñe-bendis braid ; Of thai flaggatis mycht mesurit be Till a gret tunnys quantite.</p>	
<p>They mean to set this bale on fire, and lower it with the "crane" upon the "sow."</p>	<p>Thai flaggatis byrnand in a baill With thair cren thought thai till avail.</p>	<p>620</p>
	<p>And gif the sow come to the wall, Till lat thame byrnand on hir fall, And with añe stark cheyne hald thame thar Quhill all war brint [vp] that [thar war].</p>	
<p>They prepare also other engines.</p>	<p>Engynys alsua for till cast Thai ordanit and maid redy fast, And set ilk man syne till his ward.</p>	<p>625</p>
<p>[Fol. 59. E.] Sir Walter Steward is to go the circuit of the walls constantly.</p>	<p>And schir Valter, the gude Steward, With armyt men suld ryde about, And se quhar at thar var mast dout, And succur thar with his menþhe.</p>	<p>630</p>

- 
608. *Ane cren*] A crane EH. *hey*] Twynnys C ; Tunnes H ; townys E.  
so E ; hie H ; hye C.  
610. *neid—mast*] that nede war of brynnand E ; Fagots burning H.  
EH. 620. *Cren*] cran EH. *thai*] E om.  
611. *ter*] Tar H. *till*] sould H.  
612. [*and* EH] C om. *with*] and 622. *Till*] To EH. *thame*] It EH.  
EH. *byrnand*] brynnand.  
613. [*brin* E] byrne C ; birne H. 623. *ane—cheyne*] a starke Chenyie  
614. *syne*] EH om. H ; stark chenyeis E. *thame*] It EH.  
615. *flaggatis*] fagaldis E ; Faggots 624. [*vp* H] wp E ; C om. [*thar*  
H. *war* E] there were H ; ves thar C.  
617. *Of—flaggatis*] The fagaldis 625. *till*] to EH.  
weill E ; The Faggots well H. 630. *at*] that EH. *var*] war E ;  
618. *Tunnys*] Tunnys, altered to was H.



	And quhen thai in-to sic degre Had maid thame for thair assaling,	
On the Eve of the Exaltation of the Rood, Sept. 13, 1319,	On the Rude-evyn, in the dawning, The Ingliß host blew till assale.	635
	Than mycht men with ser apparale Se that gret host cum sturdely;	
the English attack Berwick again.	The toune enveremyt thai in hy, And assalit with sa gud will— For all thair mycht thai set thar-till—	640
	That thai thame pressit fast of the toune. Bot thai, that can thame abandoune Till ded, or than till woundis sare,	
The besieged make a good defence.	So weill has thame defendit thare, That ledderis to the ground thai flang, And vith stanyis so fast thai dang Thair fais, that feill thai left lyand, Sum ded, sum hurt, and sum swavnand.	645
(Fol. 186. C.)	Bot thai that held on fut in hy Drew thame away deliuerly,	650
	And skunnyrrit tharfor na-kyne thing, Bot went stoutly till assalyng.	
There is severe fighting.	And thai abovin defendit ay, And set thame till so harde assay, [Quhill] that feill of thame voundit war, [And] thai so gret defens maid thar,	655

632. *into*] in.633. *thair*] E *om.* *assaling*] as-sailyeing H; defending E.634. *rude-evyn*] Rood Euen H.638. *enveremyt*] enweround E; enuironed H.639. *sa gud*] sua gret E; full great H.641. *That—of*] That thaim pressyt fast on E; Fast they them preassed to H.642. *can*] gan.643. *Till*] To EH. *till*] to EH.645. *flang*] so E; slang H; flang or

slang C; see xvi. 651.

648. *swavnand*] swonand E; swooning H.649. *ful*] foot H; feyt E.650. *away*] away EH.651. *skunnyrrit*] scounryt E; so-iournde (!) H. *thar—kyne*] there for na kin H; nocht for that E.653. *abovin*] aboun.654. *till*] to EH.655. [*Quhill*] E] While H; How C. *voundit*] woundyt.656. [*And* EH] That C.

	That thai styntit thair fais mycht. Apon sic maner can thai ficht Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day ;	
The besiegers send forward their "sow."	Than thai without, in gret aray, Pressit thair sow toward the wall ;	660
The besieged, by threats,	And thai within weill soyne gert call The engynour that takyñe was,	
compel the captured engineer to attack it.	And gret mananß till him mais, And swoir that he suld de, bot he Provit on the sow sic sutelte, That he [to-fruschyt] hir ilke deill. And he, that has persauit weill That the dede wes [weill] neir hym till, Bot gif he mycht fulfill thar will, Thought that he all his mycht vald do ;	665      670
She (i.e. a great engine of war) is planted opposite the "sow."	Bendit in gret hy than wes scho, And till the sow wes evin set. In hye he gert draw the cleket, And smertly swappit out the stañe,	   675
The first shot misses.	That evyn out-our the sow is gane, And behynd hir a litill we It fell, and than thai cryit hey That war in hir—"furth to the wall, For dreid[les] it is ouris all."	    680
The engineer shoots again ;	The engynour than deliuerly Gert bend the gyne in full gret hy,	

- 
- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 658. <i>can</i> ] gan.                                    | soyn evin C ; then euen H ; ewyn E.              |
| 659. <i>noyne</i> ] none.                                 | 675. <i>the</i> ] A EH.                          |
| 660. <i>in</i> ] on EH.                                   | 676. <i>our</i> ] ouer H. Ewyn our the           |
| 662. <i>weill</i> ] right H ; E <i>om.</i>                | sow the stane is gane E.                         |
| 665. <i>swoir</i> ] swour.                                | 677. <i>hir</i> ] her H ; It E. <i>we</i> ] wey. |
| 666. <i>Provit</i> ] Prowyt E ; Preeued H.                | 678. <i>hey</i> ] so E ; hye C ; hie H.          |
| 667. [ <i>to-fruschyt</i> E] sould frush H ;              | 680. <i>dreidles</i> ] dreid C ; dredles E ;     |
| till frusche C. <i>hir</i> ] E <i>om.</i>                 | dreedlesse H.                                    |
| 669. [ <i>weill</i> E] CH <i>om.</i>                      | 681. <i>Engynour</i> ] Ingynour H ;              |
| 671. <i>all</i> ] at. <i>vald</i> ] wald.                 | gynour E.  |
| 673. <i>And</i> ] That. <i>till</i> ] to H. <i>evin</i> ] | 682. <i>in—hy</i> ] full hastely H.              |

and the stone flies out, with a loud rush, very near the mark.	And the stane smertly swappit out. It flaw [out], quhedirand, with a rout, And fell richt evin befor the sow. Thair hertis than begouth till grow ; Bot 3eit than, with thair mychtis all, Thai pressit the sow toward the wall, And haß hir set thar[to] iuntly.	685
The besiegers still advance.		
The third missile rises high in the [Fol. 138 b. C.] air, falls with great force, and	The gynour than gert bend in hy The gyne, and swappit out the stañe, That evin toward the lift is gane, And with gret wecht syne duschit douñe Richt by the wall, in a randoune, [And] hyt the sow in sic maner, That it, that wes the mast summer And starkast for till stynt a strak, In-swndir with that dusche he brak.	690
crushes the chief beam in the "sow."		
The men within it run out in alarm, and the besieged shout out—"The sow has farrowed!"	The men ran out in full gret hy, And on the wallis thai can cry, "That thair sow ferryit wes thair!" Iohnē Crab, that had his geir all 3ar, In his fagattis haß set the fyre,	700
John Crab burns up the "sow."	And our the wall syne can thame wyre, And brynt the sow till brandis bair. With all this, fast assal3eand war The folk without with felloune ficht, And thai within with mekill mycht	705
The fighting		

683. That kest the stane right  
smertly out H.

684. [out E] ouer H ; C om.  
quhedirand] quhethirand E ; whid-  
dering H. with] in H.

686. till] to EH.

689. tharto] thair to E ; thereto H ;  
thar in C. iuntly] gentilly E ; cun-  
ningly H ; perhaps we should read  
Iustly (=exactly).

691. swappit] wappyt E ; swakked  
H. the] a H.

695. [And EH] That C.

696. sunimer] sower EH.

697. till] to EH.

698. he] It.

699. out] forth H.

700. can] gan.

701. ferryit wes] was feryt.

703. his] the H. fagattis] fagaldis  
E ; Faggots H. the] a H.

704. thame] it H. wyre] wyr.

705. till] in H. brandis] brundis.

continues.	Defendit manfully thar stede In-till gret auentur of dede.	710
The ships sail near,	The schipmen with gret apparale Com with thair schippes till assale,	
their topcastles filled with armed men,	With top-castellis warnist weill, And wicht men armyt in-till steill.	
and with boats hauled high up against the masts.	Thair batis vp apon thair mastis Drawyn weill hye and festnyt fast is, And pressit with that gret atour Toward the wall, bot the gynour	715
One boat is hit, and the men thrown out.	Hit in aȝe espyne with a staȝe, And the men that war thar-in gaȝe, Sum dede, [sum] dosnyt, [come down] vyndland. Fra thine-furth durst nane tak [on] hand With schippes preß thame to the vall. But the laiff war assalȝeand all On ilka syde sa egyrly,	720 725
The defence is difficult.	That certis it wes gret ferly, That thai folk sic defens haß maid, For the gret myscheif that they had.	
[Fol. 89 b. E.] The walls were very low.	For thair wallis so law than weir, That a man richt weill with a sper Micht strik aȝe othir vp in the face, As eir befor tald till ȝow was.	730
[Fol. 186. C.]	And feill of thaȝe war woundit sare,	

---

709. <i>manfully</i> ] manlily.	720. <i>And</i> ] That H. <i>gane</i> ] ilkane H.
710. <i>In-till</i> ] Into EH.	721. Sum ded sum dosnyt, come doun wynland E; Sum dede dosnyt sum dede vyndland C; Came downe dushing on the land H.
713. <i>castellis</i> ] castell. <i>warnist</i> ] garnisht H.	722. [on EH] vpon C.
714. <i>And</i> ] Off. <i>in-till</i> ] into EH.	723. <i>press</i> ] to preys E; to preasse H. <i>vall</i> ] wall EH.
715. <i>apon</i> ] in middes H. <i>mastis</i> ] mast EH.	725. <i>ilka</i> ] ilk E; euerilke H.
716. <i>fast is</i> ] fast EH.	727. <i>thar</i> ] that.
717. <i>that—atour</i> ] so CE; their great auenture H.	728. <i>For</i> ] With.
719. <i>in</i> ] H <i>om. ane espyne</i> ] ane hespyne C; the aspyne E; an Aspine H.	732. <i>eir</i> ] her E; here H. <i>tald</i> ] said. <i>till ȝow</i> ] to ȝow EH; you it A.

	And the layf so fast travaland war, That nane had tume rest for till ta,	735
	Thair aduersouris assailzeit swa.	
The besieged are very hard pressed.	Thai war within sa stratly stad, That thar wardane, [that] with [him] had Ane hundreth men in cumpany ⁂Armyt, that wicht war and hardy,	740
	And raid about for till se quhar That his folk hardest pressit war, Till releif thame that had mister, Com syndry tymes in placis ser Quhar sum of the defensouris war	745
	All dede, and othir woundit sare ; Swa that he of his cumpany Behufit to leiff thair party,	
Their reserve, of 100 men,  are all employed at the walls, ex- cept one.	Swa that, be he aȳe courß had maid About, [of all the] men he had Thair wes leivit with him bot aȳe, That he ne had thame left ilkaȳe To releve quhar he saw mister.	750
	And the folk that assaljeand wer At Mary-ȳet, [to-hewyn] had	755
The men who were assailing Mary-gate burnt the drawbridge,	The barraß, and a fyre had maid At the draw-brig, and brynt it douȳe ; And war thringand in gret foyssouȳe Richt [to] the ȳet, aȳe fyre till ma.	
and attempt to burn the gate itself.		

734. *travaland*] traueiling H ; tra- gret H.  
waillyt E.

735. *tume*] tyme E ; laiser H. *for* 749. *ane*] A EH.

H *om.* *till ta*] to ma. 750. [*of—the* E] of all his H ; to all

738. [*that* E] CH *om.* [*him* EH] 752. *thame — ilkane*] left thaim  
thame C. euerilkane. For he had them left

739. *hundreth*] hundir.

741. *till*] to EH.

743-6. H *omits.*

743. *Till releif*] To releve.

745. *defensouris*] defendouris.

748. *to leiff*] for to leve. *thair*] a *till*] to EH.

755. [*to-hewyn* E] they hewen H ;  
be-hevin C.

756. *barrass*] Barres H.

759. [*to* EH] in C. *ane*] A EH.

	And thai within gert smertly ga	760
	Ane to the wardane, for till say	
	How thai war set in hard assay.	
Sir Walter, hearing of this danger, assem- bles a force,	And quhen schir Valter Steward herd	
	How men sa stratly with thame ferd,	
	He gert cum of the castell then	765
	All that war thar of armyt men,	
	For thar that day assalzeit nane,	
	And with that rout in hy is gañe	
and repairs to the point assailed.	Till Mary-ȝet, and till the wall	
	Is went, and saw the myscheif all ;	770
	And vmbethoucht hym suddandly,	
	Bot gif gret help war set in hy	
	Thar-to, thai suld burne vp the ȝet	
	[With] the fire [that he fand] thar-at.	
	Tharfor apon gret hardyment	775
[Fol. 136 A. C.]	He suddanly set his entent ;	
He suddenly throws open the gate, and sallies out.	And gert all wyde set vp the ȝet,	
	And the fyre that he fand thar-at	
	With strinth of men he put away.	
	He set hym in full hard assay ;	780
	For thai that war assalzeand thar	
	Pressit on hym with vapnys bair,	
	And he defendit with all his mycht.	
	Thar mycht men se a fellouñe sicht ;	
A hard battle ensues.	With staffing, stoking, and striking	785

---

760. <i>And</i> ] Than.	774. [ <i>With</i> H] And C. [ <i>that—</i>
761. <i>till</i> ] to EH.	<i>fand</i> ] so H ; <i>miswritten</i> haffand C. E
764. <i>with</i> ] E om. <i>men — thame</i> ] <i>has</i> —That fra the wall thai suld nochȝt	let.
that his men sa straitly H.	
765. <i>of</i> ] fra H.	780. <i>in</i> ] to.
766. <i>war thar</i> ] thar war.	782. <i>vapnys</i> ] wapnys.
767. <i>thar</i> ] E om.	783. <i>all</i> ] E om.
769. <i>Till</i> ] to EH ( <i>twice</i> ).	785. <i>With</i> ] Off. <i>staffing</i> ] stabling
770. <i>Is went</i> ] so CH ; He send E.	E ; sticking H. <i>stoking</i> ] so CE ; stop-
<i>myscheif</i> ] perill H.	ping H.
773. <i>burne</i> ] bryn.	



	Quhar quheyn men mair defens had maid, That swa richt hard assalzeing had. And of a thing that thair befell	815
A great wonder took place.	I haf ferly, that I of tell. That is, that in-till all that day, Quhen all thair mast assalzeit thai,	
[Fol. 187. C.]	And the schot thikkest [wes] with-all,	
Women and children gathered up arrows, and carried them to the men on the walls, and not one was wounded; which was a miracle.	Women with child and childir small In arme-fullis gaderit vp, and bair Till thame that on the wallis war Arrowes, and nocht aȝe slayȝe ves thar, Na ȝeit voundit; and that wes mar To myrakill of god almychty;	820
[Fol. 60. E.]	And to nocht ellis it set can I. On athir syde that nycht thai war All still, and on the morne, but mar, Thar come tithandis out of Ingland Till thame of the host, that bare on hand	825
News of the de- feat at Mitton is brought to the English.	How that by Borrow-brig and Mytounȝe Thair men war slayue and dwngin douȝe; And at Scottis men throw-out the land Raid ȝeit, byrnand and distroyand. And quhen the king haß herd this taill,	830
King Edward takes counsel,	His consell he assemblit haill, Till se quhethir farar war him till Till ly about the toune all still,	835

- 
813. *men*] E *om.*  
 814. *hard*] sharpe H.  
 816. *I*] Ik. *of*] sall.  
 818. *thair mast*] the maist H.  
 819. [*wes* EH] thar C.  
 823. *and—thar*] so CH; and stanys  
       nane slane war E.  
 824. *voundit*] woundyt.  
 825. *To*] To a H; The E.  
 830. *Till*] To EH. To the Oast,  
       that was mislykand H.  
 831. *by*] at H. *and*] at E; by H.  
       *mytounȝe*] Midtoun H.  
 832. *dwngin*] dongyn.  
 833. *at*] that the H; at the E.  
       *throw-out*] throu EH.  
 834. *byrnand*] brynnand. *distroy-*  
       *and*] slayand H.  
 835. *hass*] had.  
 837. *Till*] To EH. *farar*] fayr E;  
       better H.  
 838. *Till ly*] To ly E; Abide H.



whether to stay or retreat.	And assaill quhill it wonnyne war, Or than in Yngland for till fare, And reskew his land and men. His consell fast discordit then ;	840
The men of the South of England advise him to stay.	For Southren men vald that he maid Arest thar, quhill he wonnyn had The tounne and the castell alsua.	845
The men of the North are alarmed for their friends, and advise retreat.	Bot Northir men wald no-thing swa, That dred thar frendis for till tyne, And mast part of thar gudis syne Throu Scottis mennys cruelte ; Thai wald he leit the sege be, And raid for till reskew the land.	850
The Earl of Lan- caster advises the king to return ;	Of Loncastell, I tak on hand, The erll Thomas wes afe of thai, That consalit the king hame to ga.	
and, finding that the king inclines to the Southern- ers' advice,	And, for that mair enclynit he Till the folk of the [south] cuntre Than till the [northir] mennys will, He tuk it to sa mekill ill, That he gert turß his geir in hy, And with his battall halely,	855 860
[Fol. 137 & C.] goes home, with all his men, without leave.	That of the host neir thrid part waß, Till Inghland hame his way he tais. But leiff, he hame has tane his gat ; Tharfor fell eftir sic debat Betuix him and the king, that ay	
For this, Sir Andrew Herd- clay took him to	Lestit quhill Androu Herdclay, That throu the king wes on him set,	865

- 
840. *till*] to EH ; *and in* l. 847.  
841. *men*] his men.  
843. *southren*] sotheroun E ; the South H.  
846. *northir*] northyn E ; North H.  
851. *the*] his.  
852. *loncastell*] longcastell EH.
856. [*south* E] north CH.  
857. [*northir*] northyn E ; southren C ; Southeroun H ; *cf.* l. 846.  
861. *thrid*] the thrid C ; *but* EH *omit* the.  
866. *Lestit*] Lastyt. *herdclay*] hardclay E ; Hardeclay H ; Herkely A.

Pomfret, and there be- headed him.	Tuk hym syne in-to Pomfret, And on the hill besyde the touñe Strake of his hede but ransouñe ; Tharfor syne drawin and hangit ves he, And with him weill a fair menȝe.	870
It was said that this Earl Thomas was canonised, and performed miracles.	Men said syne eftir, this Thomas, That on this viß maid martir was, Wes sanctit and myraclis did, Bot envy syne gert thañe be hid. Bot quhethir he haly wes or nañe, At Pomfret thusgat wes he slane. And syne the king of Yngland, Quhen that he saw hym tak on hand Till paß his way sa oppinly, Hym thought it wes perell to ly Thar with the laiff of his menȝe;	875
King Edward retreats.	And his harnaß tursit has he, And [in]till Ingland hame can far.	885
The Scotch host under Murray avoid him,	The Scottis men, that distroyand war In Yngland, herd soyne tell tithyng Of this gret sege the departing. Tharfor thai tuk westward the way,	880

868. *syne in-to*] rycht in E; syne EH.  
and into H.

869. *the*] ane.

871. *drawin—hangit*] hyngyt and  
drawyn E; hanged and drawen H.

872. *weill—fair*] a weill gret E; a  
great H.

874. *viss*] wiss E; wise H; wayes  
A.

875. *sanctit*] saynct E; syne a Sanct  
H. *myraclis*] gud myraclis C; myra-  
killis E; miracles H.

878. *thusgat*] thus.

881. *Till*] To EH.

883, 884. *Transposed in H.*

883. *Thar*] And H. *laiff*] lave EH.

884. Hys harnays tharfor tursit he

885. *And*] H *om.* [*in-till* E] till  
C; To H. *can*] can he H; gan he E.

887, 888. *For these 2 lines* H has  
8, *viz.* — Throughout England full  
cruelly, Burning and wasting right  
rigorously, When that they haue  
heard tythings tell Of this great Siege  
that was sa fell : That they all skailed  
were and gane, Vnto England hame  
again: Sa that their folks relieued  
were, And set now free from all  
danger.

887. *herd soyne*] sone hard.

888. *the*] E *om.*

889. *Tharfor—tuk*] Then did they  
take H.

going home by Carlisle.	And by Carlele hame went [ar] thai, With prayis and with presoneris, And othir gudis on seir maneris. The lordis till the king ar gane, And the laiff haß thar vays tañe ; Ilk man till his repair is gañe.	890     895
King Robert is much pleased.	The king, iwiß, wes woundir fayne That thai war cummyn haille and feir, And at thai sped on sic maner, That [thai] thair fais discumfit had, And, but tynsale of men, had maid Reskourß to thame that in Berwik War assegit richt till thar dik, *[That into full great danger wes, *Through strength of them that sieged hes.]	     900   903* 904*
[Fol. 188. C.] He inquires how they fared in England ;	And quhen the kyng had sperit tithand How thai had faryne in-till Ingland, *[And of their iourney what progresse, *That thai haue had, and with successe,] And thai haf tald hym all thar fair, How Ingliß men discumfit war, Richt blith in-till his hert wes he, And maid thame fest with gammyn and gle.	   905* 906* 905    
and is glad at their success.		
Thus was Ber- wick rescued.	<b>B</b> Erwik wes on this maner Reskewit, and thai that thar-in wer. He wes worthy añe prince till be	  910

- 
890. *by*] till. *hame went*] returned course H.  
H. [*ar* E] are H ; C *om.* 902. *till—dik*] faire and thicke (!)  
891. *prayis*] prise H. H.  
893. *till*] to. 903\*, 904\*. *In H only.*  
894, 895. H *omits.* *laiff*] lave. 904. *faryne*] farne EH. *intill*] into  
*vayis*] wayis. *Is gane*] agayne. H ; In E.  
897. *war cummyn*] returned H. 905\*, 906\*. *In H only.*  
898. *at*] that EH. 905. *haf*] had. *thar*] hale the.  
899. [*thai* EH] C *om.* 911, 912. *So in CH ; E transposes*  
900. *had*] has. *the lines.*  
901. *Reskourss*] Rescours E ; Re-

	Throu manheid and subtilite, That [couth] throu vit sa hye a thyng, But tynsale, bryng till gude ending.	
King Robert goes to Berwick,	Till Berwik syne the way he tais ; And quhen he herd thar how it waß Defendit swa richt apertly, He lovit thame that var thar gretly.	915
and praises Sir Walter	Valter Stewardis gret bounte Atour the laif commendit he,	920
for his stout de- fence at the gate. [Fol. 80 b. E.]	For the richt gret defens he maid At the 3et, quhar that men brynt had The brig, as 3he herd me deuifß. And certis he wes weill till priß, That sa stoutly with playne fechting	925
Had Sir Walter lived long,	At oppyn 3et maid defending. Micht he haf lift quhill he had beyne Of perfit elde, withouten weyne,	
he would have been famous.	His renoune suld haf strekit fer. Bot dede, that vachis ay to mar With all [hyr] mycht waik and vorthy, Had at his worschip gret invy ;	930
But death ended all his doughty deeds.	That in the flour of his 3outheid Scho endit all his douchty deid, As I sall tell 3ow forthirmar.	935
The king sends for masons,	Quhen the king had a quhill beyne thar, He send for masonis fer and neir,	

913. [couth EH] thought C. *throu*] with EH. 928. *elde*] eild EH. *weyne*] wene EH.
914. *But*] But gret. *gude*] E om. 930. *vachis*] walkis E; watches H.
915. *way-tais*] King gaes H. *mar*] mer. *ay-mar*] euer ner H.
917. *swa richt*] rycht swa. *swa-* 931, 932. H omits. [hyr E] his C ;  
*apertly*] sa doone manfully (sic) H. see l. 934. *waik-vorthy*] and forthi  
E.
918. *var*] war. 932. *gret*] sic.
919. *stewardis*] stewart his. 933. *That in*] Into H.
920. *Atour*] Out our. 934. *Scho*] Sa. *Scho endit*] Made
922. *that*] EH om. end of H.
924. *weill*] meekle H. *till*] to EH.

	That sleast wes of that misteir,	
and makes the	And gert weill ten fut hye the vall	
town-wall	About Berwik his toune our all.	940
higher.	And syne soyne toward Lowdyañe	
	With his menȝe his gat has gane ;	
He then prepares	And syne he gert ordane in hy	
to go to Ireland,	Bath armyt men and ȝhemanry,	
[Fol. 188 v. C.]	In-till Irland in hy till fair,	945
to help his	Till help his brothir that wes thair.	
brother.		

---

938. <i>wes</i> ] war E ; was H.	lothyane E ; Louthiane H.
940. <i>berwik his</i> ] berwykis E ;	944. <i>ȝhemanry</i> ] ȝhumanry.
Baruike the H.	945. <i>till</i> ] to EH.
941. <i>soyne</i> ] EH om. <i>lowdyane</i> ]	946. <i>Till</i> ] To EH.

## [BOOK XVIII.]

### How schir Eduard the Bruce vess slayn in Irland.

Edward Bruce will not wait for his reinforce- ments,	Bot he, that rest anoyit ay, And wald in travaill be all-way, A day forrouth thair arivyng That war send till hym fra the king, He tuk his way, furthwarde to fare	5
but, with only 2000 men,	For he had nocht than in that land Of all men, I trow, twa thousand, Outane the kyngis off Erischry, That in gret rowtis raid hym by.	10
goes to Dundalk. Sir Richard of Clare	Toward Dundawk he tuk the vay ; And quhen Richard of Clare herd say That he com with aȝe few menȝhe, All that he mycht assemblit he, Of all Irland, of armyt men ;	15
assembles 20,000 men on horse- back, besides foot- soldiers, and goes northward.	Swa that he had thar with him then Of trappit horß twenty thousand, Bot thai[m] that war on fut gangand ; And held furth northwarde on his vay. And quhen schir Eduard haß herd say	20

- 
- |   |                                      |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| 3. <i>forrouth</i> ] before H.                          | H.                                   |
| 5. <i>furthwarde</i> ] south - wart E ;<br>Southward H. | 11. <i>dundawk</i> ] dundalk.        |
| 6. <i>them</i> ] <i>written</i> theme C.                | 13. <i>ane</i> ] a H ; sa E.         |
| 9. <i>erischry</i> ] Irchery E ; the Irishry            | 18. <i>thaim</i> ] them H ; thai CE. |
|   | 19. <i>vay</i> ] way EH.             |

That cummyn neir till hym wes he,  
 He send discurouris hym till se ;  
 The Sowlis and the Steward war thai,  
 And als schir Philip the Mowbray.  
 And quhen thai seyn had thar cummyng, 25  
 Thai went agane to tell the king,  
 And said weill thai war mony men.  
 In hy schir Eduard ansuerd then,  
 And said, that he suld fecht that day,  
 Thouch tryplit or quadruplit war thai. 30  
 Schir Iohne Steward said "sekirly,  
 I red 3e ficht nocht in sic hy.  
 Men sais my brothir is cumand  
 With xv hundreth men neir hand ;  
 And war thai knyrt with 30w, 3e mycht 35  
 The trastlyar abyde to ficht."  
 Schir Eduard lukit richt angrely,  
 And till the Sowlis said in hy,  
 "Quhat sais thou?" "Schir," he said, "perfay,  
 As my fallow [has] said, I say." 40  
 And than till schir Philippe said he :  
 "Schir," said he, "sa our lord me se,  
 Me think it na foly to byde  
 3our men, that spedis thame to ryde.  
 For we ar few, our fais ar feill ; 45  
 God may richt weill our veirdis deill ;

22. *till*] to EH.  
 23. *sowlis*] sowllis E ; Sowles H.  
 24. *als*] E om.  
 26. *the king*] tithing EH.  
 30. *Tryplit* — *quadruplit*] tribill  
 and quatribill E ; fue or sex times ma  
 H.  
 32. *3e—nocht*] nocht 3e ficht CE ;  
*but* H *has—yee* fecht not ; *which is*  
*far better.* in] on.  
 34. *hundreth*] so CH ; thowsand E.

37. *richt*] all.  
 38. *sowlis*] soullis E ; Sowles H.  
*said*] he said C ; *but* EH *omit* he.  
 39. *sais*] sayis.  
 40. [*has* E] CH om.  
 41. *than*] E om. *And—philippe*  
 Then to Sir Philip the Mowbray H.  
 43. *it—foly*] na foly for. H *wrongly*  
*omits* na.  
 46. *veirdis*] werdis.

	Bot it var vounder that our mycht Suld ourcum so feill in ficht."	
Edward, in great wrath, declares that he will certainly fight.	Than with gret ire, "allaß," said he, "I wend neurir till here that of the! Now help quha will, for sekirly This day, but mair baid, fecht vill I. Sall na man say, quhill I may dre, That strynth of men sall ger me fle! God scheld that ony suld vs blame, That we defoull our nobill name!"	50       55
They agree to do so.	["Now] be it swagat than," quod thai; "We sall tak that god will purvay."	
But the Irish kings, hearing of this,	And quhen the kyngis of Erischry Herd say, and vist all sekirly, That thar kyng, with sa quheyn, vald ficht Agane folk of sa mekill mycht, Thai com till [him] in full gret hy,	60
counsel him to wait;	And consalit hym full tendirly For till abid his men; and thai Suld hald thar fais all that day Doand, and on the morne alsua, With thair saltis that thai suld ma. Bot thair mycht na consell availl;	65
which he refuses to do.	He wald all gat haff the battaill. And quhen thai saw he wes so thra To fecht, thai said, "3e may weill ga To ficht with 3on gret cumpany;	70
Then they say	Bot we acquyt vs vtirly,	

47. *var vounder*] war wondir.52. *vill*] will EH.53, 54. *dre*] drey. *fle*] fley.56. *That—defoull*] That we defile  
H; Giff we defend (!) E.57. [*Now* EH] C om.59. *Erischry*] Irchery E; Irishry  
H.60. *vist*] wyst. *all*] it H; E om.61. *quheyn*] quhone. *vald*] wald  
EH.63. [*him* EH] C om.68. *saltis*] assaults H; rounnyngis  
E.70. *the*] E om.73, 74. *Transposed in* H.



they must with- draw from him.	That nane of vs will stand to ficht ; Assuris nocht tharfor in our mycht. For our maner is, of this land, Till follow and ficht, and ficht fleand, And nocht till stand in plane melle	75
[Fol. 61. E.] He asks them to wait a little apart, [Fol. 129 b. C.]	Quhill the ta part discumfit be." He said, "sen that 3our custum is, I ask no mair at 3ow bot this, That is, that 3he and 3our menyhe Wald all to-giddir arayit be, And stand on fer, but departing,	80
to see him fight and die.	And se our ficht and our endyng." Thai said weill at thai suld do swa, And syne toward thair men can ga, That war weill fourty thousand neir.	85
They withdraw accordingly.	Edward, with thame that vith him weir, That war nocht fully twa thousand, Arayit thame stalwardly till stand Agane fourty thousand and ma. Schir Eduard that day wald nocht ta	90
and Edward prepares for battle, having 2000 men only.	His cot-armour, bot Gib Harper, That men held [as] withouten peir Of his estat, had on that day All haill schir Eduardis aray. The ficht abaid thai on this wiß ; And in gret hye thar enymyß Com, till assemmyll all reddy, And thai met thame richt hardely.	95 100

- 
76. *Assuris*] Trust H. *in*] into H. 87. *at*] that EH.  
77. *of*] in H. 88. *can*] gan thai.  
78. *Till*] To E. *and—and*] and to 89. *fourty*] threttie H ; twenty E ;  
H. *cf.* ll. 17, 18, 93.  
79. *till*] to EH ; *and in* l. 92. 93. *fourty*] so CE ; threttie H.  
80. *ta*] ane H. 96. [*as* H] *miswritten* has C ; als  
82. *I*] Ik. *no—3ow*] at 3ow no E.  
mar. 101. *assemmyll*] assemble.  
86. *our* (2)] the E.

Sir Edward's  
host is overborne,  
and many of  
them are slain.

Thai war sa few, forsuth to say,  
That ruschit with thair fais var thai ;  
And thai that pressit mast to stand  
War slañe douñe, and the remanand  
Fled till Erischry for succour.

105

Sir Edward  
himself,  
Sir John Stew-  
ard, and Sir  
John de Soulis  
are all slain.

Schir Eduard, that had sic valour,  
Wes ded, and Iohne Steward alsua ;  
And Iohne de Sowlis als with thai,  
And othir als of thair cumpany.  
[Thai] wencust war sa suddanly,  
That few in-till the place war slayñe.  
For the laiff haß thair vays tane  
Till the Erische kyngis, that ves thar,  
That in haill battale howand war.

110

115

John Thomas-  
son, leader of the  
men of Carrick,

Iohne Tomasswn, that wes leder  
Of thame of Carrik that thair wer,  
Quhen he saw the discumfiting,

takes refuge with  
an Irish king ;

With-drew him till añe Erische king  
That of his acqyntans had he ;  
And he resaut him in lawte.

120

and soon sees  
Sir Philip  
[Fol. 140. C.]  
Mowbray being

And quhen Iohne Cummyñ wes to that king,  
He saw be led fra the fechting  
Schir Philipe [the] Mowbray, the vicht,  
That had beyne doysnyt in the ficht,

125

led by a men

And be the armys led wes he

103. *Thai—forsuth*] Bot thai sa few  
war south E ; They were sa few, the  
sooth H.

105. *pressit mast*] so in E ; CH  
*transpose the words.*

107. *erischry*] the Irche E ; the  
Irishry H. *for* so CH ; to E.

110. *Iohne de*] Iohne the E ; Sir  
Iohn H.

112. [*Thai* E] They H ; That C.  
*wencust war*] war wencussyt E ; van-  
quisht were H.

113. *place*] Plaine H.

114. *laiff*] lave EH. *vayis*] wayis.

115. *erische*] Irsche E ; Irish H.  
*ves*] war.

116. *Thai*] And.

117. *tomasswn*] thomas sone E ;  
Thomson H.

120. *erische*] Irsch E ; Irish H.

122. *lawte*] leawte E ; daintie H.

125. [*the* E] CH om. *vicht*] wicht.

126. *doysnyt*] dosnyt E ; discomfist  
(!) H. *in*] in-to.

127. *be the*] by the H ; with E.

along the causeway leading to the town.	With twa men, apon the cawse That wes betuix thame and the touñe, That strekit lang in a randoune.	130
	Toward the toune thai held thair vay, And quhen in myd cawse war thai, Schir Philip of his desynaiff Ourcome, and persaut he waß Tane, and swagat led with twa.	135
Sir Philip shakes off his captors,	The tane he swappit soyñe hym fra, And syne the tothir in gret hy;	
draws his sword, and goes along the causeway towards the battle-field,	Syne drew his suerde deliuerly, And till the fecht the vay he tais Endlang the cawse, that than waß Fillit in-to [sa] gret foysoyñe Of men that than went to the touñe. And he, that met thame, can thame ma Sic payment, quhar he can ga,	140
turning 100 men aside from it as he goes.	That weill añe hundreth men gert he Leiff, magre thairis, the cawsee ; As Iohñe Tomasswn said suthly, That saw his deid all halely. Toward the battall evyn he ȝeid.	145
John Thomasson calls to him to come back.	Iohñe Tomasswn, that tuk gud heid That thai war vencust all planly, Cryit on hym in full gret hy,	150

128. *the*] so CH ; A E. *cawse*] cause E ; Caussey H.

130. *That*] And.

132. *cawse*] cause E ; the Caussey H.

133. *desynaiss*] desynes E ; businesse H.

134. *wass*] wes E.

135. *swagat led*] led suagat.

136. *swappit*] swakked H.

138. *Syne*] And E ; He H. *his*] the.

139. *the—he*] his wayis.

140. *cawse*] cause E ; Caussey H.

141. *into*] so CH ; in-till E. [*sa* H] CE om.

142. *to*] till.

143. *can thame*] agayn gan.

144. *ga*] them ta H.

145. *ane hundreth*] A hundir.

146. *cawsee*] cause E ; Caussey H.

147. *tomasswn*] thomas sone E ; Thomson H ; and in l. 150.

151, 152. *Transposed* in H. *vencust*] wencussyt E ; vanquisht H. *Cryit on*] And cried to H.

	And said, "cum heir, for thar is nañe On liff; for thai ar dede ilkañe."	
He waits awhile, and then comes back.	Than stude he still a quhile, and saw That thai war all done out of daw; Syne went toward him sarraly.	155
Thomasson's men retreat to Carrickfergus.	This Iohnie wroucht syne sa vittely, That all that thidder fled than wer, [Thouch] that thai lesit of thair ger, Com till Cragfergus hail and feir.	160
The soldiers try to get Sir Edward's head, and, finding Gib Harper,	And thai, that at the fechting weir, Soucht schir Eduard, to get his hede, Emange the folk that thar ves ded; And fand Gib Harper in his ger. And, for sa gude his armys wer,	165
cut Gib's head off, [Fol. 140 b. C.] which they put in salt, and send to the king of England.	Thai strak his hed of, and syñe it Thai haf gert saltit in-till a kyt, And send it syne in-till Ingland, To Eduard king in-till presand. Thai wend schir Eduardis it had beyñe; Bot, for the armyng that wes scheyne, Thai of the hed dissaut war, All-thouch schir Eduard deit thar.	170
Thus died these noble men.	On this wiß war thai nobill men Throu wilfulneß all losit then; And that wes syn and gret pite. For had thair outrageouß bounte	175
[Fol. 61 b. E.] Had they been well led, they	Beyne led with wit and with mesure, Bot gif the mair misaduenture	180

156. *ous*] E *om.*157. *sarraly*] sikkerly H.158. *vittely*] wittely EH.160, 161. *Transposed in H.* [*Thouch*  
*thaf*] Thought that E; Although H;  
How that C. *lesit*] lossyt E; left some  
H. *till*] to EH.164. *Emange*] Amang.168. *saltit*] salt.169, 170. *syne*] E *om.* *To—in-till*]  
Till the king Eduuard in E. H *has—*  
And in a Present but hething In Eng-  
land sent it to the King.174. *All-thouch*] Allthought.176. *Throu*] For. *losit*] lesyt E;  
lossed H.

would not have been so easily conquered.	Befell thame, it suld richt hard thing Be till leid thame till outraying ; Bot gret outrageouß succudry Gert thame all deir thair vorschip by. And thai, that fled fra the melle, Sped thame in hy toward the se, And to Cragfergus cummyn ar thai.	185
The men sent by King Robert to help Sir Edward	And thai that war in-to the vay, To schir Eduard send fra the king, Quhen thai herd the discumfiting,	190
return to Cargickfergus,	Till Cragfergus thai went agane ; And that wes nocht forouten pane. For thai war many tymes that day Assalit with Erischry, [bot thai]	
escaping thither with much difficulty.	[Ay] held to-gidder sarraly, Defendand thame so wittely That thai eschapit oft throu mycht, And mony tymes als throu slicht ; For oft of thairis till thame gaf thai Till let thame scathleß pass thar vay : And to Cragfergus com thai swa.	195 200
They then sail back to Scotland.	Than batis and schippes can thai ta, And salit till Scotland in hy, And thar arivit all saufly.	

- 
181. *Befell*] Bene fallyn. *richt*] H. [*bot thai* EH] that ay C.  
bene H.  
182. Should lead them to discom-  
forting H. *till* (1)] to. *outraying*] them H.  
183. *Succudry*] so H ; surquedry E. 195. *Ay held* E] Thai held C ; Held  
184. *deir*] her E. *vorschip*] wor- 196. *Defendand thame*] And de-  
schip EH. fendyt. *wittely*] worthely H.  
188. *vay*] way EH. 198. *als*] alsua E ; oft H.  
191. *Till*] To EH. 199. *till*] to EH ; and in l. 201.  
192. *forouten*] withoutten H. H is corrupt.  
193. *tymes*] tyme. 200. *Till*] To EH.  
194. *erischry*] Irschery E ; Irishrie 202. *Than*] That. *schippes*] ship-  
men H. *can*] gan E ; H om.  
204. *thar arivit*] arivit thar C ; but  
E has thar arywyt.

The Scotch  
lament Sir Ed-  
ward's death.

Quhen thai of Scotland had wittering  
Of schir Eduardis discomfiting,  
Thai menynt hym full tendrely  
Our all the land all comonly;  
And thai that with hym slayne var thar  
Full tendrely alß menynt war.

205

210

How king Eduard com agane in Scotland with his  
power till Edinburgh eftir the ded of gud Schir  
Eduard the Bruce in-till Irland.

Eduard the Bruce, as I said air,  
Wes discumfit on this manare.

[Fol. 141. C.] And quhen the feld wes clengit cleyñe,  
Sa that na resisteris wes seyne,

Sir Richard of  
Clare goes to  
Dundalk.

The vardane than, Richard of Clare,  
And all the folk that with him war  
Toward Dundawk has tane the vay;

215

Swa that richt na debat maid thai  
At that tyme with the Erischrye,  
Bot to the toune thai held in hy.

220

John Maupas  
takes Gib  
Harper's head to  
King Edward of  
England, who is  
much pleased.

And syne haß send furth to the king,  
That Inland had in gouernyng,  
Gib Harperis hed in-till añe kyt.  
Iohñe Mawpaß till the king had it,

Quhilk he resaut in gret dayntee;  
Richt blith of that present wes he;

225

205. *wittering*] witting H.  
206. *discomfiting*] wencussing.  
208. *all comonly*] full commonly H;  
commonaly E.

210. *war*] thai war CH; *but E omits*  
thai.

211. *I*] is H. *air*] aire H; her E.

212. *manare*] maner.

214. *na resisteris*] ne resistens E;  
na resistance H.

215. *vardane*] wardane. *richard*]  
schyr Richard.

217. *dundawk*] dundalk E; Dondalk  
H.

219. *erischrye*] Irschery E; Irishry  
H.

221. *hass*] had.

222. *Inland had*] had Inland.

223. *in-till*] into H; in E. *ane*] A  
EH.

224. *mawpass*] mawpas E; Mawp-  
pas H.

225. *Quhilk—resaut*] And he res-  
sawyt It. *gret*] E om.

	For he wes swa glad that he wes swa Deliuierit of sic fellounē a faa. In hert tharof he tuk sic pryde,	
King Edward determines to invade Scotland,	That he tuk purpoß for to ryde With a gret host in-till Scotland, Till revenge hym, with stalward hand, Of the tray, travaill, and of teyne, That done till hym thar-in had beyne. And a richt gret hoost gaderit he,	230
and sends ships thither with much provisions.	And gert his schippes by the se Cum, with gret foyssoune off vittale ; For at that tyme he thocht all hale For till distroy so cleyn Scotland, That nane suld be thar-in lifland ; And with his folk in gret aray Toward Scotland he tuk the vay.	235
King Robert prepares to re- sist him.	And quhen king Robert vist that he Com on hym with sic aȝe menȝe, He gaderit men, bath fer and neir, Quhill sa feill till him cummyn weir, And war als for till cum hym to, That him weill thocht he suld weill do.	245
He collects all the cattle of Lothian into fortresses.	He gert with-draw all the catele Of Lowdiane euerilk deill, And till strynthis gert thame be send, And ordanit men thame to defend.	250

- 
- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 228. <i>sic—a</i> ] so CH ; a felloun E.                                       | 243. <i>vist</i> ] wist EH.  |
| 231. <i>in-till</i> ] into H ; in E.   | 244. <i>anc</i> ] A EH.  |
| 232. <i>Till revenge</i> ] For to weng.  | 245. <i>men</i> ] his men.   |
| 233. <i>the</i> ] E om. <i>travaill</i> ] of tra-<br>waill. <i>of</i> ] the H. | 247. <i>till</i> ] to EH.  |
| 234. <i>till—thar-in</i> ] tharin till him.                                    | 248. <i>weill</i> (1)] EH om. <i>suld weill</i> ]<br><i>rycht weill suld</i> . |
| 238. <i>thought—hale</i> ] so CH ; wald<br>him taile E.                        | 250. <i>lowdiane</i> ] lowthiane EH.   |
| 239. So CH ; To dystroy wp sa clene<br>the land E.                             | 251. <i>till strynthis</i> ] into strengths H.<br><i>send</i> ] led H.         |
| 240. <i>be</i> ] leve.   | 252. <i>thame—defend</i> ] to defend that<br>stead H.                          |
| 241. <i>folk</i> ] Oast H.   |  |

He awaits his  
foes at Culross.

And with his hoost all still he lay

At Culroß, for he walde assay

Till ger his fais throu fasting

255

Be feblist, and throu lang walking ;

And fra he feblist had thair mycht,

[Fol. 141 & C.]

Asse[m]myll he wald with thamē till ficht.

He thocht till wirk apoun this viß ;

And Ingliß men with gret mastriß

260

Com with thar hoost in Lowdiane,

The English soon  
reach Edin-  
burgh, where  
they stay 3 days.

And soyne till Edinburgh ar gañe,

And thair abaid thai dayis thre.

Thair schippes that war on the se

Had the vynd contrar till thamē ay,

265

Swa that apoun no maner thai

Their ships are  
delayed by  
contrary winds.

Had power till the fyrrth till bring

Thair vittale, till releiff the king.

And thai of the host that falit met,

Quhen thai saw that thai mycht noch get

270

Thair vittalis to thame by the se,

They send out  
foragers, who  
find only one  
lame cow.

Than send thai furth a gret menzhe

For till forray all Lowdiane ;

Bot cattell haf thai fundyn nañe,

Outane a kow that wes haltand,

275

[Fol. 62. E.]

That in Tranentis corñe thai fand ;

Thai brought hir till thair hoost agane.

253. *hoost all*] ost als.

256. *feblist*] feeble H. *walking*] H.

waking H.

258. *he—till*] with them he wald to H ; than with thaim to E.

259. *till*] to EH ; and in ll. 265, 267, 268, 273.

261. *in*] to H. *lowdiane*] lowthian E ; Louthiane H ; and in l. 273.

262. *soyne*] sone E ; then H. *ar*] are they H.

265. *vynd*] wynd.

266. *thai*] of way H.

268. *vittale*] wictaillis E ; vittaile

H.

271. *to*] till.

272. *Than—furth*] They sent then foorth H ; Thai send furth *rycht* E.

275. *Outane*] Owtakyn E ; Except H. *kow*] so CH ; bule E.

276. *tranentis corne*] so CE ; Tranent toun H.

277, 278. And when the Erle of Warrane, Saw their Forrayours come againe H.

277. *Thai—hir*] That brought thai.



When Earl Warrene sees them bringing it,	And quhen the erll of Warane That cow saw anerly cum swa, He askit "gif thai gat no ma?"	280
	And thai haf said all till him, "nay."	
he says it is very dear beef, for it	"Than, certis," said he, "I dar say This is the derrest beiff that I	
must have cost 1000 pounds.	Saw euir ȝeit; for sekirly It cost aȝne thousand pund and mar!"	285
	And quhen the king and thai that war Of his consell saw thai mycht get Na catell till thar host till et, That than of fasting had gret payne,	
The English retreat to Melrose,	Till Ingland turnyt thai hame agayȝe.	290
	At Melroß schupe thai for till ly, And send befor ane cumpany, Thre hundreth neir of armyt men.	
sending on 300 men in advance.	Bot the lord Dowglaß, [that] wes then Besyde in-till the forest neir,	295
Douglas lies in wait for them,	Vist of thar com and quhat thai veir; And with thame of his cumpany In-till Melroß all preuely He hufit in-till aȝne enbuschement.	
and sends a friar to watch,	And a richt sturdy frer he sent	300
	Without the ȝet, thar com till se, [Fol. 142. C.] And bad him hald him all preve,	
who is to cry "Douglas!"	Quhill that he saw thame cumand all Richt till the cunȝhe of the wall,	

278. *varane*] warayne.279. *That—saw*] Saw that bule E; comming H; and in l. 301.

And a Kow H.

280. *gat*] fand H.282. *certis—he*] said he certis.283. *beiff*] best E; beast H.285. *ane*] A EH; and in l. 292.290. *hame*] E om.291. *till*] to EH.294. [*that* EH] C om.296. *Vist*] Wyst E; Wist H. *com*]

comming H; and in l. 301.

299. *hufit*] howyt E; howered H.  
*in-till*] into H; in E. *ane enbusche-*  
*ment*] A buschement E; a bushment  
H.303. *cumand*] comming H.304. *till*] to EH. *Cunȝhe*] coynȝe  
E; cunȝie H. *of*] thar of.

when they come near enough.	And [than] crye hye, "Dowglaß! Dowglaß!"	305
	The frer furth than his way he tais, That wes derff, stout, and ek hardy;	
The friar's hood hides his armour,	His mekill hude helit haly The armyng that he on hym had;	
and he awaits the English on horseback.	Apon a stalward horß he raid, And in his hand he had a spere, Abydand apon that maner Quhill that he saw thame cumand neir. And quhen the formast passit weir	310
He cries "Douglas!" and charges.	The cunzhe, he cryit, "Dowglaß! Dowglaß!" Than till thame all añe courß he maiß, And bare añe douñe deliuerly;	315
Douglas and his men rush out.	Than Dowglaß, with his cumpany, Yschit apon thame with a schout. And quhen thai saw sa gret a rout Cum apon thame sa suddanly,	320
The English flee, and are nearly all slain.	Thai war abaysit richt gretumly, And gaf the bak but mair abaid. The Scottis men emang thame raid, And slew all thaim thai mycht ourta; Añe gret martirdome thair can thai ma.	325
A remnant escape, and tell how Douglas welcomed them.	And thai that eschapit vnslayne Ar till thar gret host went agañe, And tald thañe quhat kyn velcummyng Dowglaß thaim maid at thair metyng,	330

305. *than crye*] than cry E; crye C;  
crie on H.

306. *furth than*] than furth EH.  
*way he*] wayis EH.

307. *derff—ek*] all stout derff and E;  
right darfe, stout, and H.

308. *helit*] couered H.

309. *Armyng*] armur.

312. *Abydand*] And abaid EH.

315. *Cunzhe*] coynze E; cunye H.

316. *ane*] A EH.

318. *Than*] And. *with*] and.

322. *richt*] EH *om.*

323. *gaf*] E *om.*

325. *thaim thai*] thaim at thai C;  
*but* them they H; that thai E.

326. *Ane*] A E; And H. *thai*] H  
*om.*

327. *eschapit*] scaped were H.

328. *Ar*] And H. *gret—went*] Oast  
went hame H.

329. *kyn*] good H.

330. *metyng*] comming H.

Convoyand thame agane roydly,  
And varnyt thame the playn herbery.

**How the gud king Robert the Bruce followit the  
king Eduard of Ingland south in his awn land.**

The English are  
much grieved,

**T**He king of Ingland and his men,  
That saw thair herbreouris then

Cum reboytit on that maneir, 335  
Anoyit gretly in hert thai weir,  
And thought that it war gret foly  
In-to the wode till tak herbery.

and encamp near  
Dryburgh; and  
soon after return  
home.

Tharfor by Driburgh, in the playne,  
Thai herbryit thame; and syne agaeñ 340  
Ar went till Ingland haym thar vay.  
And quhen the king Robert herd say  
That thai war turnyt hame agane,  
And how thair herbreouris var slane,  
In hy his host assemblit he, 345

[Fol. 142 b. C.]

And went south our the Scottis se,  
And till Ingland his way he tais.

King Robert,  
with 80,000 men,  
in 8 battalions,

Quhen his host all assemblit was,  
Auchty thousand he wes and ma; 350  
And aucht battellis he maid of tha;  
In ilk battell wes ten thousand.

pursues the

Syne went he furth on to Ingland,  
And in hale rout followit sa fast

331. *Convoyand*] That conwoyit. roydly] rudly E; rudely H.

in their hearts H.

338. *In-to*] In-till. *till*] to EH.

332. *varnyt—playn*] warnyt planly.

339. *the*] a H.

RUBRIC in H—Here followed King Robert in hight, The English King with all his might.

341. *haym*] E om. *haym—vay*] but delay H.

346. *south*] foorth H.

334. *herbreouris*] harbreours come H.

347, 348. H omits. *way he*] ways. *all*] E om.

335. *Cum*] H om.; see last line. *reboytit*] rebutyt E; Rebuted H. *thal*] that great H.

351. *wes*] war.

352. *on to*] till E; to H.

353. *in*] in-till.

336. *gretly—hert*] in thair hart E;

- English,  
and finds them  
at Byland.
- The Yngliß king, quhill at the last  
He com approchand to Byland,  
Quhar, at that tyme, thar ves liand  
The king of Ingland with his men.  
Kyng Robert, that had wittering then  
That he lay thair, with mekill mycht,  
Tranontit swa on hym aȝe nycht,  
That, be the morne that it wes day,  
Cummyn in-till playn feld war thai,  
Fra Biland bot aȝe litill space.  
Bot betuix [thaim] and it thar waß  
Aȝe craggy bra, strekit weill lang,  
And a gret peth wp for to gang.  
Othirwayis mycht thai nocht away  
Till paß till Bilandis abbay,  
Bot gif thai passit fer about.
- [Fol. 63 b. E.]  
When the Eng-  
lish find that the  
Scotch are so  
near, they occu-  
py the hill,  
and prepare to  
defend it.
- And quhen the mekill Ingliß rout  
Herd at king [Robert] wes so neir,  
The mast part of thame that thar weir  
Went to the path and tuk the bra,  
Thair thocht thai thair defens to ma.  
Thair baneris thair thai gert display,  
And thair battellis on breid aray,  
And thocht weill to defend the place.  
Quhen king Robert persaut [has],

355. *to*] by H.356. *ves*] wes.358. *wittering*] witting H.360. *Tranontit*] Tranountyt E; neere H.Tranoynted H. *ane*] A E; ane H.362. *in-till*] in A E; to the H.363. *ane*] A EH.364. [*thaim* E] them H; him C.365. *Ane*] A EH.366. *peth*] so CE; Path H.367. *away*] away E; haue way H.368. *Till*] To EH (*twice*).370. *And*] But.371. *at*] that EH. *king*] the king CH; *but* E omits the. [*robert* EH] C om. *so*] sa E; H om. *neir*] ner E;

neere H.

372. *thar weir*] thar wer E; were there H.373. *path*] peth.374. *thas*] E om.375. *Thair*] There H; The E.376. *breid*] braid.377. *place*] so CE; pass E.378. [*has* E] hes H; wass C.

	That thai thame thought thair to defend, Eftir his consell haß he send,	380
	And askit quhat wes best till do.	
Douglas under- takes to take the hill by assault,	The lord Dowglaß ansuerd thar-to, And said, "schir, I will vndir-ta That in schort tyñe I sall do swa, That I sall vyn 3on place planly,	385
or cause the English to descend.	Or than ger all 3on cumpany Cum douñ till 3ow heir in this plañe."	
The king bids him do so.	The king than said till him agane, "Do than," he said, "and god the speid!" Than he furth on his wayis 3eid,	390
[Fol. 143. C.]	And of the host the mast party Put thame in-till his cumpany, And held thar vay toward the plaß.	
Sir Thomas Murray,	The gud erll of Murreff, Thomaß, Left his battell, and in gret hy,	395
'with 3 men only,	Bot with thre men in cumpany, Com till the lordis rout of Dowglaß;	
hurries up the hill before all the rest.	And, or he enterit in the plaß, Befor thame all the place tuk he, For he vald that men suld him se.	400
Douglas praises him greatly,	And quhen schir Iames of Dowglaß Saw that he swagat cummyn waß, He prisit him thar-of gretly,	

379. *thame* — *thair*] thought thar thaim E; them thought for H.

381. *till*] to EH; and in l. 387.

385. *vyn*] wyn EH.

387. *heir in*] her to E; into H.

388. *than said*] said than. H *has* — Or ye sall neuer trow me againe.

389. *Do — and*] Do than quhar mychty E; The King then said, great H.

391. *party*] hardy.

393. *vay*] way EH. *plass*] place H;

pass E; and in l. 398.

394. *gud*] H *om.* *thomass*] *schir* thomass C; Sir Thomas H; but E *omits* schir, and H *omits* gud.

396. *thre*] four E; few H. *in*] of his.

397. *till—of*] to the Court of the Lord H.

399. *place*] so CH; pass E; and in ll. 400, 405.

400. *vald*] wald.

403. *prisit*] praised H.

and follows him.	And velcummyt hym full humylyl, And syne the place can sammyn ta. Quhen Ingliß men saw thaim do swa, Thai lichtit and agane thame jeid.	405
Two English knights, Sir Thomas Arthin and Sir Ralph Cobham, advance to attack the Scotch.	Two knyghtis, that douchty war of deid, Thomas Arthyn aife hat to name, The tothir schir Raulf of [Cobhame], Com doune befor all thair menze, Thai war bath of full gret bounte, And met thair fais richt manly; Bot thai war presit gretumly. Thair mycht men se men weill assale, And men defend with stout battale, And arrowes fle in gret foyssoune, And thai that owth war twmmyl doune Stanis apon thame fra the hicht.	410
A fierce fight ensues.	Bot thai that set bath will and mycht To vyn the peth, thame pressit swa, That schir Raulf [of Cobhame] can ta The way richt till his host in hy, And left schir Thomas manfully Defendand with gret mycht the plaß, Quhill that he swa supprisit waß	415
The Scotch put Sir Ralph Cobham to flight,		420
and take Sir Thomas,		425

- 
404. *full humylyl*] hamlyly E; manfullie H.  
honorably H.
405. *syne*] to H. *can*] so CH; thai  
E. *sammyn ta*] togidder ga H.
408. *that—war*] rycht douchty.
409. *arthyn*] ouchtre E; of Struthers  
H. *ane haf*] heght ane H; ane had  
E.
410. *raulf*] rawf E; Ralph H. [*cob-  
hame* E] coubane C; Cowbane H; *but  
note the rime.*
- After l. 410 H *inserts*—Thir twa  
Knights of good degree; and *omits*  
l. 414.
412. *of full*] full of.
413. *richt manly*] manlyly E; right
414. H *omits. presit*] pressyt rycht.
415. *men* (2)] rycht E. *men weill*] well other H.
417. *arrowes*] harnys E; *but* H as C. *fle*] fley.
418. *owth*] owe E; abone H. *twmmyl*] tumbill E; tumbled H.
421. *vyn*] wyn EH.
422. *raulf*] rauff E; Ralph H. [*of cobhame* E] Cowbane H; coubane C. *can*] gan.
423. *richt*] wp. *host*] Oast H; horss E.
424. *manfully*] manlyly.
425. *plaß*] place H; pass E.

That he wes tane throu herd fechtung ;  
 And tharfor syne, quhill his ending,  
 He ves renownyt for best of hand  
 Of a knycht, wes in all Ingland 430  
 For this ilk [schyr] Raulf of [Cobhame]  
 In all Ingland he had the name  
 For the best knycht of all the land ;  
 And for schir Thomas duelt fechtand  
 [Fol. 148 A. C.] Quhar schir Raulf, as befor saide we, 435  
 With-drew him, prisit our hym wes he.

Thus war thai fechtande in the plaß ;  
 And quhen the king Robert, that waß  
 Wiß in his deid and ek verty,  
 Saw his men ay swa douchtely 440  
 The peth apon thair fayis ta,  
 And saw his fais defend thame swa,  
 Than gert he all the Erischry  
 That war in-till his cumpany,  
 Of Argyle and the Ilis alsua, 445  
 Spede thame in hy on-to the bra.  
 He bad thame leiff the peth haly,  
 And clym vp in the craggis by,  
 And speid thame fast, the hicht to ta ;  
 And thai in gret hy haß done swa, 450

428. *quhill*] while H ; in E.430. *wes in*] off.431. [*schyr*] E] Sir H ; C *om.*  
*raulf*] Rawf E ; Ralph H. [*cobhame*  
 E] Cowbane H ; coubane C.432. *In*] In-till. *the*] E *om.*435. *we*] so CH ; I E.436. *he*] so CH ; hely E (*wrongly*).437. RUBRIC *in* H—The discomfit-  
 ing of Englishmen At Bylands Path  
 into the Glen. *plass*] place H ; pass  
 E.439. *ek verty*] auerty E ; eke worthie

H.

440. *ay swa*] sa *rycht*.441. *peth*] so CEH.443. *erischry*] Irschery E ; Irishry  
 H.446. *hy on-to*] hy vnto H ; gret hy  
 to E.447. *He*] And. *peth*] so CEH.448. *in-by*] on the Craiges thereby  
 H. *by*] hy.450. And in great hy they haue done  
 sa H ; Than might men se thaim  
 stoutly ga E.

- They do so, and gain the summit. [And (clamb) allgait wp to the hycht,  
And (left) nocht for thair fayis mycht.  
Magre thair fayis, thai bar thaim swa  
That thai ar gottyn aboun the bra.]  
Than men mycht se thame ficht felly, 455  
And rusche thair fais sturdely.
- There is again a fierce struggle. And thai that till the paß war gañe,  
Magre thair fais, the hycht haß tañe.  
Than layd thai on with all thar mycht ;  
Thair mycht men se men felly ficht. 460  
Ther wes añe pereluß bargañe :
- Sir John Breton defends the hill bravely, For a knycht, hat schir Iohnē Bretañe,  
That lichtit wes abovyn the bra,  
With his men gret defens can ma ;  
And Scottis men sa can assaill, 465
- [Fol. 63. E.] That gaf thame so fellounē battale,  
That thai war set in sic affray  
That thai, that fle mycht, fled away.  
Schir Iohnē of Bretane thar wes tane,  
And richt feill of his folk war slane. 470
- but is at last taken,  
together with two French knights. Of Franß thar tane ves knychtis twa ;  
The lord of Souly wes añe of tha,  
The tothir wes the marschall Bretañe,

451 — 454. C omits. From E;  
found also in H.

451. [clamb] clambe H; clymb E.  
allgait] as Gaittes H.

452. [left H] leve E.

455. Then faught they wonder fel-  
lounly H.

456. rusche] rushed H. sturdely]  
right sturdely H.

457—460. H omits.

460. men (2)] thaim.

461. ane] A E; a right H.

462. haß] heght H; E om. bretañe]  
the bretañe E; of Brittainē H.

463. wes] hes H. abovyn] aboune  
E; abone H.

464. With] And. can] gan.

465. And] Bot the H. sa can] sua  
gan E; can sa H.

466. That] And EH. thame] to  
thame CH; but E omits to, and H  
has feill for fellounē.

468. fle mycht] mycht fle.

469. of] the.

470. And maist part of his Menye  
slaine H.

471. tane ves] tane wes E; were  
tane H.

472. of souly] of Sowllie H; the  
sule E.

473. tothir] other H.



	That wes [a weil] gret lord at hame.	
	The laiff sum deid, and sum war tañe;	475
	The remanand thai fled ilkañe.	
The king of England, seeing his men thus beaten, flees southwards.	And quhen the king of Yngland,	
	That zeit at Biland wes liand,	
	Saw his men discumfyt planly,	
	He tuk his way in full gret hy,	480
	And southwardis fled with all his mycht.	
	The Scottis men chast hym herd, I hicht,	
	And in the chaß haß mony tane.	
	The king quytly away is gane,	
[Fol. 144. C.]	And the mast part of his menzhe.	485
Walter Stewart,	Valter Steward, [that] gret bounte	
	Set ay on hye cheuelry,	
with 500 men,	With v hundreth in cumpany	
chases the	Till Yorkis zettis chaß can ma,	
English to the	And thair sum of thair men can sla,	490
gates of York.	And abaid thair quhill neir the nycht,	
	Till se gif ony vald ysche to ficht.	
	And quhen he saw nane vald cum out,	
	He turnyt agane with all his rout,	
He then returns	And till the host is went in hy,	495
to the main host,	That than tane had thair herbery	

- 
474. [*a weil* E] a right H; ane of CH.  
 C. 487. *on hye*] on hey E; upon hie  
 475. *deid—war*] ded war and sum H.  
 EII. 488. *hundreth*] hundir.  
 476. And the remanand fled ilkane 489. *chass*] the chass E; a chase H.  
 E; The remnand fled were euerilkane *can*] gan. *ma* EH] may C.  
 H. 490. *can*] gan. *sla* EII] slay C.  
 481. *southwardis*] Southward II; 492. *Till*] To EII. *vald*] wald;  
 furthwart E. *and in* l. 493.  
 482. *chast—*] chassyt fast Ic. 493. *cum*] ishe H.  
 483. *tane*] slaine H. 495. *the—is*] his ost he E; the Oast  
 484. *quytly*] quickly or quitly E; they H.  
 quickly H. 496. *than*] *miswritten* thane C.  
 486. *Valter steward*] Walter Stew- *than—had*] tane had than E; then  
 art H; Stewart *waltir* E. [*that* E] had tane H.

who are at By- land and Rie- vaux.	In-till the abbay of Biland, And Riweus that wes by neir hand. Thai delt emang thame that war ther The king of Inglandis ger, That he had levit in-to Biland ; All gert thai lepe out our thar hand, And maid thame all glaid and ek mery.	500
When the prisoners are brought before King Robert,	And quhen the king had tane herbery, Thai broucht till him the presoneris All vnarmyt, as it efferis ; And quhen he saw Iohñe of Bretañe, He had at hym richt gret disdeyne ;	505
he is much displeased with Sir John Breton, on account of his spiteful speeches ;	For he wount wes till spek hely At hayme, and our dispitfully ; And bad haf him away in hy, And luk he kepit war stratly, And said, "war it nocht [that] he war Sic a catiff, he sulde by sair His wourdis that war sa angry ;" And mekly he hym cryit mercy.	510      515
who is therefore closely guarded,	Thei led him furth, forouten mair, And kepit hym weill, ay quhill thai war Cummys hame to thair awne cuntre.	
till ransomed for	Lang eftir syne ransonyt wes he	520

498. *riweus*] ryfuowis E; Rewes  
H. *wes*] were (!) H. *by—hand*] neere  
by lyand H.

499. *emang*] amang.

500. *The*] And gaue the H; but  
*Inglandis* has four syllables.

501. *in-to*] in.

502. *gerl—our*] gripped they into  
H.

503. *all*] H *om.* *ek*] E *om.*

508. *disdeyne*] disdaine H; en-  
gaigne E.

509. *till*] to E. *wount* — *till*] of  
him wald H. *hely*] hychtly.

510. *our*] too H. *dispitfully*] dis-  
pitusly.

511. *And*] He H. *away*] away  
EH.

513. [*that* EH] *thar* C.

514. *catiff*] catyve. A Captive, as  
he then was there H.

515. *wourdis*] wordys. His words  
he sould full deare aby H.

516. *mekly—cryit*] he humbly cryit  
him E; he full fast can cry H.

518. *weill*] H *om.* *ay*] EH *om.*

519. *to*] till.

20,000 pounds. For twenty thousand pund to pay,  
As I haf herd mony men say.

Then the two  
French knights  
come before the  
king.

O when that the king this spek had maid,  
The Franche knychtis, that tane men had,  
Wes broucht richt thar byfor the king; 525

And he maid thame fair velcummyng,  
And said, "I wat richt weill that þhe,  
For 3our gret worschip and bounte

[Fol. 144 b. C.]

Com for till se the fichting heir.  
For, sen 3e in the cuntre war, 530

He addresses  
them court-  
eously.

3our strinth, 3our vorschip, and 3our mycht  
Vald nocht thoill 3ow escheve the ficht;  
And sen that cau3 3ow led thar-till,  
And nouthir wreth na euill will,  
As frendis 3he sall resaut be, 535  
Quhar velcum heir all tym 3e be."

They thank him.

Thai knelit and thankit hym gretly }  
\*Of the grace he thame did suthly, } 537\*  
And he gert tret thame curtasly;  
[And lang quhill with him thaim had he,  
And did thaim honour and bounte. 540

At last he sends  
them to France  
without ransom.

And quhen thai 3arnyt to thair land,  
To the king of Fraunce in presand  
He sent thaim quit, but ransoun fre,  
And gret gyftis to thaim gaff he.

522. *I*] Ik. *mony*] so H; *syndry* H.

E.

524. *franche*] *frankys* E; *French* H. *that—men*] *men takyn* E; they taken H.

525. *Wes*] *War* E; *Were* H.

526. *velcummyng*] *welcumming*.

529. *till*] to EH.

532. *thoill*] *thole* H; *lat* E. *escheve*] *eschew* EH.

534. *wreth*] *wreyth* E; *wrath* H. *euill*] *3eit euill* C; *Iwill* E; *yet ill*

536. *velcum—tym*] *all tyme welcum* her E; *And welcome be all time to me* H. *3e be*] *be 3e*.

537\*. *In C only*.

539—546. *From* E; *also in* H; *in place of these 8 lines, C has but one—* *Frendis he coude resaif hamely*.

539. *And*] A H. *had*] *held* H.

542. *To*] *Vnto* H.

544. *gret gyftis*] *gifts great* H.

His frendis thusgat curtasly 545  
 He couth ressaue, and hamely,  
 And his fais stoutly [to]-stonay.  
 At Biland all that nycht he lay.  
 The Scotch are blithe, and 550  
 ravage the  
 country round. For thair victor all blith thai war ;  
 And on the morn, forouten mair,  
 Thai haiff furthwarde tane thair vay.  
 So fer at that tyme travalit thai  
 Byrnand, slayand, and distroyand,  
 Thair fayis, vith thair mycht, noyand,  
 Quhill to the wald cummyn war thai. 555  
 Then they return  
 home, destroying  
 the vale of Bever-  
 ley as they go. Syne northwarde tuk thai hamē thar way,  
 And distroyit, in thair repair,  
 The vale haly of Beauvare.  
 And syne with presoners and catele,  
 Richeß, and mony fair Iowele, 560  
 Till Scotland tuk thai hamē thar way,  
 Blith and glad, ioyfull and gay.  
 And ilk man went to thair repair,  
 They praise God 565  
 for their success. And lovit god thame fell so fair,  
 That thai the king of Ingland  
 Throu vorschip and throu strinth of hand,  
 And throu thair lordis gret bounte,  
 Discumfit in his awne cuntre.

546. *hamely*] right humbly H.  
 547. *to-stonay*] *certainly the right*  
*reading; miswritten till stonay C (by*  
*usual change of till for to); astoney H;*  
*stonay E.*  
 549. *victor*] wictour E; victorie H.  
 550. *forouten*] withoutten H.  
 551. *furthwarde*] forthwart E;  
 Southwards H.  
 554. *vith*] with all.  
 555. *to*] till. *wald*] so CE; wall H.  
 556. *northwarde*] northwart. Syne  
 North againe they tooke the way H.

557. *distroyit*] syne hameward H.  
 558. The wale all planly of Beau-  
 war E; They destroyed haill the wall  
 of Bewar H.  
 561. *Till*] To EH.  
 562. *Blith*] Bath blyth. *glad—gay*  
 ioyfull of their Pray H.  
 563. *thair*] his H.  
 564. Thanking great God of their  
 welfare H.  
 566. *vorschip*] worschip.  
 567. *lordis*] Kings H.  
 568. *Discumfit*] Discomfist had H.

[BOOK XIX.]

How the lord Sowlis thought throu tressoun vith  
his complis till haf put doun gud king  
Robert the Bruce & how he wes varnit be  
a lady.

A short peace.

THus wes the land a quhile in peß ;  
Bot covatiß, that can nocht ceß

Till set men apon felony,  
Till ger thame cum till sençory,

Some great lords  
conspire against  
King Robert.

Gert lordis of full gret renoune 5  
Mak a fell coniuracioune

Agane Robert, the douchty king ;  
Thai thought till bring him till ending,  
And for till bruke, eftir his dede,

[Fol. 63 b. E.]

The kynrik, and [ryng] in his sted. 10

[Fol. 145. C.]

The lord of Sowlis, schir Vilzame,  
Of that purchaß had mast defame ;

The Lord de  
Sowlis was the  
chief of them,

For principall tharoff wes he  
Bath of assent and cruelte.

He had gert be with him syndri, 15  
Gilbert Mayle-Erll, Iohn of Logy,

RUBRIC. *haf*] *miswritten* hap.

1. *Thus*] Than.

3, 4. *Till*] To EH.

9. *for till*] for to H ; to E.

10. [*ryng*] liif C ; to ryng E ;  
Reigne H.

11. RUBRIC *in* H—Of the great  
Treasoun the ordaining, To Robert the

Brvce the noble King.

11. *of Sowlis*] the soullis E ; Sowles  
H.

14. *Bath*] E *om.* *and*] of that.

15. *gert be*] gottyn.

16. *mayle-Erll*] male - herbe E ;  
Malyerd H.

	Thir war the knychtis I tell of heir, And Richard Brouñe alß, a squyeir ;	
and Sir David Brechin was implicated in it.	And gud schir Daud the Brechyñe Wes of this deid arettit syne, As I sall tell ȝow forthirmair.	20
They were found out by means of a lady,	Bot thai ilkañe discouerit var Throu añe lady, as I herd say, Or till thair purpoß cum mycht thai.	
who told the king.	For scho tald haly to the king Thair purpoß and thair ordanyng, And how that he suld haf beyn ded, And Sowlis ryng in-till his sted ; And tald him werray takynnyng That this purches wes suthfast thing.	25 30
The king seizes them.	And quhen the king wist it wes swa, Sa sutell purchas can he ma, That he gert tak thame euirilkañe.	
De Soulis has 360 squires in his livery.	And quhar the lord Sowlis ves tañe, Thre hundreth and sexte had he Of squyeris, cled in his liverye, At that tyme in his cumpany, Outane knychtis that var ioly.	35
He was taken at Berwick.	In-to Berwik than takyn ves he ; Than mycht men all his menȝe se Sary and wa ; for, suth to say, The king leit thame all paß thar vay,	40

- 
17. *the*] EH *om.* *I—of*] that I H.  
tell. 32. *can*] gan. *ma*] ta H.  
19. *the*] off. 34. *ves*] was.  
20. *arettit*] arested H. 35. *hundreth*] hundir.  
22. *var*] war. 38. *var*] war.  
23. *ane*] A EH. 39. *than*] EH *om.* *ves* wes.  
24. *Or*] Ere H. 40. *Than*] That.  
25. *haly*] hailly H ; all E. 41. *for*] bot E ; the H.  
28. *ryng*] Ring H. 42. *thar vay*] thair way E ; away  
29. *werray*] so CE ; very H. H.  
30. *Thas*] E *om.* *purchess*] purpose

	And held thame that he takyn had.	
De Soulis confesses all,	The lord Sowlis syne eftir maid Playn granting of [all] that purchaß.	45
	A parliament tharfor set thar vaß ; And thiddir broucht thir menze war.	
	The lord Sowlis haß grantit thar	
in open parliament, and is imprisoned in Dumbarton Castle, where he dies.	The deid in-to plane parliament ; Thar soyn eftir he wes sent	50
	Till his penans till Dumbertañe, And deit in that tour of stañe.	
[Fol. 145 b. C.]	Schir Gilbert Male-erll, and Logy, And Richard Brouñe, thir thre planly, War with ane assiß thar ourtane.	55
Three others were beheaded.	Tharfor thai drawin war ilkañe, And hyngit and hedit alß thar-to, As men had demyt thame till do.	
Sir David Brechin is tried.	And gud schir Daud the Brechyñe Thai gert challanß richt stratly syñe ;	60
He confesses that he knew of the plot, but did not consent to it.	And he grantit, that of that thing Ves maid till hym discoueryng, Bot he thar-till gaf na consent. And for he helit thair entent, And discouerit [it] nocht to the king,	65
	That he held of all his halding,	

43. *that*] at EH.44. *syne*] sone E; then H.45. *all that*] so E; that haill H; that C.46. *tharfor set*] set tharfor. *thar*] H om. *vass*] was.47. *thiddir broucht*] broucht thiddir. *thir*] this E; that H.48. *sowlis*] the sowllis E; Sowles H. *thar*] so EH; *misuritten* war (copied from l. 47) C.51. *Till*] To H. *penans*] paines H. *till*] to E; in H.52. *in that*] thar in a.53. *male-erll*] maleherbe E; Maly-

erd H.

55. *ane assiss*] a-syss E; assise H. *thar*] than.57. *hyngit*] hangyt. *alss*] E om.58. *demyt*] dempt E; damned H. *had—thame*] them damned had H.*till*] for to E; to H.59. *dauid the*] dawy off.60. *challanss*] chalance E; chal-  
lenge H.62. *Ves*] Was H; Wes wele E.64. *And*] Bot H.65. [*It* EH] C om.66. *That—of*] Whome of he held

H.

And had maid till him [his] fewte,  
 He is condemned Iugit to hang and draw wes he.  
 to be hung. And as thai drew him for to hyng,  
 The pepill ferly fast can thring 70  
 Him and his myscheiff [for] to se,  
 That to behald wes gret pite.  
 Sir Ingraham Schir Ingerame Vmphravell, that than  
 Umphraville, Wes with the king [as] Scottis man,  
 seeing him drawn Quhen he that gret mischeif can se, 75  
 to execution, expresses his  
 great regret. "Lordis," he said, "quhar-to press 3e  
 To se at myscheiff sic a knycht,  
 That wes so vorthy and so wicht,  
 That I haf seyn ma preß to se  
 Him for his richt souerane bounte 80  
 Than now dois for till se him heir?"  
 And quhen thir vordis spoken weir,  
 With sary cheir he held him still,  
 After the execu- Quhill men had doñe of him thar vill.  
 tion, he buries  
 the body hon- Syne, with the leiff of the king, 85  
 ourably. He broucht him menskfully till erding.  
 And syne to the king thus said he,  
 He asks the king "A thing, pray I 3ow, grant to me ;  
 to let him dispose  
 of his lands in That is, that 3he of all my land,  
 Scotland. That in-to Scotland is lyand, 90  
 Wald gif me leiff till do my will."  
 The king than soyne haß said him till,

- 
67. *had*] E *om.* [*his* E] CH *om.* 81. *till*] to EH; and in ll. 91, 108,  
 68. *to*] till. 112.  
 70. *can*] gan. 85. *Syne*] And syne.  
 71. [*for* EH] C *om.* 86. *menskfully*] so CH; menskly  
 73. *vmphravell*] the umfraweill E; E.  
 Vmfrauille H. 87. *thus*] EH *om.*  
 74. [*as* E] a CH. 88. *pray I*] I pray EH. *to*] E  
 75. *can*] gan E; did H. *om.*  
 76. *Lordis—said*] He said lordingis 90. *into—is*] is in-till scotland E; is  
 EH. into Scotland H.  
 79. *I*] Ik. *ma*] so EH; may C. 92. *hass*] hes H; had E.



	"I will weill graunt that it swa be ; Bot tell me, quhat anoyis the?"	
[Fol. 148. C.]	He said agane, "grant [me] mercy, And I sall tell 3ow it planly.	95
He says he has no heart to re- main in Scotland.	Myne hert giffis me no mor to be With 3ow duelland in this cuntre. Tharfor, bot at it nocht 3ow greiff, I pray 3ow hertly of 3our leiff.	100
For, since Sir David Brechin was hung,	As gud schir Daid the Brechyne, And sa fulfillit of all manheid, Wes put to sa felloune a ded,	105
he cannot remain in Scotland longer.	My hert forsuth may nocht gif me Till duell, for na thing that may be."	
The king grants him all his re- quest.	The king syne said, "sen thou will swa, Quhen-euir thou likis, thou may ga ; And thou sall haf gude leiff thar-to Thi liking of thi land till do."	110
He thanks him, and disposes of his lands.	And he him thankit gretumly, And of his land in full gret hy As him thought best, disponit he.	115
He takes his leave.	Syne at the king of gret bounte, Befor all thai that with him war, He tuk his leyff for euirmair ; And vent in Ingland to the king,	
[Fol. 84. E.]	That maid him richt fair velcummyng,	120
King Edward	And askit him of the north tithing.	

- 
94. *anoyis*] annoyes H ; amowis E.      106. *felloune*] welanys E ; villanous  
95. *grant me* H] *schyr* graunt E ; H.  
grant C.      109. *syne—sen*] said sen that EH.  
99. *bot at*] bot that E ; that H.      110. *thou likis*] the likys E ; ye will  
101. *richt*] Noble and H.      H. *thou* (2)] ye H.  
103. *vorschip*] worschip EH ; hye      119. *vent*] went EH.  
vorschip C.      120, 121. H *omits*.  
104. *the*] off.

receives him  
graciously.

And he him tald all, but lesing,  
How thai knychtis distroyit war,  
And all, as I tald [till] ȝow air,  
And of the kyngis curtasye,  
That levit him debonarly  
Till do of his land his liking.

125

Messengers come  
from King  
Robert to the  
English court,  
to treat of peace.

In that tyme war send fra the king  
Of Scotland messingeris to tret  
Of peß, gif that thai mycht it get,  
As thai oftsið befor war send,  
Quhar that thai couth nocht bring till end.

130

[Fol. 146 b. C.]

For the gud king had in entent,  
Sen god sa fair grace till him sent,  
That he had wonnyn all his land  
Throu strinth of armys till his hand,  
That he peß in his land wald ma,  
And all the landis stabill swa,

135

King Robert is  
desirous that his  
successor should  
enjoy peace.

That his air eftir hym suld be  
In peið, gif men held thair laute.

140

**I**N this tyme now that Vmphrevele,  
As I bair ȝow on hand eir-quhil,  
Com till the king of England,

These messen-  
gers arrive.

The Scottis messingeres thar he fand  
Of peß and rest to haf tretið.

145

King Edward

The kyng wist schir Yngerame veß viß,

124. *all*] E om. [*till* E] CH om.

126. *levit*] lewytt.

127. *Till*] To EH. *of*] with H.

128. *war*] wes.

129. *to* EH] for to C.

131. *oftsiss befor*] befor oft-syss.

132. *Quhar that*] How that E;  
Suppose H. *till*] it to H.

134. *sa fair*] sik H. *till — sent*] to him had sent H; had him lent E.

137. *land*] so CH; tyme E (*perhaps better*).

138. *the*] E om. *landis stabill*] land establisht H.

140. *thair*] E om.

141. *In*] In-till. *now that*] that the H; that E. *vmphrevele*] umfrawill E; Vmfraule H.

146. *yngerame*] Ingrahame E; In-grame H. *vess viß*] wes wiss.

asks Umphra- ville's advice,	And askit his consell thair-to, Quhat he wald rede him for till do.	
not wishing for peace.	"For him," said he, "thocht herd to ma Peß wyth kyng Robert Bruce his fa, Quhill that he of him vengit war."	150
Umphraville says he will give no counsel against Bruce.	Schir Ingerame till hym maid ansuar, And said, "he delt sa curtasly With me, that on na viß suld I Giff consell till his merring."	155
Being further urged, he says that the Scotch are now so hardy in war that they cannot be beaten.	"The behufis neid-way," said the kiñg, "To this thing heir say thine aviß." "Schir," said he, "sen 3our willis is That I say, wit 3he sekirly For all 3our gret cheuelry, Till deill with hym 3he haf no mycht. His men ar worthyn all sa wicht For lang vsage of gret fechting, That has beyne norist in sic thing, That ilk 3eman is sa wicht Of his, that he is worth a knycht. Bot and 3he think 3our weir to bring Till your purpoß and gud liking, Lang trewis with hym tak sall 3e. Than sall the mast of his men3he, That ar bot sympill 3hemanry,	160 165 170
Therefore the English should make a long truce,		

- 
- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 147. <i>his</i> ] E <i>om.</i>   | 161. <i>Till</i> ] To EH. <i>hym</i> ] them H.  |
| 148. <i>till</i> ] to EH.  | 162. <i>ar—sa</i> ] all worthyn ar sa E;  |
| 149. <i>him—he</i> ] he said him. <i>herd</i> ] hard. <i>him—herd</i> ] he said, he was laith H. | sa worthie are and H.   |
| 152. <i>till—maid</i> ] maid till him.   | 163. <i>gret</i> ] EH <i>om.</i>  |
| 155. <i>merring</i> ] nethring E; hurting H.   | 164. <i>has beyne</i> ] has bene E; haue bene H.  |
| 156. <i>The—neidway</i> ] The behowis nedwayis E; Thou behooues need-wise H.                     | 165. <i>3eman</i> ] 3owman E; Yeman H.  |
| 158. <i>willis</i> ] so CE; will it H.   | 167. <i>and</i> ] gif H.  |
|  | 168. <i>Till</i> ] To EH. <i>your</i> ] good H. <i>and gud</i> ] and 3our E; at your H. |
|  | 169. <i>sall</i> ] EH <i>om.</i>  |

Be distrenzeit all comonly  
 To wyn thair met with thair travale.  
 and meanwhile And sum of thame neid mon thame call  
 the Scotch would With plewch and harrow for to get, 175  
 become less war-  
 like. And othir ser craftis, thair met,  
 Swa that thai armyng sall worth ald,  
 And sall be rottyn, distroyit, or sald ;  
 [Fol. 147. C.] And feill, that now of weir ar sle,  
 In-till a lang trewis sall de, 180  
 And othir in thair sted sall riß  
 That sall cwn litill of sic mastriß.  
 And then, when And quhen thai thus [diswyst] ar,  
 they are grown Than may zhe move on thame zour wer,  
 unused to war, \*And sall richt weill, as I suppoß, 185\*  
 the English can \*Bryng zour entent to gud purpoß." 186\*  
 attack them  
 better. Till this assentit thai ilkane ; 185  
 A truce for 13 And eftir syne war trewis tañe  
 years is agreed Betuix the twa kyngis, that wer  
 upon. Talit to [lest] for thretten zheir,  
 And on the marchis gert thame cry.  
 The Scottis men kepit thame lely ; 190  
 But the English Bot Yngliß men apon the se  
 did not keep to Distroyit, throu gret iniquite,  
 it, but destroyed

172. *distrenzeit*] dystroyit E; dystroynit P; strenyied H. *all comonly*] commonaly. diffused (*for* disused) H; deusit (!) C.

174. *neid—call*] of need mon call 185\*, 186\*. Found in EJ; but omitted in P. H also omits these lines.  
 H; *nedis* but faill E. 185. *Till*] To EH.

176. *ser—thair*] Crafts their dayly 186. *syne*] sone.  
 H. 187. E *wrongly inserts* But wer before Betuix. *the*] E om.

178. *sall*] H om. *rottyn*] roused fore Betuix. *the*] E om.  
 H. *distroyit*] stroyit. or] and EH. 188. *Talit*] Tailzeit E; Taken H.

Here follows the catchword— [lest E] last H; rest C; see l. 204.  
 And fele that now of ver are sle. *thretten*] thretteene H; viij (*for* xiiij)

180. *a*] the E; tha H. *trewis*] E; see l. 229.  
 trewes H; trew E. 190. *lely*] lelely.

182. *cwn*] conn E; ken H. *sic*] 191. *Bot*] Bot the.  
 that. 192. *Iniquite*] crueltie H.

183. *thus*] E om. [*diswyst*] E]

the Scottish ships.	Marchand-schippis that saland war Fra Scotland to Flandriß with war, And distroyit the men ilkane, And till thar oys thar gude haß tañe.	195
Bruce demands redress, but none is given.	The king send oft till ask redreß, Bot nocht thar-of redreß ther wes ; And he abaid all tyme askand. The trewis on his half gert he stand Apon the marchis stabilly, And gert men kep thame lelely.	200

## The ded of gud schir Valter Steward.

While this truce lasted	<b>I</b> N this tyme that the trewis war Lestand on marchis, as I said ar,	
Walter Stewart falls ill.	Walter Steward, that worthy was, At Bathket a gret seknes tais.	205
His sickness is incurable,	His euill it wox ay mair and mair, Quhill men persauit by his fair That hym worthit neyd to pay the det That na man for till pay may let. Schrevyn, and als repentand wele, Quhen all wes done him ilke dele That nedit Cristin man till haf,	210
and he dies.	As gud Cristyn the gast he gaf.	
He is greatly	Than mycht men heir folk gret and cry,	215

- 
194. *to*] till. *war*] waire H.  
 195. *the—ilkane*] euirilkane.  
 196. *till*] to EH. *thar* (2)] the EH.  
*gude*] goods H.  
 198. *thar—ther*] off It redressyt.  
 200. *trewis*] trewes H ; trew E.  
 203. RUBRIC in H—Walter Stewart  
 here died he, At Paslay eirded syne  
 was he. *the*] E om.  
 205. *Walter*] *schir waltir*.  
 206. *bathket*] Bathcat H ; bathgat  
 E.  
 207. *it—ay*] ay woux E ; waxt ay  
 H.  
 209. *hym—to*] he of need must H.  
 210. *for*] E om. *till*] to EH.  
 211. *Schrevyn*] schrywyn E ; Shri-  
 uen H. *repentand*] repenting H ; re-  
 pentit E.  
 212. *him*] to him H.  
 213. *nedit—till*] crystyn man ne-  
 dyt till E ; Christen men ought for to  
 H.  
 215. *mycht—folk*] men mycht her  
 men. *grat*] weepe H.

lamented. And mony a knycht and ek lady  
 Mak in [apert] richt euill cher ;  
 Sa did thai all that euir thair wer.  
 All men hym menyt comonly ;  
 For of his elde he wes worthy. 220

[Fol. 147 b. C.] Quhen thai lang tyme thar dule had maid,  
 He is interred at Paisley with great honour. The corß to Paslay haf thai had,  
 And thar, with gret solempnite  
 And with gret dule, entyrit wes he.  
 God for his mycht his saull he bring 225  
 Quhar Ioy ay lestis but endyng !—Amen.

Eftir his ded, as I said air,  
 The trewis that swa takyn war

[Fol. 84 b. E.] For till haf lestit xiiij zeir,  
 When two years and a half of the truce was over, Quhen twa zeir of thame passit weir 230  
 And ane half, as I trow, alsua,  
 Bruce finds he can get no redress ; Kyng Robert saw men wald nocht ma  
 Redreß of schippes that war tane,  
 And of the men als thar war slañe ;  
 Bot continuut thair mavite 235  
 Quhen euir thai met thame on the se.

wherefore he declares the truce broken. He send and acquyt hym all planly,  
 And gaf the trewis wp oppinly,  
 And, in wengeans of this trespass,

Sir Thomas Murray, the Earl of Mar, The gud erll of Murreff, Thomaß, 240  
 And Donald Erll of Mar alsua,

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 216. <i>ek</i> ] mony A E ; faire H.  | H.   |
| 217. [ <i>apert</i> E] apart C. <i>Mak—richt</i> ] Murning and making full H.                             | 229. <i>xiiij</i> ] thretteene H ; viij E.   |
| 219. <i>comonly</i> ] commonaly.  | 232. <i>Kyng</i> ] The king.   |
| 221. <i>tyme</i> ] quhill.  | 235. <i>continuut</i> ] ay continuut C ; ay continued H ; contynowyt ( <i>omitting</i> ay) E. <i>mavite</i> ] mawyte E ; prauitie H. |
| 224. <i>entyrit</i> ] erdyt E ; eirded H.   | 237. <i>acquyt</i> ] so CE ; quit H. <i>all</i> ] E <i>om.</i>   |
| 225. <i>he</i> ] mot H ; E <i>om.</i>   | 239. <i>in</i> ] in the.   |
| 227. RUBRIC in H—The Erle of Mvrray and Dowglas, With their Oast commen to Wardal was. <i>ded</i> ] death |  |

Sir James of Douglas, and Sir James Stewart	And Iames of Douglaß with thaim twa, And Iames Steward, that ledar was Eftir his gud brother disseß, Of all his brothir men in weir, He gert apon thar best maner	245
prepare to make a raid upon England.	With mony men bown thaim to ga In Ingland, for to burne and sla. And thai held furth soyn till Ingland— Thai war of gud men ten thousand— And brynt and slew in-to thair way; Thair fais fast distroyit thai.	250
They invade England, and advance to Weardale.	And swagatis furthward can thai fair, Till Wardill quhill thai cummyn war. That tyne Eduard of Carnavarane,	255
[Fol. 148. C.] At this time Edward of Carnarvon dies, and is succeeded by Edward of Windsor.	The king, wes ded, and laid in stanë; And Eduard, his soñe, that wes 3yng, In Ingland crownyt wes for kyng, And surname had of Wyndissoyr. He had in France beyn of befor With his moder dame Isabell, And wes weddid, as I herd tell, Till a 3oung lady fair of face,	260
He ad married Philippa of Hainault,	That the erllis douchter waß Of Hennaut; and of that cuntre Broucht with him [men] of gret bounte.	265

- 
242. *thaim* E] them H; *thai* (for thaim) C. Carnauerane H.  
 244. *brother*] brotheris. 256. *stanë*] Lane (!) H.  
 245. *brothir*] bruderyis. 258. *wes for*] wes to E; then was H.  
 248. *burne*] bryn. 259. *had*] E om. *wyndissoyr*] wyndyssor E; Windsore H.  
 249. *soyn*] soone H; E om. 260. *of*] thar E; H om.  
 251. *And*] Thai. *in-to*] in-till. 262. *I*] Ik.  
 253. *swagatis*] swagat E; thusgaite H. *furthward*] southwart. *can*] gan. 263. *Till*] To H; With E.  
 254. *Till*] To EH. *wardill*] wardaill E; Wardall Park H. 265. *hennaut*] hennaud E; Henault H.  
 255. *carnavarane*] carnauerayne E; 266. [*men* EH] ane C.

and had Sir John Schir Iohnē of Hennaut wes thar leder,  
of Hainault with him.

—That wes richt viß and wicht in wer.

And that tym that Scottis men war

At Wardale, as I said ȝow ar,

270

He was then  
at York.

In-to York wes the new maid king,

And herd tell of [the] distroying

That Scottis men maid in his cuntre.

He gathers  
50,000 men.

A gret host till him gaderit he ;

He was weill neir fifty thousand.

275

Than held he northwarde in the land

In haill battale with that menȝhe.

He is 18 years  
old.

Xviiȝ ȝeir ald that tyme wes he.

The Scottis men all Cokdaill

Fra end till end thai heryit haill,

280

And till Wardaill agane thai raid.

The Scottish  
scouts, seeing  
the English host  
advancing, give  
warning.

Thar discourouris, that sicht had had

Of cummyng of the Yngliß men,

To [thair] lordis thai tald it then.

Douglas rides  
forward,

Than the lord Douglaß in a lyng

285

Raid furth [for] till se thair cummyng,

and sees 7 bat-  
talions of the  
English.

And saw that sevyng battellis war thai,

That com rydand in gud aray.

Quhen he that folk behaldin had,

Toward his host agane he raid.

290

The erll sperit giff he had seyñe

[Fol. 148 b. C.] The Ingliß host ; “ȝa, schir, but weyñe.”

“Quhat folk ar thai ?” “Schir, mony men.”

- 
267. *of hennaut*] the hennaud E ; de they had all Cokdaill H.  
Henault H. *thar*] E *om.* 280. *thai heryit*] had heryd.  
268. *richt*] E *om.* *viss*] wyss. 282. *had* (1)] has E ; hes H.  
269. *that—that*] in that time the H. 284. [*thair* EH] thai C.  
270. *wardale*] wardaile E ; Wardall 286. [*for* H] CE *om.* *till*] to EH.  
Parke H. 290. *host*] ost E ; Oast H.  
271. *In-to*] In-till. 292. *The—schir*] That ost ȝa *schir*  
272. [*the* EH] thair C. he said E ; The Oast ? yea Sir (he  
276. *northwarde*] northwart. said) H.  
279. *all cokdaill*] a day cokdaile E ;



The Earl of Murray says he shall fight the English.	The erll his ayth haß [suorn] him then, "We shall ficht with thame, thouch thai war Zeit ma eftsonis than thai ar."	295
	"Schir, lovit be god," he said agañe, "That we haue sic añe capitañe, That swa gret thyng [dar] vndirta.	
	Bot, be Saint Bryde, it beis nocht swa, Giff my consaill may trowit be.	300
Douglas dissuades him, and advises him to bide his time.	For fecht on na maner sall we Bot it be at our avantage. For me to think it war nane outrage Till fewar folk aganys ma	305
	Avantage, quhen thai ma, to ta."	
	As thai war on this wiß spekand, Our añe hye ryg thai saw rydand Toward thame evyn a battell braid; Baneris displayit enew thai had.	310
The Scotch see an English battalion coming,  followed by another,  till 7 of them appear.	And añe othir come eftir neir, And richt apou the sammyn maner Thai com, quhill seven battellis braid Out-our that high ryg passit had.	
	The Scottis men war than liand On north half [Wer], toward Scotland. The daill wes strekit weill, I hicht.	315
	On athir syde thar wes añe hicht Till the vattir douñe, sum-deill stay. The Scottis men in gud aray,	320

294. [suorn E] made H; C om.

him] euen H; E om.

295. thame] them, yea H.

296. Zeit—eftsonis] Full ma by far  
H. ar] now are H.

268. ane] A EH.

299. [dar EH] can C.

304. nane] na E; no H.

305. Till] To EH.

309. a] in H.

310. enew] Inew E; anew H.

311. ane othir] a nothyr E; another H.

314. hye] hey.

315. than] thar.

316. [wer E] neir C; neere H; see  
l. 323.

317. I] Ik.

319. Till] And till E; And to H.  
vattir] watir.

	On thair best wiß buskit ilkañe, Stude in the strynth that thai had tañe ; And that wes fra the wattir of Wer A quartir of ane myle weill ner. Thai stude thar, battell till abyd.		
The Scotch are a quarter of a mile from the river.			325
The English ride down to the river on the other side.	And Yngliß men, on athyr syd, Com ridand downward, quhill thai wer To Weris wattir cummyn ner ; And on othir half thair fais war. Than haf thai maid a-rest richt thar ;		330
[Fol. 149. C.] The English send their archers forward,	And send out archeris a thousand With hwdis of, and bowis in hand, And gert thaim weill drink of the vyñe, And bad thaim gang to bikkyr syñe The Scottis host in abandoune, And luk if thai mycht dyng thaim douñe.		335
[Fol. 65. E.]	For mycht thai ger thame brek aray, Till haue thaim at thar will thought thai.		
supported by knights.	Armyt men doun with thameñe thai send, Thame at the watter till defend.		340
Douglas sees them coming,	The lord Dowglaß haß seyn that fair, And men that richt weill horsit war,		
and tells a com- pany to lie in ambush.	And armyt, a gret cumpany, Behynd the battell preuely He gert hufe, to byd thar cummyng. And quhen he maid to thame taknyng, Thai suld com prikand fast, and sla		345

323. *fra*] *far* fra H.324. *ane*] A EH.325. *Thai—thar*] Thar stud thai thaim doun E.

EH.

328. *ueris*] Weeres H. *ner*] als ner.329. *And*] As.332. *hwdis of*] hudis off E; of. *thar*] thair EH.

Hounds (!) H.

333. *vyne*] wyn.335. *abandoune*] a randoun H.336. Thai ger (*sic*) thaim cum apon

thaim doun E.

338. *Till*] To EH; and in ll. 340,

354.

341. *lord*] lord of C; but EH omitof. *thar*] thair EH.344. *battell*] bataillis.345. *hufe*] howe E; hower H.

	With speris that thai mycht our-ta.	
It is commanded by Donald of Mar and Archibald Douglas.	Donald of Mar thar chiftaïne waß, And Archbald with hym of Dowglaß. The lord Dowglaß toward thaim raid ; A gown on his armyng he had,	350
Douglas entices the English forward.	And trawersit alwayis vp agaïne, Thame neir his battell for till trayne. And thai, that drunkyn had of the vyne, Com ay wp endlang in a lyne, Quhill thai the battell com so neir That arrowis fell emang thaim seir.	355
nota. de ogle. (in margin of C.)	Robert of Ogill, a gud squyer, Com prekand than on a courser,	360
Robert Ogle, a squire, warns the English archers.	And on [the] archeris cryit agane, “ 3he wat nocht quha mais 3ow that traïne ! It is the lord Dowglaß, that will Sum of his playis ken 3ow till ! ” And quhen thai herd spek of Dowglaß, The hardyest affrayit was, And agane turnit halely.	365
But Douglas gives the signal, [Fol. 149 b. C.] and 300 archers are slain.	His takyñ maid he thaim in hy ; And the folk that enbuschit war So stoutly prekit on thame thar, That weill thre hundreth haf thai slayñe, And till the wattir hame [agayne] The remanand all can thai chaß.	370
Sir William	Schir Williame of Erskyn, that waß	

348. *that*] all that H.350. *with hym*] E om.352. *armyng*] armur.354. *battell*] bataillis.355. *the*] H om. *vyne*] wyne EH.356. *endlang*] so CH ; lingand E.358. *emang*] amang.360. *than—a*] on a good H.361. [*the* EH] C om.363. *It*] That.364. *Sum*] follows ken in EH.366. *affrayit*] effrayit.368. *thaim*] than E ; then H. *maid*  
—*thaim*] then he made H.371. *hundreth*] hundir.372. [*agayne*] agane E ; againe H ;  
*miswritten* ar gayne C.373. *all*] begins the line in E. *can*]  
gan.374. *that*] thar.

Erskine, a young Scottish knight, is taken prisoner.	*Newlyngis makyn knyght that day, *Weill horsit intill gud aray, Chassit, with othir that war thar, So fer-furth, [that] his horß him bar Emang the lwmp of Ingliß men, That with strang hand he [tane] wes then. Bot of hym weill soyn chaynge wes maid For othir that men takyn had.	375* 376* 375 380
A retreat on both sides.	Fra thir Ingliß archeris war slayne, Thai folk raid till thar host agane. And richt swa did the lord Douglaß ; And quhen that he reparit was,	
The English begin to pitch their tents for the night.	Thai mycht emang thair fayis se Thair palyzeownys soyne stentit be. Than thai persaut soyne in hy, That thai that nyght wald tak herbery, And schap till do no mar that day.	385
The Scotch do the same.	Tharfor alsua thame herbreit thai, And stentit palyzeownys soyn in hy. Tentis and luggis als thair-by Thai gert mak, and set all on raw.	390
Two novelties were seen that day—viz., crests and cannon.	Twa novelreis that day thai saw, That forrouth in Scotland had beyn nañe. Tymbrys for helmys wes the tane, That thame thocht than of gret bewte,	395

---

375\*, 376\*. *In* CH ; *E om.* H has —New made Knight that samine day,  
Well horsed into good array.  
376. [*that* EH] with C.  
377. *Emang*] Amang. *lwmp*] lump.  
378. *Thai*] And EH. *he—wes*] he  
takyn wes C ; wes takyn EH. *For*  
takyn, *read* tane.  
379. *chaynge*] chang E ; change H.  
382. *Thai*] Thir.  
383. *lord*] lord off.  
385. *emang*] amang.  
386. *Thai*] The. *palyzeownys*] pailzownys E ; Pauillions H.  
387. *Than*] And.  
389. *schap*] shape H ; schup E.  
*till*] to EH.  
390. *alsua thame*] thaim alsua.  
391. *stentit*] stented H ; stent E ;  
styntit C (*but see* l. 386). *soyn*] *E om.*  
394. *novelreis*] noweltyis E ; new  
things H.  
395. *forrouth*] before H.  
396. *Tymbrys*] Tymbres H ; Tym-  
mris E. *wes*] war.

And alsua wounder for to se ;  
 The tothir crakkis war of wer,  
 That thai befor herd neuir eir. 400  
 Of thir twa thyngis thai had ferly.  
 That nycht thai wachit stalwardly ;  
 The mast part of thame armyt lay,  
 Quhill on the morne that it wes day.

The Scotch keep  
 watch all night.

[Fol. 150. C.] THE Yngliß men thame vmbethought, 405  
 Apon quhat maner that thai moucht  
 Ger Scottis lewe thair advantage ;  
 For thame thought foly and outrage  
 To gang wp to thame, till assale 410  
 Thame at thar strynthis in playn battale.  
 Tharfor of gud men aȳe thousand,  
 Armyt on hors bath fut and hand,  
 Thai send, behynd thair fayis to be  
 Enbuschit in-till a walè ;  
 And schup thair battellis, as thai wald 415  
 Apon thame till the fechting hald.  
 For thame [thought] Scottis men sic will  
 Had, that thai mycht nocht hald thaim still.  
 For thai knew thame of sic corage,  
 That thai trowit strenth and advantage 420  
 Thai suld leyff, and meit thame planly.  
 Than suld thar buschement hastely  
 Behynd prek on thame at the bak ;

The English  
 wish to make the  
 Scotch leave  
 their position.

They place an  
 ambush of 1000  
 men in a valley.

They make a  
 feigned attack.

They know the  
 Scotch will come  
 out to meet  
 them.

399. *tothir*] other H. *crakkis*] crakys E; Craikes H. *of*] for H.

400. *herd*] had H.

402. *wachit*] walkyt.

407. *lewe*] lewe E; leaue H.

409. *to*] till.

410. *strynthis*] strenth E; Strength H.

411. *ane*] A EH.

413. *behynd*] before (!) H.

414. *wale*] so CE; valley H.

417. *thame*] thai E; they H. [*thought* EH] C om. *sic*] of sik H.

418. *Had*] H om.

420. *trowit*] thought E; sould leaue H.

421. *leyff*] lewe. And meete them in the field plainely H.

422. *hastely*] halily.

423. *prek*] brek EH.

Sa thought thai weill thai suld thaim mak  
 For till repent thame of thair play. 425  
 The 1000 men go Their enbuschement furth send haf thai,  
 to their ambush. That thame enbuschit preualy.  
 Next morning And on the morn, sum-deill airly,  
 the advance is [In-till] the host syne trumpit thai,  
 sounded. And gert thair battell braid aray ; 430  
 And all arayit for to ficht,  
 Thai held toward the wattir richt.  
 The Scotch see Scottis men, that saw thame do swa,  
 them coming, Bown on thair best wiß can thaim ma ;  
 and advance And in battell planly arayit, 435  
 likewise. With baneris to the vynd displayit,  
 Thai left thair strynth, and all planly  
 Com doune to meit thame hardely  
 In als gud maner as thai mowcht,  
 Richt as thair fayis befor had thought. 440  
 But Douglas Bot the lord Dowglaß, that ay-quhar  
 finds out about Set out wachis heir and thar,  
 the ambush, [Gat] wit of thair enbuschement.  
 Than in gret hy soyn is he went  
 [Fol. 150 b. C.] Befor the battellis, and stoutly 445  
 and bids his men He bad ilk man turn hym in hy  
 turn right about Richt as he [stud], and, turnit swa,  
 without breaking Vp till thair strynth he bad thaim ga,  
 the ranks, and so retreat.  
 [Fol. 65 b. E.] Swa that na let thar-in be maid.

- 
- |                                    |                                      |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 424. mak] wracke H.                | 438. To fecht they shupe them        |
| 425. For—of] And make them to      | hastely H.                           |
| repent H.                          | 441. quhar] where H ; was war E.     |
| 426. send haf] sent H.             | 442. Set] so CH ; And set E. (Had    |
| 429. In-till E] Into H ; And till  | set would do best.)                  |
| C. syne] soone H ; hey E.          | 443. [Gat E] To CH.                  |
| 430. battell braid] battells brade | 444. [in—soyn] in-till gret hy.      |
| H ; braid battaillis E.            | 447. [stud E] stood H ; said C. H    |
| 431, 432. Transposed in H. all]    | has—Right as they stood, them turned |
| well H. Thar] And H.               | them sa.                             |
| 434. can] gan.                     | 449. thar-in be] be therein H ; thar |
| 436. to] till. vynd] wynd.         | thai E.                              |

They do so, and when they come to their former place of strength, they face their foes again.	And thai did as he biddin had, Quhill to thair strynth thai com agane ; Than turnyt thai thame with mekill mayn, And stude reddy to giff battale, Giff thair fayis wald thame assale. Quhen Ingliß men haß seyn thaim swa Toward thar strynth agane wp ga, Thai cryit hey, "thai fled thar way."	450
Sir John of Hainault sees the manœuvre, and explains it.	Schir Iohnē de Hennaut said, "perfay, 3one fleying is right degysè. Thair armyt men behynd I se, And thair baneris, swa that thai thar Bot turne thame as thai standand war, And be arayit for the ficht, Gif ony pressis thame with mycht. Thai haf seyne our enbuschement, And agane to thar strinth ar went. 3one folk ar gouernyt wittely ; And he that ledis thame war worthy, For a-viß, worschip, and wisdomē, To gouerne the empyre of Rome."	455 460 465
He says the Scotch are led by a captain fit to govern the Empire of Rome.	Thus spak that worthy knyght that day ; And the enbuschement, fra that thai Saw that thai swa discoverit war, Toward thar host agane thai far. And the battell of Ingliß men,	470
The ambushed men return.		475

451, 452. *Transposed in H. to]*  
till. *mayn]* so CE ; payne P ; paine  
H.

455. *hass]* hes H ; had E.

457. *fled]* fley E ; flee H. *thar*  
*way]* away H.

458. *de]* of H ; E *om.*

459. *degysè]* Tragedie (!) H ; E *om.*

461. *thai]* so EH ; *miswritten* thaim  
C.

462. *Bot]* Sall H.

463. *the]* to.

464. *pressis]* pressyt. *pressis thame]*  
wald them preasse H.

466. *to]* till.

468. *And]* For H. *thame]* E *om.*  
*war]* is EH.

469. *a-viss]* auise H ; awise E.  
*worschip]* wit H.

470. *Empyre]* *miswritten* Enpyre C.

475. *battell]* bataillis E ; battells H.

The English,  
having thus  
failed, retreat  
to their tents.

Quhen thai saw thai had falit then  
Of thar purpos, to thair herbery  
Thai went, and lugit thame in hy.  
On othir half richt swa did thai ;  
Thai maid no mar debat that day.

480

At night fires  
are lighted.

Q when thai [that] day ourdrivyn had,  
Fyres in gret foyssoun thair maid,  
Als soyne as the nycht fallen was.

[Fol. 15L C.]

Than the gud lord of Dowglaß,

485

Douglas finds a  
place 2 miles off,  
better suited for  
encampment.

That spyit had a plaß thar-by,  
Twa myle fra thine, quhar mar trastly

The Scottis host mycht herbery ta,  
And defend thame bettir alsua  
Than ellis in ony place thar-by ;

It is a great  
park, walled  
round.

It wes a park, that halely  
Wes enveronyt about with [wall] ;

490

It wes neir full of treis all,  
Bot a gret playn in-till it was ;  
Thiddir thought the lord Dowglas  
Be [nychtyrtale] thair host to bryng.

495

By night, the  
Scotch, after  
having made up  
their fires, retire  
to the park.

Tharfor, forouten mair duelling,

Thai bet thair fyres and maid thame mair,

And syne all sammyn furth thai fair,

And till the park, without tynsele,

Thai come, and herbryit thaim richt wele

500

478. *lugit*] *logit*.

481. [*that* EH] the C.

484. *Than*] Then H ; And than E.

485. *spyit had*] had spyit.

486. *Twa—thine*] Twa myle thine  
that E ; That twa mile hyne H. *mar*] maist H.

490. *that*] all.

491. [*wall* EH] all C.

494. *lord*] lord of.

495. [*nychtyrtale* E] *nychtir* daill

C ; night all H.

496. *forouten*] without H.

497. *mair*] *mar* E ; yare H (*which perhaps is right*).

498. *syne—sammyn*] *syne* all samyn  
E ; all sammyn syn C ; *syne* togidder  
H. *furth*] can H.

499. *without*] *for-owtyn*. *tynsele*] *tynseill*.

500. *richt*] all H ; E *om.* *wel*] *weill* E ; baill H.



	Vpon the vattir, and als neir Till it as [that] thai forrouth weir.	
At daybreak, the English miss the Scotch,	And on the morn, quhen it wes day, The Ingliß host myssit away The Scottis men, and had ferly,	505
and send out scouts to find them.	And gert discourouris hastely Prek to se quhar thai var away.	
They find them in the park in Weardale.	And by thair fyres persauit thai, That thai in the park of Wardale Had gert herbery thar host all hail.	510
	Tharfor thair host, but mair abaid, Buskit, and evin anent thaim raid, And on othir half the vatter of Wer Gert stent thair palzeownys, als neir As that befor stentit war thai.	515
For eight days nothing is done	Aucht dayis on bath halffis swa thai lay, That Ingliß men durst nocht assale The Scottys men with playne battale, For strinth of erd that thai had ther.	
beyond jousting and skirmishing.	Thar wes ilk day Iustying of wer, And scrymmying maid full apertly, And men tane on ather party. And thai that tane war on a day	520
[Fol. 151 b. C.]	On aȝe othir changit war thai. But othir dedis nane war done, That gretly is apone till moȝe ;	525
On the ninth day	Quhill it fell, on the nynt day,	

502. [*that*] inserted for the metre ;  
see l. 515. *forrouth*] beforouth E ;  
before H.

504. *away*] away EH.

507. *Prek*] Pryk E ; Passe H. *var  
away*] war away.

509. *wardale*] werdale E ; Wardaill  
H.

513. *And*] H om. *half*] side H.  
*vatter*] watir. *wer*] Weere H.

515. *that*] thar E ; of H.

516. *halffis*] halff. *thai lay*] lay  
thai. *bath—swa*] this wise H.

521. *scrymmying*] scrymyn E ; skir-  
mishing H. *maid*] H om.

526. *is apone*] here are for H. *till*]  
to EH. *none*] so EH ; moyne C.

527. *nynt*] nynt H ; sewynd E  
(*wrongly*).

Douglas sees a way to circumvent the English.	The lord Dowglaß haß spyit a vay, How that he mycht about thame ryd, And cum apon the ferrest syd.	530
He takes 500 men with him,	And at evyn him purvayit he, And tuk with him a gude menȝe, V hundreth on horß, ves richt hardy ;	
and, in the night, rides to the other side of the English host.	And in the nycht, all preuely, For-out noyis so fer he raid, Quhill that he neir enveremyt had	535
Half his men carry bare swords, to cut the ropes of the English tents,	Thar host, and on the ferrer syd Toward thame slely can he ryd, And half the men that with hym war [He gert in hand have suerdis bar ;	540
whilst the rest should use their spears.	And bad thaim hew rapys in twa, That thai the pailȝownys mycht ma To fall on thaim that in thaim war.] Than suld the laiff that forouth ar Stab doune with speres sturdely.	545
They approach the English unperceived.	And, quhen thai herd his horne, in hy To the wattir hald doun the way. Quhen this wes said that I here say, Toward thair fais fast thai raid, That on that syd no vachis had.	550

- 
528. *hass*] hes H ; had E. *vay*] *men*] the maist part H.  
way. 540—543. *C omits. From E.*  
530. *apon*] on E ; on them at H. 540. *He—have*] Bare in their hands  
*ferrest*] *ferrer* E ; Forrest (!) H. H.  
531. *him purvayit*] purwayit him 541. *rapys*] Pauillions (*by mistake*)  
E ; puruayed H. H.  
533. *ves richt*] wicht and EH. 542. *pailȝownys*] Pauillions H.  
535. *For-out—fer*] Without noyse 544. *forouth*] folowit E ; Forrayours  
or din H. (!) H. *ar*] thar.  
536. *enveremyt*] enweronyt E ; en- 545. *Stab*] Strike H.  
uironed H. 547. *the*] thair.  
537. *ferrer*] *ferrar* E ; Forrest (!) 548. *I*] Ik. *that—here*] as I heard  
H. H.  
538. *can*] gan. 550. *vachis*] wachis E ; Marches H.  
539. *half*] *E om.* (wrongly). *half—*

They hear the tootling of his horn.	A tutlyng of his horne herd thai. And thai that haß it knawin swith War of his cummyng woundir blith, And sperit at him of his abaid ; And he tald how a carll him maid	605
[Fol. 159 b. C.] He explains what danger he was in.	With his club richt añe fellouñe pay, That met him stoutly in the way ; "That, had nocht vre helpit the mair, I had beyn in gret perell thair." Thusgatis spekand, thai held thar way, Quhill to thar host cummyn ar thai, That on fut, armyt, thame abaid, For till help, gif thai myster had.	610
Douglas meets the Earl of Murray,	And, als soyne as the lord Dowglaß Met with the erll of Murreff was, The erll sperit at hym tithing How he had farñ in his outyng.	620
and says—"Sir, we have drawn blood."	"Schir," said he, "we haf drawyn blude." The erll, that wes of mekill mude, Said, "and we had all thiddir gane, We had discumfit thame ilkane."	
Douglas and Murray discuss events.	"It mycht haf fallyn weill," said he, "Bot sekirly enew war we To put vs in 3on auentur. For, had thai maid discumfitur On vs that 3ondir passit wer, It suld all stonay that ar heir."	625 630

- 
604. *tutlyng*] tutilling E; towting H.  
609. *his*] A. *richt ane*] sic E; sa H.  
611. *vre*] fortoun E; God H. *hel-  
pit*] helped him H.  
612. *I*] He EH.  
613. *Thusgatis*] Thusgat E; Thus-  
gaite H.  
614. *thar*] the.
619. *hym*] thaim.  
620. *he*] thai. *his*] thair. *outyng*] owting.  
622. *mekill*] Noble H.  
624. *discumfit*] destroyed H.  
625. *It*] That.  
626. *enew*] ynew.  
630. *It — stonay*] It might haue stonisht them H.

- The erll said, "sen that it swa is,  
 That we may nocht with Iuperdiß  
 Our fellounne fais forß assale,  
 We sall it do in playn battale."  
 Lord Douglaß said than, "be saint Bryd,  
 It war gret foly at this tyd  
 Till ws with sic añe host till ficht,  
 That ilk day growis of mycht,  
 And vittale haß thar-with plente.  
 And in thar cuntre heir ar we,  
 Quhar thar may cum vs na succourß;  
 Herd is to mak ws heir rescourß;  
 Na we may forra for to get met;  
 Sic as we haf heir mon we et.  
 Do we with our fayis tharfor  
 That ar heir liand vs befor,  
 As I herd tell this othir 3er  
 How that a fox did with a fischar."
- Nota : how the fox playt wyth the fischar.**
- [Fol. 153. C.] "How did the fox?" the erll can say.  
 He said, "a fischar quhilome lay  
 Besyde a ryver for till get  
 His nettis, that he thar had set.  
 A litill luge thar had he maid;  
 And thar-within a bed he had,

632. *Iuperdiss*] Iupertys E; ieopardies H.

633. *forss*] force H; for to E.

634. *it do*] do It.

635. *Lord*] The lord EH. *than*] EH om.

638. *ilk-growis*] growys ilk day. *of*] of maire H.

639. *vittale hass*] has wictaill. *tharwith*] at all H.

641. *vs*] to vs H.

643. Na we ne may ferrar mete to get E; Nor we not forray may to get meat H.

644. *Sic*] Swilk. *mon we*] we mon.

647. *I*] Ik.

648. *How*] E om. *with*] with.

649. *can*] gan.

651. *for till*] for to E; fish to H.

652. *that*] then H. *thar had*] had thar EH.

653. *luge*] loge. *thar had*] tharby.

fire in it, and but one door.	And ek a litill fyre alsua ; A dure ther wes, withouten ma. A nycht, his nettis for till se He raiff, and thair weill lang duelt he.	655
One night, on his return to the hut,	And quhen that he haß done his ded, Toward his luge agane he 3ed, And with licht of the litill fyre, That in the luge was byrnand schyre,	660
he sees there a fox, gnawing at a salmon.	In-till the luge a fox he saw, That fast can on a salmond gnaw. Than till the dure he went in hy,	665
He draws his sword, and stands in the doorway.	And drew aȝe swerd deliuerly, And said, 'tratour, thou mon heir out.' The fox, that wes in full gret dout,	
[Fol. 66 A. E.]	Lukit about sum hoill to se ;	
The fox, seeing no other way of escape, seizes a mantle that lies on the bed, and draws it towards the fire.	Bot nane ysche thar couth he se, Bot quhar the man stude sturdely. A lawchtaȝe mantill than hym by Lyand apon the bed he saw ; And with his teyth he can it draw Atour the fyre ; and, quhen the man Saw his mantill ly byrnand than,	670      675
The man rushes forward to save it, and the fox escapes.	Till red it ran he hastely. The fox gat out than in gret hy, And held his way his warand till.	

655. *ek*] E *om.*656. *A—ther*] And ane doore H. H.  
*withouten*] for-owtyn.657. *A*] Ane H. *till*] to EH.659. *that*] EH *om.* *hass*] had EH.660. *luge*] luge or lugis C ; loge  
E ; see l. 653. *So also in ll. 662,*  
663.663. *the*] his.664. *can—gnaw*] on ane salmound  
gan gnaw E ; in can a Salmond draw  
H.666. *ane*] a H ; his E.667. *tralour*] Reiffar. *out*] lout (!)670. *ysche—se*] eschew persave  
couth he E ; ishe forth there could  
get he H.672. *lawchtane*] lauchtane. A  
Mantle he perceiued him by H.674. *teyth*] teth. *can*] gan.675. *Atour*] Out our E ; Out ouer  
H.676. *byrnand*] brinnand E ; burn-  
ing H.677. *Till*] To EH. *red*] rid H.

BOOK XIX.] DOUGLAS SEES A WAY OF ESCAPE. 165

The man leit hym begilit Ill, 680  
 That he his salmond swa had tynt,  
 And alsua had his mantill brynt,  
 And the fox scathleß gat his way.  
 This ensampill I may weill say  
 By þon folk and vs that ar heir. 685  
 We ar the fox, & thai the fischer  
 That stekis forouth ws the way ;  
 [Fol. 158 b. C.] Thai weyñe we may nocht get away,  
 Bot richt quhar [that] thai ly ; perde,  
 All as thai think, it sall nocht be ; 690  
 I think I can spy For I haf gert spy ws a gat.  
 a way of escape, Suppoß that it be sum-deill wat,  
 though it is A page of ouris we sall nocht tyñe.  
 rather wet. Our fayis, for this small tranontyñe,  
 Wenys we sall weill pryd ws swa, 695  
 That we planly on hand sall ta  
 To gif thame oppynly battale ;  
 Our foes shall Bot at this tyme thair thought sall fale.  
 fail. For we to-morne heir all the day  
 Sall mak alß mery as we may, 700  
 To-morrow And mak ws boune agane the nycht.  
 night we will And than ger mak our fyres bricht,  
 make up our fire And blaw our hornys, and mak fair  
 brightly, As all the warld our awne it war,  
 as if all the Quhill that the nycht weill fallyn be. 705  
 world were ours, And than, with all our harnaß, [we]  
 and, when it is Sall tak our way hamward in hy,  
 very dark, we  
 will retreat.

---

680. <i>leit</i> ] thought H.	perde E ; Parde H.
681. <i>salmond swa</i> ] gud salmound.	690. <i>All</i> ] Yet H.
683. <i>scathless</i> ] harmelesse H. <i>his</i>	691. <i>spy</i> ] se.
way] away EH.	694. <i>tranontyne</i> ] tranowntyn E ;
684. <i>I—weill</i> ] weill I may.	tranoynting H.
685. <i>folk</i> ] ost.	695. <i>weill</i> ] <i>precedes we in E. us</i> ] us.
687. <i>forouth</i> ] before H.	702. <i>bricht</i> ] lycht.
688. <i>weyne</i> ] thinke H.	704. <i>it</i> ] E <i>om.</i>
689. [ <i>that</i> H] CE <i>om.</i> <i>perde</i> ] bot	706. [ <i>we</i> EH] hye C.

	And we sall gyit be richt graithly Quhill we be out of thair danger, That lyis now enclosit her.	710
They shall be deceived."	Than sall we all be at our will, And thai sall let thame trwmpit ill, Fra thai wit weill we be away." Till this haly assentit thai, And maid thame gud cher all that nycht, Quhill on the morn that day was licht.	715
Next morning they pack up everything.	<b>A</b> pon the morn all preualy Thai turst harnaß and maid reddy; Swa that, or ewyn, all boune war thai. Thair fayis, that agane thame lay, Gert haf thair men that thar wes ded In cartis till aine haly sted. All that day caryand thai war With cartis, men that slayne war thar. That thai war feill, men mycht weill se, That in carying so lang suld be.	720
The English employ the day in burying the dead.		
There were many of them.	The hostis bath all that day wer In peß; and, quhen the nycht ves ner, The Scottis folk, that lyand war In-till the park, maid fest and far, And blew hornys and fyres maid, And gert thame byrn bath bricht & braid, Swa that [thair] fyres that nycht war mair Than ony tyme befor thai war.	725
[Fol. 154. C.]		
At night, the Scotch make up great fires,  brighter than ever before.		730

708. *richt*] E *om.* And alltogidder  
hald sickerly H.  
710. *lyis*] thinks us H.  
712. *trwmpit*] trumpyt.  
718. *turst*] tursyt.  
719. *ewyn*] Euen H.  
720. *Thair*] And thair.  
721. *wes*] war.  
722. *haly*] hallowed H.

723—726. H *omits.*  
725. *men mycht*] mycht men.  
727. *all*] E *om.*  
728. *and quhen*] till that H. *ves*  
wes.  
732. *thame—bath*] mak thaim.  
733. *that* (1)] at. *thair — nycht*]  
fyres that nycht C; their fires that  
night H; that nycht thair fyris E.

At nightfall, they ride away privily,	And quhen the nycht wes fallyn wele, With all thair harnaß ilke deill All preualy thai raid thair way.	735
and enter a moss, that was a mile broad. They cross the moss on foot, leading their horses.	Soyn in a moß enterit ar thai That had weill a lang myle on breid ; Out-our that moß on fut thai 3eid, And in thair hand thar horß led thai. It wes richt aße noyus way ; And nocht-for-thi all that thar wer Com weill outour it, haill and fer,	740
They lose very little, except a few sumpter-horses.	And tynt bot litill of thar ger, Bot gif it war ony swmmer That in the moß wes left liand.	745
When all have crossed the moss, they are very glad, and ride home- wards.	Quhen all, as I haf born on hand, Out-our the moß that wes so braid War cummyn, a gret gladschip thai had, And raid furth hamwarde on thar way. And on the morn, quhen it wes day, The Yngliß men saw the herbery Quhar Scottis men war wount to ly	750
The English, next day, are astonished.	All woyd ; thai wonderit gretly then, And send furth syndry of thar men To spy quhar thai war gane away,	755
They find their	Quhill at the last thair traß fand thai,	

736. *ilke*] ilka E; euirilk H.739. *had*] was H. *a—on*] twa myle lang of E; twa mile of H.742. *It*] And it. *richt ane*] rycht A E; a full right H. *noyus*] noysome H.After l. 742 H *inserts four lines, and alters* ll. 743, 744; *thus—*

Bot Flaikes in the Wood they made  
Of wands, and them with them had:  
And sykes therewith brigged they:  
And sa had well their horse away,  
On sik wise, that all that there were,  
Came through the Mosse baith haill  
and feere.

743. *thar*] thai. *See also last note.*746. *ony*] ony auld H. *summer*] summer E; Sowmeere H. (*Summer*=sumpter-horse.)748. *I*] Ik.749. *the*] that.750. *a*] H *om.* *gladschip*] gladnesse H.751. *hamwarde*] hamwart.754. *war—to*] before can H.755. *woyd thai*] voyde and H.757, 758. H *transposes these lines, and* (for l. 757) *has—*And syne when they were gane away.



traces, leading to the moss,	That till the mekill moß thame had, That wes so hydwiß for till waid,	760
which they dare not cross.	That aventur thame thar-to durst nafie ; Bot till thar host agane ar gane, And tald how that thai passit war, Quhar neuir man wes passit ar. Quhen Yngliß men herd it wes swa,	765
[Fol. 154 b. C.]	That thai wald follow thaim no mar.	
The English host disperses.	Thair host richt than thai scalit thar, And ilk man till his awn he raid.	
King Robert sends 20,000 men to relieve Douglas,	Kyng Robert than, that witteryng had That his men in the park swa lay, And at quhat myscheiff thar war thai, Ane host assemblit he in hy. Of twenty thousand richt hardy	770
with the Earls of March and Angus.	He send furth haß with erllis twa, Of Marche and Angouß war thai, The host in Wardale till releiff ;	775
[Fol. 67. E.]	And, gif thai mycht so weill escheiff That sammyn mycht be thai and thai, Thai thocht thair fayis till assay.	780
When Douglas's scouts, having crossed the moss,	So fell it that on the sammyn day That the moß, as þhe herd me say,	

760. *till*] to EH.761. *aventur*] awntyre E; auenture  
H. *thame tharto*] thame to thar C;  
*but* thaim thar-to E; H *has*—of  
them.764. *wes*] had H; E *om*.766. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.769. *he*] they H; E *om*.770. *Kyng—than*] And king Ro-  
bert. *witteryng*] witting H.771. *Thai*] At.772. *at quhat*] so E; quhat at C.  
*at—thar*] what mischiefe then at H.774. And x thousand men, wicht &  
hardy E; Ten thousand men wight  
and hardy H.775. *He—hass*] He has send furth  
E; And send them foorth H.776. *marche*] the merse E; Strath-  
erne H. *angouss*] anguss E; Angus  
H.777. *wardale*] werdale. *till*] to  
EH.779. *mycht*] nycht E; night H.  
*be—thai* (2)] so CE; that meete might  
they H.

	Wes passit, the discourouris, that thar Rydand befor the hostis war,	
get sight of the other host,	Of athir host haß gottin sicht. And thai, that worthy war and wicht, At that metyng iustit of wer.	785
war-cries are raised.	Ensenjeis hye thai cryit ther; And by thair cry persautit thai	
By the cries they discover that they are friends.	That thai war frendis, and at a fay. Than mycht men se thame glad & blith, And tald it to thair lordis swith.	790
The hosts meet with great joy.	The hostis bath met sammyn syne; Thar wes richt hamly welcummyne Maid emang gret lordis thar; Of thair metyng ioyfull thai war.	795
Earl Patrick's men have plenty of provisions, which they give to Douglas's men.	The erll Patrik and his menȝhe Had wittale with thame gret plente, And thar-with weill relevit thai Thar frendis; for, the suth to say, Quhill thai in Wardall liand war, Thai had defalt of met, bot thar Thai war relevit with gret plente.	800
All go to Scot- land joyfully.	Toward Scotland with gammyn & gle Thai went, and hame weill cummyn ar thai, And scalit syne ilk man thar vay.	805
[Fol. 158. C.] King Robert welcomes them home,	The lordis ar went on-to the king, That maid thame richt fair welcummyng;	

- 
784. *hostis*] ost.  
 787. *that*] thair EH.  
 788. *hye*] hey.  
 790. *at—fay*] so CE; na fay H.  
 793. *hostis*] ost.  
 795. *emang*] amang thai.  
 798. *wittale*] wictaillis E; vittaille H.  
 799—806. For these 8 lines H has these four—And gaue it to them with  
 glad cheare, Thus went they hame-ward all in feare: Destroying the Countrie in their way, In Scotland well commen are they.  
 802. *defalt*] defawt.  
 806. *thar vay*] thair vay. (Better—his way.)  
 807. *ar went*] went then H. on-to] all to H; to E.  
 808. *maid—richt*] has maid thaim.

and rejoices at  
their safe return.

For of thar come richt glad wes he :

And that thai [sic perplexite]

810

For-out tynsale eschapit had,

Thai war all blith and mery made.

---

809. *come*] comming H.

811. *Forout*] Withoutten H.

810. [*sic perplexite* E] with sic pros-  
peritie CH.

812. *Thai—all*] All war thai. They  
were all blyth, mery, and glad H.

# [BOOK XX.]

How gud kyng Robert the Bruce crownyt his 3oung  
sone Davy & dame Iohane his spouss.

	Soyne eftir that the erll Thomaß	
	Fra Vardale thus reparit was,	
King Robert assembles a large army,	The kyng assemblit all his mycht, And left nañe that wes worth to ficht.	
	A gret host than assemblit he,	5
	And delt his host in parties thre.	
and besieges Norham.	A part to Norhame went but let, And thair añe strat assege wes set, And held thame in, richt at thar dik.	
Another part of his army be- sieges Alnwick;	The tothir part on to Awnwyk Is went, and thair añe sege set thai ; And quhill at thir assegis lay At the castellis, I spak of ar, [Apert] assaltis maid thai thar, And mony fair gud cheuelry [Eschewyt wes full douchtely].	10      15

- 
1. RUBRIC *in* H—The King Robert assembled there, Three Oasts, in Eng-land for to fare.
2. *vardale*] wardaill E; Wardall H.
3. *The kyng*] E *om.*
7. *norhame*] norame EH.
8. And a stark assege has set E; And there a stalward Siege they set H.
10. *on to*] vnto H; till E. *awnwyk*] Anwyk E; Anuike H.
11. *ane*] A E; a H.
12. *at*] that EII. *thir assegis*] there the Siege H.
13. *the*] thir. *castellis*] Castell H. *I*] as I C; but E *omits* as. *I—of*] as I said H.
14. [Apert E] Part of CH. *assaltis*] eschewys oft.
15. *gud*] EH *om.*
16. *From* E; so also H; C *omits*. *Eschewyt*] Encheeued H. *wes*] war E; was H; the usual form is *wes*, which I have therefore adopted; see l. 24.

	The kyng at thai castellis liand	
	Left his folk, as I bare on hand,	
whilst a third	And with the thrid host held his way	
part,	Fra park to park, hym for to play,	20
commanded by	Huntand, as all his awn it war.	
himself,	And till thame that war with him thar	
overruns	The landis of Northumbirland,	
Northumber-	That next Scotland thar wes liand,	
land.	In fee and heritage gaf he,	25
	And thai payit for the selys fee.	
	On this wiß raid he distroyand,	
King Edward,	Quhill that the kyng of Ingland,	
advised by his	Throu consell of the Mortymer,	
mother and	And his moder, at that time wer	30
Mortimer,	[Ledaris] of hym, that than 3oung wes,	
makes peace	To kyng Robert, till tret of peß	
with King	Send messyngers, and swa sped thai,	
Robert.	That thai assentit on this way,	
[Fol. 156 b. C.]	Than a perpetuall peß to [tak],	35
	And thai a mariage suld mak	
	Of kyng Robertis soñe Davy,	
Robert's son	That than bot fiff 3eir had scarsly,	
David, then	And of ðame Iohane als of the Tour,	
five years old,	That syne wes of full gret valour.	40
is betrothed to	Sistir scho was to the 3oung king	
Edward's sister,	That Ingland had in gouernyng,	
Joan of the	That than of [eild] had sevin 3er.	
Tower,		
then 7 years old.		

18. *bare*] bar.21. *It*] E om.24. *next*] neyst. *scotland thar*] to  
scotland EH. *wes*] war.30. *at*] that E; that at H.31. [*Ledaris* E] Leaders H; LederC. *of*] to H.32. *till*] to EH.34. *thar*] he H.

35. Suld thar a perpetuale pess tak

E. [*tak* E] take H; mak C.37. *Of*] With H; Off the E.38. That fue yeeres auld was then  
surely H.39. *Iohane*] Iane H. *tour*] towre  
H.41. *3oung*] 3ing.42. *Ingland had*] had Ingland.43. [*eild* EH] Ingland (!) C. *than*  
—*had*] had in eild then H.

	[And monymentis and lettrys ser, That thai off Ingland that tyme had, That oucht agayn Scotland maid, In-till that tretys wp thai gaff ; And all the clame that thai mycht haff In-till Scotland on ony maner.]	45
The English give up all claim to Scotland, and King Robert agrees to pay the sum of 20,000 pounds.	And king Robert, for scatheß ser That he till thame of Ingland Had done of weir, with stalward hand, Fully xx thousand pund suld pay Of syluir in-to gude monay.	50
When this is arranged,	Quhen men thir thyngis forspokin had, And with selys and athis maid Fesnyng of frendschip and of peß, That neuir for na chanß suld ceß,	55
the marriage is appointed to take place at Berwick.	The maryage syne ordanit thai Till be at Berwyk, and the day Thai haue set quhen [that] it suld be ; Syne went ilk man till his cuntre. Thus maid wes peß quhar wer wes air,	60
The sieges of Norham and Alnwick are raised.	And syne the assegis rasit wair. The kyng Robert ordanit till pay The siluir, and agane the day He gert weill for the [mangery]	65
[Fol. 67 b. E.] Arrangements are made for the wedding, and	Ordane, quhen that his sone Davy Suld weddit be ; and erll Thomaß, And the gud lord alß of Douglasß,	70

44—49. *From E ; CH omit.*  
50. *scatheß]* scaithis. *ser]* mis-  
*printed* feare H.

51. *till]* to.

52. *of]* in H. *with]* through H.

54. *in-to]* and gold and H.

57. *Fesnyng]* Festnyng E ; Seesing  
H.

60. *Till]* To EH.

61. [*that* EH] C om. *it]* this.

64. *syne]* thus. *assegis]* *segis* E ;  
Sieges H.

65. *robert]* H om. *till]* to E ; for  
to H.

66. *agane]* against H.

67. [*mangery* E] manlory C ; mis-  
*printed* Mangery H.

70. *alß]* E omits ; *follows* And in  
H.

Murray and Douglas are appointed to conduct the marriage-feast.	In-till his stede syne ordanit he Devysouris of that fest till be ; For aȝe male eȝ tuk hym so sare, That he on na viȝ mycht be thar.	
King Robert falls ill.	His mail eiȝ of aȝe fundying Begouth ; for, throu his cald lying,	75
[Fol. 188. C.]	Quhen in his gret myschef wes he, Him fell that herd perplexite.	
He stays at Cardross.	At Cardroȝ all that tym he lay ; And quhen neir cummyȝe wes the day That ordanit for the vedding wes,	80
Murray and Douglas go to Berwick with Prince David,	The erll and the lord Dowglaȝ To Berwik come with mekill fair, And broucht ȝoung Davy with thaim thair.	
where they are met by the English queen, Mortimer,	And the queyne and Mortymer On othir party cummyn wer Vith gret affeir and rialte ;	85
and the princess Joan.	The ȝoung lady of gret bewte Thidder thai broucht with rich affeir. The wedding haue thai maid richt ther With gret fest and solempnite ;	90
Much rejoicing takes place,	Thair mycht men myrth and gladschip se. For full gret fest thai maid richt thar,	
and English and Scotch are very friendly.	And Ingliȝ men and Scottis war To-gidder in Ioy and in solaȝ ; Na felloun speke betuix thaim was.	95

71. *syne*] E *om.*72. *till*] to EH.73. *ane—ess*] a malice E ; his sicknesse H. *tuk hym*] him tuk.

75. This malice off enfundeyng E ; His sicknesse came of a fundying H.

76. *Begouth for*] He had tane H.81. *vedding*] weddyn.82. *lord*] lord of.83. *To—come*] Come to berwik.84. *davy*] dawy E ; Daid H.85. *and*] and the. The Queene, and with her the Mortimer H.86. *party*] part.87. *Vith*] With. *rialte*] reawte E ; Royaltie H.90. *maid richt*] makyt.92. *gladschip*] gladnesse H.93. *full*] ryght. *richt*] E *om.*95. *in* (2)] EH *om.*96. *spek*] speech H ; E *om.*

	The fest a weill lang tyme held thai, And quhen thai buskit till fair away,	
The queen leaves the princess at Berwick.	The queyn haß left hir douchter thar With gret richeß and ryall far.	100
	I trow that lang quhill no lady To houß wes gevin so richly.	
Murray and Douglas receive her.	The erll and the lord Dowglaß Hir in dante resaut haß, As it wes worthy, sekyrly ;	105
She was very fair.	For scho wes syne the best lady, And the farest, that men mycht se. Eftir this gret solempnite, Quhen on bath halfis levis wes tañe,	
The queen and Mortimer return to England.	The queyne till Ingland hame is gane, And had with hir the Mortymer. The erll and thai that lewit wer, Quhen thai a quhile hir convoyit had,	110
[Fol. 156 b. C.]	Toward Berwik agañe thai raid ; And syne, with all thar cumpany,	115
	Toward the kyng thai went in hy, And had with thame the 3ounge Davy, And als darñe Iohane the 3ounge lady. The kyng maid thame fair welcummyng ; And eftir, but lang delaying,	120
David and Joan go to visit King Robert,		
who appoints a parliament,	He haß gert set añe parliament, And thiddir with mony men is went. For he thought he wald in his liff	

---

98. *till*] for till C ; to EH. *away*] away.  
 100. *ryall*] reale E ; Royall H.  
 102. *To—gevin*] Was gevyn till houss.  
 103. *The*] And the.  
 104. *dante*] daynte E ; great daintie H.  
 105. *wes*] war.  
 107. *mycht*] thurst.  
 109. *on*] of. *halfis*] half E ; sides H. *levis wes*] lewys war E ; the lieue was H.  
 111. *the*] E *om.*  
 112. *lewys*] levyt E ; leaued H.  
 118. *als*] *precedes* the in E. *Iohane*] Iane H. *the*] that.  
 120. *lang*] langer.  
 121. *ane*] A.



	Croune his 3oung sone and his vif At that parliament, and swa did he ; With gret fair and solempnite	125
at which David is crowned king, and Joan queen.	The kyng Davy wes crownyt thar ; *And all the lordis at thar war, *And alß of the comminite, *Maid hym manrent and fewte. *And forouth that thai crownit war,	127*
King Robert provides that, if his son David has no heir-male,	The king Robert gert ordane thar, Gif it fell that his sone Davy Deit but air male of his body	130*
Robert Stewart, his grandson, is to be king ;	Gottyn, Robert Stiward suld be Kyng, and brwk [all] the rialte, That his douchter bar, Mariory. And at this tale suld lelely Be haldin, all the lordis swar, And it with selys affermyt thar.	130 135
and, if the king himself dies whilst David is a minor, Murray and Douglas are to be regents.	And gif it [hapnyt] Robert the kyng To pass till god, quhill thai [war] 3yng, The gud erl of Murref, Thomas, With the lord alsua of Dowglas, Suld haue thame in-to gouernyng, Quhill thai had wit to steir thar thing ; And than the lordschip suld thai ta. Heir-till thair athis can thai ma ;	140

125. *At—and*] And at that parlea-  
ment.

127\*—130\*. *Found in CEHJ ; but*  
*omitted in P.*

127\*. *at*] that.

128\*. *comminite*] comunyte.

129\*. *manrent*] manredyn E ;  
homage H.

130\*. *forouth*] before H.

130. *Deit*] Deyit E ; Died H.

132. *brwk*] bruk E ; brooke H.  
[*all E*] CH *om.* *Rialte*] realte E ;  
Royaltie H.

133. *mariory*] in Mariage H.

134. *at*] that H. *tale*] tail3e E ;  
Taillye H.

137. [*hapnyt E*] hapned H ; happin  
C ; see l. 148.

138. *till*] to EH. [*war E*] were

H ; ar C.

139. *murref*] Murray Sir H.

140. *With*] And.

141, 142. *Transposed in H.* *thing*]  
*so CE* ; Reigne H.

144. *can*] gan.

All the lords  
swear to observe  
these provisions.

And all the lordis that wes thar  
Till thir twa vardanys athes swår,  
Till obeiß thame in-to lawte,  
Gif thame hapnyt vardanys to be.

145

[Fol. 157. C.]

Q when all this thing thus tretit wes,  
And affermyt with sekirneß,

150

The king returns  
to Cardross,  
where his sick-  
ness becomes  
mortal.

The king till Cardroß went in hy ;  
And thar hym tuk sa felonly  
His seknes, and him travalyt swa,  
That [he] wist [him] behufit ma  
Of all this liff the commoune end,  
That is the ded, quhen god vill send.

155

He sends for his  
lords,

Tharfor his lettres soyne send he  
For the lordis of his cuntre ;  
And thai com as he biddyn had.

and makes his  
will.

His testament than haß he maid  
Befor bath lordis and prelatis ;  
And till religioun of seir statis,

160

He gives away  
much silver for  
the good of his  
soul.

For heill of his saull, gaf he  
Siluir in-to gret quantite.  
He ordanit for his saull richt weill ;  
And quhen at this wes doñe ilk deill,  
“Lordingis,” he said, “swa is it gane  
With me, that thar is nocht bot añe,  
That is, the ded, withouten dreid,  
That ilk man mon thole on neid.

165

170

146. *vardanys*] wardanys ; and in  
l. 148.  
147. *obeiss*] obey EH. *into*] in.  
151. *till*] to EH.  
152. *felonly*] fellely E ; suddenly  
H.  
153. *His*] The.  
154. [*he* EH] him C. [*him* EH] he  
C. *ma*] to ma.  
155. *this*] his.  
156. *the*] to. *ded*] death H.

VOL. II.

159. *he biddyn*] thai biddyn.  
162. *till*] to EH. *religioun*] Re-  
ligions H. *statis*] Estates H.  
165. *richt*] E om.  
166. *at*] EH om. *ilk deill*] ilka-  
dele.  
167. *Lordingis — said*] He said  
lordingis.  
170. *mon*] sall H. *on*] so CH ; off  
E.

M

[Fol. 68. E.]	And I thank god that haß me sent	
He says—	Spaß in this liff me till repent.	
"I thank God	For throu me and my warraying	
that I have had	Of blud thar haß beyne gret spilling,	
time for repent-	Quhar mony sakleß man wes slayne ;	175
ance ; for I	Tharfor this seknes and this payne	
have been a	I tak in thank for my trespass.	
man of blood.		
My fixed inten-	And my hert fyschit fermly waß,	
tion was,	Quhen I wes in prosperite,	
	Of my synnys till savit be,	180
	To travell apon goddis fayis.	
to make a	And sen he now me till hym tais,	
crusade against	That the body may on na viß	
God's foes.	Fulfill that the hert can deuiß,	
But, as I cannot	I wald the hert war thiddir sent,	185
now do this,	Quhar-in consaut wes that entent.	
I desire my	Tharfor I pray 3ow euir-ilkane,	
heart to be sent	That 3he emang 3ow cheiß me aïne	
to the Holy	That be honest, wiß, and wicht,	
Land.	And of his hand aïne nobill knycht,	190
[Fol. 157 b. C.]	On goddis fayis myne hert to bere,	
	Quhen saull and corß disseuerit [er].	
Choose therefore	For I wald it war worthely	
a knight to bear	Broucht thar, sen god will nocht that I	
it thither."	Haue power thiddirward till ga."	195
They all weep ;	Than war thair hertis all so wa,	
	That nane mycht hald hym fra greting.	

---

172. *till*] to EH ; *and in* ll. 180, gan.

195. 185. *the*] mine H.

174. *thar—beyne*] has bene rycht. 188. *emang*] amang. *cheiss me*] all

175. *wes*] war. chuse H.

178. *fyschit fermly*] fichyt sekyrly 190. *ane*] A EH.

E ; firmly set H. 191. *myne*] my.

181. *travell*] trawaill. 192. *corss*] body H. [*er* E] are H ;

183. *Thas*] Swa that. *on*] E om. were C ; see l. 216.

184. *Fulfill*] Performe H. *can*] 194. *Broucht*] Had H.

- He bad thame leiff thair sorowyng;—  
 “For it,” he said, “mycht nocht releif,  
 And mycht [thaim-self] gretly engreif.” 200  
 but he prays  
 them to carry  
 out his wish.  
 He prayit thame in hy till do  
 The thyng that thai war chargit to.  
 Than went thai furth with drery mwde,  
 And emang thame thai thought it gude,  
 They choose  
 Douglas to  
 undertake the  
 charge; 205  
 \*Quham in bath wit and vorschip waß, 206\*  
 \*Suld tak this travaill apon hand;  
 \*Heir-till thai war all accordand.  
 \*Syne till the kyng thai went in hy,  
 and tell the king  
 of their choice. \*And tald hym at thai thought trewly,  
 \*That the douchty lord Dowglaß 211\*  
 Best schapen for that travell was.  
 And quhen the king herd at thai swa  
 Had ordanit hym, his hert till ta,  
 The king is much  
 pleased at this,  
 saying he too  
 should have  
 chosen Douglas. That he mast ȝarnit suld it haf,  
 He said, “sa god him-self me saff, 210  
 I hald me richt weill payit, that ȝhe  
 Haß chosyn hym; for his bounte  
 And his worschip set my ȝarnyng,  
 Ay sen I thocht till do this thyng,  
 That he it with hym thar suld ber. 215  
 And sen ȝhe all assentit er,

198. *leiff*] leve.199. *releif*] releve.200. [*thaim-self*] theselues H;  
 thar self C; thaim rycht E. *engreif*] trawaill.  
 engreve E; griue H.201. *He*] And.203. *mwde*] mode.204. *And*] E om. *emang*] Amang.205. *worthy*] worthi. *lord*] lord of.206\*—211\*. E omits; found in  
 CH.208\*. *Heir-till*] Hereto H.209\*. *Syne till*] And to H.210\*. *at*] that H.206. *schapen*] ordainde H. *travell*]  
 trawaill.207. *at*] that EH.208. *till*] to EH; and in ll. 214,  
 217.210. *saff*] saiff.213. *And-set*] For Certes it hes  
 bene H.215. *it-ber*] mine heart sould with  
 him beare H.

	It is the mar likand till me.	
	Let se now quhat thar-till sayis he."	
[Fol. 188. C.]	And quhen the gud lord of Dowglaß	
	Wist at the kyng thus spokyn haß,	220
Douglas kneels before the king,	He com and knelit to the kyng,	
	And on this viß maid him thanking.	
and thanks him very heartily,	"I thank ȝow gretly, lorde," said he,	
	"Of mony large and gret bounte	
	That ȝhe haf doñe till me feill siß,	225
	Sen first I come to ȝour seruiß.	
	Bot our all thing I mak thanking,	
	That ȝhe so digne and worthy thing	
promising to take charge of the Bruce's heart.	As ȝour hert, that illwmynt wes	
	Of all bounte and worthynes,	230
	Will that I in my ȝeemsell tak.	
	For ȝow, schir, will I blithly mak	
	This travell, gif god will me gif	
	Laser and space so lange till liff."	
The king thanks him.	The kyng hym thankit tendirly;	235
	Thar wes nane in that company	
All weep.	∟That thai ne wepit for pite;	
	Thair cher anoyus wes to se.	

219. *gud*] E *om.*220. *at*] that EH. *the kyng*] so  
CH; thing E. *hass*] was.222. *viss*] wiss. *him thanking*] his  
talking H.224. *large*] largess EH.225. *till*] to H; E *om.*228. *so digne*] sa dyng.229. *Ilhwmynt*] enlumynyt E; il-  
luminat H.230. *O*] With H. *worthynes*] all

prowes.

231. *ȝeemsell*] ȝemsall E; keeping  
H.232. *will I*] I will.233. *travell*] trawaill.234. *Laser*] Layser E; Laiser H.236. *Thar*] Than.237. *ne*] na. *thai—for*] weeped not  
for great H.238. That was great sorrow for to  
see H.

## Obitus Roberti Bruss regis Scocie.

When the  
Douglas has  
undertaken this  
charge,

he is much  
praised.

The king grows  
worse,

and gives up the  
ghost.

When his death  
is known,

[Fol. 188 b. C.]

his knights make  
great mourning,  
with keen regret.

When the lord Dowglas on this viß  
Had vndirtaie so hye enpriß,  
As the gud kyngis hert till ber

On goddis fayis apon wer,

Prisit for his enpriß wes he.

And the kyngis infermite

Woxe mair & mair, quhill at the last

The dulfull dede approchit fast.

And quhen he had gert till hym do,

All that gud Cristin man fell to,

With werray repentans he gaf

The gast, that god till hevin couth haf

Emang his chosyn folk till be,

In Ioy, solace, and angell gle.

And fra his folk wist he wes ded,

The sorow raif fra sted to sted.

Thair mycht men se men rif thar hare,

And cumly knychtis gret full sar,

And thair nevis oft sammyn driff,

And as wode men thair clathes rif,

Regratand his worthy bounte,

His vit, strynth, and his honeste ;

And, our all, the gret company

That he oft maid thame curtesly.

240

245

250

255

260

239. RUBRIC *in* H — Here died  
King Robert, and was syne Solemned-  
ly buried in Dvnfermylne.

240. *hye*] hey.

241. *till*] to EH; and *in* l. 234.

242. *apon wer*] for to weere H.

243. *Prisit*] Praised H.

245. *Woxe*] Woux E; Was H.

246. *dede*] death H.

247. *till—do*] doe him to H.

248. *man—to*] men sould do H.

250. *thaf*] whilk H. *couth haf*]

haiff E; mot haue H.

251. *Emang*] Amang EII. *folk*]  
for H. *till*] to EH.

252. *angell*] Angells H.

256. *cumly*] comely H; comounly  
E.

257. *nevis*] newffys E; hands H.  
*oft sammyn*] togidder H.

259. *Regratand*] Regarding H.

260. *vit*] wyt. *strynth and*] his  
strenth EH. *his* (2)] H om.

262. *oft—thame*] thaim maid oft.

"Alas!" they say, "our defence and our comfort is at an end!"	"All our defens," thai said, "allas!" And he that all our confort was, Our wit, and all our gouernyng, Is brocht allas! heir till ending; His worschip and his mekill mycht Maid all that war with him so wicht, That thai mycht neuir abaysit be, Quhill forouth thame thai mycht him se. Allas! quhat sall [we] do or say?	265
Whilst he lived, we were dreaded everywhere.	For in liff quhill he lestit ay, With all our fais dred war we, And in-till mony fer cuntre Of our worschip ran the renoune;	270 275
It was all due to him!"	And that wes all for his persoune!" With sic vordis thai maid thair mayne;	
[Fol. 68 b. E.]	And sekirly wonder wes nane. For bettir gouernour than he Micht in na cuntre fundyn be.	280
No man can describe their sorrow.	I hop that nane that is on lif The lamentacioun suld discrif That thai folk for thair lord maid. And quhen thai lang thus sorowit had,	
When he is disembowelled,	And he debowalit wes clenly, And bawlmyt syne full richly,	285 [293]

264. *all*] haill H.  
 265. *and all*] our weale H.  
 266. *Is—allas*] Allace is brought.  
 270. *forouth*] before H.  
 271. [*we EH*] I C.  
 273. *fais*] faes H; nyctbowris E.  
 274. *fer*] ser E; other H.  
 275. *ran*] so CH; sprang E.  
 277. *vordis*] wordis.  
 281. *lif*] lyve.  
 282. The lament and sorrow can descriue H. *discrif*] discryve E; descriue H.

283. *thai*] tha H; that E.  
 284. *thai—thus*] that they lang H.  
 285—298. *The numbering in brackets follows* Pinkerton's edition. *Lines 291—298 are really misplaced in E, and follow l.* 284. *The arrangement in CH is the right one, and is here followed.*  
 285. [293.] *debowalit*] debowaillyt E; bowelled H.  
 286. [294.] *bawlmyt*] bawlmyt E; balmed H. *full*] E om.

his heart is given to Douglas.	And the worthy lord Dowglaß His hert, as it forspokyn was, Haß resauit in gret dantee, With gret fair and solempnite	[295]   290 [298]
His body is buried at Dunfermline. [Fol. 189. C.]	Thai haue him had till Dunfermlyne, And hym solempnly erdit syne, And in a fair towme in the queyr. Bischoppes and prelatis that thar weir	[285]    295
His funeral service is care- fully performed.	Assolzeit hym, quhen the seruiss Wes done as thai couth best deuiss ; And syne, apon the toder day, Sary and wa ar went thar way.	[290]   [292]

Sir Thomas Murray becomes regent.	Quhen at the gude king beriit was, The erll of Mwrreff, schir Thomas, Tuk all the lande in governyng ; All obeysit till his bidding.	300
Douglas places the Bruce's heart in a case of silver, well enamelled,	And the gud lord of Dowglaß syne Gert mak aine caß of siluir fyne, Anamalyt throu subtilite.	305
and bears it about his neck.	Thar-in the kyngis hert did he, And ay about his halß it bare, And fast him bownyt for his fare.	
He makes	His testament deuissit he,	

287. [295.] *And—lord*] The worthy Lord, the good H. *lord*] lord of.

291. [285.] *him had*] had him. *dunfermlyne*] dunferlyne E; Dunfermelyne H.

292. [286.] *Here follows the catch-word*—And in a fair towme in the queyr.

293. [287.] *And*] so H; *spelt* Ande C; E *om.* *towme*] tumb E; Tombe H. *in*] in - till. *queyr*] quer E; Queire H.

297. [291.] *toder*] tothyr E; other H.

298. [292.] *wa*] so EH; way C. *ar—way*] they went away H.

299. RUBRIC *in* H—Here bouned the Lord Dowglas forward, To the haly Land with the Brvces Heart.

299. *as*] that EH.

300. *mwrreff*] Murray II.

302. *obeyssit*] obeyit E; obeyed H.

304. *siluir*] gold right H.

305. *Anamalyt*] Ennamylyt E; Enamalled H.

306. *did*] put H.

308. *his*] to EH.





	[He] hym contenyt richt richly ;	335
	For he had a fair cumpany,	
	And gold eneuch for till despend.	
The king of Spain sends for Douglas,	The kyng all soyne eftir hym send,	
and offers him treasure.	And him richt weill resavit he,	
	And profferit hym in gret plente	340
	Gold and tresour, horß, and armyng ;	
Douglas refuses,	Bot he wald tak thar-of na thyng.	
	"For," he said, "he tuk that viage	
	To paß in-till his pilgrimage	
	On goddis fais, that his travale	345
	Micht eftir till his saull avale.	
saying that he will, however, help him against the Saracens.	And sen he wist that he had were	
	With Sarazenis, he wald dwell ther,	
	And help him at his mycht lely."	
The king thanks him.	The king him thankit curtesly,	350
	And betaucht him gud men that were	
	Weill knawin of [that] landis [wer],	
	And the maner thar-of alsua ;	
	Syne till his innys can he ga.	
Douglas abides there for some time,	Quhen that the king him levit had,	355
and many foreign knights come to see him.	A weill gret sudiorne thair he mad.	
	Knychtis that com of fer cuntre	
	Com in gret rowtis hym to se,	
	And honorit him full gretumly ;	
	And our all men mast souerany	360

- 
335. [*He* E] And CH. *richt*] E thai C. [*wer* E] weere H ; seir C.  
*oni.* 353. *thar-of*] of the land H.  
337. *eneuch*] ynewch. *till*] to EH. 354. *can*] gan.  
338. *all soyne*] alsone E ; Alphous 355, 356. And well good Soiourne  
H. *eftir hym*] him eftre. there he made, And meekle treating  
341. *tresour*] siluer H. als he had H.  
343. *he said*] E *om.* 356. *sudlorne*] soiourne E ; So-  
344. *his*] E *om.* iourne H.  
346. *eftir—saull*] till his saule hele. 357. *fer*] ser.  
349. *help*] serve. To helpe him 358. *rowtis—to*] hy him for to.  
was his will hailly H. 360. *our—mast*] out our all men  
352. *of*] with H. [*that* E] the H ; fer.

- The Yngliß knychtis that war thar  
Honour and cumpany hym bar.  
[Fol. 100. C.] Emang thame wes aȝe strange knycht,  
That wes haldyn so woundir wicht,  
One knight, That for aȝe of the gude wes he 365  
much esteemed, Prisit of all the cristianite.  
had his face all covered with scars. // So fast till-hewyn wes all his face,  
That it our all neir wemmyt waß.  
Or he the lord Dowglaß had seyne,  
He wend his face had wemmyt beyȝe, 370  
Bot neur aȝe hurt in it had he.  
When he sees Quhen he vnwemmyt can it se,  
Douglas's face without a scar, He said that he had gret ferly  
he expresses his astonishment. That sic a knycht and sa vorthy,  
And prisit of sa gret bounte, 375  
Micht in the face vnwemmyt be.  
Douglas answers And he ansuerd thar-till mekly,  
meekly, And said, "love god, all tym had I  
"Praise God, Handis, myne hede [for] till were."  
I had always hands to defend my face." Quha wald tak tent to this ansuer, 380  
Suld se in it vndirstandyng,

363. Amang thai strangeris was A  
knycht E; Amang them all was ane  
strang Knight H.

364. woundir] wonder H; worthi  
and E.

365. gude] best H.

366. Prisit] Praised H. all] E  
om. the] H om.

367. till-hewyn] so E; till-hewyne  
C; to Heauen (!) H; to-hewen (*a bet-  
ter form*) A. all] E om.

368. our—wemmyt] well neere all  
wounded H.

369. Or] Ere H.

370. wemmyt] all wounded H.

371. ane] A EH. in li] tharin.

372. vnwemmyt] vnwounded H.

can] gan.

374. sic] swilk. vorthy] worthi.

375. prisit] praised H.

376. the] his H. vnwemmyt] vn-  
wounded H.

377. till] to E.

378—386. H has *wrong rimes*, and  
puts 9 lines into 6, thus:—And said,  
God lent me hands to beare, Where-  
with I might my head weere. Thus  
made he courteous answering, With a  
right hie vnderstanding: That for de-  
fault of Fence it was, That sa euill  
hewen was his face.

379. [for E] C om.

380. tent] kep.

[Fol. 69. E.]	[That, and] he that maid askyng Had had handis to wer, his face, That for defalt of fenß so was To-fruschit in-to placis ser, Suld haf, may fall, left haill and fer. The gud knychtis that than war by Prisit this ansuer gretumly ; For it wes maid with meke speking, And had richt hye vndirstanding. Apon this maner still thai lay, Quhill throu the cuntre thai herd say That the [hey] kyng of Balmeryne, With mony a mwdy Sarasyne, Wes enterit in the land of Spanze, All haill the cuntre till [de]manze. The kyng of Spanze, on othir party,	385
This was a reproof to the knight for his lack of fence.		
The king of Belmarine invades Spain.	[Fol. 180 & C.] Gaderit his host delyuerly, And delt thame in-to battellis thre. And to the lord Dowglaß gaf he The waward, for to leid and steir ; All haill the strangeris with him weir. And the gret mastir of saint Iak The tothir battell gert he tak. The reirward maid him-[selvyn] thar.	390
The Spanish king gives Douglas the command of the vanguard. The Master of St Iago leads the second battalion ;		400
		405

- 
382. [*That and* E] And that *so* CE ; Palmeryn H.  
 (wrongly) C. *askyng*] that asking. 394. *mwdy*] *mody*.  
 383. *had*] E *om*. 395. *in*] in-till. *spanze*] Spaine II.  
 384. *defalt—fenss*] faute off defence. 396. *till demanze*] for till manze C ;  
 385. *in-to*] in-till. to (*followed by blank space*) E ; to  
 386. *may* E] *ma* C. demaine H.  
 388. *Prisit*] Praised H. *this*] *hys* 399. *thame*] hym. *into*] intill.  
 EH. 401. *waward*] *awaward* E ; Van-  
 389. *meke*] small H. gard H. *for*] E *om*.  
 390. *hye*] hey. 402. And all the strangers that with  
 391. RUBRIC *in* H—The iudging of him were H.  
 the Lord Dowglas, That in his time sa 403. *Iak*] Iake H.  
 worthie was. 405. *Reirward*] Reeregard H.  
 393. [*hey* E] CH *om*. *Balmeryne*] [*selvyn*] *selwyn* E ; self CH.

and the king himself, the rearguard.	Thusgat deuisit, furth thai war To mete thair fayis, that in battale, Arayit reddy to assale, Com agane thame full sturdely.	
Douglas exhorts his men,	The Dowglas than, that wes vorthy, Quhen he to thame of his ledyng Had maid aȝe fair amonestyng Till do weill, and na dede to dreid ; For hewynnis bliß suld be thair meid, Gif that thai deit in goddis seruiss ;	410      415
and leads them forward.	Than, as gud werriours and wiß, With thame stoutly assemblit he. Thar mycht men felloun fechting se ; For thai war all wicht and hardy That war on the Cristyn party.	    420
	*[Bot ere they ioyned in battell, *What Dowglas did, I sall you tell.	421*
Then Douglas takes from his neck the case with the Bruce's heart, and casts it before him, saying, " Pass thou forward, and I will follow or die."	*¶ The Bruces Heart, that on his brest *Was hinging, in the field he kest, *Vpon a stane-cast, and well more : *And said, " now passe thou foorth before, *As thou wast wont in field to be, *And I sall follow, or els de." *And sa he did withoutten ho, *He faucht euen while he came it to, *And tooke it vp in great daintie ; *And euer in field this vsed he.] So fast [thai] faucht with all thar mayȝe,	  425*       430*  432*

408. *Arayit*] Arayit wes C; Arrayed was H; Arayit (*omitting* wes) E.

409. And came against them sturdely H.

410. *than*] E *om.* *wes*] wes sa.

412. *ane*] A EH. *amonestyng*] monesting E; admonishing H; *mis-written* amostyng C.

413. *Till*] To EH.

414. *hewynnis*] hevynmys.

419. *hardy*] worthi.

421\*—432\*. CE *omit*; in H *only*.

422\*. *Dowglas*] the Dowglas H.

423\*. *Bruces*] printed in roman, not in black letter.

428\*. *de*] die H.

421. [*thai*] they H; C *om.* So—*faucht*] And faucht sa fast.

Many are slain on both sides.	That of Sarasenys war mony slayne ; The quethir, with mony fell fachoune, Mony Cristyn thai dang thar doune.	
At last Douglas and his men put the Saracens to the rout.	Bot at the last the lord Douglaß, And the gret rout that with hym was, Pressit fast the Sarasenys swa, That thai haly the bak can ta.	425
Douglas chases the fugitives till he is in front of all his men.	And thai chassit with all thar mayn, And mony in the chaß haß slayn. So fer chassit the lord Dowglaß With few folk, that he passit wes	430
[Fol. 161. C.]	All the folk that wes chassand then. He had nocht with him atour ten Of all men that war with him thar.	435
He then turns backward ;	Quhen he saw all reparit war, Toward his host than turnit he. And as he turnit, he can weill se That all the chassaris turnyt agane ; And thai [relyit] with mekill mayne.	440
but, in return- ing, sees Sir William de Sinclair sur- rounded.	And as the gud lorde Dowglas, As I said air, reparand was, So saw he, richt besyd hym ner, Quhar that schir Willzame de Sancler With a gret rout enveremyt waß.	445
	He wes anoyit and said, "allaß !	

422. of] E om. sarasenys] their  
seruants (1) H.

423. fell] fele.

424. Mony] Mony A EH. thai—  
thar] dang thai EH.

426. gret rout] Christians H.

427. fast] vpon H ; E om.

428. bak] flight H. can] gan.

431. lord] lord of.

432. folk] E om.

433. wes] war. Foorth far fra them  
that chased then H.

434. atour] our E ; bot skant H.

438. So CH ; And quhen the sary-  
zynys gan se E.

439. all] E om.

440. And] E om. [relyit E] reeled  
H ; relevit C. (Here thai=the Sara-  
cens ; see l. 500.)

441. lorde] lord of EH.

442. air] er.

443. hym] thaim.

444. de sancler] the sanctecler E ;  
de Sincleere H.

445. enveremyt] enweround E ; en-  
uironed H.

	3one worthy knyght will soyn be ded,	
Douglas turns to rescue him,	Bot he haf help throu our manhed. God biddis vs help him in gret hy, Sen that we ar so neir him by.	450
exhorting his men to help him.	And god wat weill our entent is Till lif and de in his seruiß ; His will in all thing do sall we, Sall na perell eschevit be Quhill he be put out of 3oñe payñe, Or than we all be with hym slayn."	455
He and his men charge the Saracens,	With that with spurris spedely Thai strak the horß, and in gret hy Amang the Saracenys soyne thai raid, And rowme about tharñe haf thai maid.	460
and fight bravely,	Thai dang on fast with all thair mycht, And feill of thame to ded haß dicht. Gretar defens maid neuir sa quhoyñe Agane so feill, as thai haue doyne, Quhill thai mycht lest to gif battale.	465
but are over- powered by numbers.	Bot mycht no worschip thar avale	
All are slain.	That tym, for ilkane war slayn thar ; The Sarasynys sa mony war	
[Fol. 161 b. C.]	That thai war twenty neir for añe.	
Douglas is slain, and with him Sir William Sinclair,	The gud lord Douglaß thar wes slañe, And Vilzame Sancier syñe alsua ; And other worthy knychtis twa,	470
Sir Robert	Schir Robert [Logan] hat the tañe,	

448. *throu*] and.449, 450. *Transposed in C. God*  
E om. For l. 449, H *has*—Let vs  
then helpe him now in hy.451. *god*] I H.452. *and*] or. *his*] Gods H.454. *eschevit*] eschewyt.457. *spurris*] spurres right H.459. *soyne*] syne H ; E om.465. *to gif*] thei gaf.466. *avale*] awaill.467. That thai ilkan war slayne  
doun thar.468. *The*] For.471. *vilzame—syne*] *schyr* wilzame  
the sancte cler E ; Sir William Sin-  
clare H.473. [*logan*] logane EH ; *mis-*  
*written* rogan C.

Logan, and Sir     And the tothir Walter Logaïne ;  
Walter Logan.     Quhar our lord for his mekill mycht     475  
                         Their saulys haue to hevynnis licht !—AMEN.

The Saracens     THE gud lord Douglaß thus wes ded ;  
retire.     And the Sarasenys in that sted  
Abaid no mair, bot held thar way ;  
                         Their knychtis ded thar levit thai.     480

Douglas's men     Sum of the lord Douglassis men,  
find his body,     That thair lord [ded] had fundyn then,  
and bear him     3eid weill neir wood for dule & wa.  
away.     Lang quhile our hym thai sorowit swa,

[Fol. 69 A. E.]     And with gret dule syne hame him bar.     485

They also find     The kyngis hert haue thai fundyn thar.  
the Bruce's     And that haym with thame haue thai taïne,  
heart,     And ar toward [thair] innys gaïne  
with which they     And ar toward [thair] innys gaïne  
depart in sorrow.     With greting and with euill cher ;  
                         Their sorow angyr wes to her.     490

Sir William     And quhen of Keth gud schir Vilzame,  
Keith,     That all that day had beyn at hame—  
                         For at sa gret myschef wes he,  
                         That he come nocht to the Iournee,  
                         For his arme wes brokyne in twa—     495

kept at home     [Quhen he that folk sic dule saw ma,  
that day by a     He askyt quhat it wes in hy,  
broken arm,  
asks for whom  
they grieve?

474. *walter*] schyr waltir.

475. *Quhar*] Wherefore H. *for*  
*his*] with H.

476. *to*] till his E; to the H.  
*hevynnis Licht*] hewynnys hycht E;  
Heuens hight H.

478. *the*] E *om.*

480. *levit*] lewynt E; soone leaued  
H.

481. *Lord*] good Lord H. *doug-*  
*lassis*] dowglas EH.

482. [*ded* EH] C *om.* *had*] has.

483. *wa*] so EH; *miswritten* way

C.

485. *with — syne*] syne with gret  
dule.

488. [*thair* E] their H; the C.

490. *angyr—to*] wes angry for till.  
That sorrow and grieve it was to heare  
H.

493. *myschef*] malice (*for* male ese)  
E; disease H.

495. *wes brokyne*] brokyn wes.

496—501. *From* E; also in H; not  
in C.

496. *that folk*] tha folkes H.



	And thai him tauld all opynly, How that thar douchty lord wes slayn With Sarazynys that releyt agayn.	500
Hearing of Douglas's death,	And quhen he wyst that it was sua,] Atour all other he wes mast wa,	
his grief is ex- cessive.	And maid so woundir euill cher, That all wonderit that by him wer.	
It is needless to say how they were all grieved.	Bot till tell of thair sorowyng Anoyis, and helpis litill thing.	505
	Men may weill wit, thouch nañe thaim tell, How angry, sorowfull, and how fell Is till tyne sic añe lord as he Till thame that war of his menȝhe.	510
[Fol. 162. C.]	For he wes [swete] and debonar, And weill couth tret his frendis far, And his fais richt felonly Stonay, throu his gret cheuelry.	
For Douglas was kind to his friends, and terrible to his foes.	The quhethir of litill effer wes he, Bot our all thing he lufit lawte ;	515
He detested disloyalty.	At tresoune [growyt he] so gretly, That na tratour mycht be hym by, That he mycht wit, na he suld be Weill pwnyst of his cruelte.	520
Fabricius, who warred against Pyrrhus,	I trow, the leill Fabricius, That fra Rome [to warray] Pirrus	

- 
498. *him tauld*] tauld him H.  
 500. *releyt*] had turned H.  
 502. *he—mast*] him was.  
 505. *till*] to EH.  
 506. *Anoyis*] It noyis.  
 507. *tell*] told H.  
 508. *sorowfull*] for sorow. What  
 dule and sorrow men make wald H.  
 509. *Is*] For H. *till*] to EH.  
 510. *Till*] To. *Till—war*] Was  
 vnto them H.  
 511. [*swete* E] sweet H ; stout C.
514. *Stonay*] Astonish H. *gret*] E om.  
 515. *effer*] after. For of full litle  
 feare was he (*wrongly*) H.  
 516. *Bot*] E om. *our*] so E ; ouer  
 H ; out-our C. *he lufit*] luffit he.  
 517. [*growyt he* E] groowed H ;  
 grevit C.  
 519. *That—mycht*] But he should  
 H. *na he*] that he ne E ; that he H.  
 520. *pwnyst*] punyst. *of*] for H.  
 521. *leill*] Lord H.  
 522. [*to warray*] to werray E ; to  
 weerray H ; warrayit C.

	Wes send with a gret menze,	
hated treason as he did.	[Hatit] tresoune na leß than he.	
	The quhethir, quhen this Pirrus had,	525
Once, when Fabricius was defeated,	On him and on his menze, mayd	
	Añe outrageouß discumfitour,	
	Quhar he eschapit throu auentour,	
	And mony of his men war slañe,	
	And he gaderit añe host agañe,	530
Pyrrhus's physician offered to poison his master.	A gret mastir of medicyñe	
	That Pirrus had in governyñe	
	Profferit to this Fabricius	
	In tresouñe for to slay Pirrus ;	
	For in his first potaciouñe	535
	He suld him gif dedly poysouñe.	
But Fabricius replied that Rome could conquer her foes without foul means,	Fabricius than, that wondir had	
	That he sic proffer till hym maid,	
	Said, "certis, Rome is wele of mycht	
	Throu strynth of armys in-to ficht,	540
	Till vencuß weill thar fais, thouch thai	
	Consent to tresouñe be na way.	
and sent the physician to Pyrrhus,	And for thou wald do sic tresouñe,	
	Thou sall, to get thi warisouñe,	
	Ga till Pirrus, and lat hym do	545
[Fol. 162 b. C.]	Quhat euir in hert hym lyis the to."	
	Than till Pirrus he sende in hy	

524. [*Hatit*] Hated H ; Lufit (!) C ;  
Luffyt (!) E.

525. *this*] that H ; E *om.*

528. *auentour*] auentour E (*printed*  
*ane tour PJ*) ; auentour H.

530. *gaderit*] had gaderyt EH.  
*ane*] his H ; E *om.*

532. *pirrus had*] had pyrrus.

533. *Profferit*] Profferyt E ; *mis-*  
*written* Perofferit C. *to this*] to E ;  
vnto H.

534. *for*] E *om.*

535. For in-till his neyst potioun.

536. *him gif*] gif hym. *poysounne*  
pusoune.

537. *than*] EH *om.*

538. Off that proffre that he him  
maid.

539. *welle*] welle E ; meekle H.

541. *Till wencuss*] To wencuss E ;  
To vanquish H. *weill*] E *om.*

544. I sall the gat A warysoun E ;  
Thou salt ga fetch to warisoun H.

545. *till*] to. *Ga till*] Euen at H.

546. Quhat euir him lyis on hart  
thar-to.

to tell him all the plot.	This mastir, and gert [him] oppenly Fra end till end tell all this tale.	
When Pyrrhus heard it,	Quhen Pirrus had it herd all hale, He said, "wes neuir man that swa For laute bar hym till his fa, As heir Fabricius dois till me,	550
he declares that Fabricius could no more be turned from virtue than the sun from its course.	It is als [ill] to ger hym be Turnyt fra way of richtwisneß, Or to consent till vikidneß, As at mydday to turne agaïne The sone, that rynnis [his] courß all playn." Thus said he of Fabricius,	555
Afterwards, Fabricius con- quered Pyrrhus in fair fighting.	That syne vencust this ilk Pirrus In playne battell throu hard fechting. His honest lawte gert me bryng In this ensampell her, for he Had soueraïne priß of his lawte ;	560
So likewise was Douglas honest, loyal, and worthy.	And richt sua had the lord Douglasß, That honest, leill, and worthy was ; That ded wes, as befor said we ; All menyt hym, strange and prewe. Quhen his men lang had maid murnyng,	565
Douglas's men boil his body to remove the flesh from his bones.	Thai debowellit hym, and syne Gert seth hym, [swa that] mycht be taïne The flesche all haly fra the baïne. The carioune thair in haly plaß	570

548. [him H] CE om.

549. all] him.

551. neuir] euir.

553. dois] beares H.

554. [ill EH] euill C.

556. to] ellis. till] to EH.

558. [his EH] the C. all] E om.

560. vencust] wencussyt E; van-  
quisht H. ilk] same H.

563. her] now H.

564. priss] praise H. his lawte]  
true Lawtie H; leawte E.

565. richt E om. lord] lord of.

567. ded wes] wes ded EH.

568. strange] strange or strangis C ;  
strang E. prewe] priue. H has—  
Men meened him in ilk Countrie.570. They bowelled him but delay-  
ing H.571. Gert] And gart H. seth] seeth  
H; scher E. [swa that E] that H ;  
and syne C.573. The] And the. carioune]  
Corps H. in] in a H.

	Erdit with richt gret vorschip waß ;	
They take his bones with them, and depart homewards.	The banys haue thai with thame tañe, And syne ar till thar schippes gane. Quhen thai war leuit of the kyng,	575
[Fol. 168. C.]	That dule had of thar sorowyng, Till se thai went, gud wynd thai had, Thair courß till Ingland haf thai maid, And thair sauffy arivit thai ;	580
They return to Scotland,	Syne toward Scotland held thar vay, And thar ar cummyne in full gret hy.	
and bury the bones in the church of Douglas.	And the banys richt honorabilly In-till the kirk of Dowglaß war Erdit, with dule and mekill car.	585
His son, Sir Archibald, [Fol. 70. E.] rears a tomb of alabaster to him.	Schir Arch[i]bald his soñe gert syñe Of abalast bath fair and fyñe [Ordane] a towme full richly, As it behufit till swa worthy.	590

Q when that [on] this viß schir Vilþame  
 Of Keyth had broucht the banis hañe,  
 And the gud kyngis hert alsua,  
 And men had richly gert ma  
 With fair affeir the sepulture,  
 The erll of Murreff, that the cure  
 That tyme of Scotland had haly,

- 
576. *till*] to EH.  
 577. *leuit*] lewynt E; leaved H.  
 578. *of*] for. *sorowyng*] seuering H.  
 579. *Till*] To EH.  
 584. *richt*] F om.  
 587. *archibald* II] archebald E; archbald C.  
 588. *abalast*] so CE (*printed* alabastre PJ); Allabast H.  
 589. [Ordane E] Ordanit C; Ordaine H. *towne*] tumbe E; Tombe H. *full*] sa.  
 590. *behufit*] behowyt E; effeered H. *till*] to EH.  
 591. RUBRIC in H—The Erle of Mvrray died here, Through Poyssoun giuen by a false Frere. [on EH] of C. *viss*] wiss.  
 592. *keyth*] keth. *the*] his.  
 595. *affeir*] effer E; affeere H; afeir C. *the*] his E; a H.  
 596. *murreff*] Murray H. *the*] had the.  
 597. *had haly*] halely.

Murray causes the Bruce's heart to be buried in the Abbey at Melrose.	With gret worschip haß gert bery The kyngis hert at the abbay Of Melroß, quhar men [prayis] ay That he and his haffe paradiß. Quhen this wes done that I deuiß, The gude erll gouernit the land, And held the pure weill to warand.	600
He maintained the laws, and kept the country at peace.	The law sa weill mantemyt he, And held in peß swa the cuntre, That it wes neuir led or his day So weill, as I herd ald men say.	605
At last he was poisoned; and thus the lords died.	Bot syne, allaß! poysonyt wes he; To se his ded wes gret pite. The lordis deit apon this viß.	610
[Fol. 163 b. C.]	He, that hye lorde of all thing is, Vp till his mekill bliß thañe bryng,	
God grant that their successors may imitate their virtue.	And grant [his] grace, that thar ofspryng Lede weill the land, and ententif Be to [folow], in all thair liff, Thair nobill elderis gret bounte! [The] afald god in trinite	615
God bring us all to heaven!	Bryng ws hye vp till hevynnis bliß, Quhar all-wayis lestand liking is!—AMEN.	620

\*\*\*

600. [prayis] prays E; do pray H; *miswritten* playis C.  
 602. *wes* E *om.*  
 604. *pure* poor H; power E.  
 605. *law* Lawes H; lave E. *mantemyt* so CE; maintained H.  
 607. *led* E *om.*  
 608. I] Ik.  
 609. *poysonyt* pusonyt.  
 610. By a false Monk full traiterously H.  
 611. *The* Thir.  
 612. *hye* hey E; H *om.*  
 613. *mekill*] ioyfull H.  
 614. [his E] vs CH.  
 615. *the Land*] E *om.*  
 616. [folow E] follow H; *miswritten* forow C.  
 617. *nobill*] so E; Noble H; *miswritten* nobillis C.  
 618. [The EH] Quhar C. *afald*] *afauld* E; *anefald* H.  
 619. *Bryng*] May bring H. *hye—hevynnis*] hey till his mekill E; vp to Heauens H.  
 620. *lestand liking*] ioy and resting H. *Amen*] E *om.*

(*Colophon in C.*) **Explicet liber excellentissimi et nobilissimi principis Roberti de Broyss Scottorum regis illustrissimi qui quidem liber scriptus fuit & finitus in vigilia sancti Iohannis Baptiste viz. decollacio eiusdem per manum I. de R. capellani anno domini millesimo quadringentesimo octogesimo septimo.**

Aug. 28,  
A.D. 1487.

EPITAPH.

**Epithaphium Regis Roberti Broyss.  
Hic iacet inuictus Robertus Rex benedictus ;  
Qui sua gesta legit, reperit quot bella peregit ;  
Ad libertatem deduxit per probitatem  
Regnum Scottorum : nunc viuit in arce polorum.**

(*Colophon in E.*) [Finitur codicellus de virtutibus et actibus bellicosus, viz. domini Roberti Broyß, quondam Scottorum regis illustrissimi, raptim scriptus per me Iohannem Ramsay, ex iussu venerabilis & circumspecti viri, viz. magistri Symonis Lochmalony de Ouchtirmunsye, vicarij bene digni, anno domini millesimo quadringentesimo octuagesimo nono.

A.D. 1489.

Anima domini Roberti Bruyß, et anime omnium fidelium defunctorum per Dei misericordiam, requiescant in pace. Amen, Amen, Amen.

Desine grande loqui, frangit deus omne superbum ;  
Magna cadunt, inflata crepant, tumefacta premuntur ;  
Scandunt celsa humiles, trahuntur ad yma feroces ;  
Vincit opus verbum, minuit iactantia famam.  
Per ea viscera Marie Virginis que portauerunt eterni patris filium. Amen.—E.]

(*Colophon in H.*; Here endes the booke of the Noblest King,  
ed. 1616.)

That euer in Scotland yet did ring,  
Called King Robert the Brvce,  
That was maist worthy of all ruce ;  
And of the Noble & good Lord Dowglas,  
And mony ma that with them was.—H.



HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT  
HER DAUGHTER

---

A DIETARY





## [HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.]

---

[THE two following pieces are printed here because they immediately follow 'The Bruce' in the St John's College MS. They are in the same handwriting as 'The Bruce,' and were no doubt written out at the same time, viz. in 1487.

Of "How the good wife taught her daughter" there are at least eight copies extant. They are numbered and described at p. xiv of "The Hystorie of the Moste noble Knight Plasidas, and other rare pieces, collected into one book by Samuel Pepys, and forming part of The Pepysian Library at Magdalene College, Cambridge. Printed for the Roxburghe Club, 1873," edited by H. H. Gibbs, Esq. Following Mr Gibbs' numbering, the copies are as follows:

1. A version reprinted in the volume just mentioned, pp. 163-171, said to have been derived from a MS. "reserved long in the Studie of a Northfolke Gentleman," and first printed in 1597, with the following Title-page:

THE | NORTHREN | MOTHERS | BLESSING. | *The way of Thrift.* | VVritten  
nine yeares | *before the death of G.* | Chaucer. | LONDON, | Printed by Robert  
Robinson for | *Robert Dexter*, 1597. | In 33 seven-line stanzas, the last three  
lines being much shorter than the first four, as in Nos. 5, 6, 7, and 8. Some  
of the stanzas are irregular. It is proper to add that "The Way to Thrift" is  
a separate poem, of 71 lines, beginning—"Lord God what is this worldes  
wele," and ending—"And from solace turnes to suddain sorrow;" reprinted  
in *The Hystorie of Plasidas*, pp. 173-175.

2. A copy in MS. Kk. i. 5 in the Cambridge University Library, printed in *Ratis Raving*, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby (E. E. T. S. 1870); pp. 103-112, and entitled "The Thewis off Gudwomen." It consists of 316 lines, in a similar metre to that here printed, and is of the same type. See further remarks below.

3. The copy here printed, from MS. G. 23 in the library of St John's College, Cambridge, foll. 164-167. Written out by J. de R. in 1487.

4. A copy in MS. Ashmole 61, fol. 7, entitled "How þe Goode Wyfe tauȝt hyr Douȝter," printed in *Queene Elizabethes Achademy*, &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S., Extra Series, 1869), pp. 44-51. It consists of 208 lines, in a similar metre to that here printed.

5. A copy in *Porkington MS.*, No. 10, leaf 135, back, entitled "The good wyfe wold a pylgremage." Printed in the same volume, pp. 39-43. In 14 stanzas, the metre resembling that of No. 1.

6. A copy in MS. Lambeth 853, p. 102. Printed in *The Babees Book*, ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S. 1868), pp. 36-47. In 31 stanzas; metre similar to that of No. 1.

7. A similar copy in MS. R. 3, 19 in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge. The collations with No. 6 are given by Mr Furnivall.

8. A copy in the *Loscombe MS.*,<sup>1</sup> entitled "How the Goode Wif thaught

<sup>1</sup> Now MS. cxxx in the possession of Lord Ashburnham; described in *Piers Plowman* (B-text), pref. p. xxi; ed. Skeat.

## 202 HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.

bir Doughter ;" printed in 1838 by Sir F. Madden, and again by Mr Hazlitt, in his *Early Popular Poetry*, vol. i. In 35 stanzas ; metre similar to that of No. 1.

At p. xxi of *The Historye of Plasidas*, Mr Gibbs gives a harmony of the copies numbered 1, 6, 7, and 8, which more or less resemble each other. No. 5 is in a similar metre. The copies to be compared with that here printed are therefore Nos. 2 and 4. Of these, No. 4 is expressed in different language, and can only be compared as regards the general sense ; but No. 2 is no other than a different copy of the very same type of the poem, and agrees sufficiently closely with the text to admit of collation. I denote the text here printed by the letter A, and the text printed by Dr Lumby by the letter B. The following is the general scheme, showing the corresponding lines of the two versions.

### VERSION A (here printed).

1—54  
 55—68  
 69—80  
 81—110  
 111, 112  
 113—116  
 117—166  
 167—170  
 171—210  
 211—218  
 (a) [235, 236]  
 (b) [241, 242]  
 (c) [237, 238]  
 219—234  
 (a) 235, 236  
 (c) 237, 238  
 239, 240  
 (b) 241, 242  
 243, 244  
 245—254  
 255—272  
 273, 274  
 275—278  
 279—296  
 297, 298  
 299—302  
 303—306

### VERSION B (ed. Lumby).

1—54  
 55—62  
 63—74  
 75, 76  
 77, 78  
 79—128  
 129—168  
 169, 170  
 171—178  
 (a) 179, 180  
 181, 182  
 (b) 183, 184  
 (c) 185, 186  
 187—202  
 (a) [179, 180]  
 (c) [185, 186]  
 (b) [183, 184]  
*like* 203, 204  
 205—214  
 215—218  
 219—236  
 237, 238  
 239, 240  
*like* 241, 242  
 243—260  
 261—264  
 265—316

Such verbal variations as seemed to me to be worthy of notice are given in the footnotes.

I must add that, in the marginal summary, I have copied Dr Lumby's words where practicable, for the convenience of the reader.]

[Fol. 184. C.]

Inclpiunt documenta matris ad filiam.

The good wife  
shows how  
women are held  
dear.

THE gud wiff schawis, the best scho can,  
Quhilk ar the thewis of a gud voman ;  
Quhilk gerris women be haldin deir,  
And makis pouer women princes peir ;  
With sum ill techis and ill thewis, 5  
That followis foull women & schrewis.

Women's honour  
is tender,

As to the first, men suld consyder  
That womanis honor is mair slyder,  
And eythar blekyt be mekill thing,  
As farest roß soyne takis fadyng. 10

and fades like  
a rose ;  
therefore women  
should be  
cautious,  
pious, humble,

A woman suld haue euir raddour  
Of thing that greif mycht hir honour ;  
With pite and humilite,  
And litill of langage for to be.  
Nocht lowd of lauchtir, na of langage crouß, 15

always doing  
good, not  
gossiping,

And euir do sum gud to the houß :  
Nocht oyß of tratlyng in the touñe,  
Na with men for to rowk & rowñe ;  
Suet and hamly, sempill and coy,  
Vith fenzeit fair nocht mak our moy. 20

not proud nor  
assuming.

Nocht nyse, proude, na our delicat,  
Na contrefet our gret estat ;  
Favour na dedis of dishonour,

Be respectful,

Kep vorschip till all creatour ;  
Be nocht lefull tratlyngis till heir, 25

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. <i>the</i> ] fore.                      | lauchtyr.                              |
| 2. <i>the</i> ] B omits.                   | 16. <i>do—the</i> ] doand gud in her.  |
| 3. <i>Quhilk gerris</i> ] Quhilkis gar.    | 17. <i>of</i> ] na.                    |
| 4. <i>makis</i> ] B omits (better).        | 18. <i>men—to</i> ] no 3onge men. &]   |
| 5. <i>techis</i> ] maneris. Ill (2)] B om. | na.                                    |
| 8. <i>mair</i> ] tendyr &.                 | 19. <i>Suet — hamly</i> ] Weill of hir |
| 9. <i>eythar blekyt</i> ] raitthar brekis. | smylinge.                              |
| 10. <i>soyne takis</i> ] takis sonest.     | 20. <i>fenzeit</i> ] fenzeand.         |
| 11. <i>haue euir</i> ] ay have.            | 22. <i>our</i> ] nocht our.            |
| 13. <i>With</i> ] Ful of.                  | 25. <i>till</i> ] to.                  |
| 15. <i>lauchtir</i> ] lange. of langage]   |  |

204 HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.

	Na till reherß, quha vald thaim speir.	
and obedient ;	Till hir frendis obeysand be, In gudly thing that may supple ;	
not too gay in dress,	Nocht delicat in hir clething, Bot playn maneir and gudly thing.	30
	Nocht our costlik, na zeit sumptuousß,	
to make folks envious ;	To mak folk at hir invyouß ; Na covat nocht clething mair deir Na be resoñe hir stat suld feir ;	
not to dress for show,	And thouch scho be cled preciously, Couat nocht to be seyn for-thi.	35
lest she be deemed a light woman.	Quhen scho is proude to schawe hir than, Is taknyng of añe euill woman ;	
[Fol. 164 & C.]	Bot quhen it aw with reson to be,	
There are proper times for women to show them- selves,	To schaw hir than is honeste, With suet gud rownd contyrnans ; Nocht our fer preß hir till avans.	40
	Till schaw hir pryd, that men may se, That is bot pomp and vanite.	
but it should be done with modesty.	Bot euir with dreid and schamfulnes Scho suld draw to the lawast plaß, And erar lawar place to tak Na hear, and be put abak.	45
God honours lowliness.	God dois honour till lawlynas, Quhen prid is pwnyst in all plaß, Quhilk in women is mair to blarne,	50

26. *till*] to. *vald*] wald.  
 27. *obeysand*] obeydent.  
 28. *thing*] thingis.  
 29. *delicat*] outragouss.  
 31. *zeit*] B om.  
 32. *folk*] vthir.  
 34. *hir—feir*] suld hir effeir.  
 35. *preciously*] honestly.  
 36. *Couat*] Desyr.  
 38. *taknyng*] takin. *ane euill*] a  
 licht.

39. *aw with*] suld be. *to*] B om.  
 41. *gud*] hamly. *contyrnans*] con-  
 tenans.  
 43. *Till*] To. *pryd*] proud. *that*]  
 at.  
 44. *That — pomp*] Is pryd, wan-  
 glore.  
 48. *hear and*] fra her place.  
 49. *till*] to.  
 51. *mair*] maist.

After pride comes shame.	For eftir pryd oft followis schame. Nocht than thai suld be honest ay Eftir thair estat ilk day,	
Dress should be suitable to the rank in life.	And hear honour, bettir thing, And lawar stat, lakar clething. For pryd gais no thing be the claiß, Bot be the hert that woman haß. For sum will be sa stoutly cled, Or thai will crab thar men in bed,	55     60
Some men's riches are of less value than their wives' clothes.	That half the riches that he haß Sall scant be worth his viffis claß. Than quhen thai cled ar our statly, Men will presoyme na gud, treuly, Bot that scho dois it for paramour ;	    65
Too fine clothing is dishonourable.	And thus-gat faid sall hir honour. Tharfor the best thing is, I wat, Is to be cled eftir thair estat.	
Keep women from all dishonourable deeds,	Kepe thame fra delit nocht variabill, And fra all dedis dishonerabill, Nocht fra the deid all anerly, Bot fra all that is ill likly.	70
from all sus- pected places.	Fle ill folk and suspekitt place, Gret lak followis of ill liklynace ;	
Bad company damages character.	For euir dishonorit cumpany Fadis all honour comonly.	75
Give not women too delicate food or drink. [Fol. 165. C.]	<b>D</b> ant nocht madenys our vantly, Na feyd thame nocht deliciously ; For metis and drynkis deliciouß	

54. *estat ilk*] stat euerilk.  
55—68. B *omits.* See *insertion in*  
B, ll. 55—62.  
68. *Is*] *Perhaps better omitted.*  
69. *variabill*] *In margin of A—vel*  
*wakabile ; wable B.*  
70. *dedis*] deid.

71. *Nocht—the*] Bot nocht fra.  
72. *that*] thinge that.  
74. *of*] B *om.*  
75. *dishonorit*] defamyt.  
76. Defadis the honor of al wy B.  
77. *madenys*] women.  
78. *deliciously*] our delygatly.

206 HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.

	Drawis to lichery : men sais thus.	80
	Na let thame nocht ga to thar will	
	Bot it weill suddane be thair-till.	
Let them not attend clerk- plays or pilgrimages.	Na to clerk-playis na pilgrimage, Bot thar be with thaim viß folk of age.	
	Thoill thaim nocht rage with rybaldry, Na mengill thame with neurir with ladry.	85
Let not young people be together alone.	Nouthir nycht nor day to hant allane, That has beyn ded of mony aife, All be thai neurir so syb no tendir ; For nakit lying lufrent will gendir.	90
After seven years of age, nature is strong.	Fra thai be passit sevin 3eir and mair, Natur spryngis and will nocht spair ; Suppoß no man will thame mystrast, The lang acquyntans will nocht lest Vith fors of nature ; and sutelte	95
Great harm comes thus.	Of the fals fend, that is so slee, Drawis sic plesand acquyntans Throu 3outhede and throu ignorans. And 3outhede can no perellis cast Quhill at all be perist at the last.	100
	Than "had I wittyn !" will thai say, With mony "allas" and harmesay.	
It were better to guard against such harm.	Than war it bettir forsee the ill Or sic mysfortoun fall thame till. For, as men redis in ald storys,	105
Brothers and sisters often perish thus.	Ten thousand tynt ar on this viß Of sistir and brothir in sic lik caß, That banyst syne fra frendis waß, In strange rewmys fled for schame, That durst neurir eftir be seyne at hame.	110
	Kepe thame fra giftis to gif or craff, Or billis of amowris till resaff ;	

80. *Drawis to*] *Caussis*.  
81—110. *B omits*.

111. *Na giftis gyf na drowreis craif B*.  
112. *Or billis*] *Na bill. till*] *to*.

Let them not dance or sing publicly, nor "run at bars."	Or 3eit till danß in-to the ryng, Na oppinly in the rew to syng, Na ryn at bares in the vay ; Bot hald thair innys gif thai vill play.	115
Let them not indulge in strife,	Oyß nouthir flyting, sturt, no striff, Preß nocht to greiff nouthir man na viff.	
[Fol. 165 A. C.] but vie with their neighbours in thrift.	In thrift strif ay with hir nychtbour, Quha best can thrif bot dishonour. Preß nocht in fest to syt our hye,	120
Be not proud, nor lazy on workdays.	Na euire day in lik pround be ; Na our cleyn veschyn on verk-dayis, Na on the verkday gang to playis. Flawm nocht na fluriß that vill fade, To mend the mak that god has made,	125
Let not women use painting ;	Vith paynteyn vatteris to ger hir scheyne : On haly dayis hir hyde hald cleyne : Nocht with colouris na vith pantre, For sic thing is bot geglotrye.	130
for it is a shame to be white and red one day, and faded the next. Keep the hue of nature.	Schaym is, to day be quhit and rede, And vallowit on the morn as lede ; Bot kep the hew of hir natur, For sic fairnes sall langast dur. Kep bydding ay, and lyf clenly ; Thank god, and luf hym ythandly.	135
Be piteous to the poor.	Be euir of pure folk pyteabill, Do almus deid, be cheritabill,	

---

113—116. B has 2 different lines at.  
 here. 126. the] hir. that] at.  
 117. nouthir] noght. no] na. 127. paynteyn vatteris] payntyng  
 118. nouthir] B om. wattrys.  
 119. hir] thi. 129. Nocht] Bot nocht. vith pan-  
 122. euire] euer ilk. in—proud] tre] payntry.  
 lyk proud to. 130. geglotrye] gyglotry.  
 123. veschyn] wesching. 132. And onne the morne waleynt  
 124. Na 3hit onne werk-dais oyss as a wed B.  
 na plays B. 135. ay] B om.  
 125. Flawm] Flam. na] the. that] 137. pyteabill] petousable.



208 HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.

Speak well of people behind their back.	Gif nane ill word behynd thar bak, And loyf all leid, and no man lak.	140
Let a wife be loyal to her husband.	And gif scho be in goddis band, Be leil and trew till hir husband, And graciouß ay till hir menþhe, Kepand in houshald honeste ;	
Be sweet and debonair,	Till all folk suet and debonar, With gudly deid at hir power.	145
not loitering in the streets, for that is folly.	Be ferme of hed, bath fut and hand, Nocht oft in-to the strete vaverand ; For vaveryng betakynnis vilsumnas, Vanvit, velth, or wantownas.	150
Let her keep to her husband.	Or ellis to sek sum cumpany, Quhilk war nocht lik to be gudly. Bot euir hald rowme and playn maneir, Euir hald hir fallowschip till hir feir.	
Love not sleep.	Fle fra diffamyt cumpany ; Lik drawis till lik ay comonly.	155
[Fol. 166. C.]	Luf nocht gret sleping na zeit sueirnas, For mekill ill cummys of ydilnas.	
Keep wise companions. Imitate the best.	Nocht leif to vantoune giglotriß, Kepe feris of women that ar viß ; And euir conforme hir to the best Of vomen that ar vorthyest. Do na thing that lik ill may be,	160

- 
- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 139. <i>nane ill</i> ] folk gud.   | 150. <i>Vanvit</i> ] Wanwyt. <i>velth</i> ] welth.               |
| 140. <i>no man</i> ] nane to.  | 152. <i>Quhilk</i> ] At.   |
| 142. <i>Be—till</i> ] Se euer honore to.   | 153. <i>euir</i> ] ay. <i>rowme</i> ] rownd.                     |
| 143. And be graciouss to his<br>menþhe B.  | 154. <i>Euir—hir</i> ] Haldand ay. <i>till</i> ]<br>with.        |
| 144. <i>in houshald</i> ] her husbandis.   | 155. <i>diffamyt</i> ] defamyt.                                  |
| 146. <i>deid</i> ] wyll.   | 156. <i>till</i> ] to.   |
| 147. <i>bath</i> ] B om.   | 157. <i>gret</i> ] B om. <i>zeit sueirnas</i> ]<br>gret suernes. |
| 148. <i>into — strete</i> ] in stret to be.<br><i>vaverand</i> ] wauerand ( <i>printed</i> wan-<br>erand). | 159. <i>vantoune</i> ] wantoune.                                 |
| 149. <i>vaveryng</i> ] wauerynge ( <i>printed</i><br>wanerynge). <i>vilsumnas</i> ] wylsumnes.             | 160. <i>that</i> ] at.   |
|  | 162. <i>vorthyest</i> ] worthyest.                               |
|  | 163. <i>lik ill</i> ] ill lyk ; see l. 165.                      |

	Gif na occasioun for till le ;	
Folk will not conceal evil doing.	For quhen scho dois that is lik ill, Trast nocht that folk will hald thaim still. Thoch it be neuir so secretly,	165
Evil will not be hid.	Trast weill, it beis nocht hyd for-thi ; Suppoß scho heir of it na thing, Folk will nocht leiff of thar demyng.	170
Seek not men's company.	Hant nocht with men our anerly, All-thouch thai be neuir sa vorthy.	
Go not alone on errands.	Na gang nocht allane hir erand, Tak child or madyn in hir hand ;	
It is not good for women to be out alone.	It is na poynt of honeste A gud woman allane to be In cumpany of mony añe ; And mekill les of añe allañe. Trast weill, it is añe euill custum ; For na folk will the gud presum.	175 180
Be not long on errands.	And quhen scho passis hir erand, Byde nocht apon it lang dremand, Na syt nocht doune to hald talkyng Quhill scho forzet hir hame-gangyng.	
Think of what is to be done at home.	Think quhat scho has till do at hayñe, And euir be dredand till haue blayñe ;	185
Women forget how time flies.	Voman that has añe vantouñe hert Ane hour or twa thinkis bot añe stert.	
Women like to rule,	Gif men tharñe withgang wantonly, Syne will thai couat the mastry ; Thar is no thyng thai couat mair	190

- 
164. *till*] to.  
 167—170. B *omits*.  
 172. All be thai neuer mar sa B.  
 173. *Na—allane*] Ga nocht alane  
 178. *of*] *with*.  
 179. It is no point of gud custum  
 B.  
 180. *folk*] man. Cf. l. 64.  
 182. Byd nocht lang one It tareand  
 185. *till do*] ado (*for* at do).  
 186. *euir*] ay. *till*] to.  
 187. *Voman*] Women. *ane van-*  
*toune*] a thowlas.  
 190. *Syne*] Than.

210 HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.

	Na fredome, fawyng, and gud fair ; Na thai vald neuir repreuit be, Na zeit correkit in na degre.	
but should be obedient.	Thai suld kep laute, with all mycht, And mast quhar thai haf laute hycht.	195
Indulge not hatred. Stick to a first love. [Fol. 188 b. C.]	Hate nocht but gret cauß manifest ; The ferst luf euir be lufit best ; That scho serwe nocht to haue repruf For vnlaute to forfet luff, And vyn lufrent of hir menze.	200
Flee drunkenness.	Fra drunkyn folk and taverne fle.	
Go to church.	Be of gud prayer, quhen scho may, And heir meß on the haly day. For mekill grace cumis of praying,	205
Behave well while there.	And bringis men ay to gud ending. And in the kirk kepe our all thing Fra smyrking, keking, and bakluking ; And eftir noyne, on the haly day, Owthir pray, or sport at honest play.	210
Follow advice.	But leif set nocht thi hert to luff, For eftir followis gret repruff. Leiff thi awn will and tak consale, Or it sall turn the to tynsale.	
Toy not with men.	Tayt nocht with men, na mak raging,	215

- 
192. *fawyng*] fauore.  
193, 194. *thai vald*] wald. B *transposes* repreuit and correkit.  
195. *with—mycht*] day & nycht.  
198. *euir*] ay.  
199, 200. That sche of luf have neuir repruf To do wnlawte to hir lufee (sic) B.  
201. Press to be lowyt with her menze B.  
203. *of gud*] leif of.  
205. *grace*] gud.  
206. *bringis—ay*] garris men mak.
- 207, 208. And our al thinge kep her in kirk To kek abak, to lauch, or smyrke B.  
209. *noyne*] nwnne.  
210. *sport*] play. After l. 210, B inserts 2 lines—To reid bukis or lere wefinge, Be occupaid euer in sum thinge.  
211. *thi*] hir.  
212. Thar folowis efter gret repruf B.  
213. *thi*] thare. tak] do.  
214. *the*] thaim.

For oft it takis ane froull ending ;  
It is ane takyn of froull women  
To tyg and tayt oft with the men.

Be not a go-  
between.

**B**e nocht lefull chargis to tak,  
Na erand ber, na message mak, 220

What the eye  
does not see, the  
heart does not  
desire.  
So women should  
be kept close,  
and not allowed  
to see wicked  
ways.

For thai condicionis ar of barnys ;  
At eyn nocht seis, hert nocht jarnys ;  
Tharfor women suld kept be,  
That thai mycht na licht women se,  
Suppoß it war agane thair will, 225  
It savis thame mony a tym fra ill.

For froull women ar sa smyttabill,  
And till all vikit wycis abill,  
That euir the cumpany quhar thai tak  
Sall neuir chap for-outen lak. 230

Such restraint  
may be used for  
their good.

Men byndis oft folk agane thar will  
Quhill sum gret cure be done thaim till,  
Quhillk, war nocht fors, thai wald nocht do it ;  
And zeit it turnys to mekill gude.  
Thus our all thing, as air said I, 235

Keep from bad  
company.  
Bad people wish  
others to be like  
them.

Kepe thame fra cancryt cumpany ;  
For quha diffamyt is, or wik,  
Vald all the layff war to thame lik ;  
Quha smyttit war, wald all var swa,

216. *takis ane*] makes a.  
217. *of*] a.  
219—242. *For variations in the order of lines in B, see the scheme above, p. 202.*  
219. *lefull*] redy.  
220. *erand*] erandis.  
221. *condiciones ar*] are condiscionous.  
222. *eyn*] E.  
223. *women suld*] suld women.  
224. *That*] At. *mycht*] may nocht.  
226. *savis — tym*] kepis thaim oft

tymis.  
228. *vikit*] wykit.  
230. *for-outen*] without a.  
233. *do it*] dud (*for do 't*).  
234. *it*] is (*by mistake for it*).  
*turnys—mekill*] cummys thaim al for.  
235. *Thus*] And. *air*] oft.  
236. *thame*] hir. *cancryt*] cank-ryt.  
237. *is*] war.  
238. *Vald*] Wald.  
239, 240. B omits.

212 HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.

[*Fol. 187. C.*] And slanderit folk vald euir haue ma ; 240  
Bot tak sampill ay by hir nychtbour,  
Gif euir scho thinkis to haff honour.

These rules  
should be  
particularly  
observed with  
the young.      **G**if madynnis euir gud teching,  
And doctryne thame quhill thai ar ȝing, 245  
In keping with a gud mastres,  
Quhilk kennis vertues, mair and les ;  
Correct girls  
while young.      And chasty thame quhill thai ar cheld,  
Quhill visdome cum throu vit in eld.  
For ȝouthede euir enclynis to vice,  
For seilden fynde we barnys viß. 250  
Thow may in ȝouthede tyß a cheld  
That for na gold wald do it in eld.  
For-thi ȝoung lordis ar put in cure,  
Quhill visdome cum thaim be nature.  
You cannot  
correct them  
when older.      For falt of aw and of teching 255  
Bryngis thame oft to mysgouernyng ;  
Young lords  
are put under  
governors.      Quhilk and thai had in thair ȝouthage,  
Quhill thai of visdome had knowlage—  
(And chasty thame quhen thai do myß,  
Our rekles thoulas wantoun is) 260  
Thai suld be chast and cheritabill,  
Worthy women, wiß and abill,  
And eftir cum to gret valour,  
And do thair frendis gret honour.

---

241. *Bot*] And. *sampill ay*] ay child.  
sampyll. 252. *it*] B om.  
243—246. B *has*—And ȝheit weil 253. *in*] to. After l. 254, B inserts  
mar suld madenis ȝhinge Be stratly 4 lines.  
kepit with gret awinge ; In teiching 256. *Gerris* madenis oft tak ill end-  
with a gud maistress, Quhilk knawis inge B.  
gud thewis, mar & less. 257. *Quhilk and*] i.e., which if ;  
247. *chasty*] chaiste ; see ll. 259, referring to *teching*. Lines 259, 260  
278. *cheld*] child. are out of place ; see ll. 275, 276.  
248. *vit—eld*] wyt or eild. 259. *chasty*] chaste.  
249. *euir*] ay. 260. Fore wantone thowless rakless  
251. *Thow*] Folk. *tyss*] tift. *cheld*] Is B.

# HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER. 213

But if their friends fail to train them,	And quhen thai get nane instructione, Na for mysdeid ma pwnycioune, Bot lettis thame follow thair vantownes, And favouris thame in thair vikkidnes,	265
they are much to blame,	Of all thair ill thai haue the vit ; And, do thai weill, the mast merit.	270
and shall be punished ;	For oftymes frendis, as men redis, Ar dampnit for thar barnis dedis. Quha will kep bath fra perisching, Tak tent, and kep wele thus teching ;	
therefore correct your children.	And pwnys thame quhen thai do myß, And rekles or our wantoun is, And let thame nocht haf all thar will, Bot chasty thame quhen thai do ill.	275
[Fol. 107 b. O.]	Bettir is with chastyment thame mend Na saull and liff bath tak ill end.	280
Keep them from poverty ;	And kep thame fra neyd and mystair, That pouerte gar thame nocht mysfair ;	
for want often leads women to do wrong ;	For pouerte makis mony ill woman Quhilk, and they had a thrifty man, With gudly sufficiand lyffing, Thai wald neuir forfalt, for na thing. For oft tymes vrechit neidliking Sic mysteris haldis madynnis in, That thai ar pynit with pouerte,	285
and great need	Quhilk gret neid gerris thar hertis de ;	290

265. *get nane*] haf na.  
 266. *mysdeid ma*] thar misdeid.  
 267. *follow thair*] flow in.  
 269. *Of all*] Than of. *vit*] wyt.  
 270. *mast*] mar.  
 271. *as—redis*] have no dreid.  
 272. *dedis*] deid. *Here B adds two lines.*  
 274. *Teich thaim in 3outhed* our all thinge.  
 275—278. *Two lines in B*—And pwnis thaim quhen thai do Ill, And

lat thaim nocht have all thar wyll.  
 279. *Bettyr pwnis thaim* and gar thaim mend B.  
 280. *bath tak*] tak baith.  
 281. *mystair*] mistere.  
 283. *makis—ill*] tynis mony gud.  
 284. *a—man*] thriftee men.  
 285. *sufficiand*] suet neidfull.  
 286. *forfalt—na*] do mys for nakyne.  
 287. *neidliking*] nedy kynne.  
 288. *mysteris*] neid & stress.

## 214 HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER.

makes their  
hearts die,  
so that they  
come to no  
good.

And may nocht, for thair vrechitnes,  
Gret couatiß, and gredynes,  
Put thame in 3outhed to profit.  
Thus of thar ill thai haf the vit,  
And all the charge haill of thar syn  
That neid and pouerte puttis thame in.

295

Great peril is  
theirs, who  
thus lose their  
children.

Bath plicht and perell on thaim lyis,  
That tynis thar barnys on this wiß.  
Thai haue no craft; how suld thai liff,  
Quhen frendis will thame na thing gif?  
Than is thar nocht bot do or de;  
On neyd thus mon thai fulis be.

300

When the  
children fall,  
they curse their  
elders who mis-  
led them.

And syne, quhen thai haf tane a fall,  
Than wary thai thair frendis all,  
And puttis thame out of goddis grace;  
Thus bath ar tynt throu vikkidnaß.

305

**Explicit documentum matris ad filiam. per manum  
J. de R. cap<sup>ni</sup>**

292. *gredynes*] gret nedynes.

293. *3outhed to*] tyme to thar.

294. Thus, do thai mys, thai have  
the wyt B.

295. *charge haill*] chargis.

296. *pouerte*] myster.

297, 298. B *omits*.

300. *Quhen*] And.

302. *neyd*] fors.

303—306. *Not in B; which has 48  
lines in place of them.*

## [A DIETARY.]

[THIS poem, here turned into Lowland Scottish, is attributed to Lydgate. There are several versions of it. One in MS. Harl. 2251, foll. 4, 5, was printed by Mr Halliwell in his Selection from the Minor Poems of Dan John Lydgate for the Percy Society, 1840, pp. 66-69. Mr Halliwell remarks that "the poem is very common in manuscript, but several of the copies vary considerably from each other. It may be sufficient to refer to MS. Harl. 116, fol. 116; MS. Oxon. Bernard. 1479; MS. Rawlinson, Oxon. C. 86; MS. Arundel 168; MS. Sloane 775; and MS. Sloane 3554, which contains a Latin version. Ritson has inserted this in his list of Lydgate's works in two places, under Nos. 55 and 61." Another copy is in MS. Lambeth 853, which Mr Furnivall has printed, side by side with the Latin version from MS. Sloane 3534 [3554?], in his *Babees Book* (E. E. T. S. 1868), pp. 54-59. The copy in the Lambeth MS. has its stanzas arranged in a different order from that of the Latin version; but the present copy both follows the order of the Latin version exactly, and translates it closely. The metre, be it observed, is that of Chaucer's *Monkes Tale*.]

### Incipit documentum notabile.

#### I.

Keep your head from cold.	For heill of thy body, kep wele fra cald thi hede; Ete no raw met, tak gude heid thar-to; Drink hailsome aill, feyd the on licht bred,	
Rise from meals with an appetite.	With appetit riß fro thi met also. Vith agit women fleschly haue nocht ado.	5
Drink not after sleep, and do not sup late. [Fol. 168. C.]	Apon thi slepe drink nocht of thi cowpe; Glad toward bed [and] at morow, both two; And oys neuir late for to sowp.	

---

6. *Apon thi slepe*] Lat. post sompnum.

7. *[and]* inserted to make sense; see Lat. version.



## II.

If you cannot get a doctor, be careful in your diet. Eat temperately, work moder- ately, be meek and content,	And gif so beis that lechis doith the fale, Than tak gud hede till oys thyngis thre,	10
	Temperat dyet, temperat trauale, Nocht malicius for none aduersite;	
	Mek in troubill, glad in pouerte, Rich of litill, content with sufficians,	
not grudging, but cheerful.	Neuir grunching, bot mery lik thi degre ;	15
	Gif phisik lakis, mak this thi gouernans.	

## III.

Believe not every tale ; be not too hasty, nor violent to the poor, but courteous in talk.	To euere tale soyne gif thou na credans, Be nocht hasty nor sodanly vengabill ;	20
	To pouer folk do no violans, Curtaß of langage, of feding mesurabill ;	
	On syndry metis nocht gredy at the tabill ; Of fedyng gentill, prudent in dalians,	
	Cloß of toung, of word nocht dissavable, To say the best set always thi plesans.	
Be secret and true. Try to say the best of every- body.		

## IV.

Hate double- faced people.	Haue in dispit mowthis that beyn dowbill, Suffer at thi tabill no dissencioune ;	25
	Haue in despit folkis that beyn trowble ; Of fals rownaris and of fallacioune	
Keep no tale- bearers with you.	Within thi court suffer no diuisioune ; Quhich in thy houshald sall cauß gret encreß	30
	Of all weillfair, prosperite, and fusioune, And with thi nyghtbour liff in rest and peß.	
Live at peace with your neighbours.		

## V.

Be clothed according to your rank.	Be clynly cled eftir thine estat ; Paß nocht thi boundis, kep thi promeß belif.	35
	With thre folkis be nocht at debat ;	
Strive not with	First, with thi bettir bewar for to striff ;	

your better, Agane thi fallowis na querellis to contrif;  
 your equal, Vith thi subiect to striff it is gret schame;  
 nor your inferior, Quharfor I consell the to preserue all thi liff  
 but live in peace Till liff in peß, and get the a gud name. 40  
 and win a good name.

## VI.

Have a fire morn Fyre at morow and toward bed at ewe,  
 and eve. Aganis mystis merk and air of pestilens;  
 Rise early, Be tymly at meß, thou sall the bettir eschewe;  
 and say your prayers. First at thi rysing, do to thi god reuerens;  
 [Fol. 168 b. C.] Wise[t] the pouer with ententif diligens, 45  
 Visit the poor, Of all in myster haf ay compassiounne;  
 pity the needy, And god sall send bath grace and influens  
 and God will reward you. The till encreß and thy possessiounne.

## VII.

Allow no surfatts in thi houß at nycht,  
 feits, nor eat Be war with reirsuppers & of gret exceß; 50  
 late suppers, Of nodding hedis and of candill-licht,  
 nor sit up Of sleuth at morow and slummaryng idilnes,  
 nodding by candle-light. Of sleuth at morow and slummaryng idilnes,  
 Quhich of all vice is chef porteresse.  
 Have nothing Voyd all dronkyn-lew learis and lychouris,  
 to do with Of all vñthriftly evill the mastres, 55  
 drunkards, liars, Of all vñthriftly evill the mastres,  
 lechers, and That is to say, dyß-playeris and hazardouris.

## VIII.

Do not sleep Eftir met be var, mak nocht lang to slepe;  
 long after meals; Hede and stomok preserue ay fra cald;  
 and keep both Be nocht pensiff, of gret thought tak no kepe;  
 head and stom- Eftir thi power maynteme ay thi houshald. 60  
 ach from cold.  
 Live according  
 to your income.

41. ewe] eue (eve) in Lambeth MS. written On in C.

43. eschewe] i.e., escheue (achieve).

53. porteres] miswritten portreris;

45. Wiset] Wise in our MS.; visite in Lamb. MS.; Lat. version, visita.

the line is borrowed from Chaucer, Sec. Nonnes Tale, Prologue, l. 3;

52. Of] so in Lamb. MS.; mis-

Lat. version, janitrix.

Suffer in tyme ; in thi richt be bald ;  
 Swear not to deceive. Swer no athis, no men to begile.  
 In ȝowth be lusty, sad quhen thou art ald ;  
 This world's joys will change. No varldly Ioy lestith bot a quhile.

## IX.

Do not dine before you have an appetite. Dyne nocht at morow befor thine appetit, 65  
 Drink not between meals, Betuix malys drink nocht for na plesand delit,  
 Bot thirst or travale be the occasiounē.  
 and avoid salt meat. And salt met doith gret oppressiounē  
 To febill stomokis, quhen thai can nocht restreyne  
 Fra thingis contrar to thair complexiounē ; 71  
 Of gredy handis the stomok has gret peyne.

## X.

Man consists of body and soul. Thus in two thyngis stondeth all the velth  
 Of soull and body, quho so lest thame sew ;  
 Moderate feeding is best for the one, Modreth fude giffeth to a man his helth, 75  
 and charity for the other. And all surfat doith fra hym remew ;  
 This dietary is good, though bought neither of master Anthony nor of master Hugh. And cherite is to the saulis dew.  
 This rescript both is of no potyngary,  
 Of master Anton nor of master Hew.  
 Till all indifferent riches is dyetary. 80

**Explicit documentum valde vtile, quod<sup>1</sup> I to ȝow,  
 &c.**

<sup>1</sup> Written merely as "q," with a stroke through the tail.

75. *Modreth*] Lat. *moderata*.      *dew*] Lat. *debita*.  
 77. *saulis*] for *saule* ; no doubt      78. *both*] Lamb. *bouȝt* ; Lat. *emitur*.  
 altered to suit the metre ; Lat. *anime*.      80. *dyetary*] miswritten *dyetry*.

## NOTES



## NOTES.

---

### SCHEME SHOWING THE REFERENCES TO JAMIESON'S EDITION.

*N.B.*—The division of the poem, in this edition, into 20 Books, and the numbering of the lines, are exactly copied from Pinkerton's edition (extra lines being marked with an asterisk), *because it is to his edition that the references in Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary are made.* Hence Jamieson's Dictionary serves equally well for the present edition. It is most extraordinary that Jamieson should, in his own edition, have divided the poem into *fourteen books*, thus introducing a new system of references, for which *his own* Dictionary is useless!

To compare any passage in the present edition with the corresponding one in Jamieson, observe the numbering of the folios marked E. Thus the sixth line on p. 86 is marked "Fol. 12. E.," and answers to the "Fol. 12 a." in Jamieson, p. 68. The 1869 reprint of Jamieson follows the old edition *page by page*, a very convenient arrangement.

Another method of comparing the present edition with Jamieson's is to employ the following scheme.

Here "ORDER A." signifies the arrangement in Pinkerton's and in the present edition, an arrangement also followed in Jamieson's *Dictionary*; whilst "ORDER B." refers to the arrangement in Jamieson's *edition*. I omit notice of *slight* differences in the number of the lines in a Book. The "breaks" below show where certain Books commence *together*.

ORDER A.						ORDER B.
I. 1—630	.	.	.	.	.	I. 1—630
II. 1—194	.	.	.	.	.	" 631—824
" 195—589	.	.	.	.	.	II. 1—395
III. 1—534	.	.	.	.	.	" 396—929
" 535—762	.	.	.	.	.	III. 1—228
IV. 1—774	.	.	.	.	.	" 229—1003
V. 1—656	.	.	.	.	.	IV. 1—656
VI. 1—372	.	.	.	.	.	" 657—1028
" 373—672	.	.	.	.	.	V. 1—300
VII. 1—635	.	.	.	.	.	" 301—935
VIII. 1—520	.	.	.	.	.	VI. 1—520
IX. 1—459	.	.	.	.	.	" 521—980
" 460—757	.	.	.	.	.	VII. 1—298
X. 1—825	.	.	.	.	.	" 299—1126

ORDER A.		ORDER B.	
XI.	1—655 .	VIII.	1—659
XII.	1—406 .	"	660—1065
"	407—588	IX.	1—182
XIII.	1—744 .	"	183—931
XIV.	1—554 .	X.	1—554
XV.	1—550 .	"	555—1124
XVI.	1—694 .	XI.	1—698
XVII.	1—260 .	"	699—958
"	261—946	XII.	1—686
XVIII.	1—210 .	"	687—896
"	211—568	XIII.	1—358
XIX.	1—226 .	"	359—586
"	227—812	XIV.	1—586
XX.	1—620 .	"	587—1210

## ORDER C.—THE EDITION BY PROF. COSMO INNES.

Unfortunately, there is yet a *third* numbering of the lines in 'The Bruce.' Prof. Cosmo Innes, instead of dividing the poem into books, divided it into 150 paragraphs, following the divisions (not always marked alike) of the manuscripts. The following scheme will probably suffice to show the references.

ORDER A.		ORDER C.	
Book I.	Paragraphs I.—X.		(pp. 1—25).
" II.	"	XI.—XVII.	(begins p. 26).
" III.	"	XVIII.—XXVII.	(p. 47).
" IV.	"	XXVIII.—XXXVI.	(p. 74).
" V.	"	XXXVII.—XLV.	(p. 102).
" VI.	"	XLVI.—LII.	(p. 126).
" VII.	"	LIII.—LIX.	(p. 150).
" VIII.	"	LX.—LXV.	(p. 173).
" IX.	"	LXVI.—LXXXIV.	(p. 192).
" X.	"	LXXV.—LXXXVI. 38	(p. 219).
" XI.	"	LXXXVI. 39—XCIV.	(p. 249).
" XII.	"	XCV.—CII.	(p. 273).
" XIII.	"	CIII.—CXI.	(p. 294).
" XIV.	"	CXII.—CXV.	(p. 321).
" XV.	"	CXVI.—CXIX. 26	(p. 340).
" XVI.	"	CXIX. 27—CXXV. 36.	(p. 360).
" XVII.	"	CXXV. 37—CXXXII. 38	(p. 385).
" XVIII.	"	CXXXII. 39—CXXXVII.	(p. 418).
" XIX.	"	CXXXVIII.—CXLIV.	(p. 438).
" XX.	"	CXLV.—CL.	(p. 466).

The references to Jamieson's edition (Order B.) are given by Innes in his "Table of the Chapters," pp. xxxiii.—xliii.

## NOTES TO BOOK I. (A.D. 1286—1305.)

(Jamieson, I. 1—630; Innes, pp. 1—25.)

REFERENCES to Pinkerton's edition are denoted by 'P.'; to Jamieson's edition by 'J.'; and to Innes's edition by 'I.' For the signification of 'C.,' 'E.,' and 'H.,' see the first footnote on p. 1.

Before beginning, the reader should learn, once for all, that the letters *v*, *w*, and *u* are completely interchangeable in both the MSS., and particularly so in the Cambridge MS. Thus, we have *enwy* = *envy*, l. 47; *hawē* = *have*, l. 89; *veyle* = *weyle*, i.e., well, 118; *awcht* = *aucht*, ought, 255; *vre* = *ure*, experience, 312; &c.

The heading is from E; so also is the text as far as Bk. iv. 56, the Cambridge MS. being imperfect at the beginning.

2. *Supposs that*, even if. *Nocht bot*, only; common in Yorkshire as 'nobbut.'

4. *And*, if. The reader is referred to the Glossarial Index for explanations of the significations of words. Only a few of the more striking peculiarities of diction are observed upon in the Notes.

7. *The tothir for thet othir*, the second. Using italic letters to denote the contractions in the MS., the word 'tothir' is written 'toy,' followed by an upward curl; where the 'y' stands for *p* = *th*, and the curl is the usual abbreviation for *ir*. In l. 9, the word 'that' is written 'yt.' In l. 22, the word 'thar' is written as 'y' followed by a curl. The contractions are all of the usual character. The larger capitals are those of the Edinburgh MS., as far as Book iv. 56, after which the Cambridge MS. (imperfect at the beginning) becomes the basis of the text, and is closely followed.

9. *Suth*, sooth, true. Obviously the right reading, as pointed out by Innes; printed *such*, P. and J.

15. *Lenth of tyme*, length of time. So in H., and obviously the right reading, though the modern editors ignore it. The various readings are so fully pointed out in the footnotes that it will seldom be necessary to draw attention to them.

37. As observed in the footnote, ll. 37—132 are quoted by Wyntoun, in his *Cronykil of Scotland*, ed. Macpherson, book viii. c. ii. 1—54, and 57—98; or ed. Laing, book viii. 123—176, and 179—220. Wyntoun makes a slight break at l. 90 of our text, merely to introduce the lines—

"For-thi sayd Mayster Ihon Barbere,  
That mekyll tretim off that matere"—

in order, no doubt, to acknowledge his obligation to the elder poet. Wyntoun also quotes other passages, viz. ll. 135, 136, 141—164, 168—170, 187—194, and 197—212. See the footnotes; and, for exact par-



ticulars, see the whole passage from Wyntoun, as printed in the Appendix to the Preface.

The first passage, as it stands in Wyntoun, is quoted with singular fidelity, and agrees with our text very closely upon the whole. It seems fair to conclude that the existing transcripts and oldest editions of our poem are also tolerably faithful, and that no great change took place in the language between 1375 and 1487.

On account of the closeness of the agreement between our text and Wyntoun's quotation, some results of a collation with Wyntoun are recorded in the footnotes to ll. 37—132, 141—164, &c.

Line 37 exactly agrees with the first line of an old song upon the death of Alexander III., which is preserved by Wyntoun at the end of his seventh Book. As it consists of only 8 lines, I quote it entire from Laing's edition, ii. 266 :—

" Quhen Alexandyr oure Kyng wes dede  
That Scotland led in luwe and le,  
Away wes sons off ale and bred,  
Of wyne and wax, off gamyn and gle:  
Oure gold wes changyd in-to lede:  
Crist, borne in-to Vyr gynyte,  
Succoure Scotland and remede  
That stad is in perplexyte."

A facsimile of the first four lines of this song, from three MSS., may be seen in the Preface to Laing's edition of Wyntoun, Pref. p. xl.

Alexander III. of Scotland died March 16, 1286. The crown nominally went to his granddaughter Margaret, generally known as "the Maid of Norway." At her death in 1290 (Oct. 7), no less than 13 claimants for the crown presented themselves; Tytler (*Hist. Scot.*, i. 34) gives the names of twelve. John Baliol was not declared king till Nov. 30, 1292. The period from 1286—1292 makes up Barbour's 'six years.'

It would be out of place to point out 'all the points in which Barbour agrees with, or differs from, other historians, or to discuss the historical value of the poem. The reader who studies history will consult the various chronicles which treat of this period, and are cited by Lord Hailes and Tytler. The general reader will probably be satisfied with the familiar account in Scott's *Tales of a Grandfather*, or he may consult the clear epitome, with numerous dates, in *The Annals of England*, ed. 1876. I may, perhaps, call attention here to Wyntoun's Chronicle, ed. Macpherson, or ed. Laing; Fordun's (*Latin*) Chronicle, ed. Skene; *Political Songs*, ed. Wright (Camden Society); Robert of Brunne's translation of Langtoft's Chronicle, ed. Hearne; *Annals of Scotland*, by Sir David Dalrymple (Lord Hailes), 2 vols. 4to, 1779; Hume of Godscroft's *Hist. of the Houses of Douglas and Angus*, Edinb. 1644; and Tytler's and Burton's *Histories of Scotland*; to some of

which I shall refer again. See also Scott's notes to *The Lord of the Isles*, in a *complete* edition.

51. *Eldest systir*. Baliol was the grandson of Margaret, eldest daughter of David, Earl of Huntingdon, who was the grandson of David I. of Scotland. Robert Bruce (grandfather of the great king of that name) was the son of Isabel, the second daughter. A third claimant, John Hastings, lord of Abergavenny, was grandson of Ada, the third daughter. *Annals of England*, p. 171.

57. "They said, the succession to a kingdom was not like a succession to fiefs of a lower character." The argument was that Bruce (a male) took precedence of Baliol's mother (a female). It was quite untenable.

62. "They asserted it was quite otherwise." To 'bear in hand' often signified to 'assert strongly.'

63, 64. The drift is rather dark. The context makes the argument here to be in favour of Bruce; in which case it must run thus: "They (Bruce's friends) asserted it was quite otherwise (from what the others said); because then [*i.e.*, were Baliol in the right] the next of kin, whether male or female, would succeed; [which would be unlawful.]"

66. *Anandyrdale*, Annandale; as in Wallace, iv. 147.

67. "Robert Bruce, Earl of Carrick." See note to l. 477 below.

89. To scan this line, let the first word (*Wald*) occupy the first foot by itself. For similar lines, see ll. 157, 175, 326, 337.

90. "But the game went quite otherwise." Here Wyntoun interpolates the two lines quoted in the note to l. 37.

105. *Ride*, ride on horseback. See the remarkable description of the Welsh fighting on foot, and charged by English cavalry, in Sir Walter Scott's *The Betrothed*, ch. iv. Wales was subjugated in 1283, only three years before the death of Alexander III.

106. *Fra ewyn fell*, from the time when the evening fell; *i.e.*, after nightfall.

108. Here Wyntoun omits *ne*, but it is necessary to the sense. The line is to be scanned by reading *he ne* as *he n'*, precisely as in l. 112. Similarly, in Chaucer's Prologue, l. 764 begins with the words *I n' saugh*, which occupy the first foot. We even find, in the Royal MS., the words *thay ne* written as *thayne*; see remarks below, at p. 229, on the reading of l. 501.

115. "That always seized, without restoring."

121, 122. Wyntoun has :—

"Quha will be othir hym-self chasty,  
Wyss men sayis, he is happy."

122. The proverb referred to is well expressed in the *Ingoldsby Legends* (Misadventures at Margate) in the form—"Be warned in time by others' harm, and you shall do full well." The Latin form of it was—"Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum." Cf. Dionysius Cato,

Distich. iii, 14; see King Alisaunder, ed. Weber, l. 17. Chaucer has a proverb somewhat like it, C. T. ed. Tyrw. 5762; and Tyrwhitt notes that the Latin form of it is—"Qui per alios non corrigitur, alii per ipsum corrigitur." Cf. "Wise men learn by other men's mistakes, fools by their own;" Hazlitt's Eng. Proverbs, p. 477.

129. Wyntoun has—"Is nane, determyne may, na sall."

132. Wyntoun has—"Reserwys that till hys Majeste;" and omits ll. 133, 134.

137. "And by the whole (*i.e.*, full) assent of them all." Wyntoun has:—

"And messyngeris send till this Edwart,  
That had his wayage tane onwart  
For till pass in the haly land."

140. "Warring against Saracens." However, that was in A.D. 1272. Perhaps Barbour confused the capture of Acre in 1291 with Edward's presence there in 1272.

165. *wrethyt* is, of course, the correct form; the MS. has it right in l. 425 below. *Wrethyt him*, became angry.

171. *A litill quhile*; from Nov. 30, 1292, to July, 1296.

187. "From Wick near Orkney [really in Caithness] to the Mull of Galloway [in Wigtonshire]," *i.e.*, from the one end of Scotland to the other. The line is too short by two syllables.

193. Wyntoun has—"He put in Inglis nacyown."

194. If the king's officers treated the Scotch ill, it is also probable that they treated the English poor not much better. The description of them here given bears a striking resemblance to one in *Piers Plowman*, B. iv. 47-60. See also the Song of the Husbandman, and a Poem on the Evil Times of Edward II., in *Polit. Songs*, ed. Wright, pp. 149, 323.

202. Wyntoun has—"Wayt him welle with a grettar skath." Here *wayt* is an infinitive, governed by *wald* understood.

215-218. The sense is—"Ah! how cruelly they condemned them! For they hanged by the neck good worthy knights, for little or no reason." *Nekkeban* seems to have been trisyllabic; cf. A.S. *hnecca*, neck. At this point Wyntoun varies, and passes on to l. 275.

247. "As full liberty to leave, or fulfil, whatever his heart impels him to."

250. For *disputacioun* read *disputisoun*, the true O.Fr. and M.E. form; as in Chaucer, C. T., E. 1474. The line will then scan.

254. *Let*, leave, let alone; as in l. 299. This, as explained in the footnote, is the obvious solution of the passage, misprinted in former editions. Hence, in l. 256, we have *do furth*, *i.e.*, continue, go on with.

276. "Both the poor, and those of high birth also."

280. Here Wyntoun passes on to l. 483.

283. "Baron William Douglas was the first nobleman who joined Wallace, May, 1297, in the heroic attempt to free his country, overrun

in 1296 by Edward I., an attempt utterly ruined at Falkirk, July, 1298; so that Wallace's progress was terminated in a twelvemonth or so; and Henry's poem on him is but the history of two years, while this of Barbour embraces twenty-four. Wallace was taken, and beheaded, 1304-5; but William Douglas had deserted him, August, 1297, and yielded himself prisoner to Edward I. See Annals of Scotland [by Lord Hailes], i. 249. Baron James Douglas, whose deeds grace this poem, was his son."—P. See Hume (of Godscroft); Hist. of House of Douglas, p. 18.

313. *James* is, in general, disyllabic in Barbour.

323. *Will off wane*; cf. *will of red*, l. 348. See this phrase explained in the note to ii. 471.

339. "Two Roberts, Earls of Artois, are famous; Robert I., 1237; Robert II., 1250. It seems uncertain to which our author alludes."—P. Or perhaps the allusion is to Robert, Count of Artois, counsellor of Edward III., born 1287, died Aug. 16, 1343. Froissart narrates some of his adventures, capp. viii. xxv. xxvi. xci.—xciii. He is described as wise and wary, and, on one occasion, came to England in the disguise of a merchant. Johnes refers us to three memoirs of him, by M. Lan- celot, in vols. 8 and 10 of the *Mémoire de l'Académie des Inscriptions*.

343. *Catone*, i.e., Dionysius Cato, an author of the fourth century, known for his *Breves Sententiæ* and *Distichorum Libri IV*, often quoted by old authors; e.g., by Chaucer and by the author of *Piers the Plowman*. The particular allusion is to *Dist. ii. 18*—

"Inspiens esto, quum tempus postulat aut res;  
Stultitiam simulare loco prudentia summa est."

354. *The byschop*; called "byschop Wylzame off Lambyrtoun" in l. 412. Fordun records his death as taking place in 1328. He was Archbishop of St Andrews. See Wyntoun, viii. 3087, and the account of him in Hailes's *Annals of Scotland*, ii. 10, 11, 27, and 30.

356. So it is said of Chaucer's Squire, that "he carf befor his fader at the table." Cf. ii. 92 below.

357. Scan—And cléd | him rýcht | honorá | billy.

364. Douglas's fidelity is again enlarged upon near the end of the poem; see Book xx. 516.

393. *Wlispyt*, lisped. In the allit. *Troy-Book*, ed. Panton and Donaldson, l. 3881, we are told that Hector "stotid a little;" and Guido delle Colonne says—"parum vero erat balbutiens in loquela." ✓

406. *Lovyit*, praised (*not* loved). Common in Barbour; see l. 476 below.

409. *Strevillyne*, Stirling; spelt 'Strivelyn' in Fordun, ed. Skene, cap. cxi. Stirling Castle was besieged by Edward, and surrendered July 24, 1304. See Peter Langtoft's *Chronicle*, translated by Mannyng, ed. Hearne, ii. 326; Wyntoun, bk. viii. c. 18.

445. Here the story of the Bruce really begins. Lines 1-444 form an introduction; and ll. 445-476 form the real exordium of the poem.

446. *Romanys*, lit. romance; *i.e.*, the story or narrative. Barbour so calls it, not because it is fiction, but because his "soothfast story" concerning the deeds of the Bruce is a story celebrating the actions of a hero. The old 'romances' of Alexander were regarded as containing veritable history.

455. Barbour's use of the word 'thai' is perfectly reckless; it is often almost impossible to follow him in this respect. The passage clearly means that their foes (the English) were so numerous, that ever, for one of themselves (the Scotch), they (their foes, the English) were a thousand strong. Yet, by God's help, the Scotch were a match for their enemies. Cf. Joshua xxiii. 10.

458. "They were sometimes rather more than less." *Erar*, rather, is the comparative of *ere* or *ar*, formerly; *may* is the same as *ma*, more in number. Cf. iii. 266. *Thai* is a repetition of *thai* in l. 455, and means the English; and the sense is that, for every Scotchman, the English numbered rather more than a thousand instead of less. Barbour has several similar exaggerations, and often transfers the word 'they' from one side to the other after this sort. Pinkerton's reading, that the Scotch were "more than inferior" to their enemies (if I understand him rightly) is mere nonsense. His text has—"Thai war sum tyme ev'n mar than les," and his note is—"As being not only few, but discomfited, divided, dispirited."

465. So Fordun (ed. Skene, cap. cxii.) calls Robert Bruce "alter Machabæus." But Peter Langtoft (ed. Hearne, ii. 290) exhorts *Edward I.* to follow the example of the Maccabees; which is taking the other side. Cf. 1 Macc. iii., iv.

477. "This lord the Bruce, of whom I spake before." Barbour has often been censured for this odd mistake. The Bruce of whom he is *going* to speak is the hero of his poem; but the Bruce of whom he has *already* spoken (see ll. 67, 153) is that hero's grandfather. Robert Bruce, the grandfather, Baliol's rival, died in 1294. His son, of the same name, died in April, 1304. The grandson, our hero, "who throughout adhered to the English interest, succeeded to his earldom of Annandale, but continued to pass his time at the English Court;" Annals of England. p. 175, note *s*; cf. p. 174, note *l*. Of course the similarity of the names caused the confusion, and the chief wonder lies not so much in the fact that Barbour fell into the error, as in the fact of his doing so at a time when the deeds of those worthies were still fresh in men's memories. Wyntoun, writing at a later period, distinguishes carefully between the three generations; bk. viii. cap. 7. However, Barbour's mistake causes little trouble; we have now done with the two elder Bruces, and have only the grandson to consider henceforward.

481. Here Wyntoun again follows Barbour more or less closely; see his bk. viii. cap. xviii. l. 2769, ed. Laing. He says—

“Quhen all this sawe the Brws Robert,  
That bare the crowne swne efftyrwart,  
Gret pyte off the folk he had,  
Set<sup>1</sup> few wordis tharoff he mad.  
Apon a tyme Schyr Ihon Cwmya,  
Togyddyre rydand fra Strevylyn,” &c.

He then quotes the rest of the passage, to the end of l. 514, with much exactness. The chief variations are as follows. 489. *suld lord*] full lord *suld*. 490. *And gyff that*] Forthi gyve. 491. Wyntoun inserts *yow*, correctly. 501. *than thai*] *thayne* (*sic*); pronounced as *thayn*; see note to l. 108 above. 504. *suthfast*] *faythfull*. 506. *his assent sone*] *sone his consent*. 509. Wyntoun omits *that*. 511. *The barownys thus*] Thus thir twa lordis. 512. *And that ilk nycht*] That ilke nycht than. 514. *that thai forspokyn*] all that *thai spokyn*.

Fordun tells the same story about Bruce and Comyn; ed. Skene, cap. cxiii. p. 337. And see *The Wallace*, ed. Moir, x. 1107.

515. Wyntoun varies, and passes over ll. 515-560, evidently considering the passage as a digression.

520. “That may ever guard himself against treason.”

525. The allusion is to the legends of the Trojan war, *said* to be composed by Dictys of Gnosus, and to the Latin prose history of the Fall of Troy ascribed to Dares the Phrygian; see the account of Lydgate's Troy-book in Morley's *English Writers*, vi. 118. The real author of the medieval Roman de Troie appears to have been Benoit de Sainte-Maure, about A.D. 1175 to 1185. Hence was derived the version of the *Historia Troiana* by Guido delle Colonne, finished in 1287. See Preface to the *Gest Hystoriale of the Destruction of Troy*, ed. Panton and Donaldson (E. E. T. S.), p. ix. The Latin work attributed to Dares is thought to be little older than the twelfth century; the work ascribed to Dictys is older, and can be traced back to the time of Nero. See *Dares* and *Dictys* in Smith's *Classical Dictionary*; Warton's *Hist. Eng. Poetry*, ed. Hazlitt, iii. 81; and Dunlop's *Hist. of Fiction*, ch. vi.

533. *Punsounne*, poison. The reference is not to the historical account of Alexander's death, but to that which is given by the romance-writers. See the romance of Alexander, in *Metrical Romances*, ed. Weber, i. 320, where he is said to have been poisoned by Antipater. So too Chaucer, in his *Monkes Tale*, regrets Alexander's death by poison. And see *The Wars of Alexander*, ed. Skeat, p. 277.

545. *Punsounne*, a dagger; see the footnote. Perhaps a still better reading would be *punsounes*, in the plural. This is evidently the word meant. Halliwell gives “*Punchion*, a bodkin,” as a Northern word.

<sup>1</sup> Although.

Cotgrave has "*Poinson*, a bodkin;" in modern French *poinçon* means an awl; and Richardson gives quotations for *punchion* in the sense of a weapon. This shows that *poinson* was regarded as synonymous with *bodkin*; and *bodkin* was also a word which could be used in the sense of dagger. Chaucer, in his account of Cæsar's death in the *Monkes Tale*, uses the very word, saying the conspirators "stikede him with *boydekins*." Nares (s. v. *Bodkin*) gives two other quotations in which Cæsar is spoken of as having been slain with *bodkins*. Hamlet speaks of a man making his quietus "with a bare *bodkin*;" Act iii. sc. i.

549. *Arthur*. See Sir Thomas Malory's *Morte Arthur*, and the Alliterative *Morte Arthur*, ed. Brock (E. E. T. S.). We there read how he defeated the Roman Emperor, Lucius Iberius, and was himself crowned emperor at Rome; and how he was slain by his nephew, Modred or Mordred. See also Wyntoun, ed. Laing, v. 4301, and the next note.

560. *The Broite*, i.e., the Chronicle called "The Brut." Wace translated Geoffrey of Monmouth into French verse as "*Li Romans de Brut*," and Wace's work was the chief foundation of the English version by Layamon; see Morley's *Eng. Writers*, iii. 55, 207. The death of "Luces the emperor," i.e., Lucius Iberius, occurs in Layamon's *Brut*, ed. Madden, iii. 111.

However, the really interesting point about this allusion to the Brut is that Barbour himself wrote a poem with this title, though it is not now extant. This we learn from Wyntoun, who frequently alludes to it in his *Cronykil*, ed. Laing, bk. ii. 133, 773; bk. iii. 622; bk. iv. 1183; bk. v. 511, 3154, 4245, 4292. See the Introduction.

561. Here again we come to a passage quoted by Wyntoun, who continues the narrative from l. 514 above in these words:—

" It fell, efftir this band-makyng,  
Ihon the Cwmyn rade to the Kyng  
Off Ingland, and tald all the cass,  
To trow, nocht all yhit as it was.  
Bot the indenture till hym gave he,  
Off thare cunnandis prwff to be."

He then misses ll. 567, 568, gives ll. 569-572 in a different form, misses ll. 573-588, and continues:—

" Than Cwmyne hys leve tuk, and hame went.  
And the kyng a Parlement," &c.

The only variations in ll. 592-601 are these. 592. *Somownys—hy*] he sowmownd rycht stratly. 595. *Bydding*] Word. 596. *na persaw-yng*] than na wyttyng. 597. *the—the*] tresown, na off that.

602. Wyntoun continues the above-mentioned quotation to l. 601, but for this line he substitutes—On the morne in his Parlement. He then continues his quotation, more or less closely, to the end of Book ii. l. 9. The variations are slight and unimportant.

625. "And, to secure that, I put in pledge my whole heritage." That is, he offered to forfeit all his lands if he did not appear; and the king accepted this security.

## NOTES TO BOOK II. (A.D. 1305-1306.)

(Jamieson, I. 631-II. 395; Innes, pp. 26-47.)

1. Fordun and Wyntoun add that the Duke of Gloucester, a friend to Bruce, sent him a piece of money and a pair of spurs. Bruce took the hint, and set off for Scotland with all speed. With Book ii., compare Fordun, ed. Skene, capp. cxiv.-cxix., pp. 338-342; and Wyntoun, ed. Laing, bk. viii. 2853-2930.

The first 9 lines of this Book are quoted by Wyntoun; see note to Book i. l. 602. He also cites, more or less closely, ll. 17-36. See note to l. 36.

16. Fordun and Wyntoun add that Bruce, in his flight, met a messenger who was bearing a letter to Sir John Cumyn, and who endeavoured to avoid him. The message was accordingly intercepted, and the messenger slain.

17. *Fyften*, fifteenth. Wyntoun says—"on the fyft day." So also Hart; see the footnote. "Robert the Bruce com hame on the ferd [*i.e.* fourth] day;" Wallace, xi. 1155.

18. Lochmaben Castle is in Annandale, not far to the N.E. of Dumfries, which is mentioned in l. 26.

23. A halting line in E. and H., but easily improved by consulting Wyntoun; the reading *summond* (H.) scans better than *soucht* (E.) Wyntoun has—

"How he chapyd, and all the cas,  
How before all hapnyd was."

33. *In the freris*, in the (Gray) Friars' church. The Gray Friars were the Franciscans or Minorites. The place meant is the chapel of the Minorite convent. The date of the murder, according to Fordun, is Feb. 10, 1306. See Lord of the Isles, i. 27, ii. 13; and Scott's note to i. 27.

36. Here Wyntoun's quotations from Barbour cease. He omits all the rest of Bruce's history, referring his readers to Barbour for information.

37. "Sir Robert Cumin, not Sir Edward. See Annals of Scotland, i. 291."—P. The readings are—*Edmund*, E., J., I.; *Edward*, P., H.

44. "Who did not respect the sanctity of the altar."

57. *Ythanly*, continually; from Icel. *iðinn*, assiduous.

81. *Byschop*; see note to i. 354.



88. See *The Romance and Prophecies of Thomas of Erceldoune*, ed. J. A. H. Murray (E. E. T. S.); pref. p. xvii.

92. See Book i. 356, and the note.

96. "When the tables were removed," *i.e.*, after dinner.

112. *Clyffurd*, probably Lord Robert Clifford; Ann. Scot. i. 5.

118. *Ferrand* is the horse's name; from O.Fr. *Ferrand*, an iron-gray horse, also a horse's name; from *fer*, iron. It occurs again as the name of a horse in the Buik of Alexander the Great, pp. 79, 92.

121. "Take him as if you did it of your own head," *i.e.*, without any suggestion from another. Accordingly, he adds—"as if I had given no advice thereto."

130. *Taucht him*, gave him, handed over to him. Pinkerton is wrong in suggesting the reading *raucht*.

138. Read *wrethyt*; see note to Book i. 165.

148. "Arickstone in the head of Anandale;" Hume's Hist. of Douglas, p. 24.

150. "Scone, near the left bank of the Tay, rather more than a mile north from Perth, is memorable for its palace, the ancient residence of the Scottish kings, and the place of their coronation."—Cyclopædia of the British Empire, ii. 727.

151. *In kingis stole*, on the royal throne, lit. stool; cf. l. 180. The celebrated "stone of destiny," on which the Scottish kings, before Bruce, had been crowned, had been carried off from Scone by Edward I. in August, 1296. The stone is now at Westminster, embedded in the coronation-chair. It came originally from Spain (!), by way of Ireland; Wyntoun, bk. iii. c. 9.

178. Bruce was crowned at Scone, March 25, 1306, in presence of the Bishops of St Andrews and Glasgow. The ceremony was repeated on Palm Sunday, March 27; Annals of England, p. 176. Cf. Fordun, cap. cxviii.

189. *Maynteym*, maintain; the usual spelling in Barbour.

199. Lord Hailes observes that the "letters patent to Pembroke are drawn up in an enraged and vindictive style." It is true that, worn by disease and age, Edward displayed a ferocity during the last two years of his life which has somewhat tarnished his greatness as a king.

200. Sir Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, was third son of the half-brother of Henry III. His arms are described in Walter of Exeter's poem on the Siege of Carlaverock; see Ann. of England, p. 178, note *l*, and p. 152, note *k*. His tomb is in Westminster Abbey; see an account of him in Brayley's Hist. of Westm. Abbey, ii. 275. Pembroke College, Cambridge, was founded in 1347 by his widow, Mary de St Paul.

205. *Raiss dragoun*, lit. raise the dragon. Jamieson explains it by "to deliver up to military execution." The context rather implies that it signifies to harry, to act tyrannically, or probably, "to play the devil." We learn from the Chanson de Roland, l. 1641, that to

"raise the dragon" was used of raising the devil's standard by a pagan host. Ducange gives—"Draco, (1) vexillum in quo draconis effigies efficta; (2) effigies draconis, quæ cum vexillis in ecclesiasticis processionibus deferri solet, qua vel *diabolus ipse*, vel hæresis designantur, de quibus triumphat ecclesia." We are all familiar with St George and the Dragon, wherein the dragon represents evil. Perhaps the verb to *dragoon* thus acquired somewhat of its sinister meaning.

211. Sir Philip Mowbray nearly captured King Robert at Methven; ii. 413. He was afterwards defeated by Douglas; viii. 21. He held Stirling Castle against Bruce; x. 806. After the battle of Bannockburn, he not only yielded up the castle according to his previous engagement, but took the Scottish side. He accompanied Edward Bruce to Ireland, and performed great deeds of valour after Edward's death; xviii. 125.

Sir Roger Mowbray was engaged in the conspiracy of De Soulis against Bruce (see Book xix. 11), but died before he was brought to trial; Fordun, cap. cxxv.

Sir Ingraham de Umphraville was on the English side at Bannockburn, xii. 451; he afterwards joined the Bruce, but left him on finding that Sir David Brechin had been executed for joining in De Soulis' conspiracy; xix. 73. He was mainly instrumental (says Barbour) in establishing a truce between England and Scotland; xix. 158. Compare his three pieces of advice, all of the same tenor; ii. 257; xii. 452; xix. 158.

214. Here, as in ll. 245, Hart's reading *fulfild* improves the scansion of the lines.

235. Lennox was formerly written Leuenax, a name probably compounded of Leven, and *ax*, a stream or water, so that Levenax merely meant, originally, the river Leven, but afterwards included that district of Dumbartonshire through which the Leven flows; see Jamieson's note. The reference is to Malcolm, 5th Earl of Lennox; Hailes's Annals, ii. 2. By *Atholl* is meant John de Strathbogie, Earl of Athole, afterwards executed; see Lord of the Isles, note to ii. 26. "When John, Earl of Atholl, nobly descended, who had with other murdered John Comin, was apprehended by King Edward the first, and some intreated for him, the king answered: 'The higher his calling is, the greater must his fall be; and as he is of higher parentage, so shall he be higher hanged:' which according was performed, for he was hanged on a gallows fifty feet high;" Camden, Remaines concerning Britaine, ed. 1657, p. 259.

236. Edward Bruce was Robert's impetuous and headstrong brother, afterwards slain in attempting to make himself King of Ireland; see Book xviii. See Lord of the Isles, note to iv. 20.

237. Sir Thomas Randolph's great exploit was the taking of Edinburgh Castle; x. 584. He had just been made Earl of Murray; x. At King Robert's death, he became regent of Scotland; xx. 300. un greatly praises his powers of governing; bk. viii. 3143.

He was Bruce's nephew (ix. 732), and died in 1332; Hailes's Annals, ii. 146; Fordun, cap. cxlvi. See Lord of the Isles, vi. 1, and the note.

Hugh de la Haye (lit. of the hedge) was "brother of Gilbert Hay of Errol."—P. Cf. Book ii. 490; iii. 25; and see notes to Lord of the Isles, ii. 13; and The Wallace, viii. 581. "David Barclay, of Cairns in Fife."—P. On which Jamieson remarks—"on what authority this is asserted we are not informed [yet it is clearly copied from Hailes, Ann. Scot. ii. 2]. It seems probable that this is the same David who received from Robert I. the lands of Knocqy in Glenesk, Forfarshire; also Rothmay, Brechine, Kinlock, &c., on the forfeiture of David de Brechin; see Robertson's Index, 18. 79-26. 79. A charter of the lands of Colcarny, Kinross-shire, to John, son of David Barclay, in the reign of David I., is referred to, *ibid.* 53. 28." See Jamieson's note.

239. *Fresale*, Fraser. "Alexander Fraser, the brother of Simon Fraser of Oliver Castle in Tweeddale, the ancestor of the families of Lovat and Salton."—J. See the song on the Execution of Sir Simon Fraser, A.D. 1306, in *Polit. Songs*, ed. Wright, 212; also Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26. Barbour calls him Alexander below; ii. 407.

*Somerueile*, Sir John Somerville; see Craufurd's Peerage, p. 445, and Jamieson's note.

243\*. *Cristall of Setoun*, i.e., "Christopher Seton, of Seton, ancestor of the Duke of Gordon, Earl of Winton, Earl of Dunfermlin, and Viscount Kingston; see Hailes's Annals, ii. 2."—P. (note to ii. 418). He rescued Bruce at the battle of Methven; Book ii. 418. He was (according to Barbour) betrayed to the English, and executed by Edward; iv. 16. He was Bruce's brother-in-law; see Annals of England, p. 176, note *a*; and Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26.

247. Saint Johnston is another name for Perth, on account of its church being dedicated to St John. Instances of the use of this name are common. Thus Lambarde says—"He was by birth a Scot, of Perth, now commonly called Saint John's Town;" *Perambulation of Kent*, ed. 1656, p. 413. And see Skelton, ed. Dyce, ii. 218.

279. *Bot gyf thai faile*, "unless they fail to keep their word."

303. *Meffayn*, Methven, about six miles to the west of Perth; still vulgarly called *Meffen*. "Eodem anno [1306] rex Robertus, xix die mensis Junii, victus est apud Methfen," &c.; Fordun, cap. cxix.

329. *Our werdis dele*, allot our destiny.

346-445. Quoted in Warton's *Hist. Eng. Poetry*, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 286.

365. *Renk*; so in *J1*; *reuk*, P. The MS. may, of course, be read either way. *Renk* means a rank of fighting men, and the text says that those that remained on horseback dealt such blows that the rank of men around them reeled. So also, in l. 380, the expression is—"that all the *semble schuk*," i.e., till all the assembly reeled. For examples of the word, see *reng* in Stratmann, who gives an example of the spelling *renk* from St Brandan, ed. Wright, 12. Chaucer has the

pl. form *renge*s, Kn. Tale, 1736. Jamieson reads *renk*, but in his Dictionary explains it as "*reuk*, the atmosphere," since that was the reading before him in Pinkerton's edition. He was thinking of *rak* or *roke*, a mist; but I cannot accept that interpretation here, when l. 380 is considered.

378. *Assenzhe*, war-cry; better spelt *enseinzie* (see l. 426 and iii. 27), from the French *enseigne*, a token.

381. *Till-hewyt* is a false spelling of *to-hewyt*, i.e., hewed in twain; due to the constant confusion, throughout this poem, between the prepositions *till* and *to*. The past participle would be *to-hewyn*, which appears in Book xx. 367, but is miswritten *till-hewyne* in the Cambridge MS. Cf. *to-hewe* in Chaucer, C. T. Group B, 430.

384. *Thai feble fast*, they are giving way already; a natural exclamation of encouragement, which did not, however, express the truth.

437. "And it may yet happen, if they wish to pursue us, we shall, however, to some extent requite them a turn."

471. *Will off wane*, lit. wild of weening, i.e., wandering in opinion, at his wits' end, at a loss. See Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat, p. 94, l. 155, and the note at p. 309. It occurs again, i. 323; vii. 225. It is equivalent to *will of red*, i. 348, iii. 494; and Wallace, ii. 259. Both phrases are equivalent to the expression in i. 318—"He wyst nocht quhat to do na say."

479. *Boroundoun*. The source of this name has not been traced, nor is it clearly known to whom allusion is made. Hart reads 'Haly-burtoun.' Sir W. Scott has it *Barendoun*; Lord of the Isles, ii. 13. However, Tytler (i. 91, note 7) says it was Sir William de Barondoun; "this knight is a witness to a charter of Haig of Bemerside to the Abbey of Melrose, along with Thomas Rymer of Ercildoun and others. Chartulary of Melrose, Bib. Harl. 3960, fol. 109 a."

491. *Sir Nele Cambell*. "This was the predecessor of the family of Argyll. He was an early and faithful adherent of King Robert, who gave him his sister, the Lady Mary Bruce, in marriage. He died in 1315. His brother, Sir Donald Campbell of Redhouse, was ancestor of the noble family of Loudon. See Craufurd's Peerage, pp. 13-15."—J. *Nele* is also written *Nigel*, and in Latin *Nigellus*; but it is a Scandinavian name. Hence also the name of *Nelson*.

494. "Enduring their tribulation in the mountains." Jamieson's Scot. Dict. gives—"Month, Mounth, (1) a mountain; (2) the Grampian mountains towards their Eastern extremity. *To gang o'er the Month*, to cross the Grampians; North of Scotland dialect." It is opposed to 'the planys' in l. 496, and is rendered by 'the hyllis' in l. 508. See viii. 393; Wyntoun, vi. 2229; and notes to Fordun, ed. Skene, ii. 385.

503. *Fur thai*, they fared, they acted. *For he*, because he.

513. *Nele the Bruyss*, Neil or Nigel Bruce, Bruce's brother. He defended Kildrummy Castle, iv. 61, 185; but was taken and executed, iv. 313; see Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26.

518, 519. *Tyttar*—*na*, rather—than. *Angyr*, affliction.

528. *Thebes*. See Statius, *Thebais*, lib. xii. King Adrastus was one of the Seven Heroes who warred against Thebes, and the only one who returned home in safety; see l. 547. Compare—

" Yet, as some authors make mentioun,  
Or Theseus entred into the toun,  
The women first, with pekoids and with malles,  
With gret labour beat downe the walles."

—Lydgate, *Storie of Thebes*.

534. *Campaneus*, properly Capaneus; he was struck by lightning whilst attempting to scale the walls of Thebes, because he had defied Zeus. Cf. Euripides, *Phœnissæ*, 1172; Sophocles, *Antigone*, 126-136; Æschylus, *Seven against Thebes*, 425; Statius, *Thebais*, x. 826; Dante, *Inferno*, xiv. 63. Barbour no doubt followed the account in Statius.

#### NOTES TO BOOK III. (A.D. 1306.)

(Jamieson, II. 396—III. 228; Innes, pp. 47-74.)

1. *Lord of Lorne*. Probably the rubric in Hart's edition, suggesting that this was John of Lorn, is wrong. The person intended is rather John of Lorn's father, Allaster Macdougall, who was really Lord of Lorn at this time. He had married the third daughter of Comyn, and was therefore Comyn's son-in-law, though Barbour here calls him his nephew. See the long note to the Lord of the Isles, i. 11. John of Lorn is mentioned further on, vi. 481; vii. 80, 92.

48. *Him abandonyt*, took upon himself, gave himself up to. In l. 80 it means 'demeaned himself'; in iv. 655, *abandonyt* means 'completely subjected.' In the last sense it occurs in Skelton, ed. Dyce, i. 273; ii. 260.

62. The old phrase for 'stand in awe' was simply to 'stand awe,' here slightly altered to *stand ane sik aw*, which is equivalent to *stand sik ane aw*, lit. to 'stand such an awe,' i.e., to stand in such awe. There is no real difficulty, when once the old phrase becomes familiar. Thus, in Havelok, l. 277, we have—

" Al engelond of him stod awe,  
All engelond was of him adrad."

In my edition of Havelok, I have printed "stod [in] awe," but now perceive that the MS. reading is correct. I add another example of this odd idiom, from p. 78 of *The Buik of Alexander*: "As he stude of thame lytill awe." And it occurs in *The Wallace*, ed. Moir, v. 924, vi. 878. See the *New Eng. Dictionary*, s. v. *Awe*, § 4.

66. "Stop them, himself alone, without more (to help him)."

67. *Marthokys sone*. This is in the vocative case, and refers to the person addressed. Jamieson's guess is surely correct; he supposes *Marthok* to be *Muratach*, now *Murdoch*, and thus 'Marthokys sone' is simply Macmurdoch.

68, 69. "Just as Gaul (or Gall) Mac Morna was wont to rescue his men from Fingal." In the Book of the Dean of Lismore, Translation, p. 43, Oisín (or Ossian) the poet addresses 'high-minded Goll, who combats Fionn.' Here Fionn (or Fingal) is Fionn Mac Cumhaill, Oisín's father. See Morley, Eng. Writers, i. 181, 183. Prof. Morley says that Barbour makes the Lord of Lorn "quote to his men Fionn, by the name of Fingal, in his strife against Goll Macmorna, as an example of courage." Of course this is a slip; it is Goll Macmorna whose courage is here praised. Fordun (cap. cxx.) says that the conflict here described took place at Dalry, Aug. 11, 1306; and Bower calls it the "battle of Dalry"; Scotichron. xii. 11. Dalry or Dalree means the King's Dale. "It is close to the celebrated pool of St Fillan, about a mile, or little more, below the village of Tyndrum." —J. Tyndrum is in Strath Fillan, Perthshire, near the border of Argyle.

Cf. "My fader, mekle Gow Macmorne."—Ane littill Interlud, st. 9, (Bannatyne MS.). And again, in G. Douglas, Palice of Honour, ed. Small, i. 65, we find an allusion to "Greit Gowmakmorne and Fyn Makcoul, and how Thay suld be goddis in Ireland, as they say."

73. *Gaudifer* is "Sir Gaudifer de Larys, whose adventures in arms form the chief subject of that chapter of the Romance of Alexander the Great which treats of the 'Forray of Gadderis,' where he [Alexander] is opposed by the mighty 'Duke Betys, that Gaderis aucht';" pref. to Bruce, ed. Innes, p. xxvii. The story is to be found in the Buik of the Most noble and vailzeand conquerour Alexander, callit the Forray of Gadderis, Bannatyne Club, 1834; but as this appears, from the concluding paragraph, to have been translated from the French about 1438, Barbour must have seen it in an earlier form. Cf. Warton, Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 142, 299. *Laryss* may be Larissa, in Thessaly. The story is, that Alexander, when besieging Tyre, also sent some men on a foray, who were attacked by Duke Betis of Gaderis. Subsequently, Alexander himself was opposed by Betys and Gaudifer; and, on the flight of Betys, Gaudifer rallied the flying host, and even unhorsed Alexander himself and several of his leaders. *Tholimar* no doubt means Ptolemy, one of Alexander's generals. *Coneus* and *Dauklyne* are called Caulus and Dauclene in the Romance.

Barbour had probably seen a copy of *Li Romans d'Alexandre*, by Lambert li Tors and Alexandre de Bernay, which was written in the thirteenth century. See the edition by H. Michelant, Stuttgart, 1846. The story of the Foray of Gadres (an O.Fr. spelling of Gaza) is in the chapter headed "Assaut de Tyr." Alexander tells his men to go to Gadres, p. 94; Duke Betis appears, p. 97; Gadifer des Lairis appears,

p. 134; Alexander comes to the rescue, p. 152; Gadifier's combat with Alexander is described, p. 176. In this version, Tholimar is called *Tholomes*; Coneus, *Calnu*; and Dauklyne or Danklyne, *Dans Clins*, where *dans* is the title corresponding to Lat. *dominus*, O.Fr. *dans*, Span. *don*. An excellent epitome of this romance is given in "Alexander, vom Pfaffen Lamprecht; herausgegeben von Dr H. Weismann;" Frankfurt, 1850, vol. ii. p. 291. In Book x. 705 below, there is another reference to the same romance; cf. Wallace, x. 342.

93. This is the story of the Brooch of Lorn, so well told in Scott's *Tales of a Grandfather*, ch. viii; cf. *The Lord of the Isles*, ii. 14; and the note. But Barbour does not make any mention of the Brooch.

99. *Makyne-drosser*, spelt *Makindorser* in Hart. The name is Gaelic, and signifies the sons of the doorkeeper, or (as Barbour rightly explains it) the 'durwarth sonnys' or door-ward's sons. The derivation is from the Gaelic *mac*, a son, and *na dorsair*, of the doorkeeper; *dorsair* being again derived from *doras*, a door.

For the following note, I am indebted to Dr Murray. No writer, so far as I am aware, seems to have seen the point of this passage. Mr J. Hill Burton (*Hist. Scot.*, ed. 1867, ii. 366) goes somewhat out of his way to show that he does not. After quoting the lines in a note, he adds—"Shaw, in his Gaelic Dictionary, has *dorsair* for doorkeeper. One would hardly have expected that the Archdeacon of Aberdeen would have condescended to notice such a Celtic etymology." But the Archdeacon knew what he was about. At p. 98 of Mr Burton's *History* will be found a full account of the troubles caused in the minority of Alexander III. by Alan *Durward* the Justiciar or Steward of Scotland, who, having married an illegitimate daughter of Alexander II., was accused of an intrigue to secure the crown. Then, at p. 213, we have "Nicholas de Soulis, descended of the marriage of Marjory, a natural daughter of Alexander II., to Alan the Durward," as one of the fifteen competitors, and consequently a rival of the elder Bruce in his claim to the crown. Finally, as late as 1320, another "de Soulis, a descendant of that Nicholas de Soulis, the competitor for the crown, whose ancestor Alan the Durward had attempted, as we have seen, to get his wife legitimated as a daughter of William the Lion," formed a dangerous conspiracy against Bruce, now nearing the end of his life (ii. 431). The *Macyndrossers* or 'Durwarth's sons' were the clansmen of Alan the Durward, who, like the Comyns of Badenoch, the Baliols, and others, were almost more dangerous to Bruce than the arms of England; and it was Barbour's policy, correctly or incorrectly, to attribute this attack on Bruce to the party of one of his rivals, whose pretensions, almost in his own days, had imperilled his hero's sovereignty. It is worthy of notice that the head of another family, who held a similar office under the title of *Steward*, actually transferred the sovereignty to his house by marriage with Bruce's daughter. See Burton, *Hist. Scot.*, iii. 44.—J. A. H. M.

102. "They had a third man in their agreement (or plot)." Sir W. Scott makes the third man the father, or Mac Androsser himself. See Book v. 521. See the list of stories of this character in the note to Book v. 521.

109. "Between the side of a lake and a steep bank." They were retreating from Dalrie, near Tyndrum, and most likely towards the Tay, whence they started; ii. 589. If so, the scene of the encounter would be in Glen Dochart, between Loch Dochart and Ben More. Tydeus was caught in a similar situation, vi. 211.

146. Pinkerton remarks that Bruce here kills *three* men; afterwards, *three* more, v. 521; *three* more, vii. 189; *five*, vi. 149; *fourteen*, vi. 313. However, Barbour clearly exaggerates in many places, and his business was chiefly to impress his readers. The recurrence of the number three is awkward. It is probable that at least the "Brooch of Lorn" story is told twice over—viz. here (iii. 93-146) and in v. 559-656; but the details are varied in a very skilful manner. See note to Book v. 521.

153. Macnaughtan was a baron of Cowal, which is the district of Argyleshire between Loch Fyne and Loch Long. "All that I can discover in our records is, that the lands which formerly belonged to John, the son of Duncan, the son of Alexander of Yle, were given by David Bruce to Alexander Macnaughtan; v. Ind. Chart. 99, 100." —J.

172. "So may our Lord preserve me!" lit. 'see me.' This expression is in Chaucer; see Tyrwhitt's Glossary, s. v. *See*.

186. "Deploring the harm that they have received."

208. Alluding to the battle of Cannæ. "Here, on 2 Aug. 216 B.C., Hannibal with 50,000 Africans, Gauls, and Spaniards, defeated Paulus Æmilius and Terentius Varro, with 88,000 Romans, of whom 40,000 were slain. The victor sent to Carthage three bushels of rings, taken from the Roman knights;" Haydn, Dict. of Dates. Cf. Wyntoun, bk. iv. c. 16.

235. The story of Hannibal's close approach to Rome, and of his attack upon the Romans being stopped by a storm on two successive days, is given in Plutarch; see North's translation, ed. 1631, p. 1077. It occurs also in Wyntoun, bk. iv. c. 17.

242. *Twyss*, twice. Plutarch and Wyntoun say only twice in all; but Barbour generally enlarges his numbers.

281. "Nil actum credens, si quid superesset agendum;" Lucani Pharsalia, ii. 657.

291. "Unless he be very unlucky, he will partially achieve it; and if he lives, it may well be that he will achieve it wholly."

301. "Than he had reason for, by far."

321. "These afflictions I can no longer endure; for, though it should thereby come about that I should die, I must stop here."

337. Kildrummy Castle is on the Don, in Aberdeenshire. It is



described in Cordiner's Antiquities and Scenery of the North of Scotland.

383, 384. *Lying* and *waking* are here substantives; Barbour carefully distinguishes substantives in *-ing* from present participles in *-and*.

385. *Kyntyr*, Cantire, a peninsula in Argyleshire; Gaelic *Ceanntre*, lit. land's end; from *ceann*, head, headland, extremity, and *tír*, land. See Lord of the Isles, ii. 9, and the note.

390. "And pursue his destiny to the end."

418. *Fut-hate*, foot-hot, with all speed; and so in xiii. 454. Spelt *foothot* in Chaucer, Man of Lawes Tale, Group B, l. 438.

420. *Thresum*, holding three at a time, with three in all. So also *fiffsum*, five in all; &c. Cf. l. 424.

437. *Ferambrace*, Fierabras or Ferumbras the Saracen, son of Balan or Lavan, the sultan of Babylon, and brother of the fair Floripas or Florippa. "We have [in English] two versions of this romance; one of them the Farmer MS. analysed by Ellis (vol. ii. p. 369), and now in the library of Sir Thomas Phillipps; the other a fragment of great length, [in] MS. Ashmole 33. They both belong probably to the end of the fourteenth century. The original of the romance is the French Fierabras; see Les Anciens Poetes de la France, tom. iv.;" &c.—Warton's Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 197, q. v. The Farmer MS. was printed for the Roxburgh Club in 1854, with the title—"Romaunce of the Sowdone of Babylone and of Ferumbras his sone, who conquered Rome;" and was reprinted in 1881, ed. Hausknecht (E. E. T. S.) The Ashmole MS. begins with the combat between Fierabras (*ferri brachium*) and Oliver; see the edition by Herrtage (E. E. T. S.), 1879.

440. *Duk-peris*, apparently 'duke-peers'; but really a corruption of *douze pairs*, the twelve peers of France. Wyntoun writes *dowch-sperys*, v. 4350; and what is most to the point, we find, in the Sowdone of Babylone, l. 249, the spelling *dosipers*; and at l. 373, *dosyperyys*.

441. *Egrymor*, the tower of Aigremont (called *Agremare* and *Egremoure* in the Farmer MS., and described as in Spain), in which eleven of the twelve peers were imprisoned together with Florippa, the daughter of Balan, by Balan himself, king of the Saracens, who is here called *Lawyne*, and in the Farmer MS. is called *Lavan*. They were released by Charlemagne. Pinkerton refers us to *Conquestes du Grand Charlemagne, Roi de France*, &c.; printed at Troyes, about 1750. And see Fierabras, *Chanson de Geste*, ed. Kræber and Servois, Paris, 1860.

455. *Mantrybill*. In the Complaint of Scotland, ed. J. A. H. Murray, p. 63, is mention of "the tail of the brig of the *mantribil*," which is evidently an episode in the romance of Fierabras; and accordingly, in the Sowdone of Babylon, l. 2131, I find that "Mauntreble" is Lavan's "cheif cite," and that the giant Alagolofure was warden of the "brigge" over the river Flagote that led to it. Richard of Nor-

mandy swam his horse over the river, killed the giant, l. 2923, and won the bridge. *Flagot*; an extract relating how Richard of Normandy swam his horse over "Flagote the flood" is printed in Warton's *Hist. Eng. Poetry*, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 200.

Skelton also mentions "Mantryble the bryge;" Poems against Garnesche, in Dyce's edition, i. 117, l. 22. Dyce, in his note (ii. 179), refers us to Ellis's specimens of *Met. Rom.* ii. 389; Caxton's *Lyf of Charles the Grete*, 1485, sig. e. viii. and sig. h. viii.; Barbour's *Bruce*, ed. Jamieson, ii. 832 [the present passage]; and *Don Quixote*, in Shelton's translation, pt. i. bk. iv. cap. xxii. p. 546, ed. 1612. In the original Spanish, the allusion is to "Fierabrás, con la puente de Mantible" (*sic*); parte i. cap. xlix.

459. *The naylis*, those with which Christ was crucified. *The sper*, the spear (of Longinus), which pierced the Saviour's side. These relics are here said to have been recovered from Fierabras. Wheeler, in his *Noted Names of Fiction*, says that "Fierabras, who was a Saracen, made himself master of Rome, and carried away from it various sacred relics, especially the crown of thorns and the balsam which was used in embalming the body of the Saviour." In the *Sowdone of Babylon* (p. 93), "Charles wins back these relics, offers the cross at Paris, the crown at St Denis, and the "nayles thre" at Boulogne.

479. "And sought the thick groves, and set snares."

483. "For he supposed the king had been dead;" cf. l. 509.

494. *Will off red*, lit. wild of rede (or counsel)—i.e., at a loss what to do. Cf. i. 348; and see note on *will of wane*, ii. 471.

517. *But anger gret*, without severe affliction. *Anger* commonly means affliction, not only in Barbour, but in *Piers the Plowman*, &c. In l. 530, the adj. *angry* may have the usual modern sense.

540. *Salss*, sauce; alluding to the proverb—"Hunger is the best sauce;" in French, "Il n'y a sauce que d'appetit;" in Italian, "Appetito no vuol salse." Ray says—"this proverb is reckoned among the aphorisms of Socrates—'Optimum cibi condimentum fames, sitis potûs;' Cicero, de Finibus, lib. ii."

561. "Forsan et hæc olim meminisse iuuabit;" Virg. *Æn.* i. 203.

577. *But*, Bute; on their way from the Clyde to Cantire.

578. *Frely fute*, noble or handsome child. Jamieson explains it to mean 'noble woman,' unnecessarily. *Fute* is the same as *fode*, spelt *fude* in *Sir Perceval*, 1326; and Stratmann quotes "þis freli fode," *Sir Eglamour*, 1254; "to wedde þat freli fode," *Amadas*, ed. Robson, liv. 6; cf. "min oþene child, my leue fode," *King Horn*, ed. Lumby, 1340. Mätzner (note to *K. Horn*, 1340) quotes "that frely fode," *Amis and Amiloun*, 557. *Fode* usually has the sense of child, and is used of both sexes; it means, literally, one *fed* or nourished up. The sense is—"as they, in rowing, rose with their oars, they could see many a handsome child along the coasts, looking on at them."

583, 584. "So spanned the oars, that the skin might often be seen left behind on the wood;" *i.e.*, on the handle. The oars were, probably, but roughly made, and the knights were not much accustomed to the exercise. Compare Lord of the Isles, v. 13.

588. "To advance them in their floating."

658. *Stycht*, determination, resolve. The word is not in the Dictionaries, but the connected verb is found in the form "*Stightele*, to establish, to dispose," Halliwell; *stichtlen*, to dispose, Stratmann; *stichten*, to dispose, fix, Stratmann; cf. A.S. *stihtan*, to establish. Thus *stycht* means fixed purpose, resolution, determined course of action.

659. "Angus at that time was the lord of Islay." The isle of Islay was formerly called *Ila*, and is here denoted by *Ile*; see Jamieson's note. It lies beyond Cantire.

666. *Donavardyne*, Dunaverty, where there was once a castle. It is near Southend, which, as its name implies, is on the southern coast or end of Cantire.

680. *Rauchryne* is now called Rathlin. Jamieson remarks that the spelling here given is no corruption, and cites ten ways of spelling the name, including *Rachryne*, *Rachraind*, *Rechran*, *Rochrinne*, from Archdall's *Monasticon Hibernicum*, p. 11. It lies in the North Channel, between Cantire and Ireland. Pinkerton refers us, for a description of it, to Hamilton's *Observations on the North of Ireland*. Scott spells it Rath-Erin; Lord of the Isles, ii. 9.

682. *In mydwart*, in the middle, between. The readings *mid waltir* (P.) *mydwatter* (J.) are due to misreading the MS., and may be dismissed.

687. *Raiss*, race, *i.e.*, current. The "Race of Brittany" can hardly be other than that now named Rennell's Current, from Major Rennell, who first traced its course. It begins, from the Atlantic, at Cape Finisterre, follows the curve of the coast round the Bay of Biscay, and then shoots across the English Channel, often endangering vessels near the Scilly Isles. Its greatest velocity is 90 miles per day, as observed on the French coast off Brest. See *Atlas of Physical Geography*, by Petermann and Milner, p. 40. See an allusion to the channel between "Rachrin" and Ireland in Fordun, ed. Skene, ii. 387.

688. "Or the strait of Morocco in Spain;" *i.e.*, the strait of Gibraltar. Chaucer also calls it "the straite of Marrok," *Man of Lawes Tale*, Group B, l. 465.

696. *The mole*, *i.e.*, the Mull of Cantire; from the Gaelic *maol*, a promontory.

706. "Hi summo in fluctu pendent, his unda dehiscens  
Terram inter fluctus aperit;" Virg. *Æn.* i. 106.

745. *Loud and still*, *i.e.*, under all circumstances. It is a common phrase in old romances; see Halliwell. A similar phrase is "in hey and low," used by Chaucer.

## NOTES TO BOOK IV. (A.D. 1306, 1307.)

(Jamieson, III. 229-1003; Innes, pp. 74-102.)

13. *Robert*. "Robert Wishart, Bishop of Glasgow from 1272 to 1317, celebrated for his patriotism; see Keith's Catalogue of Scottish Bishops."—P. See Wyntoun, viii. 1910; Ann. of Scot. ii. 13.

14. *Marcus*. "Marcus, Bishop of the Isles [which included the Isle of Man] from 1272 to 1303; see Keith's Catalogue."—P. Pinkerton adds that there seems to be no authority for saying that he died in 1303, and observes that Barbour here makes him alive in 1306. "The Isle of Man at this time belonged to the crown of Scotland."—J. The see is still called that of Sodor and Man, where Sodor means 'the southern Islands'; cf. Icel. *suðr-eyjar*, a name given to the Hebrides in the Landnámabók.

16. See note to Book ii. 243\*. Jamieson, in a long note (p. 479), clearly shows that *Loudon* (l. 17) means the castle of Lochdon in Ayrshire, of which Sir Gilbert de Carrick (ancestor of the Earl of Cassilis) was hereditary keeper. Lochdon, or Loch Doon, is the source of the "bonny Doon." See note to Wallace, iii. 67.

18. *Judas, i.e.,* Iscariot. The phrase "disciple of Judas" or "child of Judas" means a very wicked man; see P. Plowman, B. prol. 35.

29. *In England*, to England; probably a mistake. Jamieson says (p. 480)—"Such regard had King Robert for the memory of Sir Chrystal, that he erected a chapel on the spot where he had been executed, hard by the town of Dumfries."

36. Sir Reginald Crawford; Ann. Scot. ii. 19; Wallace, vii. 208.

37. *Bruce* is here a mistake of the scribe for *Brice*; note the reading *Bryse* in Hart. The person meant is Sir Brice Blair; Ann. Scot. ii. 19, note. And see Jamieson's note to The Wallace, vii. 205.

41. "Was coupled in God's bond," united in matrimony.

47. "The *gyrth*, or sanctuary, of St Duthac at Tain, whence the Earl of Ross took the queen, Elizabeth, daughter of Aymer de Burgh, Earl of Ulster, and Marjory, the king's daughter by his former wife, Isabella, and delivered them up to the English."—P. Tain is in Ross-shire, on the Dornoch Firth. See Ann. Scot. ii. 9.

56. *Dongoun*, dungeon. The most remarkable case was that of the Countess of Buchan, "who was imprisoned within the castle of Berwick, in a cage made on purpose;" Tales of a Grandfather, chap. viii. Scott explains that this cage was not one that was hung out over the walls, as some have said, "like a parrot's cage out at a window"; but was a cage such as is not unfrequently found in prisons, "resembling one of those places in which wild beasts are confined." Her crime was that she placed the crown on Bruce's head with her own hands, at the ceremony of his coronation. See Ann. Scot. ii. 10.

57. Here, fortunately, the Cambridge MS. begins, to the considerable improvement of the text; see footnote to this line.

73. "The Prince of Wales and many young nobles are knighted with great ceremony, May 22, 1306; when the king takes an oath to conquer the Scots or die in the quarrel;" *Ann. of England*, p. 176.

94. "Some (of the) best (were) wounded, and some were slain."

117. "And placed it high upon a heap of corn."

119. Evidently an allusion to a proverb. It looks as if the form of it intended is—

"Fire and pride  
Can no man hide."

I have not, however, so found it. Line 124 seems to intimate the usual form of the proverb—viz., "There is no smoke without some fire."

127. "First like a star, then like a moon."

181. It is well known that Snowdown was a name formerly given to Stirling Castle; see note to *Lady of the Lake*, vi. 28. But it would appear, in this place, that the title is applied to Kildrummy Castle. Jamieson says—"In a MS. formerly belonging to Sir James Balfour of Denmilne, Lyon King at Arms, now in the library of the Advocates, the title of the Snowdoun Herald is derived 'from Snowdoun castle of the country of Rosse, the residence of our ancient Scottish kings.' I have met with no other vestige of this castle; the same account, however, is given by Nisbet; *Heraldry*, ii. 166."

It looks as if the name of Snowdown may have been given, at the time, to Kildrummy Castle, in consequence of the queen's being in residence there. Mr J. Moir informs me that the name of 'Snow Tower' is still given to a large round tower, which is the chief feature of the present Kildrummy Castle; the origin of this name is not known.

190. Barbour inserts the death of King Edward I. too soon. He was "obliged by sickness to remain in Northumberland and Cumberland, the summer and autumn, 1306; and he was at Lanercost all the winter 1306-7; see this proved from Rymer's *Fœdera* in the *Annals of Scotland*, ii. 5."—P. In fact, we must suppose many months to elapse between lines 193 and 194. And it may be well to bear in mind that Edward's death did not occur till after the battle of Loudon Hill, described in Book viii.

203. Edward died at Burgh-on-the-Sands, about five miles from Carlisle, July 7, 1307.

209. It is remarkable that we have a very similar story told of Henry IV. See 2d Henry IV., Act iv. sc. 4. In a note on that scene in Staunton's *Shakespeare*, a much earlier instance of a similar play upon words is given. Pope Sylvester II. had, it was said, been assured by a spirit that he should not die till he had said mass at Jerusalem. In A.D. 1003, he said mass in the church called 'the Holy Cross in Jerusalem'; he was there suddenly taken ill, and soon after died. The story is fully related by Wyntoun, bk. vi. c. xii, who calls the church

that of "Jerusalem in Vy Laterane." Mr Furnivall kindly refers me to a note in Singer's Shakespeare, who cites "a remarkable coincidence in a passage of Anna Comnena (Alexius, lib. vi. p. 162, ed. Paris, 1658) relative to the death of Robert Guiscard, king of Sicily, in a place called Jerusalem at Cephalonia. In Lodge's Devils Conjured is a similar story of Pope Sylvester; but the Pope outwitted the devil. And Fuller, in his Church History, bk. v. p. 178, relates something of the same kind about Cardinal Wolsey, of whom it had been predicted *that he should have his end at Kingston*. Which was thought to be fulfilled by his dying in the custody of Sir William Kingston. See Cavendish's Life of Wolsey, Chiswick edition, 1825, vol. i. p. 320."

241. The same story is told in The Complaint of Scotland, ed. Murray, ch. x. p. 84, where we are warned against believing a prophecy attributed to Merlin, that Scotland would one day be united to England; and we are also reminded of similar dubious prophecies, such as that uttered by Caiaphas (John xi. 50), the response of the Delphian oracle to Croesus, and the oracle concerning the contest of Pyrrhus with the Romans; see Cicero, Div. 2. 56, 115, 116. Cf. Classical and Foreign Quotations, by W. F. H. King, p. 26. A very similar prophecy was told concerning Provenzano Salvani, who is mentioned in Dante, Purg. xi. 121; see the story in a note to Cary's translation. In the Compl. of Scot., chap. vi. p. 63, mention is made of a tale of "Ferrand, erl of Flandris, that mareit the deuyl," evidently some story resembling the Tale of Melusine; see Dr Murray's preface, pp. lxxiii, lxxiv. Cf. Weber, Met. Rom. iii. 352.

Ferrand, prince of Portugal, became Earl of Flanders by marriage with Jane, daughter of Baldwin IX., Earl of Flanders. Philip Augustus of France defeated Ferrand and Otho IV. (Emperor of Germany) at Bouvines, between Lille and Tournay, July 27, 1214.

249. *Bosbek*; so in Hart. *Bosbek* or *Busbecq* was in W. Flanders, to the west of Courtray; the traveller and ambassador usually called Busbequius was named from it. See the Life of Busbecq.

251. *Parisius veniet*, shall come to Paris. *Parisius* for *Parisios* is not uncommon.

257. "Shall go right to Paris, without doubt." Here *went* (so spelt in both MSS.) is used in place of the more usual form *wend*.

260. "This is the meaning of the saying."

336. The story goes back to the latter part of the year 1306.

374. "Their tackle, oars, and rudder;" cf. l. 633.

384. Sir John de Hastings, lord of Abergavenny and seneschal of Aquitaine, the chief competitor for the crown of Scotland against Baliol and the elder Bruce; see note to Book i. 51.

388. *Brathwek*, i.e., Brodick Castle, on the E. coast of Arran. Jamieson is doubtful about the etymology of it, but it does not admit of a moment's doubt; for the spelling *Brathwek* clearly points to the Icel. *breiðr*, broad, and the spelling *Brodick* is an equally obvious cor-

ruption of Broad Wick, *i.e.*, broad bay, alluding to the semicircular bay just at that place. See Lord of the Isles, v. 6, and the note.

391. *Abandonit*, subjected; as in l. 655. Thus Skelton has *to abandune*, *i.e.*, to subject, in his Magnyfycence, l. 1477, ed. Dyce, l. 273; and see Dyce's note, ii. 260.

392. *Warn*, refuse; more commonly spelt *werne*.

464. The tradition is that Bruce landed at a place on the west coast of Arran, still called the King's Cove. See Jamieson, who refers to Stat. Acc. ix. 167.

518. *The tothir day*, the next day; lit. the second day.

556. *Turnberis nwk*, Turnberry Point, on the Ayrshire coast, some distance to the south of Ayr. The castle belonged to the Earls of Carrick, and in this instance to Bruce himself. See next note.

599. "Edward bestowed the lordship of Annandale, the paternal estate of Bruce, on the Earl of Hereford; the earldom of Carrick, his maternal estate, on Henry Percey," &c.; Ann. of Scot. ii. 15.

606. "Had become English," *i.e.*, had sided with the English.

609. *To vend*, to go; *i.e.*, he intended to go. The reading *went* (E. and H.) is wrong, as the sequel will show that he did not go after all.

618. As for this mysterious fire, it still remains unexplained. See Lord of the Isles, v. 17, and the note. The story is continued further on, v. 14.

632. This story about the goodwife is repeated in Book vii. 238, *q. v.*

682. *Wes*, *i.e.*, was inspired. *Ieromy*, Jeremiah. *Ysay* (l. 683), Isaiah.

685. *So thyn ar sawin*, are sown so thinly, are dispersed so widely; *i.e.*, come so seldom. Cf. *sawyn*; Wallace, xi. 1226.

697. *Segis*, mansions, or positions. *Soft*, propitious.

711. "So that he should spend his utmost power on astrology," lit. should break his head in (studying) the stars.

721. "That confers upon them their natural dispositions."

735. "That men, naturally predisposed (by their nativities) to evil."

747. *Nigramansy*, necromancy; spelt *nigromancye* in Piers Plowman, A. xi. 158. The Latin medieval writers spelt it *nigromantia*, and hence the phrase "the black art"; see the remarks on the word in Trench, Eng. Past and Present, Lect. v.

753. *Pithones*. This reading, from Hart's edition (but with the ending *-s* for *-sse*), was adopted as being more intelligible. Strictly speaking, the correct reading is certainly *Phitones*, as in the Edinburgh MS.; for though *Phitones* is an erroneous spelling, it was the usual spelling in medieval writers. Thus Chaucer has *Phitonesse* in his Freres Tale, l. 7092, ed. Tyrwhitt; Lydgate has it twice; so also Gower, Skelton, G. Douglas, and Sir D. Lyndsay; see the references in Dyce's Skelton, ii. 151. The passage in Skelton is in Phyllyp Sparowe, ll. 1342-1359:—

"I coniure Phyllyp, and call  
 In the name of kyng Saul;  
*Primo Regum* expresse,  
 He bade the Phitonesse  
 To wytychcraft her to dresse," &c.

Thus the *Phitonesse* is the witch of Endor, called *pythonissa* in 1 Chron. x. 13 (Vulgate); the derivation being from Python. A similar transposition of consonants is seen in Chaucer's *Adriane* for *Ariadne*.

771. "Guessed it, or certainly knew it."

## NOTES TO BOOK V. (A.D. 1306, 1307.)

(Jamieson, IV. 1-656; Innes, pp. 102-126.)

1-13. Quoted in Warton's Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 288. Lines 1-88 are quoted (from Jamieson's edition) in a note to Lord of the Isles, v. 9.

1. *Were, i.e., Ver*, the spring. But I suspect Barbour is wrong, and that the time of the year was the autumn (of 1306). "Bruce suddenly issues from his retreat, at the end of September. He besieges Henry de Percy in Turnbury Castle (near Girvan, in Ayrshire), but an English force puts him again to flight;" Annals of England, p. 176. Barbour was thinking of the spring of 1307, when Douglas won his castle; see l. 255. Hailes (Ann. Scot. ii. 17) thinks that Barbour is right.

11. "To recover the covering of their heads," lit. head. *Hevede* is clearly the proper reading, though written *hewid* in MS. E., and *hede* in MS. C. The final *e* is, however, superfluous, and the very best reading would be *heved*, with *reved* in l. 12.

13. In a footnote to Warton, Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 288, Mr Hazlitt explains *grewis* by 'growing things.' This is, of course, an error. *Grewis* = *grevis*, *i.e., groves*; a word familiar to readers of Chaucer, as occurring in one of his best passages; see Kn. Tale, 637. The reading *gressys, i.e., grasses*, is very inferior.

15. "With his fleet and a small company." The story is continued from Book iv. 631.

24. *Intill ane*, in one direction, in a straight course. See the story as told in the Lord of the Isles, v. 13-17, and the notes.

74. *Purway*, provide, ordain; rather than 'prepare,' as explained by Scott.

76. *Myne heritage*. Turnbury Castle had belonged to Bruce's mother, Martha, Countess of Carrick. See Lord of the Isles, note to v. 19.



85. "For a warrior should not take much heed."

87. Cf. "dolus, an uirtus, quis in hoste requirat;" Virg. *Æn.* ii. 390.

104. Langtoft, as translated by Brunne, ed. Hearne, ii. 337, speaks of "a sergeant of Galweye, his name was Makedowel," who seized Thomas and Alexander Bruce, the king's brothers, and delivered them up to King Edward. Jamieson supposes him to be the Macdowell here mentioned, though there seems to be nothing to show this. See *Ann. Scot.* ii. 19.

133. *A lady.* Speaking of this very period, Fordun (cap. cxxi.) says of Bruce—"tandem, Deo miserante, per auxilium et potentiam Christianæ de Insulis cujusdam nobilis feminæ, et sibi benevolæ, adjutus, post multos et varios circuitus et infinitos labores, dolores et pressuras, rediit ad comitatum de Carryk;" &c. Cf. l. 178 below.

151. *Erll Adell*, the Earl of Athole; see Book iv. 62. He was executed at London; *Annals of Scotland*, ii. 14. See note to the Lord of the Isles, ii. 26.

152. *The queyn*; see Book iv. 55.

153. *Heldand*, inclining; cf. viii. 14, and the note.

156. *Cristole of Setoun*; see Book iv. 16, and note to ii. 243\*.

174. "Except where worth might be proved;" *i.e.*, on the battlefield.

201. *Schonand*, shunning. The Edinb. MS. has *skownrand* or *skowurand*. Jamieson inserted the latter form in his Dictionary, but corrected it to the former one in his edition.

214. *Lap on*, leapt on horseback; *i.e.*, took horse and fled.

236. "He shall not enjoy it without a fight."

255-462. Quoted from Jamieson's edition, in the Appendix to Introduction to *Castle Dangerous*.

262. "Dimidium facti qui cœpit habet; sapere aude;" Horat. Ep. i. 2, 40. The common English proverb is—"Well begun is half done."

271. Douglasdale, in Kirkcudbrightshire. See the description of it in *Castle Dangerous*, ch. i.; and compare Barbour's account with that novel, and with *Tales of a Grandfather*, ch. ix. See *Hist. of Douglas*, by Hume of Godscroft, ed. 1644, p. 27.

276. *His fader*, Lord William Douglas. Hume of Godscroft, in his *Hist. of Douglas*, p. 17, tells how Thomas Dickson assisted Lord William to take the castle of Sanwheire by stratagem.

296. *Manrent*, homage; short for *manreden*; the usual M.E. form is *manrede* or *manred*. The suffix is the same as that in *kind-red*, *hat-red*. So also *lufrent* for *lufreden*, in *How the Good Wife taught her Daughter*, ll. 90, 201.

307. *Palmesonday*, Palm Sunday, March 19, 1307. See *Castle Dangerous*, ch. xx.

317. *A mantill*. "The close vest with sleeves, and mantle or cloke over it, in the Spanish fashion, were long the dress of the men in

Scotland, poor as well as rich. See Peblis to the Play, and other old Scottish Poems."—P.

336. *Sanct Brydis*, Saint Bridget's or Saint Bride's. Her day was Feb. 1; see Chambers, Book of Days, i. 206.

388. *Burdīs set*, tables set out; alluding to the movable tables, set on trestles, commonly used in the olden time. They were laid aside when the feast was over. See Our Eng. Home, p. 30.

403. "Then he struck off the heads of the tuns of wine." See the description of the Douglas Larder in Castle Dangerous, ch. iv.; and Hist. of Douglas, by Hume of Godscroft, ed. 1644, p. 28, where we read that "this Cellar is called yet the Douglas Lairder."

412. *Fordid*, destroyed, spoilt, rendered useless; misprinted *sordid*, P. and J. It occurs again; ix. 323.

424. *Or than*, or, at any rate.

433. "In order that men should less know where they were."

493. *As of the men*, as among the men. Hart has—*As ony man*, a needless change.

521. This story of the three traitors who attempted to kill Bruce is told over again, in a different form, in Book vii. 400. There is another similar story in Book vii. 79. In fact, the number of times it appears, in some form or other, is rather confusing. The clearest way is to give the list of them:—

(1) The two Macindrossers, with a third man not named, attack Bruce when on horseback. All are slain. Book iii. 93.

(2) A one-eyed man and his two sons undertake to slay Bruce for a reward of forty pounds, and attack Bruce and his page. All are slain; v. 485.

(3) Five of John of Lorn's men attack Bruce and his foster-brother. All are slain; vi. 595.

(4) Three traitors, carrying a wether, after passing the night with Bruce and his foster-brother in a lone house, attack them. All are slain, as well as the foster-brother; vii. 79.

(5) Three traitors find the king alone with his two hounds. All are slain, two of them by a hound; vii. 400.

These adventures do not include the fight between Bruce and Lorn's men, on which occasion he slew fourteen; vi. 108.

546. *Varrar*, more aware, better aware.

575. *About his hals*, hung round his neck. This shows that the sword was a long two-handed one, like Lord Lindesay's, as described in The Abbot, ch. xxi.

595. *Bot and*, and also. *A vyre*, a cross-bow bolt; Pinkerton wrongly says 'an arrow.'

642. *Toym*, leisure; a different word from *tym*, time.

## NOTES TO BOOK VI. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, IV. 657—V. 300; Innes, pp. 126-150.)

3. *Yngerame*, Sir Ingraham de Umfraville. This is a manifest slip of memory; the person meant is Sir Ingraham Bell, governor of Ayr, as distinctly stated in Book v. 483.

84. "That they might land together (on the opposite shore)."

85\*. The eight lines, from *His twa men* to *allane abaid*, are all duly marked with an asterisk (as in other places), to show that they are not in Pinkerton's edition.

87. *Qukistlyng*, baying. The reading *questionyng* in the Edinb. MS. is a false one, added afterwards in darker ink. Hart has *whissilling*. Cf. l. 94.

101-106. These lines are a corrupt repetition of ll. 85\*-92\*. The Cambridge MS. rightly omits them.

120. "Since he was protected with armour."

121. *Thurt*, needed; clearly the right reading; see the footnote. The line means—"so that he needed not fear their arrows." Though this form does not seem to be noticed by Jamieson, it is common enough. Spelt *purt*, it occurs six times in William of Palerne; and spelt *port*, three more times in the same. See other instances in the Glossary to William of Palerne, s. v. *port*. Stratmann, s. v. *thurfen*, gives several examples, with the spellings *thurfte*, *thurte*, and *thorte*. See Book xx. 107, footnote.

128. *For litill stryngth of erd*, owing to a slight vantage of position. *Tane*, undertaken.

149. *Fiff sum*, five in all; cf. note to iii. 420, and *sex sum* in l. 231 below.

179. This story is clearly inserted to give some air of probability to the preceding story about Bruce. The original passage is in Statius, *Thebaidos*, lib. ii. Barbour's account may be compared with that in Lydgate's *Story of Thebes*, pt. ii. l. 1128. See the whole passage from Lydgate, with explanatory notes, in *Specimens of English*, A.D. 1394-1579, ed. Skeat, pp. 28-33, 376-379.

196. "The other (should reign) a year, after that (the first year) was past."

210. *Behufit away*, behoved to get away—i.e., had to pass.

246. *And oft fell*, and it often happened.

268. *Him allane*, alone by himself. Similarly, Burns has *her lane*, for *her alane*. And see ll. 273, 278, 320.

314. "Then they greatly praised God, the almighty."

316. *Thaim byrd*, it behoved them. See *burien* in Stratmann.

323, 324. "They that were always accustomed to be with him marvelled, and pressed forward (lit. yearned) to see him."

336. In a note on the Four Cardinal Virtues, pr. in. Reliq. Antiq., p. 154, we find—"Fortitudo itaque habet in dextro latere audaciam, in sinistro ignaviam." See also Ratis Raving, ed. Lumby, p. 34; and Spenser, F. Q. ii. 2, 38.

348, 349. "And undertakes that which should be undertaken, and leaves what should be left."

392. *Thirlwall*, Thirlwall; mentioned above, v. 460. The name means 'pierce-wall,' and Fordun (Scotichron. iii. 10) tells a story about the Picts and Scots piercing the great Roman wall of Hadrian, whence (according to him) the place where the wall had most suffered was called Thirlit-wall, *i.e.*, pierced wall, in Latin *Murus perforatus*. Wynthoun (Cronykil, v. 3251) likewise says that the Roman wall was called *Thryl-wal*, though the name was doubtless only applied to a particular portion of it. Camden (Britannia, iii. 490) says that "Thirlewall castle" is near the rivulet Poltross, and that it stands "where the Scots opened to themselves a way into the province between Irthing and Tine." This means a few miles to the westward of Haltwhistle, on the borders of Northumberland and Cumberland. Thirlwall was, in fact, the name of a Northumbrian family, who may have been so named from living near a place where the Roman wall had been broken through by the Scots.

432. "Was slain there in the battle."

463. Cumnock is in Ayrshire. *Stratest*, narrowest. The reference is clearly to a *district* named Cumnock, *i.e.*, to the valley joining Old to New Cumnock, and opening into the valley of the Nith. See l. 511.

481. John of Lorn, the son of Allaster of Lorn; see note to Lord of the Isles, i. 11; and see Scott's abridgment of the present passage of Barbour in the note to canto ii. st. 32 of the same poem. Wallace was hunted in a similar manner; see Jamieson's or Moir's edition of Wallace, v. 25, note.

487. *Strecour*, a fast runner, a dog for the chase; from the verb *streke*, to go rapidly (Halliwell). The Edinb. MS. and Hart have the absurd reading *traitour*!

503. "For the sake of Sir John Comyn, his uncle." But Comyn was father-in-law to the father of John of Lorn; see note to Book iii. 1.

510. *Randale*, Randolph; at this period on the English side; see note to ii. 237.

522, 523. "Paid attention to them, and to no other quarter, and did foolishly."

538. "Was far stronger than he (*i.e.*, his party) was, and more in number."

561. "He (King Robert) supposed that he (Lorn) knew that it was really the king whom he was following."

650. "Has slain the fifth;" lit. has done the fifth out of days. The phrase is common. Cf. Will. of Palerne, l. 3817; and see l. 652.

656. Perhaps *till* should be *to*, *i.e.*, too; the constant confusion be-

tween *till* and *to* in both the MSS. would easily cause the mistake, if it be one. At any rate *till* is here used with that sense. The line means—'But ye took to yourself too great a share.'

666. "I could annoy them very much the more."

## NOTES TO BOOK VII. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, V. 301-935; Innes, pp. 150-173.)

1. Lines 1-230 and 400-487 are given in Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat, ed. 1873, pp. 203-214; with explanatory notes at pp. 335-337, many of which are here repeated.

2. *Vill of vayn*, for *will of wayn*, completely at a loss; see note above, to ii. 471. So also *will of vayn* in l. 225.

10. *Abyde 3he heir*, if ye abide here. Observe how the inferior addresses his superior as *ye*; the superior replies with *thou*, l. 15.

18. "That whosoever would aye wade along stream the length of a bowshot."

27. "And continued their way along it;" here *held on* signifies continued, persevered in.

48. "And he is very far off by this time."

65. *Lest on lif*, last alive, remain alive.

71. "And stood lurking in a bush."

72. "Until the hound came close at hand." It is interesting to observe that even Shakespeare uses *while* in the sense of *until*; see Macbeth, iii. 1. 44; Richard II. i. 3. 122.

90. *Price and lovynge*, honour and praise. If *loving* had been intended, it would have been written *luff* or *luffing*.

103. "If he were attacked (or challenged to fight) on equal terms."

105. This is the adventure so excellently told in the Lord of the Isles, canto iii. st. 18-30.

118. "And asked them whither they wished to go."

127. *Late*, demeanour; lit. gesture, manner.

132. *Bryng hym than of daw*, then bring him out of day, i.e., kill him; as above. See note to vi. 650.

135. *Hawynge*, demeanour; lit. having.

137. "Fellows, ye must, all three, till we be better acquainted, go in front all by yourselves." Cf. l. 146.

142. "Sir, there is no need to believe any ill (to be) in us."

160. The reading of the Edinb. MS. is very inferior. The word *a* is emphatic, and means *one*.

163. The word 'houſ' is written for 'houſis,' and should be read as a dissyllable.

177. "Saw that it became him of necessity to sleep." *Slep* is here a verb in the infinitive mood, not a substantive.

179. *Valk*=*vakk*, awake; used transitively. The intransitive form is *walkyn*, whence *valknyt* in ll. 210, 291. The introduction of the letter *n* (after a stem) renders a verb intransitive in Mæso-Gothic, Swedish, &c. See note on verbs ending in *-nan*; Skeat's Mæso-Gothic Glossary, p. 303. Cf. Swed. *vaka*, to watch; *vakna*, to awake.

188. *As foul on twist*, like a bird on a bough.

192. *Routit he*, snored loudly; *he*=high, *i.e.*, loudly.

218. *Na war*, &c.; had it not been for the defensive armour which he wore.

238. *The gud vif*, the goodwife, the mistress of the house. This story, of the goodwife who predicted Bruce's success and sent her sons with him, is repeated from Book iv. 632.

Jamieson has a long 'additional note,' containing a tradition that the three sons of a widow (all by different husbands, and consequently bearing three different names, Murdoch, Mac Kay, and Mac Lurg) helped Bruce, by a stratagem, to gain a victory at a bog called Moss Raploch, near the Dee. They were rewarded by grants of land.

302\*. *To-vauerand*, lit. to-wavering, *i.e.*, wandering uncertainly in different directions. This is certainly the true original reading, for which *to warrand*, *i.e.*, to a place of security (as in Hart's edition), is an ingenious substitution; so also in l. 331. We have already had *vauerand*, wandering, vagabond, in l. 112 above, and the verb *vaueryt*, wandered, in l. 41. Cf. *wauerand wynd*, *i.e.*, changeable wind, in Wallace, iv. 340. For *varrand*, see l. 347.

330. *Nakyt*, *i.e.*, unprovided with defensive armour; the usual sense. See l. 434.

368. The reading *sagat* (E.) instead of *sa* (C.) is better, because otherwise the line is too short. The sense is the same.

400-487. Printed in Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat.

439. *Haf 3he*, if ye have. Cf. vii. 10, and the note.

447. *But langar frest*, without longer delay.

455. *Top our taill*, top over tail, head over heels.

467. *Schot*, rushed, darted; so *schute*, dart, in l. 390. In like manner *schot*=rushed, in Havelok, l. 1838.

471. "That stone-dead he fell (lit. drove) to the earth."

494. *Glentruwell*, Glentruel or Glentrool; probably the Glen of Loch Trool, which is near the western border of Kirkcudbrightshire. It was "a strate place," *i.e.*, a narrow pass; l. 529.

543. *May we do swa*, if we may do so; if we can succeed in doing so. See l. 439 above, and the note.

622. *Clyffurd*, one of the family of the Cliffords of Cumberland. *Wauss*, *i.e.*, Vaux, also the name of a Cumberland family. Vaux was originally *de Vaulx*, *i.e.*, *de Vallibus*, of the vales. "Henry II. bestowed Gilsland on Hubert, a Norman, who took the name of *de Vaulx*,

as descriptive of his property, 'from the dales or vallies of which the country is full.' It has been said, for the same reason, that it was called Gilsland; from *gill*, which 'in the dialect of the county signifies a dale or valley.' See Hutchinson's Cumberland, i. 47; Camden, iii. 455.—J. *Gill*, by the way, signifies a rather small ravine or rocky chasm; Icel. *gil*. *Maid a melle*, had a quarrel, took to blows.

623. *Raucht him a cole*, fetched him a buffet. *Colè* is properly a blow on the neck; O.Fr. *colee* (Burguy), from *col*, the neck. It was used both of a blow given in anger and of the *accolade* given in dubbing a knight. The Edinb. MS. has *roucht nocht him to lee*, recked not to lie to him (or, to call him a liar). Hart reads *raucht him routes three*, gave (lit. reached) him three blows.

624. "And either then betook himself to his own men;" i.e., they took sides, and began a general fight. Hence *Departit* = parted, l. 626.

632. *Com of toune*, lit. came out of town; merely a general phrase for 'set out.'

634. "Saw so few men offer them battle."

#### NOTES TO BOOK VIII. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, Book VI. 1-520; Innes, pp. 173-192.)

3. *Montanis*, the mountains in the north-western parts of Kirkcudbrightshire; cf. Book vii. 494, 516.

9. *Kyle*. This is a district of Ayrshire, occupying the central portion of it, between Cunningham on the north, and Carrick on the south. It contains the Craigs of Kyle, above the river Doon.

13. Cunningham is the name of a district, in the northern part of Ayrshire. See above.

14. *He gert helde*, he caused to incline; cf. *heldand*, inclining, in v. 153. See *helden*, to incline, in Stratmann.

15. Bothwell Castle; on the Clyde, above Glasgow.

18. *Quhile*, once, formerly.

28. Godscroft says—"Sir James Douglas, knowing the way by which they must go, called *Machanacks way*, he lay in a strait foord betwene two marishes, called *Ederfoord*;" Hist. Douglas, p. 28. But Jamieson says that the late David Macpherson held that the form in MS. E. is right, and that *Makyrnokis way* is "a narrow pass on the bank of Makyrnok wattyr;" Geog. Illust. He placed it near Kilmarnock; which, by the way, is mentioned in l. 95 below.

37. *South half*, south side. So also *apon north half* means "on the north side of"; ix. 309.

95. Kilwinning is between Kilmarnock and Ardrossan. At Ardrossan, Sir Philip had reached the sea-coast of Ayrshire; he then followed the coast-line due north, through Largs to Innerkip. The rest fled back to Bothwell (l. 111) in an opposite direction.

123. Galston is not far to the E. of Kilmarnock. Loudoun and Loudoun Castle are close to Galston.

133. The year meant is 1307. "That Bruce defeated Sir Aymer at Loudon-hill, appears from the English historians Matthew of Westminster and Trivet; see Annals of Scotland, ii. 20."—P.

218. *Eschelis*, squadrons; a better reading than *battalis*; see footnote. In Marco Polo, ed. Yule, ii. 326, we find "Ils font *eschiel* en mer." Colonel Yule's note is—" *Eschiel* is the equivalent of the Italian *schera* or *schiera*, a troop or squadron, and thence applied to order of battle, whether by land or sea." It is perfectly clear that the O.Fr. *eschele*, a squadron, sometimes spelt *eschiere*, and borrowed from the O.H. Ger. *scara* (mod. Ger. *schaar*), a troop, which again is from the O.H. Ger. *scerjan*, *skerjan*, to divide (E. to *shear*)—is a totally different word from O.Fr. *eschelle*, a ladder, from the Lat. *scala*. The two forms were, however, early confused, and the less intelligible word *eschiere* was modified so as to coincide with the common term *eschelle*. It is one of the very numerous examples of a corruption in the form of a word, due to close resemblance of an obscure to a well-known form.

226. (Footnote.) Jamieson gives the (very corrupt) reading of E. thus—

"Thar bassynettis burnyst all  
Agayne the son glemand off lycht all."

257. *That vs thar dout*, whom it needs us to fear; cf. *vs betydis* in l. 254. Pinkerton and Jamieson, not understanding the word *thar*, misread it as *char*, which is unmeaning. See the Glossary.

280. *Cant and keyn*, proud and bold; certainly the right reading. It was a common phrase. It occurs, for example, in Laurence Minot; see Spec. of Eng., ed. Morris and Skeat, sect. xi. (c.) 107—

"The king of Beme was *cant and kene*,  
Bot þare he left both play and pride."

290. *Ek thair renownee*, increase their renown; cf. *ranowne*, l. 520.

296. *Sarray*, closely; used as equivalent to *sarryly*. The line means—"And right closely together rode along." Innes rightly explains *sarray* (mis-rendered 'artfully' by Jamieson), but is himself wrong in making *raid*=arrayed. See *raid*, rode, in l. 89.

351. *To-ga*, fled away, is here a past tense. See *to-ga* in the Glossary, and cf. Book ix. 263, 269.

361. *The king*. This must mean Edward I., who was not yet dead, though his death has been narrated at a much earlier point of the narrative; see Book iv. 333, and note to iv. 190. In l. 364, it means his successor, for Sir Aymer fought at Bannockburn; see Book xi. 176.



368. "With a small army like a rabble."

393. *The Month*, i.e., the Grampian mountains; see note to Book ii. 494. Tytler (Hist. Scotland, i. 102) defines 'the Mounth' as being "the name anciently given to that part of the Grampian chain which extends from the borders of the district called the Mearns to Loch Rannach."

395. Sir Alexander Fraser was last mentioned in Book ii. 407; see note to ii. 239.

397. *Symon*. It is odd that Sir Simon Fraser should be mentioned here, as he was put to death the year before; see note to ii. 239. It is still more odd that he should be mentioned yet again, in Book ix. 10.

425. *Selcryk*, Selkirk; Hart has *Ettrik*. See a note upon "Selkirk, or Ettrick forest," in Lord of the Isles, v. 34, note.

427. *Gedword*, C.; *Jedworthis*, E. This Jedworth forest must have been on the banks of the Jed, which runs past Jedburgh into the Teviot. It is called 'Jedward forest' by Hume of Godscroft; see last line of Appendix I. to Introduction to Castle Dangerous. Jedworth is the old name of Jedburgh. See the note to The Wallace, ed. Jamieson, vii. 1277.

447. *Lanrik*. There is a Lanrick not far from the Trosachs and Loch Vennachar, but the place here meant is clearly Lanark, the principal town in the neighbourhood of Douglasdale; and, indeed, MS. E. reads *lanark*; see the footnote. The line means—"just as if they wanted to go to Lanark," i.e., for the purpose of selling the contents of the sacks. See the story in Godscroft, quoted in App. I. to Introd. to Castle Dangerous; see also a note to the Lord of the Isles, vi. 1; and Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix. "The castle-hill of Lanark is on the south of the town, but no ruin of the castle remains; its scite (*sic*) being now (A.D. 1790) a bowling-green and garden."—P.

450. *Ladis*, loads; see l. 467. *Gang on raw*, proceeding in a row.

453. Sir John of Webtoun is called Sir John Walton by Godscroft, and Sir John de Walton by Scott. See Castle Dangerous, especially the Appendix to the Introduction, which contains Godscroft's account of Douglas's successes.

## NOTES TO BOOK IX. (A.D. 1307, 1308.)

(Jamieson, VI. 521—VII. 298; Innes, pp. 192-219.)

1. We have now come to about the time of the death of Edward I., which took place July 7, 1307. It has been inserted much too early; see note to Book iv. 190.

10. This seems to be a mistake; see note to viii. 397.

34. *Enuerrowry*, Inverury, on the Don, about 15 miles north-west of Aberdeen. "Bruce went to the north of Scotland, October, 1307." —P.

59. *But strinth*, without a strongly fortified place to protect them.

64. The sense of *apane* is not clear here; it is certainly an adverb, and represents the French *à peine* etymologically, but Barbour uses it, both here and in l. 89, in a very odd way. The quotations in Jamieson show that it is also used, in Wallace, in an equally strange manner. Jamieson resorts to the desperate guess that, *in this particular passage*, it means 'provided,' from the old French *apaner*, to nourish, provide. This is quite out of the question, and not worth considering, as it does not answer for l. 89. In Wallace (viii. 911), Jamieson says that "nocht apayn" means 'scarcely, hardly,' and refers us to Cotgrave, who translates *à peine* by 'hardly, not without much ado.' This, again, is clearly wrong, because it ignores the negative, and makes 'nocht apayn' and 'apayn' to mean exactly the same thing. There is another passage in Wallace (xi. 1313) where *apayn off loss off lywe* means 'on pain of loss of life,' a sense which is also found in old French for *à peine*. This gives a gleam of light; and we may, I think, suppose *apayn* to mean here 'under a penalty,' or 'at a pinch.' The line then means—'Unless they be, at a pinch, the braver men.' So too, in l. 89, we may suppose the sense to be—'yet shall they flee, at a pinch;' *i.e.*, for fear of losing their lives. So too, in Wallace, viii. 911, we have—"And nocht *apayn* to wyn it by no slycht," *i.e.*, and not, at a pinch, to win (the town) by any stratagem.

107. *The Slevach*. Pinkerton reads *Slenauch*, and says—"The Slenauch is probably in the mountains of Benachie, a few miles west of Inverury." Jamieson has *Slenauch*, unexplained. The MSS. of Fordun (Gest. Annal. cap. cxxii.) have both *Slenach* (or *Sleuach*) and *Slevach*. In every instance where *Slenach* occurs, it is doubtless a misreading for *Sleuach*=*Slevach*. Innes prints *slevach*, and says—"It is believed to be Sliach, a place in the parish of Drumblate in the Garioch, where a consistent local tradition concurs with chronicle and history," p. 497; and adds an additional remark at p. 517. Sliach is, in fact, in the parish of Drumblate, some 16 miles to the north-west of Inverury. It is just outside the Garioch, and can be reached by a narrow road, the Glens of Foudland, which could easily be defended. The Garioch is a large plain, and the Hills of Foudland form one of its barriers. See J. Robertson's Collections on the Shires of Aberdeen and Banff, p. 476.

110. "Johannes Cumyne, comes de Buchane, anno Domini MCCCVII, cum multis nobilibus, tam Anglicis quam Scotis, audientes, quod rex Scociæ Robertus cum suo exercitu esset apud Sleuach, processerunt obviam ei parati ad prælium;" Fordun, Gest. Ann. c. cxxii., g.v.

127. *Martymes*, Martinmas, *i.e.*, Nov. 11, 1307.

138. *Maid knyghtis*, dubbed some new knights—the common practice before a battle. So in xii. 413.

188. *Strabogy*, Strathbogie, the vale of the Bogie, within which is situated the town of Huntly, Aberdeenshire.

190. *Couer and ga*, to recover and walk about.

202. *Ald Meldrom*, Old Meldrum, not far from Inverury.

204. *Befor 30ill-evyn ane nycht*, one night before Christmas Eve, or two nights before Christmas Day. The account in Fordun differs; he makes the Earl of Buchan's men afraid to attack the Bruce, as above, l. 183, but he dates this at Christmas, saying—"Sicque die natalis Domini pudore victi et confusi redierunt, treugas postulabant," &c. The battle described here by Barbour (ll. 206-279) is related by Fordun under the date 1308. He says—"Iterum congregati sunt Johannes Comyne et Philippus de Mubra cum Scotis et Anglicis quampluribus apud Innerury, anno Domini mcccviii, quod, ut rex Robertus audivit, gravi adhuc infirmitate detentus, de grabato suo, quo semper portabatur, surrexit, et suis, ut se armarent et equo ut imponerent imperavit." Lord Hailes gives May 22, 1308, as the date of this battle; Ann. Scot. ii. 24.

249. *Merdale*, rabble; from O.Fr. *merdaille*, a dirty crew.

289. "The son of him that was in Kildrummy;" cf. Book iv. 62.

297. *Fra end till end*. The district extends along the north of Aberdeenshire, and can be traced by the names Buchan-haven, near Peterhead, Buchan Ness (S. of Peterhead), Bullers o' Buchan, still further south along the coast, and Logie Buchan, on the river Ythan.

306. *Mair and mair*. Fordun notices that this was the turning-point in Bruce's career; after his battle with the Earl of Buchan, he was always as successful as he had before been unfortunate. The real cause of this is easily traced to the death of Edward I.

309. *The scottis se*, a name given to the Firth of Forth; cf. l. 460.

312. *Forster*, forester. "A village, vulgarly named *Froster-seat*, about two miles east from Forfar, is said to be properly designed (*sic*) *Forester-seat*, as having been the place where the forester anciently resided. *Platan* is unquestionably the same which is called the Forest of *Platter* or *Plater*, in a charter of Robert Bruce 'to the Abbey of Restennet,' granting 'a liberty to cut wood in it'; Ind. Chart. 4. 43. This priory is about a mile from Forfar, and not more distant from *Forester-seat*. The grant was renewed by his son David; *ibid.* 38. 40."—J. See Jamieson's note for further information.

328. *All fre*. "But Dundee was still held by the English, till 1313. See Book x. 801."—P.

338. *Moffat* seems the right reading; the Camb. MS. has *Mufhet*, as I read it. Innes read it *Musket*, and took it to mean *Montefix*, which seems rather far-fetched. *Olifert* or *Olifart* is the same as Oliphard, the old form of the name which is now spelt Oliphant, pro-

bably by a corruption. See Craufurd's Peerage, p. 376, and Jamieson's note.

340. *The erill*. Malise, Earl of Strathern; see l. 434.

391. There is an odd story in The Wallace about a Sir Thomas de Longueville, who had been a pirate; and it is asserted (bk. xi. 1148) that he was the "knight of France" here mentioned by Barbour.

412. *The tothir*, the second. *Tuk*, reached the top of, surmounted.

450. Fordun (Gest. Annal. cap. cxxix.) dates the taking of Perth on Jan. 8, 1312, which seems to be the right date. Barbour here places it earlier, apparently in 1308.

509. Barbour again speaks of "Sir Aymery of Sanct John" in Book xvi. 506. He has made a mistake in the Christian name; the knight's name was *John* de St John. See Annals of Scotland, ii. 25; Jamieson's note; and a note to Lord of the Isles, vi. 1. "The custody of the marches of Cumberland and Annandale was given to him, and he died in the year 1302;" Ann. of England, p. 173. A drawing of his coat of arms is given in the same work, at p. 177.

517. The Cree divides Wigtownshire from Kirkcudbrightshire. Fordun says the battle took place beside the Dee. He dates it June 29, 1308.

522. The Camb. MS. has *buttil*, which Innes retains, with the remark that "the Edinb. MS. and the editions have *Bothwell*, in contempt of geography." But he does not tell us where 'Buttill' is, and, after all, Bothwell is not so very far off. However, it is generally considered that the place meant is a certain Butel Castle, on the sea-coast of Galloway, which belonged to the Balliol family; see Ann. Scot. ii. 36, note; Tytler's Hist. Scot. i. 104; Ker's Bruce, i. 345. If this be the true solution, then the Camb. MS. is right after all, and the reading *buttil* has therefore been retained.

609, 610. "When they had hastily pierced through them, they boldly directed their heads inwards again," *i.e.*, having charged right through, they turned their horses' heads round and charged again.

673. *The forest*, *i.e.*, of Selkirk, otherwise called Ettrick forest; see Book viii. 425, and the note. Barbour uses it in a wide sense, as he makes it extend to the Water of Lyne; see next note.

683. The "wattir of Lyne" falls into the Tweed, a few miles above Peebles.

686. "Heard their sayings, every word of them." The Edinb. MS. has the extraordinary variation—"And hard ane say tharin—'the dewill!'" Upon which variation, probably quite corrupt, Sir Walter Scott founded his remark in the Lord of the Isles, v. 7—"A language *much unmeet* he hears." See Scott's own note upon that line.

691, 692. According to Jamieson, Sir Alexander Stewart of Bonkill or Bonkle (now Bunkle) was grandson of Alexander, High Steward of Scotland. Bunkle is not far from Duns, Berwickshire.

695. Adam of Gordon afterwards sided with Bruce, but not till after

1312; see xv. 333. He afterwards obtained from Bruce the lordship of Strathbogie, Aberdeenshire. See Jamieson's note, who refers to Nisbet, Heraldry, i. 308; Gordon's Hist. of the House of Sutherland, p. 38; Ind. Chart. 2. 40; Rymer's Fœdera, iii. 82, 300, 396. West Gordon is in Berwickshire, S.W. of Greenlaw.

## NOTES TO BOOK X. (A.D. 1308-1313.)

(Jamieson, Book VII. 299-1126; Innes, pp. 219-249.)

8. A.D. 1308, according to Fordun, Gest. Annal. cap. cxxvi.—“De conflictu regis Roberti contra Ergadienses.” It was “about Aug. 23”; Ann. Scot. ii. 26.

11. *John of Lorn*; see Book vi. 481, and the note. This adventure is described in the Tales of a Grandfather, near the end of chap. ix., and in the Lord of the Isles, note to i. 11.

17. *Ane euill place*, the terrible Pass of Brander, down which the river Awe flows, out of Loch Awe into Loch Etive. See the description in note K to the Highland Widow.

27. *Crechanben*, Ben Cruachan, overlooking Lochs Awe and Etive, Argyleshire; see the Highland Widow, ch. i. Though not “the highest mountain in all Britain,” it is of great height, about 3670 feet, or somewhat higher than Snowdon.

34. *The se*, the lake; *i.e.*, Loch Etive, a sea-loch, not the inland Loch Awe, from which the ships could not have escaped. The reader should consult the minute descriptions of this scene in notes K and L to the Highland Widow, one of which is quoted from the Bridal of Caolchairn, the other from Tytler's Life of Bruce.

73. *Apert*, open, manifest; *i.e.*, bold. Pinkerton prints *a pert*, and takes *pert* to mean ‘brisk.’ This must have arisen from inattention, as the word is very common. See l. 315 below.

82. *Ane vattir*, the river Awe.

86. *Brig*, bridge. Of course only a slight wooden one; see ll. 88, 93. It was situate at a place called the Rocks of Brander.

113. *Dunstaffynch*, called *Dunstaffynch* in Fordun, cap. cxxvi., is now generally called *Dunstaffnage*. Dunstaffnage Castle is near Oban, on the W. coast of Argyleshire. See Pennant's Hebrides, p. 410.

123. Alexander; otherwise called Allaster of Argyle; or, in Fordun, “Alexander de Ergadia.” See Annals of Scotland, ii. 27, and note to Lord of the Isles, i. 11.

125. *Tretis*, an offer of a truce; the Edinb. MS. has *treysteris*, *i.e.*, men to treat about a truce. Fordun says that Bruce and Alexander

could not come to terms, expressly contrary to Barbour's account. He adds that Alexander fled to England, and died there.

129. *Rebell*, rebellious. "The Earl of Ulster is ordained to co-operate with the fleet of Johannes de Ergadia, or John of Lorn, in opposing the rebellious subjects of Edward II., as he denominates the Scots, An. 1310. See Rymer's *Fœdera*, iii. 223."—J.

136. Here there seems to be a considerable break in the narrative. The capture of Linlithgow Castle did not take place, it is supposed, till 1311. In 1310, according to Fordun, there was a severe famine in Scotland. Also a truce had been concluded with England in 1309, which lasted till August 1310. In September Edward II. made a fruitless invasion of Scotland, of which Barbour takes no notice.

137. *Lythkow*, Linlithgow; *peill*, a small castle; see l. 147. The story of its capture by stratagem is told in *Tales of a Grandfather*, ch. ix.

151. *Husband*, husbandman, small farmer. *Fee*, cattle.

153. From l. 194, the man's name seems to have been Bunnock; Hart's edition says Binny. Scott calls it "Binnock, or as it is now pronounced, Binning." Jamieson notices that the arms of some of the Binnings contain a waggon, with "a demi-horse furnished for a waggon as the crest;" with a reference to Nisbet's *Heraldry*, i. 100. The 'waggon' is supposed to have reference to the exploit here narrated.

180. *Hede-soyme*, the head-soam, or rope passing from the cart to the head or heads of the animals that drew it; answering to what we should now call 'the traces.' See *Soyme* in Jamieson, *Soam* in Halliwell. The traces being cut, the waggon could not be withdrawn, nor the gate closed.

193. *Vonnyn hay*, lit. had won hay, *i.e.*, had cut and dried it, ready for carrying or 'leading,' as it is often called in country parts. Cf. "with cartis hay to leid;" The Wallace, ix. 701.

196. *But dangeir*, without making any trouble of it.

227. "Began to drive the waggon quickly." So, in l. 231, *call all* means "drive along all!"

232. *He*; not Bunnock, but the driver; who let his 'gad-wand' or whip fall out of his hands, and seized the hatchet in his belt; see l.

174. Barbour constantly changes the persons whom he denotes by *he* or *thai*.

267. "The charter, which is curious, is published by Home, Lord Kames, in his *Essays on British Antiquities*, and in Shaw's *History of Moray*. It has no date."—P.

305. *His eym*, his uncle, *i.e.*, King Robert.

313. *Mycht*. Innes says—"both MSS. have *ficht*." This is a mistake; the readings are—*mycht*, C.; *fycht*, E.; *might*, H.; as in the footnote.

324. *Lumbard*. The name recurs in l. 761 below. For variations,

see the footnotes. *Gascon*, *i.e.*, Gascon. Piers Gaveston, the king's favourite, was likewise the son of a Gascon knight.

336. For the continuation of the narrative, see l. 506 below.

352. *This tym that*, whilst. The two events, the capture of Roxburgh Castle by Douglas and of Edinburgh Castle by Randolph, were very nearly contemporaneous. Fordun (cap. cxxx.) dates the former on Shrove Tuesday, and the latter on March 14, 1313. Barbour mentions "fasteryn evyn" in l. 372, meaning likewise the eve of the great Fast-day, *i.e.*, Shrove Tuesday. Pinkerton explains this by "6 March, 1313." This is clearly wrong; since, according to Sir H. Nicolas's Chronol. of History, pp. 60, 76, Easter-day in 1313 fell on April 15, and Shrove Tuesday on Feb. 27. Barbour is, at any rate, right here in his order of events. For the narrative, see *Tales of a Grandfather*, ch. ix.

361. *Treyn*, wooden; the Edinb. MS. has *Irne*, *i.e.*, iron, which is less probable. The adjective *treen*, meaning wooden, was at this time in frequent use.

375. "They wholly covered the armour that they wore with black frocks."

390. "He will make merry to-night, even though they be taken away by the Douglas." That is, the man will be so taken up with the sports of Shrovetide as not to heed the chance of his cattle being stolen. Cf. l. 440.

456. This was "Gillemin de Fiennes, a knight of Burgundy;" *Annals of Scotland*, ii. 37.

471. I make the reading of the Edinb. MS. to be—"The castell tint be, clene and law," *i.e.*, the castle to be lost, clean and low, *i.e.*, wholly and to the bottom. So too, in l. 124 above, we have "cleyn and law," as a sort of proverbial phrase. The word could not there be read as 'cleyu,' and I have no belief in the word 'cleue,' as printed by Jamieson; still less in the form 'clef,' sheerly invented by Innes.

476. "But nevertheless he held the tower very sturdily till the second day."

481. *Tretit thame*, treated with them, made terms.

516. The readings *victory* (CH) and *body* (E) are clearly both wrong. The original word is lost, but I can give a shrewd guess at it. I do not doubt that it was *voidry*, another spelling of *voidre*, which is closely connected with *slicht* in ix. 747, in a similar allusion to Randolph's character. *Voidry*, an uncommon word, would easily be misread as *victory* on the one hand; and, on the other, if written 'voidery' (*i.e.*, 'voidy' with a slight curl) would quite as easily be mistaken for 'body,' on account of the occasionally close resemblance between the letters *b* and *v* in Lowland-Scottish MSS. The sense of it is 'cunning, stratagem,' which is the sense required.

529. "Before that the siege should miscarry through his fault." *Or at* = ere that. *Forfure* is the past tense subjunctive.

609. *Ayndless*, breathless; see *aynd* (breath) in the next line. The Edinb. MS. has the bad spelling *handles*.

673. "If they had been of good counsel."

705. *Tyre*. So in CH; *Treile*, E. Pinkerton rejects the reading *Tyre*, saying—"It was in a town of the Oxydracæ that Alexander incurred this danger; Arrian, lib. vi. p. 394, ed. Blancardi. But the name is unknown, and Barbour's authority escapes me." In North's Plutarch (ed. 1631, p. 705) it is said that it was "in assailing a city of the Mallians, which they say are the warlikest men of all the Indians." The solution is, of course, that Barbour did not take his story from genuine history, but from a romance—viz., from *Li Romans d'Alixandre*, par Lambert li Tors. See the edition by H. Michelant, p. 217, where the very word *befroi* (see l. 708) is used.

"Quar de l'*befroi* u est, de si haut com il fu,  
Est salis en la ville, en son col son escu."

718. *Arestee*. Lambert li Tors (ed. Michelant, p. 218) calls him "Ariste son dru." In Plutarch's account, Peucestas and Limnæus come to assist Alexander.

737. See a notice of St Margaret, wife of Malcolm Canmore of Scotland, in Chambers's Book of Days, ii. 584. She died Nov. 16, 1093.

799. *Wonnyn*, won. Innes proposed to read *wonnin* in l. 793, but *won* here. His text reverses these readings. Both ways he is wrong; for the form *here* must be *the same as before*, being equally a past participle after *has*.

815, 816. *Lenteryne*, Lent, 1313. *Saint Iohnnis mess*, St John's mass, *i.e.*, June 24, or Midsummer Day, 1313. From l. 821, we learn that the arrangement was that Sir Philip Mowbray obtained just a year's truce, during which Stirling Castle was to be relieved. This led to the battle of Bannockburn, fought on June 24, 1314; *i.e.*, on the very day on which the year expired.

## NOTES TO BOOK XI. (A.D. 1313, 1314.)

(Jamieson, VIII. 1-659; Innes, pp. 249-273.)

1. *Cunnand*, covenant; referring to the agreement made between Sir Philip Mowbray and the Scotch. See Book x. 820.

24. *As men sayis*; this shows it was a popular proverb. It means—"A little stone may upset a great waggon." In Hazlitt's Proverbs we find—"A little fire burns up a great deal of corn;" and—"A little leak will sink a great ship."

32. *Outrageouss*, extreme; alluding to the great length of time assigned.

50. "God may very well dispose of our destinies."



84. See the Lord of the Isles, canto vi. 4, and the notes; Fordun, cap. cxxxi.; Rymer's *Fœdera*, iii. 476-478, 481.

107. "With horses covered with complete mail." Here *playn* seems to represent the Fr. *plein*. The Edinb. MS. has *in plait and maitze*; on which Innes remarks—"The distinction between the two kinds of armour, if known, was not so specific in Barbour's age."

123. *Charre*, multitude of waggons, for carrying baggage. O.Fr. *charroy*, which Cotgrave explains by—"Carriage, portage, waynage, waggonage; the carrying of things by wayne, cart, or waggon; also, a cart or other carriage; also, a cart-load, chariot-load, or waggon-load of." This word is miswritten *char* in the Edinb. MS., and is followed by a blank line. The passage somewhat puzzled Pinkerton and Jamieson, but is easily set right by the Cambridge MS.

153. "Holes shall be rent in whole cloth."

163. The young Earl of Gloucester, Gilbert de Clare, who was killed in the battle, was the king's nephew, being son of Joan of Acre, daughter of Edward I., who married Gilbert, Earl of Clare and Gloucester. See Annals of England, p. 166, and p. 183, note *n*; Annals of Scotland, ii. 46. Barbour mentions his name below; xiii. 466.

The Earl of Hereford was Sir Humphrey de Bohun, constable of England. See a notice of him in Annals of England, p. 185, note *y*; and of his father in the same, p. 173, note *f*. He was taken prisoner at Bannockburn, and exchanged for Robert Bruce's queen. He died in 1322. A later Humphrey de Bohun, who became Earl of Hereford in 1336, is noticed in my preface to William of Palerne, p. xi.

174. Sir Giles de Argentine, whose fate is so well narrated in the Lord of the Isles, vi. 33, and note to vi. 35. See Annals of Scotland, ii. 48.

184. Berwick was the place appointed for the English bands to meet; they were to be assembled there on the 10th of June; see Lord of the Isles, note to vi. 4, which refers to the summons issued to the sheriff of Yorkshire, in Rymer's *Fœdera*, iii. 481, quoted in Annals of Scotland, ii. 41.

210. Torwoodhead Castle is a little to the south of Bannockburn. Torwood contained Wallace's Tree; see note to Wallace, ed. Jamieson, v. 319.

274. *Yon castell*, i.e., Stirling Castle; see l. 6.

290. *On fut*. Innes points out that this decision materially influenced the fate of the battle, and that, in this policy, the Scotch imitated the Flemings, who successfully resisted with infantry the best chivalry of France in the decisive battle at Courtray, July 11, 1302.

304. *Battalis*, battalions. Scott has borrowed the word.

"In battles four beneath their eye,  
The forces of King Robert lie."

—Lord of the Isles, vi. 10.

See the excellent note upon these lines, fully explaining the order of battle.

334. "The men of Argyle, the islanders, and the Highlanders in general, were ranked in the rear;" Lord of the Isles, vi. 10, note, *q.v.* Pinkerton suggests that Bruce put them there because he could least trust them, and added his own men of Carrick to their ranks, because he could trust them most.

352. *Settirday*, Saturday, June 22, 1314.

374. *Sunday*, Sunday, June 23, 1314, being the Eve of St John; see l. 382. The reading *settirday* (C) is a mere repetition from l. 352, due to inattention.

442. *The kirk*. This "can only mean St Ninians;" Lord of the Isles, vi. 18, note.

521. *Clyfford*, Sir Robert Clifford; Annals of Scotland, pp. 44, 45 (quoted in note to Lord of the Isles, vi. 18).

547. *Faldyn*, fallen; cf. the readings *fallyn* (E), *fallen* (H). Innes says, without any authority, that "fald means to shed, or drop as withered flowers." Perhaps he took *fald* to be equivalent to *fade*; but if so the explanation is inadmissible, because *fade* is a weak verb, and *fald* would produce the form *falded* (weak), not *faldyn* (strong). The usual explanation is perfectly correct. "'See, Randolph,' said the king to his nephew, 'there is a rose *fallen* from your chaplet;'" Tales of a Grandfather, ch. x. The insertion of the 'excrement' *d* is a mere peculiarity of pronunciation, due to Scandinavian influence. So in Havelok the Dane, l. 2698, I am persuaded that the right reading is—"þat he [ne] felden so dos þe gres," that they fell not as the grass does. Still more clearly is this shown by the Danish form of the verb to fall—viz., infin. *falde*, pp. *falden* or *faldet*. Wyclif, in like manner, writing in a Northern dialect, says—"vnclene spiritis, whenne thei seien him, *felden* down to him;" Mark iii. 11. Cf. *falding*, i.e. falling, xiii. 632.

573. *Dencort*; spelt *Dancort*, xii. 351. The real name seems to have been *Dayncourt* or *Deyncourt*; Leland, Collect. i. 546; Rymer, Fœdera, iii. 310, anno 1312. See note in Jamieson.

655. *Feill*, feel; i.e., feel the force of his attack. Cf. xii. 588.

## NOTES TO BOOK XII. (A.D. 1314.)

(Jamieson, VIII. 660—IX. 182; Innes, pp. 273-294.)

22. Jamieson reads "An hat off tyre;" and, in his Dictionary, refers us to A.S. *tyr*, which is a mere adaptation of *tiara*, and is certainly not to the point. The Edinb. MS. may equally be read "An hat off cyre," and I have no doubt that this is the real reading; *cyre* being a corruption of the Fr. *cuir*, leather, and merely another form of the *qwyrr*- in

*quyrbolle*. The reading of C., viz., *quyrbolle*, is a corruption of *cuir bouilli*, that is, leather soaked in hot water to soften it that it might take any required shape, after which it was dried and became exceedingly stiff and hard. See my note on *quyrboilly* in Chaucer's *Prioresses Tale*, &c., Group B. l. 2065 (Clarendon Press Series). It is amusing to notice that Hart's edition turns the word into *carbuncle*!

29. *Bowme*, Bohun; pronounced as *boon*, and spelt *Boune* by Scott. The spelling *Bowme* is, of course, a mistake for *Boune*; but it is remarkable that Hart also reads *Bowm*, though he makes it rime with *down*; see Rubric quoted in the first footnote to Book xii. Sir Henry Bohun was cousin to Sir Humphrey Bohun, Earl of Hereford, one of the commanders of the English army. See Lord of the Isles, vi. 15.

49. "They sprang together in a strait career." See *sprenten* in Stratmann.

77. "They made a great dash at them." MS. E. has *schowt*, i.e., shout; badly.

82. "Their horses' feet got nearly all of them away."

99. *Thomas*, i.e., Randolph; see xi. 633.

110. *Relyng*, reeling, giving way. MS. E. has *relying*, which is the usual spelling of 'rallying.'

133. *Thame*, them. I have omitted to note the reading *him* (E), which, however, is manifestly wrong. Innes remarks that *both* MSS. read *him*, but this is a mistake; the reading of C. is 'thame,' as printed.

143. Here, again, Innes says that *men* is omitted in *both* MSS.; but it is only omitted in E., as noted.

144. "Took off their helmets in haste to give themselves air, for they were hot; they were all covered with sweat."

148. *Fayndit*, tested, tried, put to the proof. Either reading, *fayndit thair fayis* (put their foes to the test), or *fandit thair force* (put their strength to the test), gives good sense. The reading *fadyt* (P. and J.) is not really that of MS. E., which has *fandit*, another spelling of *fayndit*.

171. *Luf*, to praise. Such is, apparently, the sense, though we commonly find *love*, to praise, as distinguished from *luff*, to love. The two words are occasionally confounded. MS. E. reads—"we aucht to love and luff," i.e., we ought to praise and love, where the distinction is duly made.

191. *The quhethir*, however; a very common phrase. Innes says *both* MSS. have 'And quhethir'; but this is only true of MS. E., as noted.

193. "For all shall rest with you."

250. *Leit of us lightly*, think lightly of us; a common phrase. Cf. "And lete liȝte of þe lawe"; P. Plowman, bk. vi. 170. The reading *heyghtly* (E) is probably a mere blunder.

290. *Neill*, Nigel Bruce; see iv. 61, 176.

300. *Thar*, rightly so printed by Pinkerton, was turned into *char*

by Jamieson, though the latter word does not properly exist. See note to viii. 257.

302. "Will prevent us from being surrounded."

306. "Have an eye for taking any of their riches."

333. *The nycht*, the night of Sunday, June 23.

335. Sir Robert Clifford's advance had been foiled by Sir Thomas Randolph.

354. *All about*, all round. Innes proposes to read *tham about*, as in Hart; but it is hardly necessary.

360. The correct reading is certainly 'rownand,' *i.e.*, whispering; which is far better than *routand* (E), which means 'making a great noise.' Cf. l. 368.

373. *In punzeis*, in slight skirmishes; lit. in puny things.

406\*. *Hard feld*, dry and firm ground, as opposed to the marshy ground where the 'pollis' or pools were.

407. The eventful day was Monday, June 24, 1314.

413. "They made knights, as it behoves men to do who use those arts;" *i.e.*, the arts of war. See note above, to ix. 138.

429. *Schiltrum*, a squadron; see the Glossary. It means a close compact body of men, without specifying the form of them. Pinkerton says that Hearne's edition of Robert of Gloucester shows that "*schiltrum* is an host ranged in a round form." No reference is given, and, even if it be so in that work, it is not so generally. A similar mistaken description is given (according to Tytler, *Hist. Scot.* i. 357) by Hemingford, vol. i. p. 165. The word is sufficiently common. Stratmann gives *six* references for it, s. v. *schildtrume*, to which add: "ar the *scheltrons* come to-gedders;" Trevisa's description of the Battle of Hastings. And see *seven* references s. v. *scheltrone* in allit. *Morte Arthure*, ed. Brock; and *four* s. v. *sheltron* in the allit. *Troy-book*, ed. Panton and Donaldson. In *1 Kings* iv. 2, Wyclif uses *scheltrun* to translate 'aciem.'

431. *Rad till byd*, afraid to bide.

439. *Our-tuk*, covered; lit. took over.

505. *It her*, hear it. Innes quotes from the Lanercost Chronicle, p. 225, where there is an express notice of this "sonus maximus et horribilis ex lanceis fractis et ex dextrariis vulneratis ad mortem." Compare Scott's line—"And steeds that shriek in agony;" *Lord of the Isles*, vi. 24. And see Scott's note to that line.

509. I have omitted to note the reading *douchty* in E., which has—"And mony hardy men & douchty;" a reading which (as Innes remarks) quite misses the meaning.

557. "And many a great and severe blow be dealt;" lit. and many a royal severe blow be raught. *Riall*, royal; hence, simply, great. *Rymmyll*, a blow; see *remyllis* in Jamieson. *Ryde*, severe; possibly (as Mätzner suggests) connected with Icel. *reiðr*, angry.

558. *Roucht*, *i.e.*, raught, reached, dealt.

563. *Wan plass*, won place, *i.e.*, gained ground.

564. *The quethir*, although. Innes is wrong in saying that *the* occurs in neither MS.; it occurs in C.

# NOTES TO BOOK XIII. (A.D. 1314.)

(Jamieson, IX. 183-931; Innes, pp. 294-321.)

20. *Fluss*, swamp. The ground became quite a swamp. Cf. *Flush*, a morass, Roxburghshire; *Flosh*, a swamp, Galloway. Also *Flosche*, *Flash*, a pool (Halliwell).

32. *Tynt the suet*, lost their lives. *Suet* is lit. *sweat*; but the A.S. *swát* is often used to signify blood shed in battle, the life-blood of wounded heroes. See Grein's A.S. Dictionary.

36. *Slew fire*, struck fire. *Slay* was often used in the sense of strike; cf. G. *schlagen*. 'Slew fyr' occurs also in The Wallace, iv. 285.

46. *Lechyng*, healing; compare *leech*, a physician.

85. "That were more numerous than they were by a greal deal."

98. *Nakit* here means 'unarmed'; a common use of the word. See note to vii. 330.

131\*-144\*. These fourteen lines are only found in Hart, not in the MSS.; but they are certainly genuine, though Pinkerton and Innes think them unnecessary.

132. *On a syde*, on one side, on one of the sides of the rank opposed to them. So a *front*=one front, l. 163. And see l. 348.

173. *Not*, employment, business. *Had apon hand so gret not*, had so much business upon their hands. *Not* is clearly the right reading, though only preserved in the best MS. It is the A.S. *notu*, employment, and not to be confused with the High German *noth*, which is merely the High German way of spelling *need*. A knowledge of German is often misleading to such as do not understand Grimm's law. The A.S. *notu* also means *use*, and the German form of it is *nutz*.

183. *Armoris and quyntis*, coats of arms and badges; used by the warriors as distinctions. The *armor* is Chaucer's *cote armour*, Kn. Tale, 158; of no use as a defence, being made of a flimsy material, but worn over the true armour of defence, and charged with armorial bearings. See *Cote armure* in the Prompt. Parv., where Way notes that "Sir Thomas de la More [ap. Camden, p. 494; see Ann. Scot. ii. 48] relates that the Earl of Gloucester was slain at Bannockburn, in consequence of his neglecting to put on his insignia, termed in the Latin translation *togam propriæ armaturæ*." *Quyntis* is merely (as Innes says) the Fr. *cointises*, signifying finery or quaint attire; see Roquefort and Burguy. The Edinb. MS. has the misspelling *quhytyss* (due to omission of *n* and insertion of *h*), an unreal word which much

puzzled Pinkerton and Jamieson. The former took it to be a bad spelling of *coats* (cf. the reading *coates* in Hart); the latter was persuaded that it meant *hats*! Note the use of *discrivit* (described, discerned, made out) in l. 185, which clearly proves what the *armoris and quyntis* were intended for.

217. "That they gave way a little wee bit;" note Hart's reading *re-cooled*, *i.e.*, recoiled.

Jamieson's explanation is not correct; he makes it mean 'they felt terror,' from A.S. *wandian*, to shun; but this would have given us the form *wandit*. The word is clearly *French*,—viz., the O.Fr. *gandir* or *wandir*, to save one's self, escape, turn aside—a word of Teutonic origin; cf. Mæso-Goth. *wandjan*, to turn, A.S. *wendan*, to turn. Thus Barbour uses the word in its true sense—viz., to turn aside, to swerve. It occurs elsewhere; see the Glossary.

219. "That their undertaking was worse than before." *Covyne* properly means plot, design; in this place it means no more than attempt or undertaking.

229. "Yeoman, swains, and the rabble of camp-followers." This incident is admirably described by Sir W. Scott; *Lord of the Isles*, vi. 30, 31.

264. "Would, with their honour, have been away;" *i.e.*, would have been glad to be away, if they could have retreated honourably.

275. *In tropellis ser*, in several small companies. The Fr. *troupeau* would have been spelt *troupe* or *tropel* in old French.

305. "Have good day! for I will (turn) again." See *Lord of the Isles*, vi. 32; *Ann. Scot.* ii. 48.

308. "Than to live here and flee disgracefully." The line runs badly; but is easily restored by reading *shamly*, as in the *Edinb. MS.*

321. "The third best knight." In a note, Lord Hailes says—"The three most eminent worthies of that age were the Emperor Henry of Luxembourg, Robert Bruce, and Sir Giles de Argentine;" *Ann. Scot.* ii. 48. Jamieson has some remarks on the name in an additional note, p. 484 of his edition.

365. *Cum zhe in it*, if you were to come into it.

374. "Close your ranks as closely as you can." See below, ll. 568, 569.

379. "The Round Table is an artificial mound near Stirling Castle;" P. (who refers to Nimmo's *Hist. of Stirlingshire*). On the other hand, in the last note to the *Lady of the Lake*, Scott says—"The ring within which jousts were formerly practised, in the castle-park, is still called the Round Table."

412. *Mastry*, mastery. The governor of Bothwell Castle received the Earl of Hereford and his men, but took care that they did not interfere with his own powers.

415. The three parts, *i.e.*, three quarters.

439. "For fear they should again make head against him."

447\*-450\*. Innes says these four lines are in Hart. But they are in the Cambridge MS. too.

454. *Fut-hat*, foot-hot, speedily; see note to iii. 418.

463. The Camb. MS. says 700 pairs; Edinb. MS. and Hart say 200. The latter is better; but, either way, it is an exaggeration. "Of barons and bannerets, there were slain 27, and 22 made prisoners; of knights there were slain 42, and 60 made prisoners;" Ann. Scot. ii. 51.

465. See note to l. 183 above, and note to xi. 163.

468. *Typtot* (C) is better than *typont* (EH). "By English writers he is called Payen Tybetot; Annals of Scotland, ii. 51. He is frequently designed Paganus Tybotot in the *Fœdera*."—J.

472. *Wepownt*, Vipont. "It is probable that Sir Alan Wypont, who defended the castle of Lochlevin for David II. against the English, A.D. 1335, was his son; see Hailes, Ann. Scot. ii. 178."—J. The charters show that the Latin name is *de Veteri Ponte*.

484. See this passage paraphrased in Ann. Scot. ii. 50. Lord Hailes adds—"I know not what judgment to form of this story. It is certain that the Earl of Athole returned to the service of England; *Fœdera*, t. iii. p. 644, anno 1317. And it is equally certain, that sentence of forfeiture was pronounced against him in Parliament, anno 1323; Chart. Dunferm. t. ii. fol. 24. It is strange that punishment should have been delayed, until 1323, of an offence so atrocious, said to have been committed in 1314."

486. *At rebouris*, at cross purposes, against the grain, *i.e.*, in great dislike. Cotgrave gives "*à rebours*, overthwartly, quite contrary, full against the course, wooll, or haire; inside out, upside downe, clean kamme." Also "*rebours*, adj. crosse, overthwart, wayward, surly, rude, froward," &c. Also "*rebourser*, to worke against the wooll or haire," &c. "*Rebours*, the wrong way of a stuff; from Lat. *reburrus*, rough, in late Latin documents; we find, in the glosses of Isidore, '*reburrus*, hispidus;'" Brachet's Etym. Fch. Dict.

495. *Herth*, C.; *Airth*, H.; *keth* (*i.e.*, Keith), E. The name intended may very well be *Airth*. There is a place of that name only a few miles S.E. of Stirling. See remarks on the family of Airth in Jamieson's note to Wallace, ix. 1283.

511. *Neir syb*, nearly related. It has already been observed that the Earl of Gloucester was nephew to King *Edward*; see note to xi. 163. Edward's sister Joan married (1) Gilbert de Clare, father of the Earl of Gloucester here mentioned, and (2) Ralph de Monthermer. As Ralph de Monthermer bore the arms of Clare at the siege of Caerlaverock in 1300 (Ann. of Eng. p. 178), and was styled Earl of Gloucester till the death of his wife in 1307, it must have been he who sent Bruce the pair of spurs, and so saved his life; see note to ii. 1. Tytler (Hist. Scotland, i. 87) says that Bruce received that intimation of his danger "from his *kinsman*, the Earl of Gloucester." The Scotch were

naturally desirous of saving the young earl's life; see note to l. 183 above.

523. *Betwng* looks like Betoun. "Lord Hailes writes *Twenge*, Ann. Scot. ii. 52; Knyghton, *Twange*, Dec. Script. 2518; Rymer, *Twenge*, iii. 148; *Twynng*, 271; *Tweng*, 444."—J.

544. "Became of his dwelling," i.e., lived afterwards in Scotland, and took the Scottish side. The Edinb. MS. has *belewynt*, answering to *beleft* in Hart, with the sense of 'remained.' Jamieson, in his Dictionary, wrongly says that *belewynt of* means 'delivered up.' But see *Bileue* in Halliwell. Compare Chaucer, Sq. Tale, 583—"Swich harm I felte for he ne mighte *bileue*," i.e., because he could not stay, or remain behind.

580. "None could be behind his fellows so much as a stone's-throw, without being at once slain, or taken so speedily that no one would attempt to rescue him, however much he loved him." Cf. ll. 601-606.

587. Winchburgh is in Linlithgowshire, in the direct road from Linlithgow to Edinburgh.

588. *Thai* is in the Camb. MS., though Innes says he found it only in Hart. The Edinb. MS. omits it.

611. "Counte Patrik of Marche ful gentely reseivid king Edward into his castel of Dunbar, and thens the king cam by water to Berwick;" Scala Chron. ap. Leland, t. ii. p. 547; see Ann. Scot. ii. 49. It is said that Oriel College, founded by Edward in 1326, was due to his gratitude to the Virgin Mary for his escape at Bannockburn; Antiq. Oxon. t. ii. p. 103; Ann. Scot. ii. 49.

623. "They left (behind them) a part of their troop," Camb. MS.; "They were very straitly bestead," Edinb. MS.

632. *Falding*, falling, downfall, reverse. The reading *fading* is a mere blunder. See *faldyn*, xi. 547, and the note.

642. *Has* stands here in both MSS. Jamieson reads *have*; Pinkerton prints *hase*.

650. "Their foes (being) vanquished, was great in power." The Edinb. MS. has here a line which is due to an adaptation of l. 656\* below; and the scribe really missed this line and the next five, by passing from *hicht* at the end of l. 649 to *hicht* at the end of l. 655\*.

674. "Sir Walter." See l. 406 above.

683. "Bishop Robert, who had become blind." I.e., Robert Wishart, Bishop of Glasgow; see iv. 13, and the note. "He died in 1316."—P.

684. The queen and her daughter Marjory had been taken at Tain; see iv. 39-56.

693. *Ane knaiff child*, a boy; as in Chaucer, Cler. Tale, 612.

695. *Robert*, i.e., Robert II., the first of the Stewarts, A.D. 1371-1390. See Tales of a Grandfather, ch. xvi.

697. *Eyme*, uncle. *Davy*, David II., who reigned (says Barbour) forty-two years. He was only about four years old at his accession, the Earl of Murray being regent. His reign lasted from the death of



King Robert, June 7, 1329, to his own death, Feb. 22, 1371, or forty-one years eight months and a half.

704. It is extremely fortunate that Barbour has thus accurately dated his work. He tells us it was in A.D. 1375, after King Robert had reigned five years. Strictly speaking, this is an inaccurate expression, for he did not *complete* the fifth year of his reign till Feb. 22, 1376. It is true that the year 1376 was called 1375 up to the 24th of March inclusive, but this will not help us out; for, in l. 707, the poet expressly says that King Robert had been dead 46 years, *and no more*, which only brings down the time to June 7, 1375. He therefore clearly alludes to the *fifth year* of Robert II., as explained in the side-note.

Barbour adds another note of date; he tells us that the reigning king was 60 years of age. Robert II. was born Mar. 2, 1316, and completed his 59th year in March 1375. The two data, that Robert II. was in his 60th year, and that Robert I. had been dead 46 years, *and no more*, would limit us to the months of March, April, May, and June of 1375. But there is no reason why we should suppose all the expressions used to be taken in their strictest sense. It is sufficient to know that the poem was in hand in 1375.

It is, perhaps, of more importance to remark that this paragraph seems to have been added afterwards; we should have expected to find it at the end of the poem. Else we must suppose that Barbour merely made a note of the date *en passant*, and completed the poem afterwards.

731. "That none should be heard (should have their claims considered) afterwards."

735. This was in the latter part of the year 1314; see Ann. Scot. ii. 54.

741. "Of an approved kind, that is worth speaking of here."

#### NOTES TO BOOK XIV. (A.D. 1315.)

(Jamieson, X. 1-554; Innes, pp. 321-340.)

1. Barbour gives a full account of Edward Bruce's expedition to Ireland. He landed there May 25, 1315, and was slain in battle Oct. 5, 1318. Cf. Annals of Ireland, subjoined to Camden's Britannia.

9. *Erischry of Irland*, the Erse or Irish inhabitants of Ireland, as distinguished from the Erse or Gaelic inhabitants of Scotland.

27. Sir John Soulis was probably a brother or a cousin of the Sir William Soulis, also called Lord Soulis, who conspired against Bruce's life in 1320; see xix. 11. According to Barbour, he perished in Ireland; xviii. 110.

28. Sir John Stewart was the brother of Sir Walter Stewart, the

king's son-in-law. Barbour narrates his death in Ireland; xviii. 109. Sir Allan Stewart is mentioned in l. 405.

29. Jamieson has some remarks on the family of Ramsay. Ouchtirhouse or Auchterhouse is in the S. of Forfarshire. In *The Wallace*, vii. 890, 902, it is expressly said that the Ramsay mentioned by Barbour was Sir Alexander Ramsay, son of Sir John Ramsay, and that he won Roxburgh castle; see x. 356.

31. Jamieson has a few remarks on the name of Fergus of Ardrossan. Ardrossan is on the coast of Ayrshire.

33. *Vaveryng Fyrth*, Wavering Firth; called Woking's Firth in E and H. Innes shows that it has been supposed that the bay intended is Larne harbour, or Lough Larne; and this suggestion is now confirmed. Speaking of Larne Lough, Reeves says—"In subsequent records the name assumes the various forms of Ulderfleet haven, Wolderfrith, Wolverfleet, and Olderfleet, the last of which names is still borne by the ruined castle;" *Eccl. Hist. of Down and Connor*, p. 265. (Note communicated by Mr W. H. Patterson of Belfast.)

47. *Mavndwell*, Mandevill. "A letter is directed by Edw. I. [II.?] to Mandevill as in Ireland, 12th Aug. 1314; *Thomæ de Mandevile*."—J. "The *Mandevilles* were lords of the barony of Dufferin. After the murder of Patrick, Earl of Athol, at Haddington in 1242, the *Bissets*, then a numerous and powerful family, fled from Scotland and took refuge in the Glynnns of Antrim, where they obtained a settlement under the De Burghs, Earls of Ulster. The Macdonnells of Antrim are said to owe their possessions there to a marriage with the heiress of the Bissets. The *Logans* were considerable proprietors in the N. of Ireland; and two parishes in the Diocese of Connor had the names respectively of *Ecclesia villæ Hugonis de Logan*, and *Ecclesia villæ Walteri de Logan*, now Templepatrick and Ballywalter. (Dr Reeves's *Down and Connor*.) The *Savages* had the manors of Rathmore, Duntorsy, and others, in Ulster. A townland in the parish of Donegore, called Ballysavage, preserves this family name. They are lineally represented by Mr Nugent of Portaferry in the Ards. (Dr Reeves's *Down and Connor*.)"—Innes.

102. *Kyngis*, chiefs or reguli. One of them was named O Dymsey (*i.e.*, O Dempsey); see l. 329. "Of the Reguli of Uladh or Ulster, see Reeves's *Down and Connor*, pp. 364-369. One no doubt was that Douenaldus [Doneualdus?] Oneyl Rex Ultoniæ, and claiming yet higher style, who was the head of the Cinel Owen, or Tyrone Oneills, from 1283 to 1325, and who is known to us from the remarkable appeal which he made to the Pope, in the name of the whole Irish people, against the dreadful oppression of the English in 1318. (Fordun, xii. 26.)"—Innes.

A sufficient list of these chieftains, including this "Doneval O Neel," will be found in the *Lord of the Isles*, note to vi. 4. It is taken from Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. iii. p. 476.

105. *Makfulchiane*, C; *Makgullane*, E; *Makgoulchane*, H. Jamieson suggests Magh Cullen or Mac Gillian; Innes says it does not mean Mac Quillan, but Mac Coolechan of Clannbrassil.

106. *Makmartane*, C; *Makartane*, E. Jamieson suggests that he is the Earl of Desmond of l. 141, and interprets the name as Macarthy. Innes makes it Mac Cartane. Perhaps Jamieson is right; for in the list above referred to (note to l. 102) we find "Dermod Mac Arthy, dux Hibernicorum de Dessemound."

108. "Where it, of necessity, behoved him (to get) away." Cf. l. 116.

113. *Endwillane*. Innes shows some reasons for identifying this with the Moiry Pass, called "the pass of Emerdullam" in 1343, which he locates in the parish of Killeavy, in Armagh (in Ulster), close to the boundary of Louth (in Leinster). He adds that "a small square castle in ruins still marks the place." See the next note.

133. *Kilsaggart*. "About a quarter of a mile from Moiry Castle is Kilnasaggart, where there are traces of a cemetery, and a curious tall stone monument in memory of Ternohc Mac Ceran."—Innes. The name clearly means "the priest's cell" (*cella sacerdotis*), and might have been applied to many places. I suppose that, by "Moiry Castle," Innes means the castle mentioned in the last note, as situate in the Moiry Pass. This is quite a different place from Moira, at the other (northern) extremity of Armagh. Jamieson's suggestion, that Kilsaggart is near Dublin, is out of the question. Edward had not yet advanced so far as Dundalk.

135. "Dundalk was within the pale, and a stronghold of the Anglo-Irish in those days."—Innes.

143. *Bremayne*. The name occurs again in l. 515, where we find the spellings *Brwman* (C), *Brynrame* (E), and *Brunhame* (H). It is supposed to be a corruption of Bermingham, *i.e.*, Birmingham. "Sir John de Bermingham, a valiant and distinguished commander, arrived about this time, A.D. 1315, with a select body of English forces, sent by Edward II. See Leland's Hist. Irel. bk. ii. cap. 3."—J. After Edward Bruce's defeat and death, he was created Earl of Louth; Rymer's *Fœdera*, iii. 767; Ann. Scot. ii. 82.

*Wardoune*, possibly Verdon, as suggested by Innes; see l. 515. Sir Miles Verdon was one of the English leaders; Tytler's Hist. Scotland, i. 127.

145. *Butler*, *i.e.*, Lord Edmund le Botiller (or Butler), Justiciary of Ireland; *Fœdera*, iii. 492; Ann. Scot. ii. 62.

146. Sir Maurice Fitz-thomas; *Fœdera*, iii. 492.

159. Innes says—"Barbour everywhere calls Richard de Clare the King's Lieutenant. Edmund Butler was Justiciary [or lord lieutenant]. Richard Clare, however, was one of the chiefs of the English party in Ireland." Hailes remarks—"Barbour often mistakes the names of places and persons. He figured to himself that Richard de Clare was

the English deputy in Ireland; and, from an error natural enough, he supposed that the deputy always commanded the armies opposed to Edward Bruce. He omits some events altogether, and is too apt to magnify skirmishes into battles; yet his narrative contains circumstances curious and characteristic;" Ann. Scot. ii. 61.

Perhaps Barbour really meant Richard de *Burgh*, at that time Earl of Ulster, and the actual leader of the army opposed to Edward Bruce.

221. *Rewis*, streets; Fr. *rues*. The Scotch took Dundalk on June 29, 1315; Ann. Scot. ii. 61.

233. *Lufre*, delivery; better spelt *leuere* (= *liverrè*).

252. Kilross is probably Carrickmacross, co. Monaghan, not very far from Dundalk. See note in Innes.

280. "Yon host is but the offscouring (lit. gathering) of the country."

313. Compare i. 465, and the note.

315. *Forsuk*, turned aside from, avoided; lit. forsook.

329. *Odymsey*. "Fyn O Dymsey" is mentioned in the list referred to in the note to l. 102. "O Dempsey was the name of the hereditary lords of Clanmaliere, a territory on either side of the Barrow, comprising the baronies of Portnahinch in Queen's County, and Upper Philipstown in King's County."—Innes.

337. *A gret revar*; in my opinion, clearly the Blackwater, flowing into Lough Neagh. The localities of the rivers mentioned have not been well made out hitherto, but are really not difficult to identify. Innes suggests that the 'gret revar' is "apparently the Barrow"; but if he means the large river of that name in the S. of Ireland, it is wholly out of the question, for it has nothing to do with Ulster.

We have just read of the Scotch advancing from Dundalk to Carrickmacross; in l. 394 we shall find them at Connor. See the note to that line. It is clear, too, that they went from Carrickmacross to Connor by a circuitous route, through a wild country previously unknown to them. In other words, they went round Lough Neagh on its western side, instead of going, as before, to the east of it. This simple explanation satisfies all the conditions, and enables us to point out the route and all the places mentioned. The first thing was, that O'Dempsey decoyed the Scotch across the (Armagh) Blackwater by telling them that the Irish there were friendly. The following sentence, from the Cyclopædia of the British Empire, exactly explains this matter. "Its ancient name was Avon More, or the *great river*, a title only merited by comparison with the smaller streams of the district. The Armagh Blackwater is not remarkable for anything *except its historical importance, as having been long the boundary between the jurisdiction of the English pale and the independent country of the Tyrone O'Neills*." Precisely so.

The succeeding notes explain the rest.

339. "Low by a brim (of a lake)." The word *brim* originally meant not so much the sea-shore as the *sea itself*, as in "on *pam bradan brime*," on the broad sea; Cod. Exon. ed. Thorpe, p. 194. The sea or lake meant is Lough Neagh, the largest lake in the British Islands, about 18 miles long. O'Dempsey conducted the Scotch along its western shore till he got them to the northern end of it, where he expected to destroy them all by famine.

345. "Where all the cattle were withdrawn (from them) about two days' journey or more." They were two days' journey beyond the place where they had crossed the Blackwater, with wild country to the west, and, as we shall see, an impassable river beyond them.

352. Innes says—"The Camb. MS. has *owth*, meaning, apparently, a shelter or hiding-hole. In the Edinb. MS., the space for the word is left blank. Hart gives *Ane litill south*, which Jamieson adopts." There is no difficulty whatever, when it is once known that *owth* is not a substantive at all. Indeed Jamieson, in his Dictionary, explains it well enough as—"Owth, prep. above; over.—*Wyntown*." Here, however, it is used adverbially, but with the same sense of *above*, or *beyond*; the word being merely A.S. *ūt*, our 'out,' used a little peculiarly. It occurs again in xvii. 598; xviii. 418. The sentence means—"This false traitor had caused his men to dam up the outlet of a loch, a little beyond where he had lodged Sir Edward and the Scotchmen; and then let out the water during the night."

354. *Louch*, a loch or lake. Any pool in a river would have served the purpose. We shall see that the Scotch were very near to Lough Beg, but that would have been too large to dam up, I suspect.

364. "Nevertheless, they had enough." Said ironically.

369. *Riveris tway*, either the Bann and the Blackwater; or rather, the Bann and the artificial flood which O'Dempsey had caused in their rear. Of course, the Irish knew the country well. They had now led the Scotch up to Lough Beg and the Bann, and had then created a flood behind them, thus completely catching them in a trap.

371. *The Bane*, the river Bann. This was pointed out by Jamieson. The Bann is an 'arm of the sea' in a double sense. It has an estuary into the sea, but it also twice expands into a 'sea' in the old sense, *i.e.*, into a lake; for it passes through Lough Neagh and Lough Beg. The Irish had done their work well; they had taken care that the Scotch should *not* be near the sea-coast, where they might in some way have helped themselves, but in the corner between Lough Beg and Lough Neagh, with flooded land behind them, so that all escape seemed hopeless.

373. *Willister*, Ulster. "Ulster is here used in its limited application, as including only the counties of Antrim and Down."—Innes.

376. "Had it not been for a rover of the sea (or lake); his name was Thomas of Down." It is possible that the 'sea' is here merely Lough Neagh. This would explain the man's name—Thomas of *Down*.

He was a man accustomed to traversing the lake, which is surrounded by the counties of Antrim, Londonderry, Tyrone, and Armagh, whilst that of Down just comes up to it at one corner. -This man's ship would, probably, be kept at the southern end of the lake; in traversing it, he would come near the wild country at the northern end, and there discover the plight of the Scottish army. He would then sail out of the lake, and 'up the Bann' (though, strictly, it was down stream), till he came to where they were. If, however, he had really come from the sea-coast, the expression is quite correct. My suggestion is chiefly intended to show how the rover might have learnt their condition, and what was probably his cruising-ground. See the next note.

380. "They knew him well." No doubt; for they may have made his acquaintance in their former march from Carrickfergus to Dundalk, when they had to pass the 'Upper' Bann, *i.e.*, the Bann *before* it enters Lough Neagh. Probably he had ferried them across it.

381. *Tane*, taken. Most likely, it means that he had captured or appropriated them. His object was gain, and he made it both by ferrying passengers and by picking up what was not his own.

383. *In biggit land*, in cultivated land, or in land with farm-houses built on it. They were now advancing from the neighbourhood of Lough Beg to that of Connor.

394. *Coigneris*, Connor, to the N. of the town of Antrim. In the sidenote, I have called it 'Conyers,' as that is clearly the pronunciation which Barbour intended. Lord Hailes calls it 'Coyners.' In some maps it is marked as Conner; and Innes notes that some people still call it 'Con-yer.' In the Cyclopædia of the British Empire, we read—"It was a place of some note in 1315, at the time of the invasion of Edward Bruce, by whom it was taken, after the defeat of Richard, Earl of Ulster, before its walls. It is supposed to have gone to decay after the irruption of the expelled Irish in 1333. There are now no traces of an episcopal seat; a large Presbyterian meeting-house is the principal object in the village."

420. To "ryde aganis" is to ride so as to meet; as in Chaucer.

421. *Iuþerdy*, a dangerous experiment; lit. a jeopardy.

515. *Bruwan*, &c. See note to l. 143 above.

522. *Kyllvanane*; perhaps *Kylkenane* (E) is the right reading. "Kilkenane was, before the reformation, a church and parish in Island Magee [near the mouth of Belfast Lough] in the county of Antrim. In 1310, *Michael of Kylkenan* was summoned to a parliament at Kilkenny (Cal. Canc. Hibern.)."—Innes. In 1320, the prior of St John of Jerusalem in Ireland complained to the king of the great privations he had suffered by the Scots and rebels, but especially by the instrumentality of *Michael of Kylkenan*, &c.; Reeves, Eccl. Hist. of Down and Connor, p. 271. We may observe that Hart reads *Michell*, which is, perhaps, to be substituted for the *Nycholl* of the text. (Note communicated by Mr W. H. Patterson of Belfast.)

## NOTES TO BOOK XV. (A.D. 1316; AFTER L. 266, 1315.)

(Jamieson, X. 555-1124; Innes, pp. 340-360.)

1. See an account of the events in Ann. Scot. ii. 66.

The date of this battle is before April 4, 1316; see note to l. 100.

19. *Caryage*, baggage belonging to the army.

39. *Barell-feris*. The Edinb. MS. has *barell-ferraris*, and Jamieson's Dict. gives us—"Ferraris, s. pl. *Barell-ferraris*, casks for carrying liquids. Fr. *ferrière*, a large leathern bottle." The New Eng. Dictionary gives—"Barrel-ferrer, -ar, -or, obs. [from BARRELL and O.Fr. *ferriere*, a long-necked bottle or jar carried on journeys]. A vessel (either cask, jar, or leather bottle) in which wine or water was carried on horseback, on a journey or military expedition." The quotations given are from the present passage; Wyntoun's Chron. viii., xxxviii. 33; Allit. Morte Arthure, 2715; and Caxton's Chron. England, ccv. 186.

49. *Stane*, stone. In the Camb. MS. the word looks like *stare*, as Innes notes. If the reader can make anything of the reading *stare*, he may do right to adopt it.

My view of the matter is, that the right reading is *stour*, and that *stok* means a sword-thrust. The sense of *stour* is a commotion, especially the onset of battle. Thus the passage would mean—"with thrusting, with forward rush, and with retreating, according as either side beat the other." The expression, not being very clearly put, would easily be turned into "with stok, with stane" (meaning "with stock (stake) or stone"), because these two words are often used in company. But surely the knights fought with swords "knyghtlik"; see l. 53.

56. "Who might be most at their above," *i.e.*, who was getting the upper hand.

59. "And rushed at them recklessly." *Schot*=rushed, dashed.

63. "That ever dared to wait for his comrade."

75. *Fizwaryne*, Fitz-warren, already mentioned above; xiv. 515. Of this, the reading *syve-warine* or *fyve-warine* (E) is a mere corruption, and we need not resort to the desperate expedient of translating it by *sovereign*, as in Jamieson, with the explanation that *sovereign* means the mayor of the town. Still, it shows us that, in xiv. 515, the Edinburgh MS. gives the better reading, and should have been followed there.

83. *Mont-peleris*, probably Montpelier. "It appears that, even in these times, Montpelier was famous for its invigorating clime."—P.

100. Palm-Sunday, *i.e.*, April 4, 1316.

101. Tuesday in Easter Week, *i.e.*, April 13; since Easter fell, in 1316, on April 11.

105. Easter Even, *i.e.*, April 10.

107. *Devilling*, Dublin. It is spelt *Difelin* and *Dyflen* in the A.S. Chronicle, ed. Thorpe, p. 206, an. 937.

131. The morning of Easter-day, April 11, 1316. Cf. l. 248.

137. "He sent one to the king in haste." Edward Bruce was not really crowned king till some three weeks later, viz., May 2, 1316; Ann. Scot. ii. 66. See l. 161.

162. "When that he heard such a hasty business (lit. such haste) was in hand." *Hy*, haste; as in ll. 159, 165, and at least fifty other places. It does not mean 'a shout,' as Innes supposes.

168. "By the time that his foes were approaching."

181. *Gib Harpar*, Gilbert (the) Harper; no doubt a minstrel. His death is narrated in Book xviii. 95, 165.

198. "Lost heart, and would have been (away *or* back) again."

228. There should be a full stop at the end of l. 227. Lines 228-231 are, of course, genuine; though omitted by the scribe of the Camb. MS., who passed from *se* (l. 227) to *he* (l. 332) by mistake, keeping the rimes perfect.

268. Here Barbour goes back to the year 1315.

271\*-274\*. Missed by the scribe of E, because of the repetition of *menzhe* at the end of ll. 270 and 274\*.

272. *Tarbard*, isthmus. The word is the Gaelic *fairheart*, an isthmus; and the names of East Tarbert and West Tarbert are still given to two places situate on the narrow isthmus that joins Cantire to the mainland. Similarly we can at once account for Tarbet, the name of a place situate on the narrow strip of land between Loch Lomond and Loch Long. In l. 290 mention is made of "the two Tarberts," *i.e.*, of the East and West Tarberts above mentioned. "Magnus, king of Norway, is said in 1098 to have, in like manner, drawn his ships across this neck of land."—P. That King Robert's *great* ships were occasionally hauled overland is proved from the Chamberlain's Accounts; see the quotations in Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 368.

276. *Lownyt all with treis*, all sheltered with trees. See *Loun* in Jamieson. However, *lownyt* here means no more than 'covered'; it was not so wholly sheltered that no wind could blow there at all, as the story shows us. The Edinb. MS. has *lomþnytt*, which Jamieson explains by 'laid,' without any authority. This *lomþnytt* can only be a corruption; the reading *loned* (Hart) is somewhat more correct. Cf. Ann. Scot. ii. 64, note.

321. Hume of Godscroft (Hist. Douglas, p. 36) calls him "Sir Edward Lillow," but adds that "the Bruces book calls him Edmond de Callock." There is a place called *Caloy* on the Adour, near Mont de Marsan, in Gascony.

331. The Merse is a district in the S. of Berwickshire.

336. "And weened (thought) they (the English) had been few." Here again, MS. E misses several lines, passing from *he* at the end of l. 336 to *he* at the end of l. 344\*.

337\*. "Saw only the fleeing (*i.e.*, retreating Englishmen) disperse themselves, and them that seized upon the prey." The sense of *fleand scaill* is determined by l. 353\* below; see note to that line. It means



that he only saw the English in small companies at a time, and so was deceived as to their number.

337-338. "If he would make haste, he would very easily defeat them, and rescue all the cows."

345\*. Here again MS. E omits 12 lines, owing to the repetition of *ky* at the end of ll. 338 and 356\*. Innes notes that MS. E omits *two* lines here, but he must have meant *twelve*. So, at l. 336 above, he notes that MS. E omits *seven* lines; but he must have meant *eight*.

353\*. "And then both the forayers and the dispersed men knit (themselves) all wholly into a squadron."

341. If we adopt the reading *scaill*, the sense is—"The rest behind them (*i.e.*, the rear-guard) made a dispersion," *i.e.*, followed in loose order, in order to keep a look-out. If we read *stail*, the sense must be the same as in xvii. 97, which see, as also the note. *Maid a stail*, took up a fixed position. The latter is, perhaps, the better; cf. the reading of E in the next line—"thair *lump* all haill."

351. "Let each man then think upon his love" (C); *or*, "think of his sweetheart" (E).

375. "And though they (the English) were, by very much, far more than they (the Scotch) were."

376. *Vre*, practice; see *Ure* in Jamieson. *Demanyt thaim*, lit. demeaned them; *i.e.*, made them demean themselves.

398. "The fame of this deed spread very far."

415. "Ye place him (count him) as if he were without peer."

514. *Haill and feir*, whole and sound; *or*, as we say, safe and sound. *Feir* is the Icel. *færr*, able, capable, safe; Pinkerton oddly confuses it with *fair*.

536. "A trite illustration of a terrible name. It is told of Talbot, of Marlborough," &c.—P.

538. *Beteche*, commit, deliver; cf. *betaucht*, xx. 351. Black Douglas, in allusion to his swarthy complexion; see Book i. 397. He was commonly called by the Scotch "the good Sir James." Hume of Godscroft (p. 20) heads the chapter concerning him with—"Of good Sir James, the first James, and eighth lord of Douglas." Compare—

"Ay trew till him was Jamys the gud Douglace."

—Wallace, xi. 1203.

Cf. Gaelic *dubh-ghlas*, dark-gray; and the story in Hume (p. 3) that the founder of the family, Sholto Douglas, was so named because he was "a black, gray man." Unluckily for the story, "the name is undoubtedly territorial, and taken from Douglas river and dale;" Scott's note N to The Abbot. The word *Douglas* means the "black water," and the name occurs in Lancashire and in the Isle of Man as well as in Scotland; see Taylor's Words and Places.

541. *Grevit* is written for *grewit*; *thame grevit* means 'it made them shudder.' See *Grue* in Jamieson, and observe the various readings.

## NOTES TO BOOK XVI. (A.D. 1316, 1317.)

(Jamieson, XI. 1-698; Innes, pp. 360-385.)

29. It seems to have been in the latter part of 1316; see note to l. 63.

38. Loch Ryan in Galloway is a sea-loch, between Ayrshire and Wigtownshire.

48. *Fest and far*, feasting and good fare.

63. It can hardly have been May, which is the month so frequently adopted by the poets for all their incidents. It must have been later than May 1316, and earlier than May 1317. Lord Hailes says—"The Kings of Scots and his brother, by forced marches, passed through the country of Lowth, and advanced to Slane; 16th February" [1316-17]. He thinks that the battle here mentioned was but an unimportant skirmish.

119. Sir Colin Campbell, according to Jamieson, was the son of the Sir Neil Campbell mentioned in iii. 392, and seems to have been the head of the family of the Campbells of Loch Awe. "Anno 1316, during the Irish war, he got for his service the whole lands of Lochow and Ardsceodinis. He was the son of Nigellus or Neil Campbell, designated *miles* in Ragman Roll; see Nisbet's Remarks, p. 28."—J. Hailes calls him "the king's nephew"; Ann. Scot. ii. 69.

129. "With a truncheon (which was) in his fist."

131. "That he fell noisily against his saddle-bow." His horse was dead, but he had not had time to get off him; so we must suppose. Or else he had mounted another.

132. "The king bade (them) pull him down quickly." To *tyt* is to snatch; see Jamieson. He was to be pulled off his horse, and made to fight on foot.

141. "That we shall have (much) to do very soon."

187. "Always one against five, when he (*i.e.*, his army) was least."

209\*-212\*. Omitted in MS. E, owing to the repetition of *mycht*, ll. 208, 212\*.

223. "In this manner they filled their castles with men."

232. "I see many here felled under foot."

258. *Neir*, nearer. *Ere*, before, formerly.

261. *Drouchyndra*, *i.e.*, Drogheda, where they crossed the Boyne. According to Hailes, the Scotch took Castleknock, near Dublin, Feb. 23; were at Leixlip, on the Liffey, Feb. 25; after four days, marched to Naas in Kildare; and arrived at Callan in Kilkenny, Mar. 12.

265. *Lwnyk* (C); *Lynrike* (H); *Kynrike* (E). It appears that Limerick is the place meant; see Annals of Ireland, in Camden's Britannia; and Ann. Scot. ii. 70. It is not the southernmost town in Ireland; but it was a long way from Carrickfergus, and at the opposite corner, as it were. See note to l. 297.

275. *Mon lewe*, must remain ; lit. must leave (be left).

288. *Or cuir he fure*, ere ever he continued his journey.

295. *Conage*, i.e., Connaught. This makes out that Bruce crossed the Shannon.

296. *Myth*, Meath. *Irell*, Uriel. "Uriel was the district now comprised in the counties of Lowth and Monaghan. It joined Meath on the north-east, and through it lay the road northward."—Innes.

297. "And Munster and Leinster." Munster is mentioned out of order ; it should have come first, before l. 295. It agrees with the mention of Limerick above ; note to l. 265.

303, 304. "And did their homage to him, with the exception of one or two." Pinkerton oddly refers l. 304 to the following sentence, and explains that they had but "a skirmish or two" on their way home. See, however, the next note.

307. "Except that it were some skirmish (lit. puny encounter) that is not worth speaking about here." Pinkerton's explanation of l. 304 (see last note) would do very well *here*. *Wer* = were, was ; *prunzhe* is used as a substantive. But, in l. 318, the word *wer* = war.

317. "The Irishry and Ulster ;" i.e., the Irish tribes who had submitted to him and the country particularly called Ulster (Antrim and Down) ; see note to xiv. 373. The whole phrase probably includes little more than what we *now* call Ulster ; see ll. 319, 320, 325, 326.

327. *Succudry*, a shortened form of *surcudry*, from Fr. *surcuiderie*. "*Surcuidance*, *surcuiderie*, *surquidance*, *surquiderie* ; présomption."—Roquefort. See *Surquedrie* in Halliwell. The word also occurs in Gower—"For yet there is *surquedrie* ;" Conf. Amant. bk. i.

331. "The poet passes to the year 1317."—P.

336. *Hawch*, hollow or low-lying flat ; see *Haugh* in Jamieson. *Lyntoun-le*, Linton Lea. Probably this is the right reading, recovered by help of MS. C. There is a Linton within 10 miles of Jedburgh, to the N.E. Leland has *Lincelly* (see note to l. 342) ; but the French *Scala Cronica*, p. 143, has *Lintelly*. And see l. 443.

342. "Barbour supposes, that Thomas de Richemont commanded the English ; but Scal. Chron. (ap. Leland, t. i. p. 547) says—'King Edward sent the Erle of Arundel as capitayne yn-to the marches of Scotlande, where he sofered reproche by James Duglas at Lincelly, yn the forest of Jedworth, and ther was Thomas of Richemont slayne.' Barbour says, that Thomas de Richemont fell by the hand of Douglas, and that Douglas took the furred hat which he wore above his helmet. In *Histoire de Bretagne*, par Lobineau, t. i. p. 665, there is a portrait of Arthur de Richemont, Duke of Britany, with a *furred hat*, such as is described by Barbour."—Ann. Scot. ii. 72.

"He was no 'earl,' but Sir Thomas of Richmond, a knight of Yorkshire."—Innes. Innes refers to *Scala Cronica* (in French), p. 143.

383. "Was not, in breadth, so much as a pennystone's throw across." A *pennystane* is a flat stone, used as a quoit.

386. *Clewuch*, a hollow in a hillside; a better reading than *louch* (E), which, properly, means a loch or lake.

399. *Half*, side. In the Edinb. MS., Jamieson read it as *hald*; see his note. But *half* is clearly right, and very common.

412. *Thai* and *thame* are loosely used. The sense is—"And they (the Scotch) came on so boldly, that they made for themselves good way through them (the English)."

421. "As a token; for it was furred." See note to l. 342. P. adds—"that he might discover who the owner was." See l. 481.

457. *Entremass*, better spelt *entremes*; and it should rime with *wes* (E). It is the O.Fr. *entremes*, now spelt *entremets*, from a fancied connection with *meat*; but the Fr. *mets*, O.Fr. *mes*, is the Lat. *missum*, a dish as *sent in* or served at table (Brachet). An *entremes* is a delicacy or side-dish (lit. a between-dish). The sense is—"They had a cruel sort of delicacy at their dinner," or, "an indigestible side-dish;" said ironically. Compare—

"But for to iudge his moste wofull penance,

God wote, it was a *pitous entremesse*."

—La Belle Dame sans Merci, st. 20; Chaucer's Works, ed. 1561, fol. ccli.

458. "For that additional load was rather too heavy." The *charge* is here the load or quantity of food devoured by each. Compare the use of *bellyful*, which "is often used ludicrously for more than enough; thus king James told his son that he would have his *bellyful* of parliamentary impeachments;" Todd's Johnson.

501\*. This and the next three lines are marked with an asterisk at the beginning, to show that they are not in Pinkerton's edition. Note that ll. 500 and 504\* end alike.

504. *Forrouth*, before; see vii. 139.

508-516. The sense is that Sir John de Soulis, with fifty men, beset the way *against* Sir Andrew Hardclay, who had with him 300 men, all well mounted. Sir John de Soulis went afterwards with Edward Bruce to Ireland; xiv. 27.

511. Sir Andrew de Hardclay, or Harcla. "Sir Andrew Harcla, warden of the west marches, is detected in correspondence with the Scots and executed, Feb. 27, 1323. He had been but recently created Earl of Carlisle for his services against the Earl of Lancaster;" Annals of England, p. 185. In the conflict with Sir John de Soulis he was taken prisoner; see l. 518.

527-531. Lines 528-530 are parenthetical; the others mean—"That their names be, for evermore, ever continually enduring in praise."

557. "And expected to prevent them from landing." Cf. l. 561.

575. "William Sinclair, brother of Sir Henry Sinclair, of Roslin, was bishop of Dunkeld from about 1308 till about 1324; *Keith*."—P. See allusions to him in The Wallace, vii. 930, ix. 1225; and see Ann. Scot. ii. 73.

580. *Chemeyr* (spelt *chemer*, l. 601), a *chimere*, a light robe, a sort of scarf, used "for till heill his veid," i.e., to cover his (warlike) attire. Cotgrave has—"Chamarre, a loose and light gowne (and, lesse properly, a cloake), that may be worn aswash, or skarfe-wise; also, a studded garment." A bishop's *chimere* was "the upper robe, to which lawn sleeves are generally sewed; which before and after the reformation, till Queen Elizabeth's time, was always of scarlet silk; but Bishop Hooper scrupling first at the robe itself, and then at the colour of it, as too light and gay for the episcopal gravity, it was changed for a *chimere* of black satin;" Wheatley, *On the Common Prayer*, ii. § 4.

584. *Awayward*, i.e., on their return, as they came away.

589. *Allout to fele*, altogether too many.

592. *Weill to ma of ȝow*, to make much of you, to esteem you highly; said ironically.

593. *Takis on hand*, undertake.

594. *Till wer the land*, to defend the country.

597. "He would very soon have your gilt spurs cut off from you." Alluding to a common mode of treating disgraced knights; see l. 598.

617. *Se thai*, if they see. *But*, without.

635. *Held*, kept; still kept (themselves) unslain.

692. "They hoisted sail without delay."

## NOTES TO BOOK XVII. (A.D. 1318, 1319.)

(Jamieson, XI. 699-958; Innes, pp. 385-418.)

13. *Redis swyr*, the source of the Reid. Jamieson quotes from Macpherson's *Geog. Illustrations*—"Ryd-swyre, Reid-swyre, Reid-squair, Redshire (?), the most elevated part of the Roman road at the head of the Ryd, and a boundary to the kingdoms; whence it was the scene of frequent border-meetings, and sometimes of petty skirmishes." *Swyr* is the A.S. *swira* or *sweora*, the neck; in the same way *hawes*, very common in place-names, is the A.S. *heals*, a neck; and the French *col*, so common in Switzerland, is the Lat. *collum*, a neck. Thus *swire*, *hawes*, and *col* all have much the same meaning, and the secondary sense is also much the same, viz., a depression between two adjoining hills, where there is commonly a *pass*. In such depressions rivers have their source; and in this case, the reference is to the *swire* which forms the bed of the source of the Reid, which is a tributary of the Tyne. There is a special reason for mentioning it, as its *position* brought it into frequent notice; for it was the place where the road from Jedburgh to Newcastle crosses the Border, and must have been very often traversed in passing from one kingdom to the other. Jamie-

son adds—"Redpath gives an account of a pretty severe skirmish which took place here, A. 1575, p. 650. This is celebrated in what is called The Ballat of the Red-squair, published in the second volume of the Evergreen, p. 224. There it is said to have been fought July 7, 1576."

22. The town of Berwick was taken Mar. 28, 1318; see Ann. Scot. ii. 78. The castle was held for five days longer, and taken April 2; see l. 198.

35. *Kow-3et*, lit. Cow-gate. Of the five gates of Berwick, one is called the Cowport, leading to the Magdalen Fields.

44, 45. The reading as it stands is probably quite correct. For the sense, supply 'either of them' after 'took.' "And, if he took (either of them) to help him, one or the other would be rendered angry." The reason was, that the one who was not invited would have thought himself disgraced; see l. 54.

48. *Letteris* has the same sense as *letteris* in l. 39, because *letteris* is a mere translation of the Lat. *literæ*. The same confusion has occurred above; see ii. 80, 83.

64. *Dwnss*, Duns; some 15 miles W. of Berwick.

67. *Ane quheyne*, a small body. Bruce ingeniously solves the difficulty. He sends Murray and Douglas *both*, each with a small train.

97. *Staill*, a fixed position; *hald a staill*, occupy a fixed position. Cf. A.S. *steal*, Eng. *stall*. Perhaps the reading *staill* should have been adopted in xv. 341; see note to that line.

103. *Twa part*, i.e., two-thirds.

134. *Baner*, the standard, raised at the *staill*; see note to l. 97.

135. *Stuffit with sa quhoyn*, surrounded by so few.

222. *At*, that. "That he took Berwick to (be under) his care."

236. "Besides burgesses and crossbow-men." *Burgess* hardly seems right. MS. E has *burdownys*, an uncertain word, supposed by Jamieson to mean "men who fought with clubs," but on very slight grounds. Perhaps *burdownis*=*burdouis*, for *burdonis*, i.e., mules. *Oblesteris* is merely a bad spelling of *arblasters* or *arcubalisters*, i.e., crossbow-men. Cf. "And bowe-men and *alblastreris*;" Kyng Alisaunder, ed. Weber, l. 2613. "The *arblast* is first spoken of in the Life of Louis le Gros, who ascended the throne in 1108; from whence it is probable that this weapon was imported by the first crusaders from Asia. In 1139 it was formally anathematised; in consequence of which, it sunk into disrepute, till revived by Richard Cœur de Lion, who himself fell a victim to his favourite weapon."—Weber.

250. "Engines for (making) cracks (or bangs)." An odd way of describing cannon. Elsewhere Barbour calls them "crakkis of wer" or war-cracks; see xix. 399, and the note.

269-273. The sense is, that he would besiege the town with all available forces, and intrench his men so strongly as to secure them from attacks made by any army that came to relieve the town.

278. The reading *suth* (not *such*) removes all difficulty, though the editors have been troubled here, just as in i. 9; see note to that line. The sense is—"And (he) thought all truth (*i.e.*, he was quite right); for it would be a great folly to assail openly, in its intrenchments, so strong an army."

285. In the Camb. MS. there is merely an omission of the mark of contraction over the *a* in *lācister*, *i.e.*, *lāncister* = *lancaſter*. The change of the second *a* to *i* would of course follow, by confusion with *Leicester*. This corruption is less strange than that of *Lancaster* into *Long castell*, which is the reading in E and H; however, C has *loncastell* in l. 852, meaning 'castle on the Lune'; compare *Lonsdale*. *Longcastell* occurs in *The Wallace*, ix. 572.

Thomas, Earl of Lancaster, was inclined to sympathise with the Scotch, and ventured to show his sympathy; see l. 853. In 1321 he openly formed an alliance with them; see l. 864, and the note to l. 866.

286. *Sanctii*, sainted; see note to l. 875.

291. Edward ordered his army to assemble at Newcastle, July 24, 1319; Ann. Scot. ii. 88.

319. *Allye* is a trisyllable—*ally-è*. It is the Fr. *allié*, which Cotgrave translates by "joyned, coupled, knit, near unto in fellowship and friendship." Here it probably means, that they were allied to him by various marriages.

335. "And on Our Lady Mary's eve," *i.e.*, Sept. 7. The construction is similar to that in "Rachelle, that was Josephes Modre the Patriarke"—Mandeville's Travels, p. 72; "This is launcelotts sheld de lake"—Mort Arth. (Roxb. Club), p. 21; see note to *Castell of Loue*, ed. Weymouth, p. 24.

419. "That their fall-bridge (movable bridge) might reach thereto." Perhaps *neych* (E), which may be rendered by "approach, draw nigh," is a mere miswriting for *reych*=reach; which is plainly intended.

423, 424. "See them that were within her become of a worse counsel (*i.e.*, in a worse plight) by far, than they were before."

455. *With*, provided that, as long as, whilst.

470. *All anerly*, lit. all only, *i.e.*, only, solely. It is often written as one word—*allanerly*, just as we write *alone* for *all one*. Thus '*allanerly* flowers' means 'flowers and nothing else'; see the discussion of this very simple phrase in N. and Q., 3d S. ix. 195, 289, 381, 440. Compare—"This Prynce I prayse *alonely* and no mo;" *Barclay's Ship of Fools*, ed. Jamieson, ii. 205.

515. *Wiffis*, wives. We are even told that the Scotch had concerted a plan for carrying off the wife of King Edward himself, from her residence near York; Ann. Scot. ii. 90.

542. "Husbandmen, and men of all misteries," *i.e.*, trades. A *mistry* (Fr. *métier*, O.Fr. *mestier*) is a trade; it has no connection with *mystery*, though it is often spelt the same way.

555. *Mytoun*, Mitton, near Boroughbridge, in the N. Riding of

Yorkshire. The battle was fought Sept. 20, 1319; Ann. Scot. ii. 91.

597. *Gestis* seems to be Fr. *gestes*, i.e., motions, movements. *Of gret gestis* probably means no more than 'of large dimensions,' or 'suitable for great performances.' Or read *gistis*, i.e., joists.

*Ane sow*, a sow. Lord Hailes says—"In many particulars it resembled the *testudo arietaria* of the antients. '*Sus*, machina bellica, quæ et scropha, Gallis *truie*;' Du Cange. . . . In Scotland a long haystack is termed a *sow*—probably from a traditionary remembrance of the warlike engine which went under that name; hence we may have a distinct notion of the figure of this engine;" Ann. Scot. ii. 89. We must remember how low the town-walls were; see l. 380.

598. *Owth* (lit. out), i.e., outside. "That had a strong covering outside it." See note to xiv. 352.

633. Note the various readings of the MSS., viz. *assaling*, C; *defending*, E. The former is right; we must remember that the reference is to the *English* host; see l. 635.

667. *To-fruschyt*, should break in pieces; it is the past tense subjunctive. It occurs as a pp. in x. 597.

672. *Scho*, she. Clearly a great war-engine; but it is odd that there is no previous reference to it. Probably a few lines have been lost here. Barbour, with his fondness for description, would hardly have left this important engine undescribed. On the other hand, the rimes link the sentences together, which make it look like an oversight of Barbour's own.

680. "For doubtless, it is all ours." They were encouraged by finding that the shot went right *over* them.

686. "Then their hearts began to shudder." They were now discouraged by finding that the shot *fell short* of them; as that might easily be rectified.

689. *Iuntly*, closely. I have suggested, in the footnote, that perhaps we should read *Iustly*, i.e., justly, exactly; but *Iuntly* is right, and occurs again in The Wallace; see "*Functly*, *Juntly*, compactly," in Jamieson. It is from the French *joint*, which Cotgrave explains as—"joined, coupled, yoaked, graped, put, couched, or closed together."

690. *Bend*, bend back or set (the engine), ready to go off. To 'bend' a pistol is to cock it; cf. "with hackbut *bent*" in Scott's Cadyow Castle, l. 137. The engineer shot (*swappit*) the stone nearly perpendicularly into the air, so that it fell upon the 'sow' with crushing weight.

696. *Mast summer*, greatest beam (C); *most sower*, most sure, strongest (E). The former reading is far the best, and preserves the original word. A *summer* is the principal beam in a wooden structure; see Halliwell. The sense is—"so that with that blow he (the engineer) brake asunder that which was the largest beam, and strongest for resisting a stroke."



732. *Eir befor*, ere this, in a former place; see l. 379.

852. *Loncastell*, Lancaster; see note to l. 285.

856. Innes has made the correction here, of *north* to *south*, with the remark that "the inclination was the King's, not the Earl's." That is, the *he* in l. 855 refers to the King, but in l. 858, *He* is the Earl.

866. "Lasted, till Andrew Harcla took him afterwards to Pontefract." In 1321, the Earl of Lancaster openly sided with the Scotch. In 1322, he was defeated at Boroughbridge, Mar. 16; and the next day was taken prisoner, and tried by a military council. He was executed at Pontefract, Mar. 22. It is remarkable that Sir Andrew Harcla, then warden of the west marches, was detected in correspondence with the Scotch, and likewise executed in less than a year afterwards. He had but recently been created Earl of Carlisle for his services against the Earl of Lancaster. See *Annals of Eng.*, p. 185; and note to xvi. 511.

875. *Sanctit*, sainted, canonised; as in l. 286. Lancaster was so popular that he was regarded as a martyr, and canonised by the popular voice. His countrymen believed that miracles were performed at his tomb, as at that of his namesake of Canterbury, and a regular form of service was composed for his worship. This form has been preserved in the Royal MS. 12. C. xii., and is printed in *Political Songs*, ed. Wright, p. 268.

## NOTES TO BOOK XVIII. (A.D. 1318, 1322.)

(Jamieson, XII. 687-896; Innes, pp. 418-438.)

1. The story returns to Edward Bruce, and goes back to the year 1318.

13. The defeat and death of Edward Bruce took place at Fagher, near Dundalk, Oct. 5, 1318; *Ann. Scot.* ii. 81.

23. Sir John Soulis and Sir John Stewart; see notes to xiv. 27, 28.

33. *My brothir*, Sir Walter Stewart, who had married King Robert's daughter.

65. *Abid his men*, wait for reinforcements.

116. *In haill battale*, in one complete squadron. *Howand*, hovering near, waiting aloof.

134. *Ourcome*, awoke to consciousness, out of his swoon.

168. *Haf gert saltit*, have cause to be salted. For the construction, cf. "han doon fraught," have cause to be freighted; Chaucer, Group B, 171; "Hath doon yow kept;" id., Group E, 1098; "Hath don wrought;" *Knights Tale*, 1055. Also "he gert held" in viii. 14.

199. *Of thairis*, things belonging to them; i.e., they bribed them to let them go.

224. *Had it*, took it. There is something wrong here, since John Maupas was killed in the battle himself. "John Maupas slew Edward

Bruce, and was found, after the battle, stretched dead on the body of his enemy ;" Ann. Scot. ii. 81.

229. Barbour is wrong here, and links together events that were rather far apart. He skips over nearly four years; for Edward II. did not invade Scotland, as here described, till August 1322.

254. He occupied Culross because it was just on the northern shore of the Forth, so that he kept the Firth of Forth between himself and the enemy.

276. Tranent, E. of Edinburgh, on the road to Haddington.

346. *I.e.*, he left Culross, and crossed the Forth, which was called "the Scottish Sea."

355. Byland is near Ryedale, Yorkshire; see note to l. 498.

366. The spelling *þeth* occurs also in The Wallace, v. 5.

409. Arthin; so in C. Tytler, following the reading *ouchtre*, guesses it to be Thomas de Uchtred, mentioned in the *Fœdera*, iii. 963.

418. *Owth*, beyond, above. See note to xiv. 352.

443. *Erischry*, not Irishmen, but speakers of Erse, *i.e.*, Highlanders.

498. *Riweus*, *i.e.*, Rievaulx, where is the celebrated Rievaulx abbey. It is in Ryedale, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, as the very name shows; for *Rie* is plainly the river Rye, and *vaulx* is from the Lat. *uallis*.

507. *Iohne of Bretane*, John de Bretagne, Earl of Richemont; Ann. Scot. ii. 104.

524. One of them was Henry de Sully, grand butler of France.—Tytler, i. 145.

537\*. In the Camb. MS. only. Perhaps a line has been lost, however, as the rimes are imperfect.

547. *To-stonay*, greatly astonish. The *to-* is the common intensive prefix.

555. *The wald*, the wold; probably the Wolds, lying between York and Beverley.

558. *The vale of Beauvare*, lit. the vale of Beauvoir; it appears that Beverley is meant, and the vale is that of the river Hull. They must have advanced from York over the Wolds, reached Beverley, and then retired past Driffield.

## NOTES TO BOOK XIX. (A.D. 1320-1327.)

(Jamieson, XIII. 359—XIV. 586; Innes, pp. 438-466.)

2. *Covatis*, lit. covetousness; here used in the sense of ambition. Cf. Wallace, xi. 833-848.

11. "Sir William de Soulis seems to have been the grandson of Nicolas de Soulis, one of the competitors at the time of the disputed

succession. Nicolas claimed in right of his grandmother, the daughter of Alexander II., and he would have excluded the other competitors, had her legitimacy been ascertained;" Ann. Scot. ii. 97. Barbour is rather more explicit than others about this conspiracy, but he dates it wrongly; he here places it in 1322, but it was in 1320. See Fordun, cap. cxxxv. Cf. note to iii. 99 above.

16. The reading *male-herbe* (E) is better. Fordun says—"Gilbertus de Malerb, Johannes de Logi, milites, et Ricardus Broune, armiger."

23. *Ane lady*, the Countess of Strathern; Ann. Scot. ii. 96.

46. This parliament was afterwards remembered as the Black Parliament from the condemnation of the conspirators. It was held at Scone, Aug. 1320.

73. See note to Book ii. 211. The real name of the mediator was Henry de Sully; Ann. Scot. ii. 108. He was afterwards taken prisoner by the Scotch, in 1322; see xviii. 524 (note).

84. "Till men had done all their will with him," *i.e.*, had completed his execution.

128. *In that tyme*. It is not at all clear at *what* time; but, as it is said in l. 188 that the truce was to last for 13 years, the reference must be to the truce which was to have lasted from 1323 to 1336. But this was three years after the conspiracy of De Soulis, which Barbour has placed two years too late.

153. There is a story of a Sir Henry de Beaumont, who refused to give his advice about the truce in 1323. See Ann. Scot. ii. 109.

165, 166. These lines may have suggested the line in *Marmion*, vi. 34—"Groom fought like noble, squire like knight."

188. *Thretten*, thirteen. From Mar. 30, 1323, to June 12, 1336.

205. Walter Stewart, who had married Bruce's daughter, died April 9, 1326.

206. *Bathket*, Bathgate in Linlithgowshire.

230. See note to l. 188. Barbour makes the time a little too short. It was about 4 years; for Edward III. had ratified the truce Mar. 8, 1327; and the Scotch did not invade England till June.

248. June 15, 1327; Ann. Scot. ii. 118.

254. *Wardill*, Weardale, in the county of Durham.

255. Edward II., of Carnarvon, was deposed Jan. 7, 1327; he was murdered at Berkeley, Sept. 21.

257. Edward III. was crowned Feb. 1, 1327. He was not 15 years old, having been born at Windsor, Nov. 13, 1312.

261. Isabella, daughter of Philip IV. of France.

264. Philippa, daughter of William, Count of Holland and Hainault. Edward married her in January, 1328, *i.e.*, after the time of which Barbour is now speaking.

267. This was John, Lord of Beaumont, the Count of Hainault's brother. See Froissart, capp. viii., ix.

271. Edward fortified York, July 15, 1327; Ann. Scot. ii. 117.

278. He was not yet so much as fifteen. See note to l. 257.

279. "This seems to be the vale watered by the river Coc, Cok, or Cock, also Cockar, in Yorkshire. See Camden, iii. 239."—J. The river Cock rises on Whin Moor, to the N.E. of Leeds, and after passing the battle-field of Towton, falls into the Wharfe near Tadcaster; see Murray's Guide to Yorkshire, p. 515.

316. "On the N. side of the Wear." For an account of this campaign, see Froissart, capp. xvii., xviii.

332. "The English souldiers of this army were cloathed in coats, and *hoods*, embroydered with flowers and branches, and did use to nourish their beards: wherefore the Scots in derision thereof, made this rime, and fastned it upon the Church doore of Saint Peter in the Canongate, [*Long*] *beards hartlesse, Painted hoods witlesse, Gay coat[s] gracelesse, Make England thriftlesse;*" Hume of Godscroft, Hist. Douglas, p. 42. The same rime is given in the Book of St Alban's and in Fabyan's Chronicle.

374. "This was the ancestor of the ancient and noble families of Mar and Buchan. Crawford (Peerage, p. 297) says that he could trace them by writs no farther back than to the reign of Alexander II. They took their name from the lands of Erskine in Renfrewshire."—J.

396. *Tymbrys*, crests; O.Fr. *timbre*, Lat. *tympanum*. They were made of metal, wood, leather, or cloth. They were not quite a new thing at this time; but Barbour probably alludes to the fact that, about this time, they came into more general use. See Eng. Cyclop., art. *Crest*; Godwin's Eng. Archæologist's Handbook, p. 259.

399. *Crakkis of wer*, cracks of war, *i.e.*, noisy war-machines, or *cannon*. See Barbour's reference to them in Book xvii. 250, where he says these were unknown in Scotland in 1319. It is generally supposed that cannon were first used at Crécy in 1346; see Chambers, Book of Days, ii. 273; Notes and Queries, 1st S. x. 306, 412, 534. Yet it is said there are allusions to the use of them in India as early as A.D. 1200, and at the siege of Cambray about A.D. 1339. Consult Col. Chesney's Observations on the Past and Present State of Fire-arms, 8vo. 1852. (Notes and Queries, 3d S. vii. 242.) Froissart (cap. 73) mentions cannons in his account of the siege of Stirling in 1340. See also a note on this subject in Weber's Metrical Romances, iii. 306, which refers us to Bp. Watson's Chemical Essays.

459. *Degysl*, feigned. Cotgrave has—"Desguisé, disguised, dissembled, feigned, counterfeited." Hart ridiculously prints *tragedie*, which Jamieson follows, and Pinkerton explains as meaning 'a stage-trick!' In MS. E, a blank space is left for the word, as if the scribe could not read what he had before him.

468. *War*, would be; the subj. mood.

490. *A park*, Stanhope Park, in Weardale; cf. l. 509. See Hume of Godscroft, Hist. Douglas, p. 43; Chron. of St Albans, sign. t. ii. b.;

Hardyng's Chronicle, p. 316. Hutchinson, in his *Hist. Durham*, iii. 287, 288, is pleased to say that Stanhope Park was occupied by the *English*. See Jamieson's note. Cf. Froissart, cap. xviii.

485. *Be nychtlyrtale*, by night-time, by night, in the night. The Camb. MS. wrongly has *nychtir-daill*. Jamieson seems to have fancied that "it might be meant for the name of some place." It is almost incredible that he should have forgotten the occurrence of the word in Chaucer's Prologue, l. 97. However, his Dictionary has the right explanation. Cf. Icel. *nóttartal*, a tale or number of nights.

497. "They replenished their fires and made them larger." Cf. l. 732.

530. *Ferrest*, i.e., furthest, most remote; so also *ferrer*, further, in l. 537. The date of this exploit is Aug. 4, 1327.

571. "They made them know that it was a great folly." Froissart says that Douglas even cut two or three cords of Edward's tent.

577. "That lord (first), and another (afterwards), were upon the move." An awkward line.

611. "That, had not experience (in arms) helped (me) the more."

667. *Thou mon heir out*, thou must get out by this exit.

689. "Except where they are encamped." It is a good story, but the parallel does not hold; for the fox *did* get out where the fisherman had stood watching.

742. The additional lines in Hart are probably genuine; and his reading of ll. 743, 744, is better than in the text. Cf. Book xii. 395.

746. The reading *summer* is equivalent to *sowmir*, the spelling in Wallace, iv. 53, for a sumpter-horse.

776. *Marche*, March. On Hart's odd reading—*Stratherne*—Innes remarks: "He did not know even by name the once great earldom of the Dunbars."

779. For *mycht*, E has *nycht*, making utter nonsense. The line means—"that they (Bruce's men) and they (Murray's men) might be together;" i.e., if the reinforcements could effect a junction with the main army.

790. *At a fay*, lit. at one faith; i.e., of one fealty, owing obedience to the same sovereign.

810. "And that they had escaped such peril without loss."

## NOTES TO BOOK XX. (A.D. 1327-1332.)

(Jamieson, XIV. 587-1210; Innes, pp. 466-488.)

7. About August or September, 1327.

15, 16. "And many a fair good feat was full doughtily achieved."

23. "It was not only to his Scotch followers that Bruce gave Northumbrian lands. Nothing serves better to mark his success and

great ascendancy than the number of native lords of Northumberland and the Bishoprick who now professed adherence to him, and whose subsequent forfeiture for that cause appears in the English records; see the Patent Rolls, &c."—Innes.

26. "And they paid for the fee of the seal." This is a remarkable proof of his success. See the last note.

29. Mortimer was executed Nov. 29, 1330. The peace with Scotland was concluded March 17, 1328.

30. Queen Isabella was imprisoned at the close of 1330. At this time her influence was supreme.

37. David, son of King Robert, was born Mar. 5, 1324, so that he was only just *four* years old at this time.

39. "Joan, born in the Tower, in 1321, was in 1329 [1328?] married to David, prince of Scotland (afterwards David II.). She accompanied him in his exile in France, and solicited permission to share his imprisonment in England; but she was at length obliged to separate from him through his own misconduct, and return to her brother's court, where she died, Sept. 7, 1362;" Annals of England, p. 181.

44-49. The omission of these lines in MS. C and some editions can hardly have been intentional, but was due to the one chief cause of such omissions—viz., repetition of final words. Here, for instance, the scribe passed from the line ending with *ser* (l. 44) to the next line with the same ending—viz., l. 49.

59. The marriage took place at Berwick, July 12, 1328; Ann. Scot. ii. 131.

73. *Male ess*, i.e., disease; Fr. *mal aise*.

75. *Ane fundyng*, a foundering, benumbment with cold. Jamieson explains *enfunde yng* (E) as 'perhaps asthma,' by fancifully referring it to an old Swedish word with which it has no connection; but *enfunde yng* is merely *en-foundering*, i.e., the same word as before with the prefix *en-*. In the Prompt. Parv., p. 175, Mr Way has the following note: "Dr Turner, in his Herbal, 1562, makes use of the term [*founder*] in allusion to ailments of the human body, where he says that *pyrethrum* 'is excellently good for any parte of the body that is *fundied* or *founded*.' In his treatise of baths and mineral waters, he says that the baths of Baden, in High Germany, 'heate muche membres that are *foundre* or fretished wyth cold, and bringe them to theyr naturall heate agayne;' and that the Pepper bath [no doubt the baths of Pfäfers] has virtues to restore limbs 'fretished, *founded*, and made numme wyth colde.'" Again, in Jamieson's Dict., we have—"To Fundy, Funny, v. n., to become stiff with cold; Ramsay." These extracts make it clear that the word here intended is equivalent to *foundering*, which is used of exhaustion or physical prostration of any kind; and, in particular, of exhaustion produced by extreme cold and exposure. The disease induced was, in King Robert's case, termed 'leprosy.'

79. Cardross. "In the parish of Cardross to the W. of the river

Leven [in Dumbartonshire] a small eminence still retains the name of the Castle hill ; on which, according to the tradition of the country, a castle once stood, which was the occasional residence of the king, and in which he breathed his last ; but no vestige even of the ruins are (*sic*) now to be seen ;" Kerr's Hist. Rob. Bruce, ii. 481 (quoted by Jamieson).

102. *To houss wes gevin*, was conducted home.

121. Cf. Froissart's Chron. cap. xx.

128. Barbour is here several years out. The Act of Settlement to which he refers was passed at the parliament held in Dec. 1318, nearly ten years previously.

160. See the account of King Robert's death in Froissart, ch. xx. There are seven old leonine verses called 'King Robert's Testament,' which are quoted, together with an old Scottish translation, in Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 367.

185. Observe that Bruce says his heart is to be *taken* to the Holy Land, but he does not say it is to be *left* there. It appears that he had (at any rate in May, 1329) destined it to be finally deposited at Melrose. See the curious injunction to this effect, printed at the end of Scott's notes to The Abbot.

248. "All that concerned a good Christian man." He died at Cardross, June 7, 1329.

257. "And often drive their fists together," *i.e.*, clench their hands.

293 [287 in P.]. "The expenses of Bruce's funerals are very minutely recorded in the accounts of the Chamberlain of Scotland. The marble tomb was brought from Paris. A large part of it must have been gilded, if we are to judge from the quantity of leaf gold (*foliorum aureorum*) entered among the articles purchased."—Innes. Jamieson (pp. 489-493) gives several extracts from these Accounts.

324. "He left the mainland of Spain on the north of him." That is, he rounded Cape St Vincent.

326. *Sebell the Graunt*, Seville the Grand, the great city of Seville, on the Guadalquivir.

338. *All soyne*, very soon ; ingeniously altered by Hart to Alphous (*for* Alphons). There were two Alphonsos at this time—Alphonso XI., king of Leon and Castile, who is here intended, and Alphonso IV., king of Arragon. See Ann. Scot. ii. 134.

351, 352. "And entrusted to him good soldiers who were well instructed in the mode of warfare in that land."

367. *Till-hewyn*, a bad spelling for *to-hewen*, *i.e.*, severely cut or wounded. *Fast* signifies 'very, greatly.'

378. *Love god*, praise God. Henry the Minstrel has copied this trait in his portrait of Wallace :—

"His face he kept, for it was euir bar,  
With his twa handis, the quhilk full worthi war."

—Wallace, iii. 91.

"Woundis he had in mony diuerss place,  
Bot fayr and weill kepyt was his face."—Id., ix. 1933.

393. According to Lord Hailes, who refers to Mariana, the Moorish leader was Osmyn, who commanded in Granada. On *Belmaryne*, see Tyrwhitt's note to Chaucer, Prol. l. 57.

396. *Demanze* is clearly the right reading; cf. *demaine* in Hart, and the reading *demainze* adopted by Jamieson. It means here to control, lit. to handle, treat, manage; such being the sense of the O.Fr. *demener*, sometimes spelt *demainer*. See Roquefort's and Burguy's Glossaries. Similarly, we read that the English '*demaynde*' Scotland as if it had been "thair awne heretage"; Wallace, iii. 18.

421\*-432\*. It is somewhat strange that these lines, no doubt genuine, are omitted in both MSS. However, as Jamieson points out, the sense of the passage is preserved in Holland's poem called *The Howlat* (Owlet), written about 80 years after *The Bruce*. The passage in *The Howlat* (ed. Laing, 1823, st. 38, 39) is as follows:—

"Than in defence of the faith he fure to the fecht,  
With knychtis of Christindome to kepe his command.  
And quhen the battallis so brym, brathly, and bricht,  
War joyned thrally in thrang, many thousand;  
Among the hethin men the hert hardely he flang,  
Said, 'wend on as thou was wont,  
Throw the batell in bront,  
Ay formast in the front,  
Thy fayis amang.  
And I sall fallowe the in faith, or feye to be fellit;  
As thi lege man leile, my lyking thow art;' . . .  
Thus frayis he the fals folk, trewly to tell it,  
Ay quhil he couerit [*recovered*] and come to the kingis hart."

See l. 486 below, which almost presupposes some special mention of the heart in this place.

440. "They (the chased, the Saracens) rallied;" cf. l. 500.

444. Sir William Sinclair of Roslin; cf. Scott's poem of *Rosabelle*.

470. Aug. 25, 1330; see Ann. Scot. ii. 136.

521. "In B.C. 278, the consuls, C. Fabricius and Q. Æmilius Papus, undertook the command of the war. At the beginning of the campaign, a traitor offered to poison Pyrrhus; but the Romans honestly denounced the scoundrel;" Schmitz's *History of Rome*.

524. Innes retains the reading *Luffit*, loved; but it obviously makes nonsense.

571. "Caused him to be boiled." The reading *seth* is clearly the right one, not *scher* (shear, flay), as in MS. E.

577. *War leuit*, had taken leave.

587. *His sone*. So in the MSS., though it is a mistake of Barbour's. Some editions have turned *sone* into *brother*, by way of correction. Douglas was never married; his natural son was named William. He



was succeeded by his second brother Hugh, the ninth Lord Douglas, of whom little is known. The person intended is his third brother, whom Hume of Godscroft calls "Archbald Douglas, Lord of Gallo-way, Governour of Scotland, third brother to Sir James," giving a long account of him; Hist. Douglas, pp. 53-62.

604. "And well defended the poor;" lit. and held the poor well under guard. *Pure*, poor (C), is the right reading; not *power* (E).

609. Murray died July 20, 1332. Barbour says he was poisoned, but does not say by whom. The statement that he was poisoned by a monk is only to be found in the printed editions; see footnote to l. 610. See the note on the 'Death of Randolph' in Tytler's Hist. Scot. i. 369.

---

#### NOTES TO "HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER."

5. *Ill techis*, bad qualities; see *Tache* in Halliwell.

9. "And more easily blemished (lit. blacked) by a great deal." Dr Lumby explains *be mekill thing* to mean "in comparison with a greater thing;" Ratis Raving, p. 129. But it merely means "by a great deal." Cf. l. 239.

20. *Nocht mak our moy*, not pretend to be over-dainty.

42. *Our fer*, over far, too far.

47. "And rather (incline) to take a lower place than a higher, and (then) be put down." Cf. l. 121.

53. *Nocht than*, not but that. "Not but that they should always be decent." Dr Lumby (p. 129) explains it by "nothing should ever be more honest than they," which would require the comparative form *honester*. See l. 67.

61. Cf. P. Plowman, C. vi. 134; B. v. 31.

86. *Ladry*, common people, the rabble. See Jamieson.

95. *Lest viith*, hold out against.

101. *Had I wittyn*, had I known. Corresponding to the common Southern English *had I wist*; which see in Halliwell.

114. *In the rew*, in the street.

115. *Ryn at bares*, run at bars, play at the game of 'prison bars' or 'prisoners' base.' See "Base, or Prison-base, or Prison-bars" in Nares's Glossary.

123. *Our cleyn veschyn*, washed over-clean (!).

126. "To mend the complexion that God made."

148. *Vaverand*, lit. wavering, going about idly. Dr Lumby prints *wanerand*, and explains it by 'wandering.' This gives the right sense, but it is not the same word. It is our 'wavering'; cf. Icel. *vafra*, to

hover about, *vdafa*, to swing, to vibrate to and fro. See note to The Bruce, vii. 302\*.

168. *Beis nocht*, will not be.

222. "What the eye sees not, the heart covets not." The more common form is—"What the eye seeth not the heart doth not rue;" Hazlitt's Eng. Proverbs, p. 453.

233. *War nocht fors*, were not force (used). The odd contraction *dud* (see footnote) occurs again in Ratis Raving, l. 3218—"Thow art wndone, and euer thow *dud*," i.e., thou art undone, if ever thou *do it*. Dr Murray tells me that *dud* for 'do it,' riming with *guid* (good), is extremely common in Scotland to this day.

257. This sentence is a muddle, owing to the interpolation of ll. 259, 260, which must be regarded as parenthetical. *Quilk and thai had*, which if they had had; so in l. 284.

280. "An over-reckless, unprofitable (*or* inactive) person is wanton." But this line is really a repetition, out of place, of l. 276.

302. *On neyd*, of necessity; which is also the sense of the reading *On fors*.

## NOTES TO "A DIETARY."

Another copy of this poem occurs in The Shepherd's Kalender, ed. 1656, sig. L 6, back. It begins—"For health of body, cover from cold thy head."

5. *Ado*, to do. *Ado* is really short for *at do*, where *at* is the usual Northern prefix to the infinitive, as in Icelandic, &c. Compare—

"Lordys, he said, ye wait [*know*] quhat is *ado*."

—The Wallace, ed. Moir, viii. 1248.

See the examples of *at do* in Mätzner, Englische Grammatik, II. ii. 58.

45. The spelling *Wise* (meaning 'visit') is easily explained. It was not usual to retain the final *t* of this word in Lowland Scotch. See *Vesie* in Jamieson's Dictionary.

50. *Be war with*, be ware *against*, i.e., beware of.

53. Chaucer's line (see footnote) is—"That porter of the gate is of delices." Cf. "Nat was foryeten the porter ydelnesse;" Knightes Tale, l. 1082.

78. *Both*, bought; see the footnote.

80. "To all temperate men (lit. impartial men) this Dietary is a treasure;" Lat. version—"Sed cunctis ditissimum vtentibus est dietarium."

# INDEX I.

## INDEX TO SUBJECTS DISCUSSED, AND WORDS EXPLAINED, IN THE NOTES.

The numbers refer to the Book and the Line, and are available both for the Text and Notes.

The *words* discussed are denoted by beginning with a small letter ; the *subjects*, by beginning with a capital.

a, 13. 132 ; 19. 790.  
abandonyt, 3. 48 (4. 655) ; abandonit,  
4. 391.  
abid, 18. 65.  
Acre, siege of, 1. 140.  
Adrastus, 2. 528.  
Airth, 13. 495.  
Alexander, romance of, 1. 533 ; 3. 73.  
Alexander III., 1. 37.  
all ancerly, 17. 470.  
allane, 6. 268.  
allout, 16. 589.  
allye, 17. 319.  
Alphonso XI., 20. 338.  
Andrews, Archbishop of, 1. 354.  
anger, 3. 517 ; angyr, 2. 518.  
Angus, 3. 659.  
Annandale, 4. 599.  
apane, 9. 64.  
apert, 10. 73.  
Arblast, when used, 17. 236.  
arblastars, 17. 236.  
Ardrossan, 14. 31.  
Arestee (Aristè), 10. 718.  
Argyle, Allaster of, 10. 123.  
Arickstone, 2. 148.  
armoris, 13. 183.  
Arran, 4. 464.  
Arthin, 18. 409.  
Arthur, King, 1. 549.  
Artois, Robert of, 1. 339.  
Arundel, Earl of, 16. 342.

assenzhe, 2. 378.  
Athole, Earl of, 2. 235 ; 5. 151.  
Auchterhouse, 14. 29.  
avay, 6. 210.  
aw, stand, 3. 62.  
awayward, 16. 584.  
Awe, Loch, 10. 17, 27, 34.  
ayndless, 10. 609.  
  
Baliol, 1. 37, 51.  
baner, 17. 134.  
Bann, river, 14. 369, 371.  
Barclay, David, 2. 237.  
barell-feris, 15. 39.  
Bathgate, 19. 206.  
battale, 18. 116 ; battalis, 11. 304.  
bear in hand, 1. 62.  
Beaumont, Henry de, 19. 153.  
beauvare, 18. 558.  
Beg, Lough, 14. 371.  
belewyt, 13. 544.  
Bell, Sir Ingraham, 6. 3.  
Belmaryne, 20. 393.  
bend, 17. 690.  
Benoit de Sainte-Maure, 1. 525.  
berfroiss (Old French *befroi*), 10. 708.  
Berwick, 11. 184 ; 20. 59. ; taken 17.  
22.  
beteche, 15. 538.  
Betoun (?), 13. 523.  
Bety, Duke, 3. 73.  
Beverley, 18. 555, 558.

- biggit, 14. 383.  
 Birmingham, Sir John de, 14. 143.  
 Bissets, 14. 47.  
 Blackwater, 14. 337, 345.  
 Blair, Sir Brice, 4. 37.  
 Bohun, Sir Henry, 12. 29.  
 Boroughbridge, 17. 555.  
 Boroundoun, 2. 479.  
 Rosbek, 4. 249.  
 bot and, 5. 595.  
 Bothwell, 8. 15, 95; castle, 13. 412.  
 Bouvines, battle of, 4. 241, 249.  
 Brander, pass of, 10. 17; rocks of, 10. 86.  
 Brechin, Sir David, 2. 211, 237.  
 Bretagne, John de, 18. 507.  
 Bride's, St, 5. 336.  
 brim, 14. 339.  
 Brodic castle, 4. 388.  
 Broune, Richard, 19. 15.  
 Bruce, Edward, 2. 236; 14. 1.; 18. 1, 13, 224.  
 Bruce, Nigel, 2. 513.  
 Bruce, Robert (the elder), 1. 51, 477.  
 Bruce, Robert, 1. 477; his death, 20. 168, 185; his funeral, 20. 293; his heart, 20. 185, 421\*.  
 Bruce (*error for* Brice), 4. 37.  
 Buchan, 9. 297; 19. 374; Countess of, 4. 56.  
 Burgh-on-Sands, 4. 203.  
 Bunkle, 9. 691.  
 Bunnock, Binnock, 10. 153.  
 burdis, 5. 388.  
 burdows, 17. 236.  
 burgess, 17. 236.  
 Burgh, Richard de, 14. 159.  
 but, 3. 517; 7. 447; 16. 617.  
 Bute, 3. 577.  
 Butel (Buttil), 9. 522.  
 Butler, 14. 143, 159.  
 Byland, 18. 355.  
 byrd, 6. 316.  
 call all, 10. 227 (231).  
 Callan, 16. 261.  
 Callock, Edmond de, 15. 321.  
 Campanus, 2. 534.  
 Campbell, Sir Neil, 2. 491.  
 Campbell, Sir Colin, 16. 119.  
 Cannæ, 3. 208.  
 Cannon, 17. 250; 19. 399.  
 cant and keyn, 8. 280.  
 Cantire, 3. 385.  
 Capaneus. *See* Campanus.  
 Cardross, 20. 79, 248.  
 Carrick, 4. 599.  
 Carrickfergus, 14. 33.  
 caryage, 15. 19.  
 Castleknock, 16. 261.  
 Cato, Dionysius, quoted, 1. 122.  
 Charlemagne, 3. 441, 459.  
 charre, 11. 123.  
 chemeyr, 16. 580.  
 Christiana de Insulis, 5. 133.  
 Clare, Richard, 14. 159.  
 clene and law, 10. 471.  
 clewch, 16. 386.  
 Clifford, 2. 112; 7. 622; 11. 521.  
 Cock, river, 19. 279.  
 colè, 7. 623.  
 Comyn, John, 2. 235; 3. 1; 6. 503.  
 Comyn, John, of Buchan, 9. 110.  
 Comyn, Sir Robert, 2. 37.  
 Coneus, 3. 73.  
 connand, 11. 1.  
 Connaught, 16. 295.  
 Connor, 14. 394.  
 couer, 9. 190.  
 covatiss, 19. 2.  
 covyne, 13. 219.  
 Cowal, 3. 153.  
 Cowport (Berwick), 17. 35.  
 Culross, 18. 254, 346.  
 Cumnock, 6. 463.  
 Cunningham, 8. 13.  
 crakkis, 19. 399.  
 Crawford, Sir Reginald, 4. 36.  
 Cree, river, 9. 517.  
 Crests come into use, 19. 396.  
 Cruachan, Ben, 10. 27.  
 cyre, 12. 22.  
 Dalry, 3. 68, 109.  
 dangeir, 10. 196.  
 Dares, 1. 525.  
 Date of the work, 13. 704.  
 David I., 1. 51.  
 David II., 13. 697; born, 20. 37; married, 20. 39.  
 Dauklyne, 3. 73; *perhaps read* Danklyne.  
 daw, of, 7. 132.  
 Dayncourt, 11. 573.  
 degysè, 19. 459.  
 demanže, 20. 396; *demanyt thaim*, 15. 376.  
 departit, 7. 626.  
 Devilling (Dublin), 15. 107.  
 Dickson, Thomas, 5. 276.  
 Dictys, 1. 525.  
 discrivit, 13. 185.  
 do furth, 1. 256.  
 Dochart, Glen, 3. 109.  
 Donavardyne, 3. 666.  
 Douglas, Sir Archibald, 20. 587.

Douglasdale, 5. 271.  
 Douglas, James, 1. 364; 2. 211; cuts  
 the cords of Edward's tent, 19. 571.  
 Douglas, William, 1. 283; 5. 276.  
 'Douglas' larder, 5. 403.  
 Douglas, meaning of, 15. 538.  
 Down, Thomas of, 14. 376.  
 dragoun, 2. 205.  
 Drogheda, 16. 261.  
 duk-peris, 3. 440.  
 Dunaverty. *See* Donavardyne.  
 Dunbar, 13. 611.  
 Dundalk, 14. 135.  
 Dundee, 9. 328.  
 Duns, 17. 64.  
 Dunstaffnage, 10. 113.

Edward I., 1. 283; 2. 151, 243\*; 4.  
 599; 8. 361; 9. 1; death of, 4. 190.  
 Edward II., 8. 364; 17. 291; 19. 255.  
 Edward III., 19. 257, 264.  
 Egremor, 3. 441.  
 ek, 8. 290.  
 Endwillane, 14. 113.  
 enseinjie, 2. 426; 3. 27 (*note to* 2. 378).  
 entremes, 16. 457.  
 erd, 6. 128.  
 ere, 16. 258.  
 erischry, 14. 9; 18. 443.  
 Erskine, 19. 374.  
 eschelis, 8. 218.  
 Etive, Loch, 10. 17, 27, 34.  
 Ettrick, 8. 425; 9. 673.  
 eym, 10. 305; eyne, 13. 697.

Fagher, 18. 13.  
 faldyn, 11. 547; falding, 13. 632.  
 far, 16. 46.  
 fast, 20. 367.  
 fay, 19. 790.  
 fayndit, fandit, 12. 148.  
 feble, 3. 384.  
 feill, 11. 655; fele, 16. 589.  
 feir, 15. 514.  
 feld, hard, 12. 406\*.  
 fele, 16. 589; feill, 11. 655.  
 fell, 6. 246.  
 Fergus, 14. 31.  
 Ferrand, Earl of Flanders, 4. 241.  
 ferrand (horse's name), 2. 118.  
 ferrest, 19. 530.  
 Ferumbras, 3. 437, 459.  
 fest and far, 16. 46.  
 Fierabras, 3. 437, 459.  
 fiff sum, 6. 149; (*note to* 3. 420).  
 Fingal, 3. 68.  
 Fitzthomas, 14. 146.  
 Fitzwarren, 15. 75.

Flagot, 3. 455.  
 fleand, 15. 337\*.  
 fluss, 13. 20.  
 for, 2. 503.  
 fordid, 5. 412.  
 forfure, 10. 529.  
 forrouth, 16. 504.  
 Forster, 9. 312.  
 forsuk, 14. 315.  
 Forth, Firth of, 18. 254.  
 Fox and fisherman, 19. 689.  
 foul, 7. 188.  
 founder, 20. 75.  
 frely, 3. 578.  
 frest, 7. 447.  
 Fraser, 2. 239; 8. 395, 397.  
 fundying, 20. 75.  
 fur, 2. 503; fure, 16. 288.  
 furth, 1. 256.  
 fute, 3. 578.  
 fut-bate, 3. 418; fut-hat, 13. 454.

ga, 9. 190.  
 Gaderis, forray of, 3. 73.  
 Galston, 8. 123.  
 gang, 8. 450.  
 Gaudifer, 3. 73.  
 Gaul Mac Morna, 3. 68.  
 Genitive of names, construction of,  
 17. 335.  
 gert helde, 8. 14.  
 gevin to hous, 20. 102.  
 gill, 7. 622.  
 Gillemine de Fiennes, 10. 456.  
 Glasgow, Bishop of, 2. 178; 4. 13.  
 Glentrool, 7. 494.  
 Gloucester, Earl of, 11. 163; 13. 511.  
 Gordon, 9. 695.  
 Granada, 20. 393.  
 grevit, grue, 15. 541.  
 grewis, 5. 13.  
 grue, grevit, 15. 541.  
 gyrth, 2. 44; 4. 47.

haill, 18. 116; haill and feir, 15.  
 514.  
 Hainault, Count of, 19. 264, 267.  
 half, 16. 399.  
 hals, 5. 575.  
 Hannibal, 3. 208, 235.  
 Harcla (*or* Hardclay), Sir Andrew,  
 16. 508, 511; 17. 866.  
 Harpar, Gib, 15, 181.  
 has, 13. 642.  
 Hastings, John, 1. 51; 4. 384.  
 hawch, 16. 336.  
 hawes, 17. 13.  
 hawying, 7. 135.

- Haye, Hugh de la, 2. 237.  
 he, 7. 192.  
 hede-soyme, 10. 180.  
 held, 16. 635.  
 held on, 7. 27.  
 Henry IV., 3. 209.  
 her, 12. 505.  
 Hereford, Earl of, 13. 412.  
 hevede, 5. 11.  
 Holland's poem of the Houlate, 20. 421\*.  
 Hoods worn by the English, 19. 332.  
 howand, 18. 116.  
 hy, 15. 162.  
  
 James (*disyllabic*), 1. 313.  
 Jedworth, Jedwood, 8. 427.  
 Jeromy (Jeremiah), 4. 682.  
 Jerusalem, 4. 209.  
 Inverury, 9. 34.  
 Joan de la Tour, 20. 39.  
 Johnston, St. 2. 247.  
 Isabella, Queen, 19. 261; 20. 30.  
 Islay, 3. 659.  
 Judas Iscariot, 4. 18.  
 iuntly, 17. 689.  
 iuperdy, 14. 421.  
  
 Kildrummy, 2. 513; 3. 337; 4. 181; 9. 289.  
 Kilkenane, 14. 522.  
 Kilross, 14. 252.  
 Kilsaggart, 14. 133.  
 Kilwinning, 8. 95.  
 knaiff child, 13. 693.  
 Knights made, 9. 138; 12. 413.  
 Kyle, 8. 9.  
 Kyllvanane, 14. 522.  
  
 ladis, 8. 450.  
 Lamberton, William of, 1. 354.  
 Lanark, 8. 447.  
 Lancaster, Earl of, 17. 285, 866, 875.  
 lap on, 5. 214.  
 Larne, Lough, 14. 33.  
 Laryss, 3. 73.  
 late, 7. 127.  
 lechyng, 13. 46.  
 Leinster, 16. 297.  
 leit lichtly, 12. 250.  
 Leixlip, 16. 261.  
 Lennox, 2. 235.  
 lenteryne, 10. 815.  
 lest, 7. 65.  
 let, 1. 254.  
 lettir, letteris, 17. 48.  
 levit war, 20. 577.  
 lewe, 16. 275.  
  
 lif, on, 7. 65.  
 Limerick, 16. 265, 297.  
 Lincelly, Lintelly, 16. 336, 342.  
 Linlithgow castle, 10. 136, 137.  
 Linton lea, 16. 336.  
 Lochmaben, 2. 18.  
 Loch Ryan, 16. 36.  
 Logans, 14. 47.  
 Logie, John de, 19. 15.  
 Longcastell (Lancaster), 17. 285, 852.  
 Longueville, Sir Thomas de, 9. 391.  
 Lorn, brooch of, 3. 93, 146.  
 Lorn, John of, 6. 481, 503; 10. 11.  
 Lorn, Lord of, 3. 1.  
 louch, 14. 354.  
 loud and still, 3. 745.  
 Loudon (Lochdon), 4. 16.  
 Loudoun, 8. 123.  
 love god, 20. 378; lovyng, 7. 90; lovyt, 1. 406.  
 lownyt, 15. 276.  
 Lucius Iberius, 1. 549, 560.  
 lufre, 14. 233.  
 Lumbard, 10. 324.  
 Lyne, water of, 9. 673.  
  
 ma weill, 16. 592.  
 Maccabees, 1. 465.  
 Macandrosser, 3. 99.  
 Macgullane, 14. 105.  
 Mac Morna, Goll, 3. 68.  
 Macnaughtan, 3. 153.  
 Makfulchiane, 14. 105.  
 Making knights, 9. 138; 12. 413.  
 Makmartane, 14. 106.  
 male ess, 20. 73.  
 Malerb, Gilbert de, 19. 16.  
 Man, Isle of, 4. 14.  
 Mandevill, 14. 47.  
 mantill, 5. 317.  
 Mantrybill, brig of, 3. 445.  
 Mar, 19. 374.  
 March, 19. 776.  
 Marcus, 4. 14.  
 Margaret, Maid of Norway, 1. 37.  
 Margaret, St. 10. 737.  
 Marmion, a line in, 19. 165.  
 Marthokys sone, 3. 67.  
 Martinmas, 9. 127.  
 mast, 17. 696.  
 mastery, 13. 412.  
 Maupas, John, 18. 224.  
 maynteym, 2. 189.  
 Meath, 16. 296.  
 Meldrum, 9. 202.  
 melle, 7. 622.  
 Melrose, 20. 185.  
 merdale, 9. 249.

- Merse, 15. 331.  
 Methven, 2. 303.  
 Minorite convent, 2. 33.  
 misteris, 17. 542.  
 Mitton, 17. 555.  
 Moffat, 9. 338.  
 Moiry pass, 14. 113, 133.  
 mole, 3. 696.  
 mon, 16. 275; 19. 667.  
 month, 8. 393.  
 Montpellier, 15. 83.  
 Mordred, 1. 549.  
 Morocco, strait of, 3. 688.  
 Mortimer executed, 20. 29.  
 Mounth, Month (the Grampians), 2. 494.  
 Mowbray, Sir Philip, 2. 211; 10. 821; 11. 1.  
 Mowbray, Sir Roger, 2. 211.  
 Mull of Cantire, 3. 696.  
 Munster, 16. 297.  
 Murray, Earl of, dies, 20. 609. *See* Randolph.  
 mydwart, 3. 682.  
  
 na, 2. 517; na war, 7. 218.  
 Naas, 16. 261.  
 nakyt, 7. 330; nakit, 13. 98.  
 naylis, 3. 459.  
 Neagh, Lough, 14. 337, 339, 371, 376.  
 Neil Bruce, 2. 513.  
 neir, 16. 258.  
 Nele (Neil), 2. 491.  
 Newcastle, 17. 291.  
 nigramansy, 4. 747.  
 Ninian's, St, 11. 442.  
 Northumbrian lands given to the Scotch, 20. 23.  
 not, 13. 173.  
 nychtirtale, 19. 495.  
  
 oblesteris, 17. 236.  
 O Dempsy, 14. 329, 339, 369.  
 Oliphard, 9. 338.  
 Oneyl, Donevald, 14. 102.  
 or, 16. 288; or at, 10. 529.  
 Oriel College, 13. 611.  
 Osmyn the Moor, 20. 393.  
 ourcome, 18. 114.  
 our-tuk, 12. 439.  
 outrageous, 11. 32.  
 owth, 14. 352; 17. 598; 18. 418.  
  
 Palm-Sunday, 5. 307; 15. 100.  
 parisius, 4. 251.  
 Parliament, Black, 19. 46.  
 part, twa, 17. 103.  
  
 Participle, past (doubled), 18. 168.  
 Patrick of March, 13. 611.  
 Peace made, 20. 29.  
 Pembroke, Earl of, 2. 200.  
 Pembroke College, 2. 200.  
 pennystane, 16. 383.  
 Perth taken, 9. 450.  
 peth, 18. 366.  
 Philippa, Queen, 19. 264.  
 phitones (*or* pithones), 4. 753.  
 plain, 11. 107.  
 plait and maille, 11. 107.  
 Platan, 9. 312.  
 price, 7. 90.  
 Prophecies, 4. 209, 241.  
 Proverbs cited, 3. 540; 4. 119; 5. 262; 11. 24.  
 punsoun, 1. 545.  
 punjeis, 12. 373.  
 purvay, 5. 74.  
 Pyrrhus, story of, 20. 521.  
  
 quethir, the, 12. 191, 564.  
 quheyne, 17. 67; quhoyn, 17. 135.  
 quhile, 8. 18.  
 quhistlyng, 6. 87.  
 quhoyn, 17. 135; quheyne, 17. 67.  
 quyntis, 13. 183.  
 qwyrbolle, 12. 22.  
  
 Race of Brittany, 3. 687.  
 rad till byd, 12. 431.  
 raid, 8. 296.  
 raiss, 3. 687.  
 raiss dragoun, 2. 205.  
 Randolph, Sir Thomas, 2. 237; 6. 510. *See* Murray.  
 Ramsay, 14. 29.  
 Rauchryne (Rathlin), 3. 680.  
 raucht, 7. 623.  
 raw, 8. 450.  
 rebell, 10. 129.  
 rebouris, at, 13. 486.  
 redis swyr, 17. 13.  
 Reid, river, 17. 13.  
 relyng, 12. 110.  
 renk, 2. 365.  
 Rennell's Current, 3. 687.  
 renownee, 8. 290.  
 revar, 14. 337.  
 rewis, 14. 221.  
 reyky, 17. 419.  
 riall, 12. 557.  
 Richemont, Thomas de, 16. 342.  
 Rievaulx, 18. 498.  
 Robert II., 13. 695, 704.  
 Robert, Bishop, 13. 683.  
 romanys, 1. 446.

Roubaix, 4. 249.  
 roucht, 12. 557.  
 Round Table, 13. 379.  
 routit, 7. 192.  
 rownand, 12. 360.  
 ryde, 12. 557; ryde aganis, 14. 420.  
 Ryedale, 18. 355, 498.  
 rymmyl, 12. 557.  
  
 sagat, 7. 368.  
 St Andrews, Bishop of, 2. 178.  
 St John, John de, 9. 509.  
 salss, 3. 540.  
 saltit, haf gert, 18. 168.  
 sanctit, 17. 286.  
 saray, 8. 296.  
 Savages, 14. 47.  
 sawin, 4. 685.  
 scaill, 15. 337\*, 341.  
 schiltrum, 12. 429.  
 scho, 17. 672.  
 schonand, 5. 201.  
 schot, 7. 467; 15. 59.  
 Scone, 2. 150.  
 Scottish Sea, 9. 309; 18. 346.  
 se, 3. 172.  
 segis, 4. 697.  
 Selkirk, 8. 425; 9. 673.  
 seth, 20. 571.  
 Seton, Christopher, 2. 243\*; 4. 29;  
 5. 156.  
 Settlement, Act of, 20. 128.  
 Seville, 20. 326.  
 Ships drawn on land, 15. 272.  
 Silvester II., 4. 209.  
 Sinclair, Bishop William, 16. 575;  
 Sir William, 20. 444.  
 Sir James, the good, 15. 538.  
 Slane, 16. 63.  
 slep, 7. 177.  
 Slevach, 9. 107.  
 slew fire, 13. 36.  
 Snowdoun, 4. 181.  
 Sodor and Man, 4. 14.  
 soft, 4. 697.  
 Somerville, 2. 239.  
 Soulis, Sir John, 14. 27; 16. 508,  
 511; 18. 23.  
 Soulis, William de, 19. 11.  
 sow, 17. 597.  
 sowmer, 19. 746.  
 soyme, soam, 10. 180.  
 sper, 3. 459.  
 spreten, 12. 49.  
 Spurs cut off, 16. 597.  
 staill, 15. 341; 17. 97.  
 stand aw, 3. 62.  
 stane (stare?), 15. 49.

Stanhope Park, 19. 490.  
 Stewart, Sir John, 14. 28; 18. 23.  
 Stewart, Sir Walter, 18. 33; 19.  
 205.  
 Stirling, 1. 409; castle, 2. 211.  
 stok, 15. 49.  
 stole, 2. 151.  
 stratest, 6. 463.  
 Strathbogie, 9. 188, 695.  
 Strathern, Countess of, 19. 23.  
 Strathern, Earl of, 9. 340.  
 strecur, 6. 487.  
 strinth, 9. 59.  
 stuffit, 17. 135.  
 stycht, 3. 658.  
 succudry, 16. 327.  
 suet, tynt the, 13. 32.  
 Sully, Henry de, 18. 524; 19. 73.  
 sum, 6. 149.  
 summer, 17. 696.  
 surcharge, 16. 458.  
 suth, 17. 278.  
 swappit, 17. 690.  
 swyr, 17. 13.  
 syb, 13. 511.  
  
 Tain, 4. 47.  
 takis on hand, 16. 593.  
 tane, 6. 128; 14. 381.  
 Tarbard, 15. 272.  
 taucht, 2. 130.  
 thai, 1. 455, 458.  
 thar, 8. 257; 12. 300.  
 Thebes, 2. 528.  
 Tholimar, 3. 73.  
 thresum, 3. 420.  
 Thrillwall, 6. 392.  
 thurt, 6. 121.  
 till, 6. 656.  
 till-hewen, 20. 367; till-hewyt, 2.  
 381.  
 to-fruschyt, 17. 667.  
 to-ga, 8. 351.  
 top our taill, 7. 455.  
 Torwood, 11. 210.  
 to-stonay, 18. 547.  
 tothir, 4. 518; 9. 412.  
 toune, com of, 7. 632.  
 to-vauerand, 7. 302\*.  
 toym, 5. 642.  
 Traitors, stories of, 5. 521.  
 Tranent, 18. 276.  
 tretis, 10. 125.  
 tretit, 10. 481.  
 treyteris, 10. 125.  
 treyn, 10. 361.  
 tropellis, 13. 275.  
 Truce made, 19. 128, 153, 230.



tuk, 9. 412.  
 Turnberry, 4. 556; 5. 1, 76.  
 Twenge, 13. 523.  
 twist, 7. 188.  
 Tybetot, 13. 468.  
 tymbryn, 19. 396.  
 Tyntrum, 3. 68, 109.  
 tynt the suet, 13. 32.  
 Tyre, 3. 73; siege of, 10. 705.  
 tyt, 16. 132; tyttar, 2. 517.  
  
 Uchtred, 18. 409.  
 Ulster, 14. 373; 16. 317.  
 Umphraville, Sir Inghram de, 2. 211; 6. 3.  
 Uriel, 16. 296.  
  
 valk, 7. 179.  
 valknyt (*note to 7. 179*).  
 varrar, 5. 546.  
 vauerand, vaueryt (*note to 7. 302\**).  
 Vaun, 7. 622.  
 vayn, vill of, 7. 2.  
 vaynillat, 13. 217.  
 vent, 4. 609.  
 Verdon, 14. 143.  
 vill of vayn, 7. 2.  
 Vipont, 13. 472.  
 vildry, 10. 516.  
 vunnyn hay, 10. 193.

vre, 15. 376.  
 vyre, 5. 595.  
  
 wald, 18. 555.  
 Wallace, 1. 283.  
 wane, will of, 2. 471.  
 wan plass, 12. 563.  
 war, 19. 468.  
 War-engines, 17. 597, 672.  
 warn, 4. 392.  
 Wavering Firth, 14. 33.  
 Weardale, 19. 254, 316, 490.  
 Webtown, Sir John, 8. 453.  
 went, 4. 257.  
 wer (were), 16. 307.  
 were (to defend), 16. 594.  
 werdis, 2. 329.  
 while, 7. 72.  
 will of red, 3. 494 (*and note to 2. 471*); — of wane, 2. 471.  
 William of Lamberton, 1. 354.  
 Winchburgh, 13. 587.  
 Wishart, Robert, 4. 13.  
 with, 17. 455.  
 Woking's Firth, 14. 33.  
 wonnyn, 10. 799.  
  
 York fortified, 19. 271.  
 Ysay (Isaiah), 4. 683.  
 Yule-eve, 9. 204.

## INDEX II.

### BOOKS REFERRED TO IN THE NOTES.

---

This is merely a list of the *more important* books and authors referred to in the Notes, with references to the Notes in which they are cited.

---

- ALEXANDER.—The Buik of the most noble and vailjeand conqueror Alexander, callit the Forray of Gadderis ; Bannatyne Club, 1834. Referred to—1. 62, 73.  
Annals of England ; Library Edition ; J. Parker, 1876. Cited—1. 37, 477 ; 2. 178, 200, 243\* ; 4. 73 ; 5. 1 ; 9. 509 ; 11. 163 ; 20. 39.  
Annals of Scotland. *See* Hailes.  
Brut.—The Chronicle called 'The Brut' ; 1. 560.  
Burton ; Hist. of Scotland, 1. 37.  
Camden's Britannia ; 6. 392.  
Camden's Remaines concerning Britaine, ed. 1657 ; 2. 235.  
Cato, Dionysius ; 1. 343.  
Chaucer ; 1. 122, 343, 356, 533, 545 ; 2. 365, 381 ; 3. 418, 688, 753 ; 5. 13 ; 12. 22 ; 13. 183 ; 14. 420 ; 18. 168 ; 19. 495 ; 20. 393.  
Complaint of Scotland, ed. J. A. H. Murray (E. E. T. S.) ; 4. 241.  
Dante ; 2. 534.  
Dunlop's History of Fiction ; 1. 525.  
Erceldoune, Thomas of ; ed. J. A. H. Murray ; 2. 86.  
Fordun's Chronicle, ed. Skene ; 1. 37, 354, 409, 465, 481 ; 2. 1, 16, 33, 178, 211, 237, 303, 494 ; 3. 68, 687 ; 5. 133 ; 6. 392 ; 9. 107, 110, 204, 450, 517 ; 10. 8, 123, 125, 136, 352 ; 11. 84 ; 19. 11, 15.  
Froissart ; tr. by Johnes ; 1. 339 ; 19. 267, 316, 399, 490 ; 20. 121, 160.  
Guido delle Colonne ; 1. 393, 525.  
Hailes.—The Annals of Scotland, by Sir David Dalrymple (Lord Hailes), 2 vols. 4to. 1779 ; 1. 37, 283, 354 ; 2. 37, 112, 199, 235, 237, 243\* ; 4. 13, 36, 37, 47, 56 ; 5. 1, 104, 151 ; 8. 133 ; 9. 204, 509 ; 10. 8, 123, 456 ; 11. 163, 184 ; 13. 305, 321, 463, 472, 484, 735 ; 14. 143, 145, 159, 221 ; &c.  
Havelok the Dane ; ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.) ; 3. 62 ; 7. 467 ; 11. 547.  
VOL. II. U

- Hume of Godscroft's History of the Houses of Douglas and Angus; Edinburgh, 1644; 1. 37, 283; 2. 148; 5. 271, 276, 403; 8. 28, 447, 453; 15. 321, 538; 19. 332; 20. 287.
- Innes.—The Brus, from a collation of the Cambridge and Edinburgh MSS.; Spalding Club, 1856; 8. 296; 9. 107, 522; 11. 107, 290; 12. 133, 143, 191, 354, 505; 13. 447\*; 14. 33, 47, 102, 105, 106, 113, 133, 135, 143, 159, 329, 337, 352, 373, 394, 522; 15. 162; 16. 296, 342; 17. 856; 19. 776; 20. 23.
- Jamieson (denoted by 'J.')—The Bruce, by Master John Barbour; published from a MS. dated 1489; by John Jamieson, D.D., Edinburgh, 1820 (reprinted, 1869); 2. 235, 237, 239, 365, 491; 3. 68, 153, 659; 4. 14, 16, 29, 181, 388, 464; 5. 104, 255; 6. 481; 7. 238; 8. 28, 226, 257; 9. 107, 312, 509, 691, 695; 10. 129; 11. 573; 13. 321; 14. 29, 31, 105, 106, 133, 143, 371; 15. 75; 16. 119, 339; 17. 13; 19. 279, 374, 495; 20. 79, 293.
- Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary; 2. 494; 3. 578; 5. 201; 9. 64; 15. 39; 20. 75.
- Langtoft; *see* Robert of Brunne.
- Layamon's Brut, ed. Madden; 1. 560.
- Lucan's Pharsalia, quoted by Barbour; 3. 281.
- Lydgate; 4. 753; (Storie of Thebes), 2. 528; 6. 179.
- Morley's English Writers; 1. 525, 560; 3. 68.
- Morte Arthur, by Malory; 1. 549. Allit. poem, ed. Brock (E. E. T. S.), 1. 549.
- Nares's Glossary; 1. 545.
- Piers the Plowman, ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.); 1. 194; 4. 747.
- Pinkerton (denoted by 'P.')—The Bruce; by John Barbour. The first genuine edition, published from a MS. dated 1489; by J. Pinkerton; London, 1790; 1. 283, 339, 458; 2. 37, 130, 237, 243\*, 365; 3. 146; 4. 13, 14, 47, 190; 5. 317; 8. 133, 257, 447; 9. 34, 323; 10. 267, 705; 11. 334; 12. 429; 13. 379, 683; 15. 272, 536; 16. 303, 331.
- Plutarch, translated by North; 3. 235, 242.
- Political Songs, ed. T. Wright (Camden Society); 1. 37, 194; 2. 239; 17. 875.
- Promptorium Parvulorum, ed. A. Way (Camden Society); 13. 183; 20. 75.
- Ratis Raving, ed. J. R. Lumby (E. E. T. S.), 6. 336; and *see* p. 523.
- Robert of Brunne's translation of Peter Langtoft's Chronicle, ed. Hearne, Oxford, 1725; 1. 37, 409, 465; 5. 104.
- Romans d'Alixandre, by Lambert li Tors and Alexandre Bernay, ed. H. Mich-elant; Stuttgart, 1846; 10. 705, 718.
- Scott, Sir Walter. The Abbot; 15. 538; 20. 185. Castle Dangerous; 5. 255, 271, 307, 403; 8. 447, 453. Highland Widow; 10. 17, 27, 34. Lady of the Lake; 4. 181; 13. 379. Lord of the Isles; 1. 37; 2. 33, 235-513; 3. 1, 93, 385, 583; 4. 388, 617; 5. 1, 76, 151; 6. 481; 7. 105; 8. 425, 447; 9. 509, 686; 10. 11-521; 12. 505; 13. 229, 305; 14. 102. Marmion; 19. 165. Tales of a Grandfather; 1. 37; 3. 93; 4. 56; 5. 271; 8. 447; 10. 11, 137, 352; 11. 547; 13. 695.
- Shakespeare (Hamlet), 1. 545; (Henry IV.), 4. 209; (Macbeth), 7. 72; (Richard II.), 7. 72.
- Skelton, ed. Dyce; 2. 247; 3. 48; 4. 391, 753.

- Sowdone of Babylon and Ferumbras his sone, Romance of. Roxburgh Club, 1854; 3. 437, 440, 455.
- Specimens of English Literature, from 1298 to 1393; ed. Morris and Skeat; 2. 471; 7. 1-400.
- Specimens of English Literature, from 1394 to 1579; ed. Skeat; 6. 179.
- Statius, his Thebais; 2. 528; 6. 179.
- Stratmann's Old English Dictionary (2d edition); 2. 365; 3. 578, 658.
- Troy-book. The alliterative Geste Historial of the Destruction of Troy, ed. Panton and Donaldson (E. E. T. S.); 1. 393, 525; 12. 429.
- Tytler's History of Scotland, vol. i.; 2. 479; 8. 393; 9. 522; 12. 429; 18. 409, 524; 20. 160.
- Vergil, quoted by Barbour; 3. 561, 706; 5. 87.
- Wallace. The Wallace, ed. Jamieson; Edinburgh, 1820; 1. 481; 2. 17, 237, 471; 3. 62; 4. 37, 685; 7. 302\*; 8. 427; 9. 64, 391; 13. 36, 495; 14. 29; 15. 538; 16. 575; 17. 285; 18. 366; 19. 2, 746; 20. 378, 396. See also the edition by James Moir, 1884-89 (S. T. S.)
- Warton's History of English Poetry; 1. 525; 2. 346; 3. 73, 437, 455; 5. 1, 13.
- William of Palerne, ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.); 6. 650.
- Wyntown's Chronicle, ed. Laing; 1. 37-602; 2. 1-494; 3. 208-440; 4. 13, 209; 6. 392.

### INDEX III. (RIME-INDEX.)

---

THIS Index is by no means exhaustive, but will probably suffice as a guide to the more important rimes. A complete Rime-Index would occupy a considerable space, and much of the information would be valueless. We learn nothing from a large number of the rimes beyond the one very important fact that the final *-e*, so common in Chaucer, is hardly to be found in Barbour at all. Certainly it is never found as expressing an inflection of a noun or verb, and the result is that a large number of the rimes are just the same as in modern English, whilst they are very different from those in Chaucer. A comparison with the latter is easily made, and the difference is at once apparent.

Some of the most striking uses of the final *-e* in Chaucer are these :—

(1) The *-e* marks : (a) the definitive form of the adjective.<sup>1</sup> In Barbour, it makes no difference whether the adjective is definite or indefinite : it always drops the final *-e*. Ex. "his *gret* valour," i. 556 ; "the *maist* party," ii. 215. Examples are scarce, because Barbour is remarkably sparing of his adjectives. (b) The plural of adjectives. In Barbour, the inflection is dropped. Ex. "Full *feill* that war douchty of deid ;" ii. 232. The final *-e* which sometimes appears is due to mistakes on the part of the scribe, and to the lateness of the existing MSS. Thus the same word is miswritten *feile*, ii. 221 ; *feyle*, ii. 228 ; but these final letters have no meaning, and are to be disregarded in the scansion.

(2) In verbs, *-e* marks : (a) the infinitive mood. But Barbour has—"Ye sall *isch* furth to the bataill ;" ii. 278. In ii. 251, the word *arme* appears, but the *-e* is an idle addition. The line runs—"Bad his men *arm* thaim hastily." And so throughout. Hence *tell* (infinitive mood) rimes with *fell* (past tense), ii. 45 ; a rime which will not be found in Mr Cromie's Ryme-Index to Chaucer.

(b) the gerundial infinitive. But Barbour has—"And weill mar for to *dreid* then thai ;" ii. 272.

(c) the past participle of strong verbs. Here, however, Barbour differs by retaining the *full form* of the inflection ; as in *cummyn*, i. 44 ; *foundyn*, i. 60 ; *chosyn*, i. 117 ; *haldyn*, i. 118. Note also the pairs of rimes *knawin*, *drawin*, iv. 175 ; *sawin*, *knawin*, iv. 685. In some verbs the contracted form occurs, as in *tan* (taken), *don* (done) ; &c. These are monosyllabic, though often written *tane*, *done* by the scribe.

---

<sup>1</sup> For examples, see Dr Morris's Introduction to his edition of the Prologue, &c. (Clarendon Press), and my analysis of the metre of the Squire's Tale in my edition of *The Prioresses Tale*, &c. (Clarendon Press).

(d) the past tense of such weak verbs as take the endings *-de* and *-te*. But Barbour has *dempt*, i. 213; *awcht*, i. 255; *thocht*, i. 303, &c.

Without going into more particulars, the above remarks will enable the reader to see the force of the statement that, whereas the final *-e* is common in Chaucer as indicating various inflections, there is *not a single example of it* throughout the whole of the rime-endings that occur in Barbour. The instances in which it is *written* at the end of a line are, in every case, due to the scribe only and to the written form; it was not meant to be sounded.

Throughout Book I., the only examples of a written *-e* at the end of lines (not counting instances such as *bounte*, *he*) are these.

In ll. 55, 56, we have *male*, *collaterale*. If the final *-e* were to be pronounced here, it would not be *inflectional*, but the words belong rather to a class of which I have a few more words to say below. The same remark applies to *female*, *male*, ll. 59, 60, and *thrillage*, *parage*, ll. 101, 102.

In ll. 65, 66, we have *hale*, *dale*. Here the *-e* merely means that the *a* is long; the words are constantly written *haill*, *daill*.

In l. 105, we have *ride*; but it rimes to *abyd*. The *-e* is not an inflection, for the infinitive mood, in Barbour, does not admit of one.

So in l. 108, the infinitive *tyne* is monosyllabic, for it rimes with the word *with-in*. The latter word never becomes *withinnē* in Northern English.

In ll. 113, 114, we have *thrillag*, *usage*. See the remark on *thrillage* above.

In ll. 119, 120, we have *bene*, *sene*. Both are monosyllables, and are also written *beyn*, *seyn*.

In l. 128, we have *wyde*; but it rimes with *tyd*.

In ll. 143, 144, we have *tane*, *gayne*; both are monosyllabic past participles, and are also written *tan*, *gan*.

In l. 150, we have *gate*, which occurs as a monosyllable with very great frequency. It is made to rime with *debat*.

In ll. 157, 158, we have *save*, *have*. These words are also constantly written *sauff*, *haff*, &c.

The other examples are of a similar character, and may be easily understood. They are as follows: *guhile*, *ghyle* (171), *nane*, *tane* (173), *sone*, *wndone* (181), *towne*, *possessiounne* (185), *nation*, *fellone* (193), *enchesone*, *destruccionne* (203), *tyne*, *pyne* (211), *nane*, *nekbane* (217), *dome*, *thryldome* (235), *syne*, *commandyne* (255), *thrillage*, *parage* (275), *gave*, *knave* (287), *page*, *waslage* (289), *seyle*, *feyle* (303), *wane*, *tane* (323), *heritage*, *thryllage* (351), *homage*, *heritage* (419), *thrillage*, *wasselage* (471), *enchesounne*, *resounne* (487), *tane*, *gane* (521), *wrate*, *state* (525), *conqueroure*, *tour* (529), *prwsounne*, *tresounne* (533), *ded*, *rede* (545), *passe*, *was* (629).

Of these, the very last example is the clearest; we know that *was* is, at any rate, monosyllabic. It follows that *passe* should rather have been written *pas*; and, as a fact, it generally *is* so written; see iv. 354.

So too, in the middle of lines, we find *fayne* for *fayn*, i. 11; *weile* for *weil*, i. 149, and the like; where the *-e* has no phonetic value.

The result is that, throughout Book I., if the final *-e* is ever to be sounded at the end of a line, it can only be in the French words ending in *-age*—viz., *thrillage*, *usage*, *parage*, *page*, &c.; or in French words ending in *-ale*, such as *female*, *male*, *collaterale*. And I think it possible that some of these words may, at that early period, have sometimes (but quite *exceptionally*) retained the final *-e*

as a lightly pronounced separate syllable. Still we do not find any indication of this in general when these words occur in the middle of lines; note *thrillage* in l. 109, *wysage* in l. 383, where, however, the accent falls upon a different syllable.

Just as at the end of lines, so also in the middle of them, the *inflectional* final *-e* is wholly wanting. But I believe it will be found that there are just three or four instances in which a final *-e* really appears, but only as an *essential part* of the word. Such words are, at the most, extremely few. The word *sege* (siege) is perhaps of this character. We find—

The segē tuk full apertly : x. 315.

Thai wald he leit the segē be : xvii. 850.

I believe that such words will be found to be mostly of French origin, and the examples of them are so scarce that the reader may as well adopt the general rule, that the final *e* (of whatever character) is *wholly absent* from Barbour, and is *never to be sounded when inserted by the scribes*.

These few remarks will serve to introduce the index here following; further remarks upon the metre are hardly necessary, as it is of a simple character. Some of the lines seem to be imperfect.

#### A.—LIST OF DOUBLE OR FEMININE RIMES.

(This list is nearly, if not quite, an exhaustive one; the reference is to the former line of the couplet.)

- abill*; delitabill, fabill, 1. 1.
- akis* (-*akys*); takys, stomakys, 3. 541.
- alit* (-*aylit*, -*aillyt*); apparalit, assalit, 9. 132; assailyt, failzeit, 2. 538; assalit, falit, 4. 89; battailyt, assaylit, 2. 221; failyt, fortrawailyt, 3. 325; fortravalit, assalit, 7. 368; travalit, assalit, 4. 149.
- anis* (-*anys*); banys, anys, 1. 271; montanys, paynys, 3. 371; montanis, planys, 8. 3; stanys, nanys, 10. 57.
- aris*; flearis, chassaris, 3. 51.
- astis*; mastis, fast is, 17. 715.
- atis*; batis, howgatis, 4. 438; climatis, gatis, 4. 701; prelatiis, statis, 20. 161; statis, gatis, 1. 337.
- auit*; dissaut, ressaut, 4. 272.
- awin*; knawin, drawin, 4. 175; sawin, knawin, 4. 685.
- awis*; drawis, sawis, 4. 322; shawis, blawis, 4. 121.
- ayis*; alwayis, sayis, 11. 23; Artayis, dayis, 1. 339; sayis, wayis, 2. 39.
- ayit* (-*ait*); affrayit, assayit, 19. 591; appurvait, assayit, 9. 424; arayit, displayit, 12. 215, 14. 173, 15. 7, 19. 435; effrait, assait, 13. 173; purvait, displayit, 12. 411; werrayit, assayit, 3. 375.
- edis* (-*edys*); redis, dedys, 1. 17, 4. 739; spreadis, bredis, 16. 67; stedis, wedis, 11. 466, 13. 29.
- eldis*; scheldis, feldis, 8. 227.
- emnil* (-*emnyll*, -*ymnyll*, -*embill*, -*ymbill*); assemmyl, trymmyl, 12. 267; assembill, trymbill, 2. 294.
- eris* (-*erys*); apperis, maneris, 4. 725; archeris, hobleris, 11. 109, 13. 659;

- archeris, oblesteris, 17. 235; archeris, speris, 13. 57; baneris, maneris, 8. 229, 17. 341; baneris, speris, 11. 464, 13. 237; baneris, Coigneris, 15. 23, 35; efferis, mysteris, 12. 413; feris, steris, 12. 41; fleieris, chasseris, 3. 81; freris, mysteris, 17. 541; maneris, afferis, 17. 247; maneris, Coigneris, 14. 393; officeris, afferis, 1. 191; presoneris, maneris, 17. 891; prisoneris, efferis, 18. 505; speris, archeris, 14. 109; speris, efferis, 11. 27; teris, deris, 3. 519; vitteleris, Coigneris, 14. 407.
- ery; mery, herbery, 18. 503.
- etis (-ettis); planetis, settis, 4. 695.
- eved (miswritten -evede); hevede, revede, 5. 11.
- evit; revit, levit, 13. 23.
- ifis (-iffis, -evys); gifis, levys, 1. 227; lifis, driffis, 4. 147; wiffis, lifis, 17. 515. (See -yvis.)
- iffin (-ivin); gifin, drivin, 4. 735.
- ingis; thingis, r. w. amonestyngis, 4. 532, barganyngis, 1. 305, endingis, 9. 634, gabbingis, 4. 767. (See -yngis.)
- onis (-ones, -onys, -ounys); coniuraciones, exorcizaciones, 4. 749; palzeonis, fassownys, 17. 299; salmonys, menounys, 2. 576. (See -ounis, -ounis.)
- ordyt; concordyt, recordyt, 1. 71.
- ory; story, memóry, 1. 13; victóry, story, 1. 473, 2. 330.
- othir; othir, brothir, 13. 473, 16. 55.
- ounis (-ounys); pailzownys, toune is, 3. 239. (See -onis, -ounis.)
- ouris; paramouris, rebouris, 13. 485; traytouris, socouris, 3. 599. (See -ouris.)
- ovir; covir, discovir, 4. 123.
- ounis (-ounys); hawbyrschownys, pennownys, 11. 131; pennownys, palzeownys, 12. 461; townys, palzeownys, 11. 137; townys, possessiownys, 16. 215. (See -onis, -ounis.)
- ouris; flowris, colowris, 16. 69. (See -ouris.)
- ulzeit; brulzeit, tulzeit, 4. 151.
- unnin (-unnyn); begunnyn, wonnyn, 2. 189.
- uschit (-usit); ruschit, refusit, 4. 145.
- ychtis; wychtis, mychtis, 2. 522.
- ydis; abydis, betydis, 8. 253.
- yngis; coueryngis, slyngis, 17. 343. (See -ingis.)
- yntis; dyntis, flyntis, 13. 35; dyntis, styntis, 13. 153.
- yvis (-ifis); knyvis, lyvis, 12. 579, 16. 455; lyvis, knyvis, 11. 590; lyvis, vifis, 12. 245. (See -ifis.)

## B.—RIMES THAT ARE PERHAPS DOUBLE RIMES.

- (a) There is some doubt about -eys; machabeys, seys, 1. 465. See -ayis above, p. 301; and see -ais in List C below.
- (b) Probably the trilled *r* in *Robert* accounts for the rime—Robert, speryt, 4. 13. *Speryt* is little more than *sper't*, and the rime can hardly be called a double one.
- (c) We find the odd rime *grathit*, *laid* (E. *layit*), 5. 387. It certainly seems to be imperfect, yet intentional.



## C.—RIMES THAT ARE PROBABLY SINGLE RIMES.

- (a) *-ais* (*-ayis*); it would seem that *-ayis* can be shortened to *-ais* or *-as*. Ex. *betraiss, always*, 5. 539; *sayis, tais*, 2. 145, 8. 405; *sayis, Francoiss*, 10. 746. See *-ayis* above in List A.
- is* (*-iss, -yis, -yiss*); it would seem that *-yis* can be shortened to *-is*. Ex. *iuperdyis, deuiss*, 10. 788; *lyis, viss*, 5. 77.
- (b) We find the strange rime—*macyss* (*i.e., maces*), *was*, 13. 17. The explanation is that *maces* was but *one* syllable, as it will be if we pronounce it as if it were French. This is proved by the occurrence of the equivalent plural form *mas* in 11. 600. Of course this plural noun is quite a different word from *mas* (he makes), which latter is of frequent occurrence.
- (c) We find the impossible rime—*victory*, *cheuelry*, 10. 516; see *-ory* in List A; p. 311. The explanation is that *victory* is a false reading for *voidry*, as explained in the note to the line.

## D.—INDEX TO SELECTED SINGLE RIMES.

(The following list comprises all that are of any particular interest, and includes all the remarkable variations of spelling. I have particularly noted words which would not rime in modern English, such as *sa* (so), *stra* (straw).

- a* (*-ai, -ay*); *alsua, bra* (*brae*), 18. 445; *bra, ma* (*make*), 6. 147, 18. 373; *bra, wndera*, 3. 109; *ma, tha*, 18. 349; *sa, stra* (*straw*), 3. 319; *stra, ta*, 6. 505; *ta, swa*, 18. 449. We also find *thai* (miswritten for *tha*, those) riming with *twa*, 6. 587, *swa*, 7. 211, *ta*, 10. 147; in each case the phrase is the same—viz., *ane of tha*. So too—*thai, alsua*, 2. 235. We also find *may* for *ma*, riming with *ta*, 4. 642; *may, sway* (for *ma, swa*), 4. 570. And the rime—*vay* (*way*), *ga* (*go*), 10. 15.
- ace*. See *-as* below.
- ad* (*-aid, -ayd*). *Had* (*had*) rimes with : *abaid*, 2. 13; *bad* (*bade*), 2. 209; *brad* (*broad*), 3. 467; *maid* (*made*), 1. 397, 1. 481, 3. 543, 3. 675; *rad* (*rode*), 4. 27; *stad* (*bestead*), 3. 379; *slayd* (*slid*), 3. 701, 10. 558; *waïd* (*wade*), 19. 759; *vaid* (*wade*), 9. 356. It is also written *haid*, r. w. *abaid*, 2. 308; *maid*, 1. 513; *raid*, 2. 175. Other rimes in *-aid* are: *braid, raid* (*rode*), 8. 167; *maid, baid* (*made, abode*), 3. 753; *vnmaid, baid* (*unmade, abode*), 4. 608.
- all*; *trawaill, bataill*, 1. 23. See also *-ell*.
- air*. See *-ar* below.
- ais, -aïsa*. See *-as* below.
- aith*. See *-ath* below.
- ak*; *valk* (*written for vakk = wak, awake*), *tak*, 7. 179.
- an*; *than* (*then*) r. w. *ran*, 5. 625; *wan* (*won*), 3. 447.
- anch, -ance*; *panch* (*paunch*), *dance*, 9. 398.
- and*; *hand, fand* (*hand, found*), 6. 447; *fand, strikand* (*found, striking*), 6. 237; *stande* (*miswritten for stand*), *Yngland*, 13. 635. N.B.—Present participles in *-and* are common at the end of a line.

- ar (-air).** Ar (*are*) r. w. ansuar (*answer*), 4. 231; banar (*banner*), 7. 588; war (*were*), 1. 19, 135, 511, &c.; 3ar (*yare*), 2. 316. Also with mair (*more*); 3. 564; weillfair, 12. 155. It is also written *air*, r. w. mair (*more*), 4. 703; and *are*, r. w. fair, 5. 239.
- Ar (*ere*), r. w. disclar (*declare*), 1. 75; written *are*, r. w. mare (*more*), 4. 568; written *air*, r. w. war (*were*), 12. 5; written *ayr*, r. w. forfayr, 1. 477.
- Ar (*oar*), r. w. schipfar, 3. 691.
- War (*were*), r. w. ar (*are*), 1. 19 (as above); rar (*roar*), 7. 326; squar (*square*), 3. 381; yhar (*yare*), 2. 346. We also find: ayquhar, schar (*everywhere*, *shore*=*did shear*), 2. 91; far, thar (*fare, there*), 3. 345; mar, far (*more, fare*), 2. 302; thar, ansuar (*there, answer*), 2. 59.
- ar=-air**; mar, schipfair (*more, shipfare*), 3. 685; war, rair (*were, roar*), 4. 422; war, bair (*were, bore*), 9. 174. And note: sair, wair (*sore, were*), 5. 147.
- ar=-er**; debonar, affer, 8. 381; grevousar, fer (*grievouser, far*), 10. 636.
- ar=-are**; bare, war (*bare, were*), 9. 442.
- air**; fair, mair (*fare, more*), 5. 219; sair, wair (*sore, were*), 5. 147.
- are**; spare, lasare (*spar, leisure*), 5. 389; where the final *-e* is not sounded. See also **-er** below.
- as (-ace, -ase, -ass, -ais, -aiss, -es).** The characteristic word is *was*; this rimes with cass (*case*), 1. 563, 2. 23, 3. 591; chass (*chase*), 3. 53; Douglas, 1. 29, 2. 488; Ferumbrace, 3. 437; grace, 3. 233; mais (*makes*), 17. 663; maiss, 2. 468; pass, 10. 85; passe (*miswritten for pas or pass*), 1. 627; per-cass, 3. 481; place, 3. 495; rase (*race*), 3. 697; solace, 3. 465; tais (*takes*), 13. 505. Written also *wass*, r. w. braiss (*braes*), 13. 337; chass, 13. 561; rass (*raise*), 3. 133; tais (*takes*), 17. 499; traiss (*trace*), 9. 580. It is also constantly written *wes* (see **-es** below); and we find the rime—Douglas, *wes*, 11. 454.
- as=-ais=-ayis**; Thomas, sais, 10. 352; Thomas, assayis, 14. 119.
- ass=-ais**; chass, tais, 6. 435; Douglass, tais, 15. 339\*; tais, cass, 12. 1; Thomass, sais, 17. 285.
- ais (-aiss)**; tais, fais (*takes, foes*), 15. 167; raiss, mais (*rose, makes*), 6. 233. And see **-ayis** in List A above, p. 310; also **-es** below.
- at (-ate)**; debat, fut-hat, 13. 453; gat, hat (*gait, hot*), 8. 65. Also bate, hate (*boat, hot*), 3. 417; debate, 3ate (*gate*), 4. 430; wrate, state, 1. 525; in all of which the final *-e* is not sounded. This is shown also by **-at=-ate**; as in debate, wat, 2. 41; hate, stat (*hot, state*), 6. 305; state, howgat, 2. 155. We also find **-at=-et**, as in bonat, set, 9. 505. See **-et**.
- ath (-aith)**; ath, scath (*oath, scath*), 9. 540; bath, skaith (*both, scath*), 1. 79; raith, bath (*rath, both*), 4. 45; wrath, skaith, 1. 201.
- aw**; saw, law (*saw, low*), 10. 123; saw, raw (*row*), 8. 449.
- ays**; galays, assays, 10. 35. Perhaps for galayis, assayis; see **-ayis** in List A above, p. 310.
- e (-ey, -ye)**; E, fle (*eye, flee*), 5. 623; he, lawte (*high, loyalty*), 1. 363; maieste, be, 1. 431.
- e=-ey**; sle, hey (*sly, high*), 17. 607, (where *hey* is put for *he*); we, hey (*wee, heigh!*), 17. 677.
- e=-ey**; hye, fle (*high, flee*), 9. 85; hye, te (*high, tie*), 15. 281. In both these cases *hye* should have been written *he*, which is the usual spelling.

- ey*; drey, dey (*dree, die*), 3. 321; drey, hey (*dree, high*), 2. 382. These words should have been written *dre, de, he*, as usual.
- ed* (-*ede, -eid*); ded, red (*death, rede*), 1. 347; ded, red (*dead, rede*), 3. 493; led, sted (*stead*), 4. 490; red, hed (*read, pp., head*), 2. 93; sted, yhed (*stead, yede*), 2. 424.
- ede*; rede, dede (*red, dead*); 3. 139. Here the right spelling would have been *red, ded*.
- ed* = -*ede*; ded, rede (*death, rede*), 1. 545, 1. 567; ded, rede (*dead, red*), 2. 360; sted, 3ede (*stead, yede*), 3. 111; stede, dred (*stead, dread*), 3. 167.
- eid*; breid, deid (*breadth, dead*), 1. 531; deid, leid (*dead, lead, v.*), 1. 37; deid, leid (*death, lead, v.*), 1. 269; deid, reid (*deed, read*), 2. 83; dreid, speid (*dread, speed*), 4. 506; heid, reid (*head, rede*), 2. 121; heid, 3eid (*head, yede*), 5. 573; 3eid, 3owtheid, 1. 333; 3outheid, deid, 5. 277.
- eid* = -*ed*; dreid, ded (*dread, death*), 4. 590; dreid, ned (*dread, need*), 3. 315; 3eid, sted (*yede, stead*), 3. 127. Also ned, deid (*need, dead*), 2. 231.
- eid* = -*ede*; beid, drede (*bid, dread*), 8. 123; dede, steid (*dead, stead*), 1. 609.
- eif* (-*eve*); leif, geve (*live, gave*), 6. 157.
- eill, -ele, -eile*. See -*ell* below.
- eir*. See -*er* below.
- eis* (-*yis*). We find seis, treis, 15. 275; treis, beis, 11. 298; cf. machabeys, seys, 1. 465. Perhaps these are really feminine rimes; see List B above, p. 311. We find also the rime -*eir, -yis*; as in parteis, enemyis, 10. 75; cf. List C (a), p. 312.
- eit*. See -*et* below.
- ell* (-*eill, -ele, -ale, -eile, -ile*).
- ell* = -*eill*; castell, weill, 3. 359; cf. casteill, weill, 4. 101.
- ell* = -*ele*; catell, lele, 4. 275.
- ell* = -*ale*; trawell, fale, 4. 664; trauell, avale, 7. 45.
- ell* = -*eile*; weile, castell, 3. 339. For *weile*, read *well*.
- ell* = -*ile*; perell, quhile, 7. 193; Lile, perell, 5. 203. We may here read *peril, quhil*, and *Lisle*.
- ele* = -*eill*; eschele, weill, 8. 221; fele, weill, 3. 201; 11. 49; wele, feill, 12. 587. Here the final -*e* is not sounded, and *fele, wele*, should be *feill, weill*, as usual. Compare also weill, fardele, 3. 431; where *fardele* is for *fardeill*.
- er* (-*cir, -ere, -ar, -are, -eyr*). The word maner (*manner*) rimes with: affer, 2. 181; apper, 1. 93; cher (*cheer*), 3. 299, 545; ner (*near*), 3. 5, 463; wer (*were*), 1. 3, 3. 535. The last rime links it with: comper (*compare*), 1. 403, auter (*altar*), 2. 43. Note also: auter, cher, 2. 33; ber (*bear*), danger, 4. 49; contrer, pautener, 1. 461; daunger, ner, 2. 43; daunger, fer (*feir, i.e., whole*), 3. 91; effer, deboner, 1. 361; her (*here*), daunger, 2. 434; sper, ber (*spear, bear*), 3. 459; squyer, courser, 19. 359.
- er* = -*cir* (-*eyr*); ansuer, heir (*here*), 4. 247; heir, power, 12. 237; myster, weir (*were*), 11. 452; heyr, planer, 1. 623.
- er* = -*ere*; spere, ther (*spear, there*), 5. 635. Hence the final -*e* in -*ere* is not sounded in: bere, manere (*bear, manner*), 5. 339; messyngere, ere, 4. 614; stere, manere, 4. 374. The same appears from the writing of -*cir* instead of -*er* or -*ere*, as in: apeir, maneir, 4. 751; cheir, weir (*cheer, were*), 9. 728;

deir, weir (*dear, were*=doubt), 4. 256; heir, maneir, 4. 57; heir, squyeir, 19. 17; inquireir, weir, 4. 221; ledeir, weir, 11. 522; neir, laseir, 13. 601; neir, maneir, 4. 378; speir, effeir, 5. 607; steir, weir (*steer, were*), 4. 630; weir, 3eir (*were, year*), 10. 820. With *laseir* cf. the spelling *lasare*, which see under *-are* above, in the section beginning with *-ar*.

*-er*=*-ar* (*-are*); ansuer, mar, 1. 437; ger, ledar, 7. 19; fer, war (*far, waur, i.e., worse*), 3. 301. Also: were, mare (*were, more*), 5. 337. See *-ar* above.

*-es* (*-ess, -ais, -as, -ass, -ace*). The characteristic word is *wes*, another spelling of *was*. It rimes with *cass*, 13. 515; *chass*, 12. 87; *face*, 10. 478; *mess* (*mass*), 10. 816; *plass* (*place*), 12. 429; *pess* (*peace*), 10. 127, 10. 774, 13. 557; *press*, 2. 430, 3. 129. Also with words in *-es* simply, such as: *besynes*, 2. 586; *liklynes*, 3. 87; *seknes*, 9. 47; *suthfastnes*, 1. 7. Also with words in *-ais*, such as: *gais*, 5. 569, *tais*, 6. 221; where the words are badly spelt, and the right rimes would be denoted by the spellings *was, gas; was, tas*. Spelt *wess*, it rimes with *Thomas*, 14. 145. Note also: *richess*, *blithness*, 12. 275; *seiknes*, *martyms* (*sickness, Martinmas*), 9. 126. See *-as*.

*-et* (*-eit, -eite, -ete, -eyte, -at*). We find the simple rimes: *falset* (*falsehood*), *let*, 1. 597, 5. 621; *falset, set*, 1. 377; *gret, met* (*greeted, i.e., wept, met*), 3. 507; *gret, wet* (*great, i.e., weep, wet*), 3. 517; *let, forzet* (*forgotten*), 1. 15; *met, het* (*met, height*), 9. 9; *met, et* (*meat, eat*), 7. 153, 165; *reset, met*, 10. 139; *3et, het* (*gate, hot*), 4. 153.

*-et*=*-ete*; *get, mete*, 3. 341; *get, ete*, 2. 580; *het, wete*, 11. 612; *mete* (*meat*), *get*, 2. 572, 3. 471; *retere, bet*, 15. 49; *set, ete*, 3. 479.

*-et*=*-eit*; *feit, suet*, 13. 31.

*-et*=*-eyte*; *met, meyte* (*met, meat*), 3. 571.

*-ete*=*-eit*; *fete, 3eit* (*feet, yet*), 3. 123.

*-eite*=*-ete*; *meite, sete* (*meat, set*), 3. 393. Here, as throughout, the final *-e* is idle; the better spelling would be *met, set*.

*-et*=*-at*. Perhaps only in the case of the word *3et* (a gate), which rimes with: *debat*, 5. 385; *gat*, 10. 229; *therat*, 17. 773, 777, 787; *tharat*, 10. 175. All confusion between these endings would be put aside by simply reading *3at*. Under *-at*, we have seen the rime; *bonat, set*, 9. 505. This would be remedied by reading *bonet*, which is of course a better spelling. The confusion between *-at* and *-et* is, accordingly, due to the scribe, not to the author.

*-euch* (*-euch*); *dreuch, eneuch*, 4. 372; *sleuch, inewch*, 1. 285. So also: *inewch, drewch*, 1. 627.

*-ow*; *trew, rew* (*traw, rus*), 2. 326. See *-ow*.

*-eyne*; *seyne, bedeyne*, 12. 569. Miswritten for *seyn, bedeyn*, or *sen, beden*; the final *-e* is idle.

*-eyr* (*-eir*); *queyr, weir* (*choir, were*), 20. 293. See *-er*.

*-lle*. See *-ell*.

*-in* (*-yn, -yne*). We find: *tharin, cowyn*, 10. 672; *cowyne, in*, 17. 423; *cowyne, tharin*, 4. 111. Also: *tharin, vyne*, 15. 93; *within, tyne*, 1. 107; where the final *-e* is idle, but perhaps the vowel-sound may have differed in length. Ordinary rimes in *-yne* (with silent *-e*) are: *mankyne, syne* (*mankind, sin*), 15. 249; *syne, Brechyne*, 9. 284; *tyne, pyne*, 1. 211.

Here take notice of a remarkable class of words in which the ending *-yn* or

*-yne* (with silent *-e*) represents the modern *-ing* at the end of a VERBAL NOUN,<sup>1</sup> which is always kept quite distinct from the present participle, ending (in Barbour) in *-and*. Examples are: *arming, i.e.,* armour, written *armyne*, r. w. syne, 17. 263; *commanding, i.e.,* commandment, written *commandyne*, r. w. syne, 1. 255; *douting, i.e.,* doubt, fear, written *doutyne*, r. w. vyne (*wine*), 14. 229; *fighting, i.e.,* fight, written *fechtyn*, r. w. syne, 3. 241; and also written *fightyne*, r. w. syne, 4. 243; *happening, i.e.,* a thing that happens, a result, written *hapnyne*, r. w. tyne, 12. 373; *hunting, i.e.,* the chase, written *hontyne*, r. w. syne, 4. 512; *healing, i.e.,* the process of recovery, written *helyne*, r. w. syne, 15. 83; *meddling, i.e.,* a mixture, written *mellyne*, r. w. vyne (*wine*), 5. 405; *resting, i.e.,* repose, written *restyne*, r. w. Lyne, 9. 682; 'tranonting,' *i.e.,* circumventing, written *tranontyne*, r. w. tyne, 19. 693; *welcoming, i.e.,* welcome, written *welcummyne*, r. w. syne, 19. 793. We find also: *-yne = -ing*; as: Brechyne, leding, 9. 120. And we also find *welcoming* written *welcummyng*, r. w. king, 19. 807. This suggests that the sound of final *-ng* did not much differ from that of *-n*, even in a word like *king*.

*-ir (-eir)*; mystir, baneir, 11. 346. See *-er*.

*-is (-iss, -yss, -yis)*. Here *-is = -iss*; the word *is* rimes with: Iuperdiss (*jeopardies*), 19. 631; viss (*to certify*), 4. 478. Also *-is = -yss*; the same word *is* r. w. wyss (*wise, i.e., way*), 2. 336.

*-iss = -yss*; febliss, enymyss, 14. 349.

*-iss = -yis*; lyis, wiss (*lies, wise = way*), 2. 548.

*-it (-ite, -yt)*. We find: discumfite, myt (*mite*), 12. 187. Of course the *-e* in *discumfite* is superfluous; the word occurs very often, and is usually written *discumfit*. Compare: discumfyt, myt, 3. 197.

*-o*; to, scho (*to, she*), 4. 759.

*-oht*; brocht, mocht (*brought, might*), 1. 297.

*-on (-one, -oun, -oune, -oyne)*. We find *-on = -one*; nation, fellone (*for felon*),

<sup>1</sup> The term 'verbal noun' is by no means suitable for the earlier stages of our language; many who use it are thereby led to suppose that the word is not a true substantive, but a sort of semi-substantive, 'neither fish nor flesh.' If it be defined to mean *a substantive that happens to be formed from a verb*, the student may be better able to remember that it is a real and true substantive. *Hunting*, when not a present participle, is just as truly a substantive as *choice* is. If it be said that *hunting* is derived from a verb—why, so is *choice*.

But let me add here, to guard against mistake, that the old 'verbal noun,' as thus defined, has in course of time *changed its character*. By the omission of the preposition *of* in expressions like 'choosing of houses,' we have given the substantive a real verbal or gerundial power. There was a time when the expression 'choosing houses' would have sounded as ridiculous as 'choice houses,' whereas it is now so familiar a phrase that every one understands it, though few can explain or parse it. The account in Max Müller's Lectures (6th ed. ii. 15-22) is incorrect; see Morris's Historical Outlines of English Accidence, ed. 1872, pp. 177-179. Let the student remember that the whole question is one of *chronology*. What may be called a verbal substantive *now* was in the thirteenth century a pure substantive and nothing more. Let those who doubt this examine our Early Texts. The earliest example given by Mätzner of this omission of the preposition *of* is in a passage from the English version of Mandeville's Travels. If any one can tell us of an earlier instance, it would be worth making a note of. See my remarks in the Preface to Havelok, p. xliii. The expression 'romanz-reding' (*i.e.,* romance-reading) in Havelok, l. 2327, is a mere compound substantive like 'sword-play' or 'bloodshed.' It may be remembered, by the way, that the last expression is expressed by 'shedding *of* blood' as late as in the Authorised Version of the Bible.

1. 193. Words in *-one* have long *o* and silent *-e*; *sonc*, *done* (*soon*, *done*), 2. 452, 3. 623. Perhaps the vowel is the short *u* in *sonc*, *wone* (*son*, *went*), 3. 67, 4. 245.
- one* = *-oun*; *done*, *fortoun*, 4. 648.
- one* = *-oyne*; *done*, *soyne* (*done*, *soon*), 11. 384; *quhoyn*, *done*, 15. 363; *soyn*, *done*, 4. 179.
- oune* = *-oyne*; *fortoun*, *soyne*, 15. 411.
- or*; *mor*, *befor*, 10. 199. This is curious, because *more* is generally written 'mar,' or 'mair'; see *-ar*.
- ord* (*-orde*, *-urde*); *worde*, *Herfurde*, 13. 671; where the final *-e* is idle.
- orn* (*-orne*, *-urne*); *turne*, *soiorne*, 9. 368; better written *torn*, *soiorn*.
- os* (*-oss*); *purpos*, *choss* (*purpose*, *choice*), 3. 263.
- ouda*. See *-ud*.
- ouk*. See *-uk*.
- oun*. See *-on*.
- ount*; *vmbestount*, *hount*, 7. 398. The *ou* represents a long *u*.
- ow* (*-ew*); *trow*, *now*, 4. 237; cf. *trew*, *rew* (*trow*, *rue*), 2. 326. The *ow* or *ew* represents a long *u*. See *-ount*.
- ud* (*-ude*, *-oude*); *woude*, *stude* (*waded*, *stood*), 9. 388; *gude*, *woude*, 17. 105. The final *-e* merely signifies that the vowel is long; the vowel intended is apparently long *u*.
- uk* (*-ouk*, *-ouk*); *tuk*, *quouk* (*quaked*), 2. 364; *wouk*, *touk* (*woke*, *took*), 2. 552; *owk*, *tuk* (*week*, *took*), 15. 101. The vowel is long *u*.
- ur* (*-ure*, *-ur*, *-our*); *fur*, *mwr* (*fared*, *moor*), 13. 551; *pure*, *discure* (*poor*, *discover*), 4. 606; *succour*, *auentur*, 7. 69.
- urne*; see *-orne*.
- us* (*-ouss*); *Fergus*, *curageouss*, 15. 193.
- ut* (*-ute*, *-ut*); *But*, *fute* (*Bute*, *foot*), 3. 577; *schute*, *mwt* (*shoot*, *mule* = tell of), 13. 59.
- y* (*-ye*); *Mary*, *openly*, 11. 632; *berye*, *honorabilly*, 13. 663; *succudry*, *folye*, 11. 11. The final *-e* is wholly idle; it is not even needed to indicate the length of the vowel.
- yd* (*-id*, *-yde*); *pryd*, *hyd* (*pride*, *hide*), 4. 119; *syde*, *prid*, 12. 495. The *y* here denotes long *i*.
- yne*; see *-in* above.
- yr* (*-yre*); *syr*, *martyr*, 1. 283; *fyre*, *schyre*, 4. 618.
- ys* (*-is*, *-ice*, *-yss*). We find the word *is* riming with *pryss* (*prize*), 1. 239; *wyss* (*wise*), 1. 265; *tendirys*, 3. 533. The word *wyss* (*wise*) also rimes with: *pryss* (*praise*), 1. 21; *price*, 1. 369; *seruice*, 2. 173; *seruice*, 3. 663. See *-is* above.

#### E.—INDEX TO REPEATED SYLLABLES.

It is well known that old French poets considered it permissible to rime words that are really identical in spelling, if used in different senses. An excellent example of this occurs in Guillaume de Machau's *Dit de la Harpe* (Bartsch's *Altfranzösische Chrestomathie*, 408), which contains a large number of such

rimes, as, e.g., *harpent*, *arpent*, *point* (not), *point* (a point), &c. Chaucer has similar rimes; see my edition of the *Prioresses Tale*, &c. (Clar. Press), PP. pp. xix (note), lxxv. Such rimes might conveniently be called *repeats*. The following is a list of such 'repeats' as I have observed in Barbour.

Her (*to hear*), her (*here*), 1. 445. Lorne (*Lorn*), lorne (*lost*), 10. 105. M (*met*), meyte (*meat*), 3. 571. Se (*sea*), se (*see*), 3. 627. Thar (*there*), th (*there*, but in the phrase 'her and thar'), 9. 196. Viss (*wise*, adj.), viss (*wis* sb.), 5. 513. Weir (*doubt*), weir (*were*), 16. 495, 499. Wer (*war*), wer (*wen*), 16. 503\*.

To the same class belong also the following: dome, thyridome, 1. 23. Reuerently, deuotly, 11. 376; neir, maneir, 12. 105; maner, ner, 15. 34. tyne, tranontyne, 19. 693.

## INDEX IV.

### GLOSSARY TO 'THE BRUCE.'

---

#### EXPLANATION.

THE references in this Glossary are alike available (1) for the present edition ; (2) for Pinkerton's edition ; and (3) for Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary. It is remarkable that Jamieson, after invariably referring to Pinkerton's division of the poem into *twenty* books, afterwards divided it, in his own edition, into *fourteen* books ; thus introducing a fresh set of references of which he, however, made but little use. The advantage of keeping to Pinkerton's numbering of the lines is obvious.

The authorities for the text are these. C.—The Cambridge MS. (in St John's College Library). This is imperfect at the beginning, but used for the *text* of the present edition from Book IV. l. 57 to the end. It is also occasionally noticed in the footnotes.

E.—The Edinburgh MS. ; used for the *text* of this edition from the beginning to Book IV. l. 56. It is constantly cited in the footnotes ; and the reader is requested to remark that every reading in the same to which *no* letter is appended is also from the same MS. It seemed unnecessary to repeat the letter "E" in every case.

H.—Hart's printed edition of 1616 ; frequently cited in the footnotes.

A.—Anderson's printed edition of 1670 ; occasionally cited in the footnotes.

P.—Pinkerton's edition, 1790. Printed from MS. E., with a few mistakes, due to the difficulty experienced by the editor in reading the MS.

J.—Jamieson's edition, 1820. Also printed, with great care and accuracy, from MS. E. A particular account of the few errors in it will be found in Index VII. below.

I.—Innes's edition, Spalding Club, 1856. The spelling is the editor's own, and follows no MS. or edition. The text is due to a collation of MSS. C. and E. ; very often the editor prefers the authority of the former.

#### ABBREVIATIONS, &c.

A few references are given to languages, cited in the usual manner : as O.F. for Old French, A.S. for Anglo-Saxon, and the like.

Besides the abbreviations *s.*, *adj.*, *adv.*, for *substantive*, *adjective*, *adverb*, &c.,



the following are used in a special sense:—*v.*, a verb in the infinitive mood; *pr. s.*, present tense, 3rd person singular; *pr. pl.*, present tense, 3rd person plural; *pt. s.*, past tense, 3rd person singular; *pt. pl.*, past tense, 3rd person plural. Other persons are denoted by 1 *p.* and 2 *p.* Also *imp.* is used for the imperative mood, and *pp.* for the past or passive participle. The numbers refer to the *book* and *line*. Thus "1. 367" means Book I. l. 367. Lines not in Pinkerton's edition are marked with an asterisk, as, *e.g.*, 7. 301\*. Some of these additional lines appear in Jamieson's edition, but most of them are due to MS. C., with which Jamieson was unacquainted.

When a letter (as E. or H.) follows a reference, the word will, in general, be found in the footnotes rather than in the text. Thus, the spelling *Abowyme* (s. v. *Abovin*, prep.) is the spelling of MS. E. in Book X. l. 52, footnote.

The etymology of the words is chiefly given in cases of difficulty only. Many of the words in 'The Bruce' exist in modern English, with but slight differences of spelling. Thus it is sufficient to explain *Abaid* by "abode," the etymology of *abide* being well known.

The subjoined Glossarial Index is, of course, considerably less than a concordance; but a very large number of references are given, and care has been taken to include all words to which any interest is likely to be attached, so that most of the practical advantages of a concordance are obtained within a moderate compass. When a word recurs very often, it has not been considered necessary to insert *all* the references, but only a considerable number of them. Varieties of spelling are, in general, recorded, and in the case of verbs, every form is duly parsed. I can only hope that the result of what has involved considerable labour will be found to be sufficiently satisfactory.

- A, one, the single, the sole, 1. 367; one, a single, 2. 339, 3. 429, 6. 155, 7. 160, 11. 407, 13. 163, 19. 523. *A fut.*, a single foot, 11. 642. *A gatis*, in one way, in one and the same way, uniformly, 4. 702. A.S. *ān*.
- Abaid, *s.* delay, 2. 308, 9. 600, 10. 222, 16. 692, 19. 607; Abad, 1. 142. *Maik abade*, *i.e.*, wait, 6. 60. *But abaid*, without delay, 13. 387. See below.
- Abaid, *pt. s.* waited for (lit. abode), 3. 14; waited, 6. 92\*, 8. 373; *pt. pl.* waited, 15. 461; abode, 18. 263; Abad, remained, 13. 444.
- Abais, *v.* to abash, dismay, 8. 247; *pp.* Abaysit, dismayed, 14. 411, 18. 322, 20. 269.
- Abak, *adv.* backwards, 16. 198\*. A.S. *onbæc*.
- Abandone, *v. refl.* to give themselves up, 17. 642; to demean themselves boldly, 17. 393; *pt. s.* Abandonyt him, devoted himself, 3. 48, 80; Abandonyt, make subject, 3. 664, 4. 391; *pp.* Abandonyt, subjected, 4. 655. See Abandone.
- Abandone; *at abandone*, recklessly, 15. 59; *in abandone*, in loose order, 19. 335. Cf. F. *à l'abandon*, in disorder; *en abandon*, free to all.
- Abandonly, *adv.* in disorder, disarray, 14. 433; boldly, recklessly, 16. 108. See Abaundantly.
- Abasing, *s.* cowardice, drawing back, timidity, dismay, 9. 68, 17. 322, 573; Abasyng, 16. 566. See Abasyng.
- Abasit, *pp.* cast down, discouraged, dismayed, discomfited, 4. 754, 8. 245, 9. 268, 10. 449, 11. 472, 562, 13. 261, 17. 196; Abasyd, 8. 476.
- Abaundantly, *adv.* in loose order, in a disorderly manner, stragglingly, 8. 461; Abaundantly, recklessly, boldly, 11. 629. See Abaundonly.
- Abaundone, *v. refl.* to behave themselves boldly, fight recklessly, 17. 143; *pr. s.* Abawndonys, exposes himself, 9. 96; *pt. pl.* Abaundonyt, demeaned themselves, 16. 203. See Abandone.

- Abaysyng, *s.* abasement, dismay, fear, 11. 250, 12. 44; Abaysyng, 14. 62, 16. 617. *See* Abasing.  
 Abbay, *s.* abbey, 20. 599.  
 Abid, *v.* to wait for, 18. 65. *See* Abyde.  
 Aboue, *prep.* over, above, 16. 581.  
 Aboun, *prep.* above, on the top of, 18. 454. *See* Abovin.  
 Aboundanit, *pt. s.* abounded, 13. 716, 744.  
 Aboundans, *s.* abundance, 10. 110.  
 Abovin, *adv.* above, 17. 367, 653; in a victorious condition, 5. 599; in a superior position, 9. 94. *At thar abovin*, having the upper hand, in the better case, 14. 204, 15. 56. *See* below.  
 Abovin, *prep.* above, 12. 38; Abovyn, 10. 31, 11. 617, 18. 463; Abowyne, 10. 52 (E.). *See* Aboue, Aboun, Abuf. A.S. *ābūfan*.  
 Absens, *s.* absence, 16. 594.  
 Abuf, *adv.* above, 12. 172. *See* Abovin.  
 Abyde, *v.* to wait for, 15. 63; to remain, 12. 73; *ger.* Abyd, to wait for, 19. 325; *pr. s.* Abydis, awaits, 8. 253; *pr. pl. 2 p.* Abyd, ye expect, 12. 271. *See* Abid.  
 Accord, *v.* to agree, 1. 70; *pt. pl.* Accordyt, agreed, 1. 71 (*footnote*); *pres. part.* Accordand, assenting, 20. 208\*. F. *accorder*; from Lat. *cor*, the heart; not from *chorda*.  
 Acquyntans, *s.* acquaintance, 18. 121.  
 Acquyt, *pt. s.* freed, 19. 237; 1 *p. s. pr.* we acquit, account ourselves free, 18. 74.  
 Ado, for *at do*, i.e., to do, 10. 349.  
 Adressit, *pt. s.* arrayed, 14. 263; *pt. pl. refl.* put themselves in array, 13. 620.  
 Aduersouris, *s. pl.* adversaries, 17. 736.  
 Afald, *adj.* onefold, only, single, 20. 618.  
 Affeeres, *s. pl.* demeanours, a reading in H. for Effer, 7. 126. *See* Effer, and *see* below.  
 Affeir, *s.* pomp, 20. 87; Affir, 2. 182; appearance, goodly array, 11. 242 (E.); appearance, 16. 27 (E.). *See* Effer.  
 Afferis, *pr. s.* belongs, suits, is meet, behoves, 1. 162, 192, 11. 28 (E.), 11. 77 (E.), 17. 248. O.F. *affiert*, it concerns, becomes, belongs (Cotgrave); as if from Lat. *affertit*—from *ad* and *ferire*.  
 Affermit, *pp.* confirmed, 4. 178; Affermyt, 20. 136, 150.  
 Affrait, *pp.* frightened, 9. 613. *See* Affrayit.  
 Affraitly, *adv.* in a frightened way, 6. 296. *See* Affrayitly.  
 Affray, *s.* fear, 3. 26, 6. 423, 7. 342, 9. 605, 19. 603. F. *effroi*, terror.  
 Affrayit, *pp.* made afraid, dismayed, 2. 291, 6. 221; afraid, 19. 366, 591. *See* Affrait, Affray.  
 Affrayitly, *adv.* timidly, in terror, 6. 434, 17. 577. *See* Affraitly.  
 Affy, *v.* to trust, 2. 501; *pt. s.* Affyit, trusted, 5. 504; believed, 11. 179. F. *affier*, Lat. *affidare*.  
 Aforgayn, for Ay forgane, 16. 555 (E.).  
 Afrayit, *pp.* intimidated, afraid, 16. 205. *See* Affrayit.  
 Agane, *prep.* against, 4. 186, 14. 263; opposite, 19. 720; Agayn, 2. 106; Agayne, 1. 431, 488. A.S. *ongān*.  
 Aganis, *prep.* against, 7. 12, 14. 316; to meet, 14. 420; Aganys, against, 1. 573, 3. 233. A.S. *ongān*, with suffix *-es*.  
 Agast, *pp.* terrified, 10. 659, 13. 332. Cf. M.E. *gasten*, to terrify.  
 Air, *s.* heir, 4. 71, 12. 320, 19. 139, 20. 130.  
 Air, *adv.* ere, formerly, before, 12. 5, 13. 254, 16. 1, 18. 211. A.S. *ær*.  
 Air, *pr. pl.* are, 4. 704.  
 Airly, *adv.* early, 5. 554, 9. 562, 13. 521, 19. 428.  
 Alabast, *s.* alabaster, 20. 588.  
 Alane, alone; *all him alane*, alone by himself, 2. 146.  
 Alanerly, for Anerly, 10. 608 (H.). *Alanerly* is compounded of *al* (all) and *anerly*, only, *q.v.*  
 Ald, *adj.* old, 5. 317, 15. 111, 19. 177. A.S. *eald*.  
 Alkyn, of every kind, 1. 134, 191, 2. 558, 12. 197; *alkyn rycht*, right of every kind, 5. 233; *all-kyn thyng*, things of every kind, 16. 311; Alkynd, 13. 717, 17. 214.  
 All, *adv.* entirely, 1. 392.  
 Allane, alone, 3. 66.  
 Aller, *gen. pl.* of all; *thar aller*, of them all, 1. 137. A.S. *calra*, *gen. pl.*

- All-gat, *adv.* always, by all means, 12. 362. *See* Gat.
- All-out, *adv.* utterly, altogether, 3. 312, 11. 201, 14. 274, 15. 146, 16. 589.
- Allryn, *a misprint in former editions for* Alkyn, 1. 134 (*footnote*). *See* Alkyn.
- All-thouch, *conj.* although, 10. 464.
- All-veldand, *adj.* (lit. all-wielding), almighty, 5. 577, 6. 314.
- All-wayis, *adv.* always, 2. 92.
- Allye, *s. pl.* allies, 17. 319.
- Als, *as*, 3. 684, 685; also, 1. 100.
- Als — as, as — as, 1. 161. A.S. *callswā*.
- Alsner, *for* als ner, as near, 1. 54.
- Alsone, *adv.* very soon, 5. 374; Alsoyn, as soon, 10. 368; Alsoyne, as soon, 10. 208; very soon, 10. 631, 11. 569. From *als*, as; and *soyn*, soon.
- Alls-weill, as well, 1. 124.
- Als-tit, *adv.* as soon as possible, very quickly, 5. 80. *Icel. titt*, soon, from *tíð*, time. *See* Tit.
- Alsua, *adv.* also, 1. 399.
- Alswith, *adv.* very soon, 7. 553; very quickly, 8. 153. From *als*, as; and M.E. *swithe*, quickly.
- Always, *adv.* always, 6. 519, 7. 60.
- Amang, *prep.* amongst, 1. 281. *See* Emang.
- Amang, *adv.* amongst other things, *i.e.*, every now and then, 3. 714.
- Amendit, *pp.* mended, 12. 378, 20. 316.
- Ameyssyt, *pt. pl.* calmed, moderated, 16. 134 (E.). O.F. *amiesir*.
- Ammonyss, *v.* to admonish, exhort, 8. 348 (E.). *See* Amonist.
- Amonestyng, *s.* exhortation, 20. 412; Amonestyng, advice, 8. 292; *pl.* Amonestyngis, lessons of advice, 4. 533.
- Amonist, *v.* to exhort, advise, encourage, 8. 348. *See* Ammonyss.
- Amorus, *adj.* amorous, 10. 291.
- Amouris, *s.* love, 8. 498.
- Amoviss, *pr. s.* moves, incites, 12. 299; Amowis, moves, 19. 94 (E.); Amowyt, *pp.* affected with emotion, 3. 524.
- Anamalyt, *pp.* enamelled, 20. 305.
- Anciente, *s.* ancientness, antiquity, length of time, 6. 252.
- Ancistry, *s.* ancestry, 17. 238.
- And, *conj.* if, 1. 4, 457. Merely a peculiar use of the common copulative *conj.* and; *see* Mätzner. Often shortened to *an* in later English.
- Ande, *conj.* and, 9. 240.
- Ane, *indef. art.* a, 1. 410, &c. *Starkest of ane*, strongest for one man, 4. 74. *Intill ane*, in one direction, right forward, 5. 24.
- Aneding, *for* Aynding, 11. 615 (E.).
- Anent, *prep.* adjoining, near, 1. 187; close to, 8. 124, 19. 512. A.S. *on-efne*, later *on-enn*, afterwards corrupted to *anent*.
- Anerly, *adv.* only, alone, 2. 58, 6. 132, 12. 249, 435; merely, 10. 608; all alone, 18. 279; in a lonely manner, alone, 7. 59; *all anerly*, quite alone, solely, 5. 281, 10. 705, 733, 17. 470. Cf. *Icel. einstiga*, singly.
- Angelis, *s. pl.* angels, 12. 426; Angellis, 8. 234.
- Angerit, *pt. s.* angered, 14. 322.
- Angirly, *adv.* angrily, 8. 486; Angyrlly, 4. 321 (*footnote*), 7. 611; Angrely, 11. 624; Angerly, 8. 144 (H.).
- Angry, *adj.* unfavourable, adverse, 5. 70; afflicted, 3. 530; vexatious, 17. 24.
- Angyr, *s.* affliction, 1. 235, 2. 519; Anger, 3. 517; *s. as adj.* distressing, grievous, 20. 490; *pl.* Angrys, afflictions, 3. 321.
- Anis, *adv.* once, 6. 368. *See* Anys.
- Ankyrs, *s. pl.* anchors, 3. 691.
- Anoy, *s.* annoyance, harm, 8. 371; *pl.* Anoyis, troubles, tribulations, hardships, 1. 304, 3. 380, 551, 4. 659.
- Anoy, *s.* trouble; *but an error for* Not, *q.v.*, 13. 173 (E.).
- Anoy, *v.* to annoy, molest, 7. 381; *pr. s.* Anoyis, grieves, vexes, 1. 272, 19. 94, 20. 506; *pt. s.* Anoyit, vexed, 18. 1; *pp.* Anoyit, 6. 6, 10. 475, 11. 543, 13. 510, 17. 265, 20. 446.
- Anoyus, *adj.* annoying, vexatious, 5. 249; dreadful, 8. 305; grievous, 20. 238.
- Ansuar, *s.* answer, 2. 60, 19. 152; Ansuer, 8. 153.
- Ansuer, *v.* to answer, 11. 411; *pt. s.* Ansuerd, 18. 28; *pt. pl.* Ansuerd, 11. 406, 12. 328.
- Ansuering, *s.* answer, reply, 4. 235.
- Anys, *adv.* once, 1. 272, 6. 499. *At anys*, at once, 13. 249. A.S. *ānes*, once. *See* Anis.
- A-pane, *adv.* at a pinch, 9. 64, 89. *See* the note to 9. 64, p. 257.

- Aparale, *s.* preparation, 17. 241;  
Aparaile, apparel, 11. 81 (E.). See  
Apparaill.
- Apeir, *v.* to appear, 8. 156.
- Apert, *adj.* open, bold, 10. 73, 20.  
14; *in apert*, openly, 19. 217 (E.).
- Apertly, *adv.* openly, fully, 10. 315,  
12. 40, 341, 14. 122, 16. 493, 17.  
917, 19. 521; boldly, 14. 77, 94.
- Apnyt, *for* Opnyt, 17. 136 (E.).
- Apon, *prep.* upon, 1. 496, 508, 2. 74,  
19. 526; against, 16. 615, 19. 441.  
*Apon fer*, on far, afar, 6. 87.
- Apparaill, *s.* apparel, 17. 214; gear,  
17. 259; Apparall, furniture, 11.  
118. See Aparale.
- Apparalit, *pp.* apparelled, 9. 132.
- Apper, *v.* to appear, be developed,  
1. 93, 4. 232; *pres. part.* Apperand,  
becoming developed, 1. 83; *as. adj.*  
apparent, right (heir), 4. 71.
- Appetyt, *s.* appetite, 3. 541.
- Approchand, *pres. part.* approaching,  
11. 512, 12. 26, 14. 284, 16. 553;  
*pt. s.* Approchit, approached, 20.  
246; *pt. pl.* 14. 61.
- Appurvait, *pp.* provided, 9. 424.
- Aquynt, *pp.* acquainted, 7. 138.
- Ar, *pr. pl.* are, 1. 1, 7. 39, 12. 229.  
See Be.
- Ar, *adv.* formerly, in former times,  
before, 1. 19, 76, 12. 168; Are, ere,  
before, 4. 569. See Air.
- Ar, *s.* an oar, 3. 576, 691; *pl.* Aris,  
oars, 3. 583.
- Aray, *s.* array, order, 6. 413, 9. 8.
- Arayande, *pres. pt.* arraying, 12. 19.  
See Arayit.
- Arayit, *pp.* arrayed, 2. 255, 3. 233, 7.  
536, 8. 47, 11. 130, 12. 6, 14. 157,  
16. 149, 17. 296, 18. 84, 19. 431.
- Araynge, *v.* to arrange, 12. 36.
- Arbitar, *s.* arbiter, umpire, *rubric*, p. 3.
- Arbytre, *s.* arbitrament, decision, 1. 75.
- Archaris, *s. pl.* archers, 9. 151.
- Arest, *s.* arrest, stop, halt, stay, 7. 63,  
8. 356, 12. 12, 17. 844, 19. 330;  
stop, stand, 14. 550 (E.).
- Arest, *v.* to stop, halt, 12. 7; *pt. s.*  
Arestit, 16. 281; *pt. pl.* Arestyt, 3.  
738; *pp.* Arestit, 9. 723; Arestyt,  
arrested, 1. 174.
- Arettit, *pp.* charged, accused, 19. 20.  
O.F. *areter*, *ardter*, to accuse—from  
Lat. *ad* and *reputare*.
- Ariffe, *v.* to arrive, 4. 559; *pt. s.*  
Arivit, 16. 18; *pt. pl.* 5. 29, 14. 33,  
16. 564, 20. 331; *pp.* 14. 53, 16.  
50; *was arivit*, 16. 75; *ware*  
*arivit*, 5. 124. See Arywe.
- Ariwyng, *s.* arrival, 5. 122, 14. 86.
- Armand, *pres. pt.* arming, 19. 579.
- Armouris, *s. pl.* arms (defensive),  
armour, 10. 62 (E.), 10. 376, 11. 76.
- Armyng, *s.* armour, 3. 614, 4. 398,  
7. 218, 10. 62, 13. 145, 16. 581, 18.  
309; Armyne, 17. 264.
- Armys, *s. pl.* arms, 11. 189.
- Armyt, *pp.* armed, 5. 320, 9. 544, 11.  
96, 13. 55, 14. 41, 15. 328, 16. 374.
- Arravis, *s. pl.* arrows, 6. 121.
- Arrayit, *pp.* arrayed, 11. 229. See  
Arayit.
- Arsounse, *s.* saddle-bow, bow of the  
saddle, 16. 131. Each saddle had  
two *arsons*, one in front and one  
behind. See Halliwell. F. *arçon*,  
saddle-bow (Cotgrave). Oddly ex-  
plained by 'buttocks' in Jamieson.
- Aryotit, *a reading in C. for* Ryotit, 9.  
500 (*footnote*).
- Arywe, *v.* to arrive, 3. 389; *pp.*  
Arywyt, 3. 637. See Ariffe.
- Askand, *pres. pt.* asking, 19. 199; *pr.*  
*s.* Askis, requires, 1. 334; *pt. s.*  
Askit, asked, 5. 62, 7. 239, 9. 221,  
13. 286; *pt. pl.* 7. 154, 285.
- Aspyne, *s.* long-boat, 17. 719 (E.).  
See Espyne.
- Assailze, *v.* to assail, 3. 151; *pt. s.*  
Assailzeit, assaulted, 3. 75. See  
Assale, Assalze.
- Assailzeours, *s. pl.* assailants, 2. 541;  
Assailzeouris, 17. 392.
- Assale, *s.* assault, 9. 350. See Assalt.
- Assale, *v.* to assail, attack, 5. 325, 7.  
530; Assaill, 9. 125; *pt. s.* Assalit,  
6. 428; *pt. pl.* 4. 89, 6. 245, 17.  
369; *pp.* 18. 194. See Assailze  
Assalze.
- Assalt, *s.* assault, 17. 474. See Assale.
- Assalze, *pr. pl.* assail, 9. 31; *pres. pt.*  
Assalzeand, 17. 371, 448, 706; *pt.*  
*s.* Assalzeit, assailed, 10. 428; *pt.*  
*pl.* Assalzeit, 12. 546; 17. 445; *pp.*  
Assalzeit, 6. 308, 7. 326, 13. 574;  
Assalzheit, 6. 378. See Assale,  
Assailze.
- Assay, *s.* assault, attack, 9. 604, 11.  
261, 14. 26, 34, 15. 210, 17. 154;  
essay, effort, 2. 371; trial, peril,  
hardship, 3. 246, 652, 4. 192; *pl.*  
Assayis, assaults, 14. 120; perils,  
3. 270; Assays, assaults, attempts,  
10. 36. *Vachis till assay*, men on  
guard against assault, 10. 651.

- Assay**, *v.* to essay, try, find out, 9. 353, 477, 10. 88; to assault, attack, 2. 264; *pt. s.* Assayit, experienced, 1. 448; attacked, 3. 376; *pt. pl.* Assayit, attempted, 10. 146; *pp.* attacked, 9. 425, 19. 592; tested, tried, 1. 237.
- Assege**, *s.* siege, 17. 270, 20. 8; *pl.* Assegis, 20. 12.
- Assegit**, *pp.* besieged, 3. 441, 5. 417, 9. 290, 10. 353, 13. 336, 17. 902.
- Assebill**, *v.* to advance to battle, 2. 294, 3. 26; to attack, 15. 421; *pt. s.* Assemblit, assembled, 3. 7, 6. 477, 7. 510, 9. 548, 18. 345; attacked, 12. 543, 20. 417; *pt. pl.* Assemblit, assembled, 6. 374, 9. 199, 16. 436; attacked, 16. 155; encountered, 12. 517; charged, 15. 365; met in full force, 16. 626; *pp.* Assemblit, assembled, 7. 567, 11. 265, 13. 2, 17. 194; gathered, 12. 283, 17. 119, 283; gone to the attack, 13. 233. *See below.*
- Assemble**, *s.* assembly, 1. 146; encounter, attack, combat, 8. 293, 9. 253, 12. 491.
- Assemyll**, *v.* to assemble, 17. 341; to encounter, fight, 12. 267, 13. 64, 18. 101; Assemyll on, to attack, 13. 7, 16. 90; *pt. s.* Assemyllit, went to the attack, 13. 11; Assemlit, 13. 75. *See Assebill.*
- Assentit**, *pt. s.* assented, 7. 157; Assentyt, 1. 169; *pt. pl.* Assentit, 19. 185, 20. 34; *pp.* consented, 20. 216; agreed, 1. 135, 13. 241.
- Assenȝhe**, *s.* war-cry, 2. 378. *See the note*, p. 235; and *see* Ensenȝe.
- Assignit**, *pp.* assigned, 11. 312, 17. 360.
- Assiss**, *s.* assize, sitting in judgment, trial, 19. 55.
- Assolȝeit**, *pt. pl.* absolved, 20. 295.
- Assonyeing**, *s.* delay (?), 17. 574 (H.). It should rather mean 'excuse.' *See below.*
- Assonȝeit**, *pp.* excused, 2. 125. O.F. *essoiner*, to excuse: cf. Goth. *sunjon*, to excuse oneself; *sunjons*, an apology, defence.
- Assouerans**, *s.* assurance, 11. 309.
- Assouerit**, *pp.*, *lit.* assured, secured, made safe, *i.e.*, fully ripe or ready to cut, 10. 187. An old form of *assured*. *See Assure* in the New E. Dict.
- Assoweryt**, *pt. pl.* felt assurance, felt secure, trusted, 11. 309 (E.).
- Astoney**, *v.* to amaze, dismay, 1. 299 (*footnote*). *See* Stonay.
- Astrolog**, *s.* astrologer, 4. 707.
- Astrology**, *s.* 4. 693.
- Asyss**, *s.* assize, 19. 55 (E.).
- At**, *conj.* that, 1. 95, 2. 160, 9. 688, 11. 260, 14. 459. *For that at*, because that, 1. 83.
- At**, *prep.* at, 5. 37; in, 19. 77; *at ȝow*, of you, 12. 484; of, from, 12. 8; *at our mycht*, with all our might, 4. 535; *at hand*, in hand, 2. 120. *See Hand.*
- At**, *rel. pron.* that, which, 5. 63, 15. 5; *that at* = that which, 1. 248.
- Ath**, *s.* oath, 9. 540; *pl.* Athes, 20. 146; Athis, 20. 56, 144. A.S. *æth*.
- Athir**, *pron.* either, 2. 346, 348, 6. 76, 11. 387, 12. 492, 16. 379; Athyr, 12. 100. *Athir othir in*, each along with the other, 17. 614.
- Atour**, *prep.* above, beyond, 2. 368, 3. 199, 4. 596, 9. 465, 10. 285, 11. 350, 16. 503\*, 17. 920, 19. 675, 20. 434; across, 13. 353. *For at-over. See Outour.*
- Atour**, *s.* preparation, gear; used of a warlike preparation for an assault, 17. 717. O.F. *atour*, *ator*, apparell, furniture, gear; *see tor* in Burguy.
- Auailȝe**, *v.* to avail, be of use, 1. 336 (*footnote*), 9. 39.
- Avail**, *v.* to lower, 17. 620; *pt. pl.* Avald, lowered, 15. 134. F. *avalier*, to lower.
- Avalȝe**; in phr. *avalȝe que valȝe*, avail what may avail, whatever may be the result, 9. 147. F. *vaille que vaille* (Lat. *ualeat quantum ualeat*).
- Avantage**, *s.* advantage, 11. 288; *at our advantage*, with the advantage on our side, 6. 66; *pl.* Avantagis, 6. 352.
- Avaward**, *s.* vanguard, 12. 179, 16. 57.
- Avawarde**, an error in C. for Vanguard, *i.e.*, vanguard, 8. 343 (*footnote*). The shorter form is demanded by the metre.
- Avay**, *adv.* away, 5. 33; *mycht nocht avay*, could not get away, 18. 367; *thai wald avay*, they would get away, 16. 378; *him behuifit avay*, it behoved him to go away, 14. 108.
- Aucht**, *num.* eight, 9. 370, 11. 523, 16. 189, 18. 350.

- Aucht, 1 *p. s. pt.* I ought, 1. 432; 1 *pl.* we ought, 12. 171; *pt. s.* ought, 1. 68. *See* below; and *see* Awcht.
- Aucht, *pt. pl.* possessed, 1. 45. A.S. *āgan*, to possess, owe; *pt. t. ic āhte*, I possessed, I ought.
- Aughty, *num.* eighty, 18. 349.
- Avenand, *adj.* well-proportioned, handsome, 17. 218. O.F. *avenant*, well-portioned, suitable; *see* *venir* in Burguy. *See* Awenand.
- Avent, *v.* to give air to, to cool, 12. 145. Lat. *uentus*, wind. *See* Awent.
- Auentur, *s.* adventure, 1. 298; peril, 1. 605, 17. 312, 710.
- Auenturus, *adj.* adventurous, dangerous to keep, perilous, 8. 497.
- Auerty, *adj.* prudent, 18. 439 (E.); A-verty, well-advised, cautious, 8. 162. From Lat. *advertere*.
- Avisé, *adj.* prudent, 8. 385. *See* Awisè.
- Avisit, *pt. pl.* advised, 16. 134.
- Avisment, *s.* consideration, forethought, 6. 271; advice, counsel, 5. 199, 7. 526. *See* Awisement.
- Awiss, *s.* advice, 19. 157; prudence, 10. 269.
- Aulde, *adj. pl.* old, 1. 17.
- Aw, 2 *p. s. pr.* thou oughtest, 9. 753; *pr. pl.* ought, 11. 430. A.S. *āgan*; *pr. t. ic āh*.
- Aw, *s.* awe, fear, 13. 6, 11. 555; *to stand aw*, to stand in awe, 3. 62; on which phrase *see* the note, p. 236.
- Awailȝe, *v.* to avail, be of use, 1. 338, 2. 392; Awaill, 1. 336; *pt. s.* Awaillȝeit, 1. 342.
- Awalit, *pt. pl.* let down, lowered, 15. 134 (E.). *See* Availl.
- A-wanement, *s.* advancement, promotion, 15. 522 (E.).
- Awaward, *s.* vanguard, 12. 497, 13. 169. F. *avant*, before, and O.F. *warde*, guard. *See* Vaward.
- Awayward, *adv.* in their flight, in the retreat, 16. 584.
- Awblasteris, *s. pl.* arbalisters, crossbow-men, 17. 236 (E.).
- Awcht, *pt. s.* owed, ought to do, 1. 255; deserved, 3. 59. *See* Aucht.
- Awenand, *adj.* suitable, advantageous, 3. 41. *See* Avenand.
- Awent hym, *v.* to give himself air, to fan himself, 6. 305 (E.); Awent thame, to breathe themselves, to give themselves air, 12. 145 (E.). *See* Avent.
- Awerty, *adj.* prudent, experienced, 2. 213, 489; Awerte, 10. 38. *See* Auerty.
- Awfully, *adv.* sternly, terribly, 4. 321.
- Awisè, *adj.* well-advised, prudent, 2. 271, 3. 131, 8. 385 (E.), 10. 37 (E.), 11. 349 (E.).
- Awisement, *s.* consideration, time for considering, 2. 297.
- Awisyt, *pt. s.* advised, 2. 298.
- Awmener, *s.* purse, 8. 490. O.F. *aumosniere*, F. *aumônière*, a bag for alms.
- Awn, *adj.* own, 6. 636, 9. 286, 10. 218, 12. 117; Awne, 4. 311, 9. 116, 11. 85, 12. 214, 19. 704. *See* Awyn.
- Awncestry, *s.* ancestry, 1. 44.
- Awntyrt, *s.* adventure, hap, 19. 761 (E.).
- Awter, *s.* altar, 2. 33, 44.
- Awyn, *adj.* own, 3. 752; Awyne, 2. 121, 13. 487 (E.). A.S. *āgen*. *See* Awn.
- Awysily, *adv.* advisedly, warily, 1. 302. *See* Avisè.
- Awysit, *pp.* well advised, assured, certified, 1. 620. *See* Avisit.
- Awys, *an error in E. for* a wyss, *i.e.*, a way, a wise, 3. 526 (*foot-note*), 10. 542 (E.).
- Ax, *s.* battle-axe, 12. 20, 52; *pl.* Axys, 3. 20.
- Ay, *adv.* aye, ever, 1. 14, 4. 148; always, 16. 625, 17. 21; continually, 3. 609. A.S. *ā, ē*.
- Aynd, *s.* breath, 4. 199, 10. 610; *in aynd*, in breath, 6. 617. Icel. *andi, önd*, breath; cf. Lat. *anima*.
- Aynding, *s.* breathing, breath, 11. 615. *See* Aynd.
- Ayndless, *adj.* breathless, 10. 609. *See* Aynd.
- Ay-quhar, *adv.* lit. everywhere; hence, always, 2. 91, 4. 702, 12. 22, 19. 441.
- Ayr, *adv.* formerly, before, 1. 477. *See* Air, Ar.
- Ayr, *s.* heir, 1. 432; *pl.* Ayris, heirs, 5. 520. *See* Air.
- Ayr, *s.* oar, 4. 630; *pl.* Ayris, 3. 573, 4. 374; *on ayris*, on their oars, at their oars, 3. 580. *See* Ar.
- Ayth, *s.* oath, 14. 330, 19. 294; *pl.* Aythis, 1. 513. *See* Ath.
- Bachelor, *s.* a novice in arms, 2. 406; Bachiller, 4. 72, 8. 495.

- Backermair, *adv.* more backward, *a reading in H. for Hendirmar*, 7. 599 (*footnote*).
- Baid, *s.* delay, 3. 754, 4. 609, 6. 403, 7. 587, 10. 404, 18. 52. *See* Abaid.
- Baid, *pt. pl.* abode for, awaited, 5. 113; waited, 12. 333; abode, 9. 413. A.S. *bidan*, to wait.
- Baill, *s.* bale, blazing pile, 17. 619. A.S. *bǣl*, a blazing pile.
- Bailheys, *s. pl.* bailiffs, 1. 190.
- Bair, *adj.* bare, 13. 501.
- Bair, *pt. pl.* bore, 9. 175; *pt. s. refl.* bore himself, behaved, 17. 153; Bair *3ow* on hand, 1 *p. s. pl.* I assured you, 19. 142.
- Baised, *pp.* abased, overthrown, 4. 94 (*footnote*).
- Bait, *s.* boat, 3. 408; Bate, 3. 417.
- Baitit, *pt. pl.* baited, 13. 599. Baytit, 13. 591. Icel. *beita*, to make to bite; causal of *blita*. *See* Bayt.
- Bak, *s.* back, 10. 723; *gaf the bak*, turned their backs, fled, 16. 210\*, 18. 323; *bakkis gaf*, 9. 269; *ta the bak*, to flee, 12. 338, 17. 124; *cf.* 12. 78, 17. 162.
- Bald, *adj.* bold, 8. 116, 10. 112.
- Band, *s.* bond, 1. 267, 4. 41.
- Band, *pt. pl.* bound, secured, 10. 825.
- Bandoun, in *phr.* abandoned, 1. 244. (*footnote*). O.F. *à bandon*.
- Baneour, *s.* a banner-bearer, 7. 588, 12. 220. *See* below.
- Baner, *s.* banner, 7. 88, 17. 134; Baneir, 11. 347, 15. 419; *pl.* Baneris, 11. 464, 17. 553.
- Baneris, *s. pl.* banners, *probably* standard-bearers, 15. 166. (Read *baneours*?) *See* above.
- Banrentis, *s. pl.* bannerets, 11. 529.
- Banys, *s. pl.* bones, 1. 386, 20. 575.
- Banyst, *pp.* banished, 4. 522, 13. 498.
- Bar, *adj.* bare, 10. 242, 19. 540.
- Bar, *pt. s.* bore, 5. 627, 20. 133, 552; Bair, 5. 606; *pt. pl.* Bar, 11. 115, 12. 396; *doun bar*, bore down, 14. 293; *bar them*, demeaned themselves, 14. 77; *bar on hand*, vehemently asserted, 1. 62.
- Bar, *s.* a boar, 2. 233. *Cf.* the reading *baire* in Hart. A.S. *bār*.
- Bar fors, *an error in E. for* Berfroiss, 10. 708 (*footnote*).
- Barblyt, *pp.* barbed, 8. 57. Cotgrave has—"Barbell, bearded; also, full of snags, snips, &c. *Flesche barbell*, a bearded or barbed arrow."
- Barded, *pp.* armed (said of horses), 11. 107 (H.).
- Barell-feris. *See* Barell-ferraris.
- Barell-ferraris, *s. pl.* vessels for wine or water, 15. 39 (E.). *See* the note, p. 278.
- Bargane, *s.* fight, fighting, combat, 2. 385, 4. 96, 5. 236, 6. 432, 7. 221, 9. 542, 10. 678, 14. 34, 15. 488, 16. 306, 17. 128, 18. 461.
- Bargane, *v.* to combat, fight, 8. 184, 9. 224.
- Barganyng, *s.* fighting, 2. 191, 4. 593, 12. 253; *pl.* Barganyngis, combats, 1. 306.
- Bargis, *s. pl.* barges, boats, 16. 641.
- Barnage, *s.* baronage, assembly of barons, nobility, 1. 41, 2. 185, 6. 186, 16. 3, 14. 256. O.F. *bar-naige*, an assembly of barons.
- Barnagis, *s. pl.* *wrongly used for* Barnage, 14. 256 (E.).
- Barnè, *s.* barony, *i.e.*, assembly of barons, 2. 50. (A dissyllabic word.)
- Baroun, *s.* baron, 11. 232; *pl.* Barownys, 1. 69, 3. 9, 535.
- Barras, *s.* barrier, outwork, 4. 96, 17. 756. From O.F. *barres*, *pl.* of *barre*, a stake.
- Barrit, *pt. pl.* barred, 4. 433, 17. 444.
- Basnet, *s.* helmet, 6. 304, 12. 21; *pl.* Basnetis, 8. 225, 11. 462, 12. 144. *See* below.
- Bassynet, *s.* basnet, helmet, 11. 21 (E.); *pl.* Bassynettis, 8. 225 (E.), 11. 462 (E.). O.F. *basinet*, a basin-shaped helmet, from *basin*, a basin.
- Bataill, *s.* battle, 1. 24, 105, 10. 822. *See* Battaljehe.
- Bate, *s.* boat, 3. 417, 423, 13. 615; Bat, 13. 645, 16. 647, 17. 403; *pl.* Batis, 4. 401, 18. 202. *See* Bait.
- Bath, *adj.* both, 1. 81, 6. 418, 9. 93, 10. 6.
- Battaillyng, *s.* battle-array, 8. 47 (E.).
- Battaillyt, *pp.* furnished with battlements, embattled, 2. 221; Battalit, 4. 134.
- Battale, *s.* battalion, host, 11. 172; Battell, 18. 351; *in haill battale*, in a compact body, 6. 519; *pl.* Battalis, 11. 121, 12. 26; Battellis, 17. 559, 18. 350.

- Battal3he, *s.* battle, 10. 725.  
 Battalyng, *s.* embattlement, 4. 136.  
 Battel-sted, *s.* battle-field, 15. 74.  
 Bauld, *adj.* bold, 2. 196. *See* Bald.  
 Bauldly, *adv.* boldly, 3. 14.  
 Bawlmeyt, *pp.* embalmed, 20. 286.  
*See* below.  
 Bawmyt, *pp.* embalmed, 20. 286  
 (E.); *numbered* 20. 294 *in* P. *See*  
 above.  
 Bayt, *ger.* to feed, 13. 589. *See*  
 Baitit.  
 Be, 1 *p. s. pr. subj.* may be, am, 1.  
 615; *pl.* that we may be, 3. 657;  
*v.* 5. 300. *See* Ar, Beis, Beyn.  
 Be, *prep.* by, 1. 65, 218, 2. 230;  
*past*, 3. 577; *be then*, by then, by  
 that time, 7. 236; *be that*, by that  
 time, 10. 668.  
 Becummyne, *pp.* become, 15. 334.  
 Beddis, *s. pl.* beds, 9. 428.  
 Bedene, 2. 399, 15. 108 (E.). *See*  
 Bedeyn.  
 Bedeyn, *adv.* forthwith, 5. 144, 8.  
 346, 11. 265; Bedeyne, 12. 570,  
 15. 108. Perhaps for *bi-dēn*, vari-  
 ant of A.S. *bi-dōn*, concluded.  
 Beforn, *prep.* before, 3. 136.  
 Beforn, *adv.* before, 10. 245.  
 Beforouth, *adv.* before, 19. 502  
 (E.).  
 Begilit, *pp.* beguiled, 19. 680.  
 Begouth, *pt. s.* began, 2. 393, 5. 9,  
 8. 308, 14. 198, 20. 76; *pl.* 16. 551,  
 17. 686. This is not the true form  
 of the past tense, but an imitation  
 of *couth*, the *pt. t.* of *connen* (A.S.  
*cunnan*), to know.  
 Begunnyn, *pp.* begun, 2. 189; Be-  
 gonnyyn, 8. 7.  
 Behaldand, *pres. part.* beholding, 8.  
 91.  
 Behevin, *pp.* be-hewn, hewn in two,  
 17. 755 (C.). *See* To-hewen.  
 Behowyt, *pt. s.* it behoved, 14. 108  
 (E.). *See* Behufit.  
 Behuf, *s.* behoof, profit, 15. 517.  
 Behufis, *pr. s. impers.* it behoves,  
 11. 285, 19. 156; *pt. s.* Behufit, 6.  
 114, 9. 725, 10. 16, 11. 361, 20.  
 154; *behufit away*, had to depart,  
 6. 210.  
 Beid, *v.* to bide, wait for (*miswritten*  
*for* bide), 8. 183.  
 Beiff, *s.* cow fit for killing, 18. 283.  
 Beir, *v.* to bear, carry, 4. 630; *we*  
*beir us*, we behave, 14. 275.  
 Beis, *s. pl.* bees, 11. 368.  
 Beis, *pr. s. as fut.* shall be, will be,  
 10. 576, 11. 299, 19. 300; *imp. pl.*  
 be ye, 11. 562.  
 Bekand, *pres. part.* warming, 19. 552.  
 Belewyt, *pt. s.* remained, continued,  
 13. 544 (E.).  
 Belif, *adv.* quickly, soon, 10. 238,  
 481; Beliff, 17. 30. A.S. *be life*,  
 by (or with) life.  
 Bemys, *s. pl.* beams, 4. 704.  
 Bend, *v.* to set an engine for casting  
 stones, 17. 682, 690; *pt. s.* Bendit,  
 17. 672.  
 Be-neth, *adv.* beneath, 10. 637; *prep.*  
 11. 286, 537.  
 Beneuth, *for* Beneth, *i.e.*, beneath, 10.  
 86 (E.).  
 Benewth, *prep.* beneath, 11. 286 (E.),  
 13. 378 (E.). *See* Be-neth.  
 Benisoun, *s.* blessing, 2. 131.  
 Benk, *s.* bench, 7. 238 (E.). *See*  
 Bynk.  
 Ber, *v.* to bear, carry, 1. 617, 3. 409,  
 9. 505, 11. 598; Bere, 5. 575;  
*pr. s.* Beris, 1. 560, 4. 549; *pres.*  
*pt.* Berand, 13. 71.  
 Berdlass, *adj.* beardless, 11. 217.  
 Berfroiss, *s.* a tower, 10. 708. Origin-  
 ally, a sort of watch-tower. Ō.F.  
*beffroi*, *berfrois*, from O.H.G. *berc-*  
*vrit*, a watch-tower. Corrupted in  
 modern English into *belfry*.  
 Berne, *s.* a barn, 4. 38.  
 Bery, *v.* to bury, 20. 598; Berye, 13.  
 663; *pp.* Beryit, 10. 489; Beriit,  
 20. 299.  
 Berynes, *s.* burial, 4. 334. A.S.  
*byrignes*, a burial (Bosworth).  
 Besaly, *adv.* busily, 9. 149, 10. 499,  
 17. 332; Besely, 8. 512.  
 Best, *adj. superl.* best, 4. 94. *See* the  
 note, p. 244. Or for *baissed*, q.v.  
 Best, *s.* beast, 18. 283 (E.).  
 Bestiall, *an error in C. for* Vessel, 13.  
 448\*.  
 Besyd, *prep.* beside, 11. 442.  
 Besynes, *s.* busy action, painstaking  
 activity, 2. 587, 10. 514.  
 Bet, *v.* to beat, 13. 158, 15. 50.  
 Bet, *pt. pl.* mended, increased, 19.  
 497. A.S. *bētan*, to better, mend,  
 repair; from *bōt*, advantage.  
 Bet, *a misreading for* Let, 1. 254  
 (footnote).  
 Betane, *pp.* pursued, 3. 159. As *tane*  
 is the *pp.* of *take*, so *betane* is the  
*pp.* of *betake*. The sense is shown  
 in Ælfric's Colloquy (Thorpe's An-



- alecta, p. 21), where *ic betace wildcor* translates *insequor feras*. Jamieson suggests "surrounded," quite forgetting that *fyman*, to surround, is a *weak* verb. The suggestion that *betane* = *beten*, beaten, overmatched, does not suit the context.
- Betaucht, *pt. s.* handed over, delivered, I. 610. See Beteche.
- Beteche, *v.* to commit, 15. 538; *pt. s.* Betaucht, delivered, committed, I. 610, 5. 139, 10. 120, 20. 351; *pp.* Betaucht, 11. 325. A.S. *betæcan*, to commit.
- Betreyss, *v.* to betray, 4. 23, 5. 529 (E.); Betraiss, 5. 539, 14. 343; *pp.* Betresyt, 4. 17; Betrasyt, 4. 27. From O.F. *trair* (F. *trahir*); with prefix *be-*.
- Betuix, *prep.* between, 3. 109, 118, 6. 211, 13. 337; Betuyx, 7. 159; Betwyx, 1. 81. A.S. *betweox*.
- Betyd, *pr. pl. subj.* may happen, 11. 224.
- Bewte, *s.* beauty, 11. 479, 19. 397.
- Beyme, *s.* beam, 11. 190.
- Beyn, *pp.* been, 1. 527, 5. 276, 12. 544, 15. 198, 16. 658; Beyne, 13. 49, 19. 164. See *Be*.
- Bibill, *s.* the Bible, 1. 466.
- Biddin, *pp.* bidden, 6. 91\*, 19. 450.
- Biddyng, *s.* command, 16. 312.
- Biggit, *pt. s.* built, 5. 457; *pp.* built, 16. 338; built on, inhabited, cultivated, 14. 383. Icel. *byggja*, to build. See *Byg*.
- Bikkyr, *v.* to annoy by skirmishing, 16. 102, 19. 334. Cf. Welsh *bicr*, a battle, skirmish. See *Bykkir*.
- Bikkyrring, *s.* skirmishing, 9. 343.
- Blamyt, *pt. pl.* blamed, 12. 90.
- Blasis, *s. pl.* blazes, 4. 129.
- Blast, *s.* blast, 4. 142.
- Blaw, *v.* to blow (horns), 3. 484; to blow, 15. 278, 17. 460; *pr. s.* Blawis, manifests, 4. 122; *pres. part.* Blawand, blowing, 3. 702; *pp.* Blawen, 17. 471.
- Blenknyt, *pt. s.* blinked, glanced, 8. 217; shone, 11. 190. Formed from the stem *blink-*, with suffix *-nen*, used in general to form verbs of a neuter or passive sense; cf. the Goth. suffix *-nan*.
- Blenkyt, *pt. s.* looked aside (lit. blinked), 6. 633; looked up, 7. 203; Blenked, glanced, shone, 8. 217 (H.), 11. 190 (H.). Du. and G. *blinken*, A.S. *blīcan*, to shine.
- Blesis, *s. pl.* blazes, flames, 4. 138; 4. 129 (footnote). See *Blasis*.
- Blith, *adj.* blithe, glad, 7. 273, 13. 120, 14. 380, 17. 179, 19. 606.
- Blithar, *adj.* blither, 16. 486. See above.
- Blithly, *adv.* blithely, 16. 26.
- Blithlyer, *adv.* more blithely, 8. 457.
- Blomyt, *pt. s.* bloomed (*a bad reading for blenkyt*), 11. 190 (E.).
- Blude, *s.* blood, 5. 405, 9. 732.
- Bludy, *adj.* bloody, 10. 682.
- Blwmys, *s. pl.* blooms, flowers, 5. 10.
- Blyth, *adj.* blithe, 1. 389. See *Blith*.
- Bodword, *s.* a message, 15. 423. Lit. *bode-word*.
- Bodyn, *pp.* bidden (to battle), challenged to fight, 7. 103. A.S. *bēdan*, to bid, *pp.* *boden*.
- Boist, *s.* noise, 4. 122 (footnote). See *Bost*.
- Bollis, *s.* bushels, lit. bowls, *i.e.*, bowlfuls, 3. 211. Wyntoun uses the same word in telling the same story.
- Bolning, *pres. part.* swelling, 3. 699 (footnote).
- Bonat, *s.* bonnet, 9. 506.
- Born, *pp.* borne, 11. 590.
- Borwch, *s.* pledge, 1. 625; Borwch, 1. 628. A.S. *borh*, a pledge.
- Bost, *s.* noise, brag, boast, arrogance, 4. 122; insolence, 9. 231. Of unknown origin.
- Bot, *conj.* but, 1. 261; unless, 3. 518; *adv.* only, 1. 289, 15. 347\*; Bot and = as well as, 5. 595; Bot gif = unless, 10. 462, 16. 304, 17. 772.
- Bot, *prep.* without, 5. 91; besides, 18. 18.
- Boune, *adj.* ready, prepared, 2. 160, 3. 693, 4. 578, 9. 419, 12. 327, 14. 175, 19. 701. Icel. *blinn*, prepared; *pp.* of *búa*, to prepare.
- Bounte, *s.* bounty, goodness, excellence, 1. 31; a deed of valour, 3. 132; welfare, 2. 48; bounty, 11. 88; valour, 12. 186, 16. 516, 17. 919, 18. 567.
- Bourding, *pres. part.* jesting, 2. 34 (footnote). See *bourd* in Chaucer.
- Bow, 2 *p. s. pr. subj.* bow, bend; *bow it* = (either) bow to it, submit to it, (or else) incline it, *i.e.*, give way, 9. 753. The sense is much the same.

- Bow-draucht, *s.* a bow-shot, arrow's flight, 7. 19, 8. 169, 9. 579; *used as pl.* 6. 58. *Lit. bow-draught.*  
 Bown, *pp.* prepared, ready, 5. 322, 19. 434; Bowne, 11. 65, 15. 9. *See* Boune.  
 Bown, *v. refl.* to get themselves ready, 19. 247; *pl. s.* Bownyt, made ready, 20. 308. A secondary verb, formed from the *pp.* *boun* or *boun.* *See* Boune.  
 Bowndis, *s. pl.* bounds, borders, 10. 505.  
 Bowning, *a reading in H. for Luk-* and, 3. 579 (*footnote*). *Bowning* means "making themselves ready"; the reading can hardly be right.  
 Bownte, *s.* bounty, goodness, 11. 178; valour, 7. 372. *See* Bounte.  
 Bowrdand, *pres. part.* jesting, 8. 383. *See* Bourding.  
 Bow-schote, *s.* a bowshot, 12. 33 (E. and H.). *See* Bow-draucht.  
 Boyis, *s. pl.* gyves, 10. 763. *Lat. boia*, O. Fr. *buie*, a fetter. *See* note to l. 680 of *Vie de Saint Auban*, ed. R. Atkinson.  
 Bra, *s.* brae, hill, steep bank, 3. 109, 4. 372, 6. 147, 18. 365, 446, 454, 463; *pl.* Braiss, 13. 337; Brayis, 6. 77.  
 Brad, *adj.* broad, 3. 467. *See* Braid.  
 Bradar, *adj. comp.* broader, 4. 128.  
 Braid, *adj.* broad, 1. 386, 7. 109, 8. 57, 10. 266, 11. 122, 19. 313.  
 Brak, *pt. pl.* broke, kept off, 4. 137; broke, 4. 414 (and *see* the note to 4. 711, p. 246); *pt. pl.* 12. 396.  
 Brand, *s.* sword, 5. 647, 8. 83, 87. *Icel. brandr*, a brand; also, a sword-blade.  
 Brandis, *s.* fire-brands, 17. 705. *See* above.  
 Brast, *v.* to burst, break, 15. 479; *pt. s.* burst, 4. 129; *pt. pl.* 12. 545. A.S. *berstan*, to burst.  
 Bra-syd, *s.* hill-side, 3. 127. *See* above.  
 Brawle, *v.* to contend, strive, 1. 573; Brawill, to fall into confusion, 12. 131; *pres. part.* Brawland, wavering, 11. 131 (E.).  
 Brayis, *s. pl.* braes, banks, 6. 77. *See* Bra.  
 Bredis, *pr. pl.* spread out, extend themselves, 16. 68. A.S. *brēdan*, to extend, spread. [Not explained by Jamieson.]  
 Breid, *s.* breadth, 1. 531, 16. 383; *on breid*, in breadth, 12. 440, 19. 739. A.S. *brēdu*, breadth.  
 Brek, *v.* to break, 9. 322, 10. 88, 11. 645, 12. 464. *Brek aray*, to break the ranks, 12. 217. *Pres. part.* Brekand, 3. 699.  
 Brest, *pt. s.* burst, 2. 352. A.S. *brestan*, *berstan*, to burst. *See* Brist, Brast.  
 Brethir, *s. pl.* brethren, 3. 93. *See* Broder.  
 Brightly, *adv.* brightly, 12. 426. *See* Brycht.  
 Bridill, *s.* bridle, 11. 173. *See* Brydill.  
 Brig, *s.* bridge, 10. 86, 17. 923. *See* Bryg.  
 Briggitt, *pp.* bridged over, 12. 404; *pt. pl.* Brigged, 19. 742 (*footnote*).  
 Brighouss, *s.* a bridge-house, 17. 409. Perhaps a toll-house.  
 Brist, *pt. s.* broke, burst, 8. 87, 12. 559, 15. 481. *See* Brest, Brast.  
 Bristing, *s.* bursting, breaking, 13. 155, 16. 158. *See* above.  
 Brocht, *pt. s.* brought, 11. 221; *pp.* 2. 197, 14. 451. *See* Broucht.  
 Brodir, *s.* brother, 2. 19; Brodyr, 2. 22. *See* Brethir.  
 Broiljit, *reading in E. for* Brulzeit, 4. 151 (*footnote*).  
 Brokyn, *pp.* broken, 12. 98.  
 Broucht, *pp.* brought, 20. 194. *See* Brocht.  
 Browdyn, *pp.* braided, embroidered, 8. 229, 11. 464. A.S. *bregdan*, to braid; *pp.* *brogden*, *brōden*.  
 Bruk, *v.* to enjoy, 5. 236, 20. 132 (E.); *ger.* Bruke, 19. 9; *pres. s.* Brukis, 5. 232. A.S. *brūcan*; cf. *Lat. frui*. *See* Brwk.  
 Brulzeit, *pt. s.* broiled, scorched, 4. 151.  
 Brundis, *s. pl.* brands, burnt logs, 17. 705 (E.).  
 Brwk, *v.* enjoy, possess, 20. 132. *See* Bruk.  
 Brycht, *adv.* brightly, 8. 46. *See* Brightly.  
 Brydill, *s.* bridle, 2. 425. *See* Bridill.  
 Bryg, *s.* bridge, 15. 134; *pl.* Bryggis, 12. 397. *See* Brig.  
 Brym, *s.* brim, edge of a lake, 14. 339.  
 Bryn, *ger.* to burn, 15. 438 (E.); *pres. pt.* Brynnand, 17. 834 (E.); *pt. s.* Brynt, 5. 413, 13. 737, 15. 513; *pp.* Brynt, 17. 457, 467.

- Brynstane, *s.* brimstone, 17. 612.  
 Buk, *s.* book, 1. 33, 525.  
 Bule, *s.* bull, 18. 275 (E.).  
 Bundin, *pp.* bound, 5. 300, 10. 361;  
 Bundyn, 7. 115.  
 Burchis, *s.* *pl.* boroughs, towns, 4. 213.  
 Burd, *s.* board, boarded roof, 4. 126;  
*pl.* Burdis, movable tables, 5. 388;  
 Burdys, 2. 96. To lay *burdis* down  
 is to set aside the tables when the  
 feast is over.  
 Burdowsys, *s.* *pl.* club-bearers, fight-  
 ers with maces (?), 17. 236 (E.).  
 Jamieson suggests the above ex-  
 planation; but I would read *bur-*  
*domys*, *i.e.*, mules.  
 Burgeonys, *s.* *pl.* shoots, buds, 5. 10.  
 Burgess, *s.* burgess, 16. 80, 17. 23,  
 326.  
 Burn, *s.* bourn, stream, 7. 39, 78.  
 Burne, *v.* to burn, 15. 438. See Bryn,  
 Byrne.  
 Burnyst, *pp.* burnished, 8. 225, 11.  
 462, 12. 441, 13. 40.  
 Buschement, *s.* an ambush, 4. 414, 6.  
 415, 8. 442, 10. 204, 18. 299 (E.).  
 Cf. O.F. *embuschement*, an ambus-  
 cade.  
 Bushed, *pp.* set in ambush, 10. 204  
 (H.). Cf. O.F. *embuscher*, to set  
 an ambush.  
 Busk, *s.* a bush, 7. 71, 13. 519. Low  
 Lat. *boscus*, *boscus*.  
 Busk, *v.* to prepare oneself, get  
 ready, 9. 358, 11. 394; *pt. s.* Buskit,  
 got ready, 1. 142, 2. 566, 3. 569, 8.  
 409, 9. 225, 565, 16. 684, 19. 512;  
 began, 7. 492; went, 10. 404; *pt.*  
*pl.* Buskit, got ready, 6. 454; *pp.*  
 Buskit, prepared, equipped, 9. 173,  
 11. 435, 12. 413, 19. 321. Icel.  
*bilast* (for *bilask*), to prepare one-  
 self, from *bila*. Not Celtic; only a  
 borrowed word in Gaelic.  
 But, *prep.* without, 1. 74, 115; 2.  
 179, 3. 66, 5. 30, 11. 278, 12. 266,  
 15. 415, 18. 543, &c.; besides, 10.  
 85. But *persaving*, without being  
 seen, 17. 92.  
 But, *adv.* however, 2. 438. (The  
 reading is perhaps corrupt.)  
 Bwnte, *s.* goodness, 10. 294.  
 By, *prep.* near; *the by*, by thee, near  
 thee, 7. 257; with reference to, 19.  
 685.  
 By, *adv.* beside, near, aside, 6. 633,  
 667; 13. 12.  
 By, *v.* to buy; *by sair*, pay dearly  
 for, 18. 514; to ransom, 17. 336.  
 Byddying, *s.* bidding, order, 11. 279,  
 16. 112; *pl.* Byddingis, commands,  
 12. 385.  
 Byg, *v.* to build, 5. 453. See Biggit.  
 Bykkir, *v.* to skirmish with, annoy,  
 9. 152; *pt. pl.* Bykkirit, 9. 154, 10.  
 811, 16. 104, 144. See Bikkyr.  
 Bynk, *s.* bench, 7. 238. See Benk.  
 Byrd, *pt. s. reflex.* it behaved, 6. 316.  
 Icel. *byrja*, to behove; cf. *svá*  
*byrjaði* Christo að líða, so it behoved  
 Christ to suffer, Luke xxiv. 46.  
 Byrkis, *s.* *pl.* birch-trees, 16. 394.  
 Byrne, *v.* to burn, 17. 431 (E.); Byrn,  
 17. 525; *pres. pt.* Byrnannd, 4. 619,  
 17. 442, 18. 553, 19. 662. See  
 Bryn, Burne.  
 Byrnys, *s.* *pl.* birnies, *i.e.*, breast-  
 plates, 2. 352; Byrneiss, 12. 559.  
 A.S. *byrne*, a corslet, cuirass, coat-  
 of-mail.  
 Byrth, *s.* birth, 6. 184.  
 Cald, *adj.* cold, 20. 76; Cauld, 3.  
 377.  
 Call, *v.* to drive, 10. 227; *pt. s.*  
 Callit, drove, 10. 223; hence, Call  
 all! *interj.* (meaning) drive on all,  
 10. 178, 231. Cf. Scottish "to *caw*  
 a nail," *i.e.*, to drive it. The use  
 of the word is curious. I see no  
 connection with Dan. *kage*, to lash,  
 as suggested by Jamieson.  
 Callyt, *pt. s.* called, 1. 604, 16. 674;  
*pt. pl.* Callit, 13. 466, 16. 343; *pp.*  
 Callit, 10. 456, 13. 695, 17. 586.  
 Campioun, *s.* champion, hero, 15. 60.  
 Can, *pt. s.* did (*auxiliary*), 1. 330, 3.  
 27, 15. 136; *pt. pl.* did, 12. 66, 15.  
 4. This use is common; cf. Chau-  
 cer's use of *gan*.  
 Cant, *adj.* brisk, 8. 280. Cf. modern  
 Scottish *canty*, brisk, lively. The  
 word occurs in Minot's Poems; see  
 Gloss. to Specimens of English, ed.  
 Morris and Skeat.  
 Capitale, *adj.* capital, *i.e.*, deadly,  
 3. 2.  
 Capitane, *s.* captain, 6. 431, 8. 452,  
 15. 112; *pl.* Capitany, 11. 520.  
 Capitole, *s.* Capitol, 1. 543.  
 Car, *s.* grief, sorrow (lit. care), 20.  
 586.  
 Carbuncle, an error for Qwyrbolle,  
*q.v.*, 12. 22 (H.).  
 Cariage, *s.* baggage, 11. 238. A com-

- mon use of the word. It occurs in our Bible. See Caryage.
- Cariage-men, *s. pl.* baggage-carriers, 8. 275.
- Carioune, *s.* carcase, 20. 573; O.F. *caroigne*, F. *charogne*; from Lat. *caro*, flesh.
- Carll, *s.* churl, peasant, 19. 608; Carle, 10. 158. Icel. *karl*, a man; cf. A.S. *ceorl*, a churl.
- Carpand, *pres. part.* talking, 10. 397, 630. Apparently introduced from Lat. *carpere*.
- Carpyng, *s.* speaking, relation, 1. 6; Carping, discourse, 1. 503, 4. 668, 10. 578; narrative, 17. 493. See above.
- Cartis, *s. pl.* carts, 11. 114.
- Cartit, *pp.* carted, carried, 15. 97.
- Caryage, *s.* baggage, 15. 19. See Caryage.
- Caryand, *pres. part.* carrying, 19. 723; *pp.* Caryit, 16. 287, 15. 97 (E.).
- Carying, *s.* carrying, 19. 726.
- Cass, *s.* case, 1. 52, 20. 304; chance, good hap, 2. 24; chance, 10. 694; fortune, 3. 638; circumstance, 1. 562, 6. 9, 7. 286. F. *cas*, Lat. *casus*.
- Cassidoune, an error for Cristendome, 11. 471 (C.); footnote.
- Cast, *s.* throw, overthrow, 14. 321.
- Castell, *s.* castle, 11. 363; Castele, 11. 444.
- Cataill, *s.* property, chattels, especially small moveables, 3. 735; Catele, cattle, 18. 249; Catell, wealth, 5. 275; Cattale, cattle, 6. 399.
- Catiff, *s.* caitiff, wretch, 18. 514.
- Cauld, *s.* cold, 3. 377, 383. See Cald.
- Cause, *s.* causeway, 18. 140, 146 (E.). See Cawsè.
- Causs, *s.* cause, 1. 280, 9. 25; reason, 19. 558; *causs has mad*, *i.e.*, have fought, 12. 122.
- Cawse, *s.* causey, causeway, 18. 128, 140; Cawsee, 18. 146. O.F. *chaucie* (F. *chaussée*), from Lat. *via calciata*; O.Fr. *cauch*, *chauc*, chalk; Lat. *calx*. The Eng. *causeway* represents M.E. *causee-wey*.
- Certante, *s.* certainty, 7. 501, 11. 435.
- Certis, *adv.* certainly, 1. 21.
- Cess, *v.* to cease, 19. 2; *pl. s.* Cesit, 5. 115.
- Chak-wachis, *s. pl.* check-watches, 10. 613. It probably means the officers who went round to inspect the guards, in order to ensure their vigilance. Cf. "To *chak* the wache;" Wallace, viii. 817.
- Challanss, *s.* challenge, 8. 82.
- Challanss, *v.* to accuse, arraign, 19. 60. O.F. *chalonger*, to accuse; Lat. *calumniare*.
- Chalmer, *s.* a chamber, 5. 164, 287; Chalmr, 11. 118; *chalmir-page*, 5. 580. See Chamur, Chawmer.
- Chamur, *s.* chamber, 2. 59; Chamy, retiring-room, 2. 97. See above.
- Chancell, *s.* the chancel, 5. 348; Chanser, 5. 356, 366.
- Changit, *pl. pl.* changed, 7. 127; *pp.* Changit, 13. 682, 19. 524; exchanged, 13. 687.
- Chans, *s.* chance, 4. 396; Chanss, 20. 58.
- Chaplet, *s.* chaplet, garland, crown, 11. 546.
- Chaptour of mytoun, *i.e.*, chapter of Mitton, 17. 587.
- Chapyt, *pp.* escaped; *chapyt was*, had escaped, 2. 24.
- Char, a misprint in some editions for Thar, 8. 257 (footnote); 12. 300 (footnote). See Thar.
- Char, for Charre, *q.v.*, 11. 123 (E.). The reading *char* is wrong.
- Charge, *s.* business, 1. 141.
- Chargeand, *pres. part.* overwhelming, full, profuse, 16. 458. See below.
- Chargit, *pp.* loaded, 4. 406, 11. 116, 15. 108; burdened, 4. 344; oppressed, overburdened, 13. 317; commanded, 16. 10; bidden, 20. 202; filled, 10. 187, 191. F. *charger*.
- Charre, *s.* array of chariots or waggons, 11. 123. The word is disyllabic—*char-rè*. Cf. modern F. *charroi*, a baggage-train.
- Chas, *s.* chase, 7. 81; Chass, 7. 81, 9. 529.
- Chass, *v.* to chase, pursue, 3. 53, 6. 435, 14. 445; *pr. s.* Chassis, 13. 376; *pl. s.* Chassit, 19. 375, 20. 431; Chasit, 9. 524; Chassyt, 2. 442; Chasit on, continued the chase, 6. 416; *pl. pl.* Chassit, 9. 276, 15. 381, 16. 637, 20. 429; Chasit, 14. 129, 16. 642; Chast, 18. 482; *pp.* Chassit, 10. 99, 15. 510, 17. 582. F. *chasser*.
- Chassand, *pres. part.* chasing, 7. 88, 20. 433. See above.
- Chassaris, *s. pl.* chasers, pursuers, 3.

- 52, 6. 439, 20. 439; Chasseris, 3. 82; Chaseris, 7. 91.
- Chassing, *s.* chasing, chase, 7. 83.
- Chasty, *v.* to chasten; *him chasty*, chasten himself, improve himself, 1. 122; 2 *p. pr. pl.* ye reprove, 9. 742; *pt. s. subj.* may reprove, 9. 751; *pp.* Chastyit, reprov'd, 9. 743. O.F. *chastier*, Lat. *castigare*.
- Chawmer, *s.* chamber, 15. 164 (E.). See Chalmer, Chamur.
- Chaynge, *s.* exchange, 19. 379.
- Cheik, *s.* cheek, 6. 627.
- Cheir, *s.* cheer, hospitality, 9. 728; *sary cheir*, evil cheer, 19. 83. See Cher.
- Cheiss, 1 *p. s. pr.* I choose, 13. 307. See Chess, Cheyss.
- Chekys, *s. pl.* gate-posts, 10. 229.
- Chemeyr, *s.* a loose gown, 16. 580 (E.), 16. 601; Chemeyr, 16. 580. See the note to 16. 580, p. 284.
- Chenyie, *s.* chain, *i.e.*, trace (of harness), 10. 233 (H.); *pl.* Chenyies, traces, 10. 180 (H.). See below.
- Chenjeis, *s. pl.* chains, 17. 623 (E.). See above, and see Cheyne.
- Cher, *s.* cheer, look, mien, 2. 34, 11. 500; *gud cher*, good cheer, good entertainment, 2. 6; *euill cher*, great sorrow (outwardly shewn), 13. 479. See Cheir.
- Cheryte, *s.* charity, 1. 418; *per cherite*, for charity, 7. 537.
- Chess, *v.* to choose, 8. 163; *pt. s.* Chesit, chose, 6. 114; *pt. pl.* Chesit, 11. 516; Chesyt, 2. 518; *pp.* Chesyt, 4. 219 (footnote). A.S. *cōsan*. See Cheiss, Cheyss.
- Cheuelrous, *adj.* chivalrous, brave, 9. 536; Cheuelruss, 11. 167, 19. 102; Chewalrouss, 9. 536 (E.).
- Cheuelry, *s.* a company of knights, body of cavalry, 4. 187, 6. 458, 7. 504, 14. 508; a feat of arms, brave deed, exploit, 6. 12, 9. 584; bravery, 9. 536. See Chewalry.
- Chewalrusly, *adj.* chivalrously, valorously, 3. 83, 266. See Cheuelrous.
- Chewalry, *s.* chivalry, 1. 25, 2. 214; a body of knights, cavalry, 2. 210, 224. See Cheuelry.
- Chewisance, *s.* provision, 3. 402. M.E. *cheuisance*, what is acquired; from O.F. *chevir*, to acquire, accomplish.
- Chewiss, *v.* for Cheviss, *i.e.*, to achieve, 7. 427 (E.). O.F. *chevir*, to achieve, acquire, accomplish.
- Cheyff, *s.* chief, 1. 154. *Hold in cheyff*, hold in chief. "*Tenere in capite*, *i.e.*, *Tenere de Rege, omnium terrarum capite*, was a tenure which held of the King immediately, as of his crown, were it by Knights service or soccage."—Blount's *Nomo-Lexicon*.
- Cheyne *s.* chain, 17. 623. See Chenyie.
- Cheyss, *v.* to choose, 1. 43. See Cheiss, Chess.
- Chiftane, *s.* a chieftain, captain, 6. 317, 15. 387, 17. 562; *pl.* Chiftanis, 9. 521; Chyftanys, 2. 226.
- Child-ill, *s.* travail, pains of labour, 16. 274 (E.); Child-euill, 16. 274 (H.). See Childyne.
- Childir, *s. pl.* children, 15. 536, 17. 820.
- Childrome, *an error in C. for Schilt-rum*, 12. 429, 433 (footnotes); 15. 354\*. See Schiltrum.
- Childyne, *s.* childing, *i.e.*, travail with child, 16. 274.
- Choss, *s.* choice, 3. 264.
- Chosyn, *pp.* chosen, 20. 212. See Chess, Cheiss.
- Chyftanys, *s. pl.* chieftains, 2. 226. See Chiftane.
- Cite, *s.* city, 3. 213, 14. 191.
- Clair, *pt. s.* clove, cleft, 5. 644; Clafe, 5. 633; Clave, 3. 138; *pl.* Claff, 13. 148.
- Clam, *pt. s.* climbed, 6. 241, 9. 316, 10. 49, 602, 644; *pl.* 10. 63, 605, 633; Clambe, 18. 451 (H.).
- Clame, *s.* claim, 20. 48.
- Clamys, *pr. s.* claims, 2. 104; *pt. s. subj.* Clamyt, should claim, 13. 724. See Clemys.
- Clap, *s.* noise, 10. 401.
- Clath, *s.* cloth, 11. 153; *pl.* Clathis, 5. 388.
- Clave, *pt. s.* clove, 3. 138. See Clair.
- Cled, *pt. s.* clad, clothed, 1. 357.
- Cleir, *adj.* clear, 9. 588.
- Cleirly, *adv.* clearly, 6. 100, 7. 352, 10. 591, 12. 184.
- Cleket, *s.* clicket, holdfast, 10. 401; a trigger, catch, 17. 674. F. *cliquet*, a catch.
- Clemys, *pr. s.* claims, desires, 1. 417. See Clamys.
- Clene, *adj.* good, 11. 427.

- Clengit, *pt. pl.* cleansed, *i.e.*, cleared, 8. 92; emptied, 15. 508, 18. 213.  
 Clenly, *adv.* wholly, entirely, 11. 96, 98\*; excellently, 6. 406. *See* Cleyn.  
 Cler, *adj.* clear, 11. 188.  
 Clergy, *s.* learning, 4. 689.  
 Clerkis, *s. pl.* clerks, learned men, 1. 249.  
 Clething, *s.* clothing, clothes, 4. 398, 5. 394.  
 Cleue, *an error in J. for* Clene, 10. 124 (*footnote*), 10. 471 (*footnote*).  
 Clewch, *s.* a hollow, 16. 386.  
 Cleyn, *adj.* clear, empty, void, 13. 443; Cleyne, clean, fine, excellent, 11. 141. *See* Clene.  
 Cleyn, *adv.* entirely, 16. 462, 18. 239; *cleyn and law*, wholly and to the bottom, 10. 124. *See* the note 10. 471, p. 262.  
 Climatis, *s. pl.* climates, 4. 701.  
 Closs, *v.* to close, 11. 277; *pt. pl.* Closit, closed, 17. 444; *pp.* Closit, enclosed, 10. 221, 17. 329; Closyt, 3. 534.  
 Club, *s.* a club, 19. 586.  
 Clummyn, *pp.* climbed, 10. 606;  
 Clumbene, 10. 650 (E.). *See* Clym.  
 Clym, *v.* to climb, 9. 410, 10. 406, 525, 544, 637; *pres. pt.* Clymande, 10. 475; *pp.* Clymen, 10. 648.  
 Clymyng, *s.* climbing, ascent, 10. 595.  
 Coffeir, *s.* a coffer; *a bad reading in E. for* Awmener, 8. 490 (*footnote*).  
 Colè, *s.* a buffet, 7. 623. *See* the note, p. 254.  
 Collaterale, *adj.* collateral, 1. 56.  
 Colowris, *s. pl.* colours, 16. 70.  
 Com, *s.* coming, approach, arrival, 16. 39, 10. 457, 18. 296; Come, 14. 400, 19. 7.  
 Com, *pt. pl.* came, 8. 11, 12. 548, 16. 161; *pt. pl.* Comme, 11. 480.  
 Combrowss, *adj.* difficult to pass over, 10. 25 (E.).  
 Combryt, *pp.* encumbered, 11. 198 (E.); harassed, 15. 31 (E.); *spell* Cumbryt, 15. 40 (E.).  
 Come, *s.* coming, 19. 7. *See* Com.  
 Comford, *for* Confortit, 11. 494 (E.).  
 Commandyne, *s.* commandment, order, 1. 256.  
 Comminite, *s.* the commonalty, the commons, 20. 128\*.  
 Commoune, *adj.* common, 20. 155; *s.* in *phr. into commoune*, in common, openly, 11. 484.  
 Commownys, *s. pl.* commons, 2. 497, 501.  
 Comonly, *adv.* commonly, 7. 294, 11. 248; alike, 12. 304; openly, 17. 799; generally, 15. 160; together, 9. 623.  
 Comper, *v.* to compare, 1. 403.  
 Comperyng, *s.* comparison, 1. 261.  
 Compositur, *s.* arbiter in a dispute, umpire, 1. 88.  
 Compyling, *s.* compilation, 13. 699.  
 Conabill, *adj.* suitable, convenient, 5. 266; fitting, advisable, 3. 290. This has no connection with the Lat. *conabilis*, difficult (which gives no sense), as Jamieson wrongly imagined; but is a corruption of O.F. *covenable* (= *convenable*), suitable. *See* Conable in Halliwell, who explains it rightly.  
 Conand, *s.* covenant, 1. 561. Contracted like the word above. *See* Cunnand.  
 Concordyt, *pt. pl.* agreed, 1. 71.  
 Condampnyt, *pp.* condemned, 4. 26.  
 Confort, *v.* to comfort, 4. 316, 11. 486; *pt. s.* Confortit, 11. 494, 15. 371; Confortyt, 3. 365; encouraged, 8. 119, 14. 84; Confort, assisted, 5. 178; *pp.* Confortyt, 2. 586.  
 Coniunctione, *s.* conjunction, 4. 695.  
 Coniuracioune, *s.* (1) conjuration, 4. 233; *pl.* Coniuraciones, 4. 749; (2) a conspiracy, 19. 6.  
 Connand, *s.* covenant, 11. 1 (E.). *See* Conand.  
 Conqueissed, *pp.* conquered, 16. 325 (E.).  
 Conquerit, *pt. s.* conquered, 10. 707; *pp.* 16. 325.  
 Conquest, *v.* to conquer, 16. 315.  
 Consaf, *v.* conceive, understand, take in, 4. 269.  
 Consaile, *s.* (1) council, 1. 603; Consale, 5. 481; Consell, 5. 480, 11. 270; (2) Consall, counsel, 7. 546, 11. 154; Consale, 9. 166, 19. 766.  
 Consalit, *pt. s.* advised, 13. 377, 17. 854; *pl.* 18. 64.  
 Consaut, *pp.* conceived, 20. 186. *See* Consaf.  
 Consentit, *pt. s.* consented, 10. 196 *pp.* agreed, 10. 820.  
 Conspyr, *v.* to conspire, 1. 574.  
 Constabill, *s.* constable, 6. 201, 8. 507.

- Constellacioun**, *s.* constellation, 4. 730.
- Contenance**, *s.* outward demeanour, look, show, 1. 392, 482, 3. 676; **Contenans**, look, 11. 507; **Contentansa**, show, 16. 559; look, 7. 127; **Contynans**, 11. 219, 243, 249, 483. *See* **Countynans**, **Cantynans**.
- Contenyng**, *s.* (lit. containing), behaviour, demeanour, 7. 387, 10. 284, 14. 179; **Contynyng**, 11. 241.
- Conteyn þow**, *imp. pl.* demean yourselves, 12. 316; 2 *pl. pr.* ye demean yourselves, 12. 277; *pl. s.* **Conteynt** him, contained himself, demeaned himself, 1. 379, 20. 335; *pl.* **Conteynt** thaim, demeaned themselves, 3. 448, 4. 98, 8. 312, 12. 562, 17. 139.
- Contini**, *pl. s.* continued, 8. 68; **Continuit**, 19. 235.
- Contrar**, *adj.* contrary, 1. 241, 18. 265.
- Contraryit**, *pl. s.* opposed, 3. 271, 9. 470; *pp.* **Contraryt**, defeated, 17. 123 (E.).
- Contrer**, *s.* contrariness, persecution, 1. 461; *in the contrer*, on the contrary, 17. 57.
- Contynyng**, *s.* demeanour, 11. 241. *See* **Contenyng**.
- Conueene**, *s.* agreement, 3. 102 (*foot-met.*).
- Conuicted**, *pp.* convinced, 4. 302 (*foot-met.*).
- Convoy**, *v.* to accompany, convoy, 5. 195; *pres. part.* **Convoyand**, 18. 331; *pl. s.* **Convoyit**, 10. 486, 13. 585; *pp.* **Convoyit**, 13. 383, 15. 269, 20. 113.
- Conveyit**, *for* **Convoyit**, *i.e.*, conveyed, attended, 13. 383 (E.). *See* **Convoy**.
- Conwoid**, *pl. s.* conveyed, accompanied, 10. 486 (E.). *See* **Convoy**.
- Conwyn**, *s.* agreement, 4. 111 (*fav-met.*); **Conwyne**, secret counsel, 5. 301 (E.). O.F. *conuinc*, secret agreement; from Lat. *convincere*. *Perhaps* **Conwyn**; *see* **Covyne**.
- Cornys**, *s. pl.* crops of corn, 10. 188. *See* **Chaucer**, **Monkes Tale**, Group B, l. 3225.
- Corss**, *s.* body, 20. 192. F. *corps*.
- Cost**, *s.* coast, 16. 553; *pl.* **Costis**, coasts, 3. 570.
- Cosynage**, *s.* kin, kindred, relationship, 5. 135.
- Cosyne**, *s.* cousin, near relation, 12. 31, 17. 28; *pl.* **Cosyngis**, 8. 396, 11. 324.
- Cot-armour**, *s.* coat-armour, 18. 95; *pl.* **Cot-armouris**, coat-armours, armorial devices, 8. 231.
- Couer**, *v.* to recover, 9. 190; *pp.* **Couert**, recovered, 9. 61, 145, 226; covered, 8. 332.
- Coweryng**, *s.* recovery, 9. 113.
- Coweryngis**, *s. pl.* coverings, 17. 343.
- Countynans**, *s.* demeanour, 11. 197; mien, 11. 500; *be countynans*, to all appearance, 11. 496; *ill spell* **Counternans**, favour, 9. 12. *See* **Contenance**.
- Coupillyt**, *pp.* coupled, united, 4. 41.
- Courseris**, *s. pl.* coursers, horses, 11. 518.
- Cours**, *s.* course, career, 18. 316; **Cours**, 9. 611.
- Couth**, *pl. s.* (1) could, 1. 464, 568, 20. 512; *pl. s.* 1. 82, 3. 431, 9. 38; *pl. s.* (2) *as auxiliary*, did, 3. 460, 20. 250; *pl. s.* 97. *See* **Can**.
- Covatiss**, *s.* covetousness, 12. 298, 19. 2.
- Covir**, *v.* to cover, 4. 123.
- Covyne**, *s.* counsel, 13. 122; plan, power to contrive, 9. 77; plight, 13. 219; **Covyng**, plot, 9. 14. O.F. *covine*, contrivance. *See* **Cowyne**, and **Conwyn** (*better* **Couwyn**).
- Coward**, *adj.* cowardly, 11. 508.
- Cowardiss**, *s.* cowardice, 6. 338.
- Cowardy**, *s.* cowardice, 1. 26, 7. 747 (E.). The right reading in the latter place is *voidre*. *See* **Woidre**.
- Cowart**, (E.), *adj.* cowardly, 11. 244.
- Cowartly**, *adv.* in a cowardly manner, 3. 46.
- Cowatouss**, *adj.* covetous, 1. 195.
- Cowert**, *s.* a covert, hiding-place, 5. 557; *into cowert*, in hiding, 6. 528.
- Cowir**, *v.* to recover, 14. 321. *See* **Couer**.
- Cowplyt**, *pp.* coupled, associated (with), 1. 236. *See* **Coupillyt**.
- Cowyne**, *s.* counsel, 4. 610, 17. 423; agreement, 11. 230, 17. 27; plot, design, purpose, 3. 102, 4. 111, 7. 538; accord, 15. 343; skill, 13. 167; **Cowyn**, counsel, 10. 162, 673; accord, 5. 301. *See* **Covyne**.
- Cowyt**, an error in J. *for* to wyt, 4.

- 217 (*footnote*). Not explained by Jamieson.
- Coyñze, *s.* corner, coign, 18. 304 (E.).  
See Cunzhe.
- Craft, *s.* skill, 4. 723.
- Craftis, *s. pl.* handicrafts, 19. 176.
- Craftyus, *adj.* crafty, ingenious, 10. 359 (C.).
- Crag, *s.* crag, rock, 10. 560, 594;  
*pl.* Craggis, 10. 606, 13. 431; Craig, 10. 633 (H.).
- Crakkis, *s. pl.* cracks, explosions;  
*gynis for crakkis*, engines for explosions, *i.e.*, cannon, 17. 250;  
*crakkis of wer*, lit. cracks of war, *i.e.*, cannon, 19. 399.
- Crane, *s.* crane, engine, 17. 608 (E. and H.); Cran, 17. 620 (E.);  
Cranes, war-engines, 17. 245 (E.).  
See Cren.
- Craues, *pr. s.* craves, asks, demands, 1. 334 (*footnote*).
- Cren, *s.* a crane, war-engine, 17. 608, 620. See Crane, Trammys.
- Cryt, *pl. s.* cried, 2. 383. See Cry.
- Croice, *s.* cross, 3. 461.
- Crooke-knet, *for* Cleket, *or* Cruchet, 10. 401 (H.). See Cleket, Cruchet.
- Crookes, *s. pl. for* Crykis, cracks in the rock, 10. 602, 605 (H.).
- Croune, *s.* crown (of thorns), 3. 460.
- Crownit, *pp.* crowned, 20. 130\*.
- Cruchet, *s.* a crochet, *i.e.*, little hook, 10. 41 (E.). *F. crochet*, a hook.  
See Cruk.
- Cruelly, *adv.* 14. 198.
- Cruk, *s.* a crook, large hook, 10. 363. *F. croc*, a hook.
- Cry, *an error in editions for* Ky, *i.e.*, cows, 6. 405 (*footnote*).
- Cry, *v.* to cry aloud, 15. 497; *pres. part.* Cryand, 16. 407; *pl. s.* Cryit, 10. 231, 19. 361; Cryt, 2. 383; *pl.* Cryit, 10. 658, 19. 457.
- Crykis, *s. pl.* creeks, crannies, crevices, 10. 602, 605. *O.F. crigue*, a creek.
- Crystyndome (E.), Christendom, 11. 471.
- Cuke, *s.* a cook, 5. 340.
- Culter, *s.* coultter, 4. 113.
- Cum, *v.* to come, 1. 585, 12. 230, 17. 637; Cum zhe, if ye come, 13. 365; *pres. part.* Cumand, coming, 2. 342, 5. 604, 6. 467, 7. 111; Cumande, 9. 244; Cummand, 2. 290, 12. 16; *pr. s.* Cumis, 11. 22; Cummys, 1. 584; *pl.* 11. 283. See Cummyrn.
- Cumbly, *adj.* comely, 11. 132 (E.).
- Cumbyrsum, *adj.* difficult to cross, 13. 351 (E.). See Cummyrsum.
- Cummerit, *pl. s.* cumbered, hindered, embarrassed, 6. 141, 11. 299; routed, 6. 429; Cummeryt, embarrassed, 11. 198; Cummyrrit, 14. 298, 15. 31.
- Cummyn, *pp.* come, descended, 1. 44; come, 2. 18, 3. 430, 7. 557, 16. 6; Cummyne, 17. 533, 20. 583. See Cum.
- Cummyrrit, *pp.* encumbered, harassed, 14. 298, 15. 31. See Cummerit.
- Cummyrsum, *adj.* cumbersome, difficult to pass over, 13. 351. See Cumrouss.
- Cummys, *pr. s.* comes, 1. 584; *pl.* come, 11. 283. See Cum.
- Cumrit, *pl. s.* stood in (their) way, overwhelmed, ruined, 7. 486; Cumrayd, *pl. pl.* encumbered, 15. 40; Cumrait, 13. 127; *pp.* Cumrayit, harassed, 14. 550; overwhelmed, 17. 123; defeated, 12. 308.
- Cumrouss, *adj.* cumbrous, difficult of access, 10. 25. See Cummyrsum.
- Cunnand, *s.* a covenant, agreement, 3. 759, 4. 177, 10. 201, 11. 1, 15. 261. See Conand, Cwnnand.
- Cunnannes, *s.* cunning, skill, 3. 712.
- Cuntre, *s.* country, 9. 302.
- Cuntyrmans, *s.* face, demeanour, 9. 273. See Contenance, Countynans.
- Cunzhe, *s.* a coign, corner, 18. 304, 315. From Lat. *cuneus*, a wedge, is *F. coin*, a wedge, corner; also *F. cognée*, *O.F. coignee*, *coigne*, now only used in the sense of a hatchet, but Roquefort gives — "*Coignés*, coins," *i.e.*, corners.
- Curage, *s.* courage, 6. 126.
- Curageous, *adj.* courageous, 10. 275\*.
- Cured, *pp.* cured, 9. 233 (H.).
- Curious, *adj.* curious, prying, 4. 687; painstaking, skilful, 10. 359; Curyusa, skilful, 10. 531 (E.).
- Curtasly, *adv.* courteously, 1. 354, 2. 154, 13. 531.
- Curtass, *adj.* courteous, 8. 382, 9. 574; Curtaiss, 1. 362, 401.
- Custumabilly, *adv.* customarily, 15. 236.
- Cwn, *v.* to know, 19. 182. *A.S. cunnan*, to know.



- Cwnnand, *s.* covenant, 13. 542. *See* Cunnand.
- Cyre, *s.* leather, 12. 22 (E.). *See* the note to the line.
- Daill, *s.* dale, 19. 317.
- Dang, *pt. s.* hit, struck, dealt (blows), 2. 382, 387; 8. 330; *pl. pl.* 8. 337, 12. 511, 13. 15, 16. 170; *dang on*, beat upon, 14. 65; hammered away, 5. 367. *See* Dyng.
- Danger, *s.* power to harm, 19. 709; *but danger*, without difficulty, 10. 196. *See* Daunger.
- Dansyng, *s.* dancing, 10. 438.
- Dante, Dantee, *s.* dainty, great pleasure, joy, 8. 101, 16. 529; great respect, 20. 104; affection, 13. 475; honour, 20. 289; eagerness, 12. 159.
- Dantit, *pt. s.* daunted, held in subjection, 4. 602; subdued, 15. 316.
- Daunger, *s.* power to harm, 2. 435, 3. 43. *See* Danger.
- Daw, *of*, out of day, *i.e.*, out of life, 7. 132, 18. 156; *pl.* Dawis; *doyn out of dawis*, killed, 6. 650.
- Dawit, *pt. s.* dawned, 17. 102; *pp.* Dawyn, 4. 377.
- Dawntyty, *pt. s.* subdued, 4. 602 (*foot-note*); Dawyntit, 15. 316 (E.). *See* Dantit.
- Dawyng, *s.* dawning, early dawn, 7. 318; Dawing, 17. 634.
- Dayis, *s. pl.* days; *to drif his dayis*, to live on, 10. 699. *See* Daw.
- Daynte, *s.* pleasure, delight, 3. 499, 505, 16. 673, 17. 10; kindness, 2. 163; *in daynte*, with much pleasure, 5. 141. *See* Dante.
- De, *v.* to die, 4. 211, 5. 173, 8. 62, 9. 594, 10. 414; 1 *pt. s. pr.* De, I die, 5. 601; *pres. pt.* Deand, dying, 5. 369. Icel. *deyya*. *See* Deis.
- Debaid, *s.* delay, a bad spelling of Abaid, 10. 222 (E.).
- Debat, *s.* debate, strife, fight, combat, 1. 149, 2. 40, 10. 182, 11. 444, 17. 864, 18. 218, 19. 480; Debate, 4. 430, 8. 502. F. *débat*, contest.
- Debonarly, *adv.* courteously, 19. 126. *See* below.
- Deboner, *adj.* debonair, of fair demeanour, 1. 362; Debonar, courteous, 10. 283, 20. 511; gentle, kind, 8. 381. F. *débonnaire*.
- Debowalit, *pp.* disembowelled, 20. 285; Debowellit, 20. 570.
- Ded, *s.* death, 1. 347, 4. 273, 11. 412, 12. 204, 19. 106; Dede, 3. 329, 4. 208, 5. 528, 15. 152, 17. 930; *pl.* Dedis, deaths, 17. 115. Dan. *déd*.
- Dedeynzeit him, *pt. s. reflex.* it deigned him, *i.e.*, he deigned, 1. 376.
- Dedis, *s. pl.* actions, 1. 375; Dedys, 3. 131. *See* Deid.
- Defalt, *s.* lack, 14. 368, 19. 802; Defaut, want, scarcity, 2. 569, 3. 471; Defawt, 19. 802 (E.).
- Defame, *s.* diffame, blame, disgrace, 19. 12.
- Defaut, *s.* default, lack, want, 2. 569, 3. 471. *See* Defalt.
- Defawtyt, *pp.* adjudged to be culpable, convicted of default, 1. 182.
- Defendand, *pres. part.* defending, 3. 42, 6. 240, 18. 196; *pl. s.* Defendit, 10. 710, 16. 491; *pl. 11.* 594, 12. 104, 17. 446; *pp.* 8. 188.
- Defendouris, *s. pl.* defenders, 17. 394.
- Defens, *s.* defence, 4. 144, 17. 366, 19. 569.
- Defensouris, *s. pl.* defenders, 17. 745.
- Defoull, 1 *pt. pl. pr.* may defile, 18. 56; *pp.* Defoullit, defiled, 13. 31; Defoulyt, 2. 359; Defowllit, 13. 184.
- Degradit, *pp.* degraded, 1. 182 (*foot-note*); Degradyt, 1. 175.
- Degyse, *adj.* full of disguise, feigned, pretended, 19. 459 (*omitted* in E.). F. *déguisé*, disguised.
- Deid, *s.* deed, action, 1. 302, 10. 333, 18. 439; mode of action, 16. 323; act, 5. 278; *pl.* Dedis, 1. 375; Dedys, 3. 131.
- Deid, *s.* death, 1. 269. *See* Ded.
- Deid, *pp.* dead, 1. 37. *See* De.
- Deill, *v.* to deal (blows), 3. 32; to deal, 14. 486; to allot, 11. 50. A.S. *dēlan*. *See* Dele.
- Deill, *s.* part; *cuirilk deill*, wholly, 16. 326, 18. 250; *nocht a deill*, not a bit, 10. 625.
- Deip, *adj.* deep, 8. 189, 10. 84, 11. 366. *See* Depe.
- Deir, *adj.* dear, 4. 268, 6. 171.
- Deir, *s. pl.* deer, 7. 497.
- Deis, *pr. s.* dies, 2. 340; *pt. s.* Deit, died, 4. 333, 10. 489, 18. 174; *pl.* Deit, 9. 284, 12. 83, 17. 583, 20. 415. *See* De.
- Delaying, *s.* delay, 15. 118.
- Dele, *v.* to deal, 1. 376, 2. 329; *pt. s.* Delit, 15. 516; *pl.* Delit, divided, 17. 559. *See* Deill, Delt.

- Delitabill, *adj.* delightful, pleasing, 1.  
 1. O.Fr. *delitable*.  
 Deliuier, *adj.* nimble, 3. 737 : *see* 10.  
 61.  
 Deliuierit, *pp.* delivered, 9. 3, 18.  
 228.  
 Deliuierly, *adv.* quickly, 3. 711, 8.  
 468, 10. 732 ; nimbly, 9. 566, 17.  
 650, 18. 138. *See* Delyuerly.  
 Delt, *pt. s.* dealt, divided, 1. 535 ;  
*pl.* 18. 499 ; *pp.* 15. 169. *See*  
 Dele.  
 Delyuer, *adj.* nimble, 10. 61. *See*  
 Deliuier.  
 Delyuerly, *adv.* quickly, nimbly, 2.  
 142, 3. 122, 7. 206, 10. 49. *See*  
 Deliuierly.  
 Delyuir, *v.* to deliver, 1. 469 ; *pt. pl.*  
 Delyueryt, 1. 475.  
 Demanþe, *ger.* to harry, spoil, waste,  
 ill-treat, 20. 396 ; *pt. s.* Demanyt,  
 directed, 15. 376 ; *pt. pl.* Demanit,  
 ill-treated, harassed, 11. 624 ; *pp.*  
 Demanit, treated, 5. 229. O.F.  
*demener*, to guide, conduct ; also,  
 to torment.  
 Dempt, *pt. pl.* doomed, condemned,  
 1. 213 ; *pp.* condemned, 19. 58  
 (E.).  
 Demyng, *s.* judgment, decision, 1.  
 116, 4. 716.  
 Demys, *pr. s.* deems of, judges, 4.  
 328 ; *imp. pl.* Demys, judge ye, 6.  
 283 ; *pp.* Demyt, judged, 1. 213  
 (E.) ; adjudged, 19. 58. A.S. *dēman*,  
 to judge. *See* Dempt.  
 Den, *v.* to dam up, 14. 354.  
 Depart, *v.* to part, 6. 563 ; *pt. s.*  
 Departit, 10. 40 ; *pt. pl.* Departit,  
 7. 626 ; *pt. s.* Departyt, broke off,  
 2. 169 ; *imp. pl.* 1 *p.* Departis, let  
 us part, 6. 543 ; *pp.* Departit, sepa-  
 rated, 5. 432, 11. 187 ; departed,  
 6. 552.  
 Depe, *s.* the deep, the depths of the  
 sea, 3. 711. *See* Deip.  
 Der, *adj.* dear, 2. 144. *See* Deir.  
 Der, *v.* to dare, hazard, 3. 382.  
 Deray, *s.* disorder, damage, 15. 453.  
 O.F. *desroi*, *derroi*, disorder, harm,  
 damage. *See* *roi* in Burguy.  
 Derenþe, *v.* to decide by fighting, 9.  
 746. Chaucer has *darreyne*. O.F.  
*deraisnier*, to prove an accusation ;  
*deraisne*, a plea.  
 Derenþe, *s.* an attack, conflict, 13.  
 325 ; *pl.* Derenþeis, conflicts, 13.  
 324. *See* above.  
 Derff, *adj.* sturdy, bold, 18. 307.  
 Icel. *djarfr*, bold, daring.  
 Deris, *pr. s.* harms, injures, 3. 520.  
 A.S. *derian*, to harm.  
 Derrest, *adj.* dearest, 18. 283. *See* Der.  
 Desaly, *adv.* dizzily, 6. 629, 7. 210.  
 Descendand, *pres. part.* descending,  
 1. 61.  
 Descroyit, *an error for* Discrivit, *i.e.*,  
 described, 13. 185 (E.).  
 Despitteously, *adv.* cruelly, 13. 140\*.  
 Destane, *s.* destiny, 5. 428.  
 Desynaiss, *s.* dizziness, swoon, 18.  
 133.  
 Det, *s.* debt, what is due, 1. 253 ; debt,  
 19. 209 ; *pl.* Dettis, 1. 262.  
 Determinabilly, *adv.* determinately, 4.  
 677.  
 Determynatly, *adv.* certainly, 1. 129.  
 Deuillis, *gen.* devil's, 7. 23.  
 Deuilry, *s.* diabolical agency, 4. 690.  
 Deuiss, *v.* to narrate, tell, relate, 4.  
 569, 11. 195 ; to decide, 12. 198 ; 1  
*p. s. pr.* I tell, 10. 2, 11. 181, 13.  
 396, 16. 660 ; 2 *p. pl. pr.* ye pro-  
 pose, 12. 329 ; *pt. s.* Deuisit, pro-  
 posed, 7. 25 ; made his will, 20.  
 309 ; *pt. pl.* planned, 14. 495, 16.  
 92 ; *pp.* Deuisit, divided, 11. 171 ;  
 arrayed, 20. 406 ; planned, 10. 369.  
 F. *deviser*, to talk.  
 Deuiss, *s.* device, way ; at all *deuiss*,  
 in every way, 4. 264, 11. 349 ; at  
*thair deuiss*, according to their plan  
 or wish, 10. 363.  
 Deuotly, *adv.* devoutly, 11. 377.  
 Deuour, *s.* duty, 11. 430, 12. 587. F.  
*devoir*. *See* Dewour.  
 Devysouris, *s. pl.* arrangers, stewards,  
 20. 72.  
 Dewill, the, *i.e.*, the devil, *an extra-*  
*ordinary error in E. for* ilke deill,  
 9. 686 (*footnote*).  
 Dewour, *s.* duty, 11. 328. *See*  
 Deuour.  
 Dey, *v.* to die, 1. 548, 3. 98 ; *pt. s.*  
 Deyt, 1. 430, 2. 42. *See* De.  
 Dicht, *v.* to dress, 14. 423 ; *pp.*  
 Dicht, provided, equipped, arrayed,  
 8. 210, 11. 214, 16. 374 ; made  
 ready, 7. 155 ; consigned, 15. 388.  
 A.S. *dihtan*, to prepare.  
 Did, *pt. s.* placed, put, threw, 4. 117.  
 Digne, *adj.* worthy, 20. 288.  
 Dik, *s.* trench, ditch, 9. 387, 10. 795,  
 17. 902 ; entrenchment, 20. 9 ;  
 dyke, 8. 206 ; *pl.* Dikis, trenches,  
 17. 330. A.S. *dīc*. *See* Dykis.

- Dik thame**, *v.* to entrench themselves, 17. 271.
- Dinging**, *s.* striking; *just an error for* *Denning*, 13. 153 (H.).
- Discler**, *v.* to declare, decide, 1. 75.
- Discomfit**, *v.* to defeat, 12. 459; *pl.* *Discomfitt*, 14. 87; *pl.* *s.* 10. 667; *pp.* *Discomfyt*, 2. 481. *See* *Discomfit*.
- Discomfite**, *s.* discomfiture, defeat; *raivrit*, vol. i. p. 41.
- Discomford**, *s.* lack of heart, discouragement, 12. 368, 372. *See* *Dis-comford*.
- Discomfort**, *pl.* *s.* discouraged, 5. 206.
- Discomforyt**, *for* *Discomfit*, 7. 605 (E.). *See* *Discomfit*.
- Dis-comford**, *s.* discomfort, discouragement, 3. 191. *See* *Discomford*.
- Dis-comforting**, *s.* discouragement, 3. 193.
- Discordit**, *pl.* *s.* disagreed, 17. 842.
- Discoverit**, *pp.* discovered, 19. 22, 473; *shewn* (thy plan), 17. 54; 2 *pl.* *s.* *pl.* *didst shew*, 17. 53. *See* *Discour*.
- Discovering**, *s.* discovery, 4. 120.
- Discour**, *v.* to discover, find out, 14. 268; to show, 14. 124; *Discowir*, to spy, 14. 539.
- Discoveringis**, *s.* *pl.* modes of finding out, manifestations, 1. 242.
- Discriit**, *v.* to describe, 20. 282; *Dis-cryre*, 10. 278; *pp.* *Discrivit*, 13. 185.
- Discomfitt**, *fr.* *s.* discomfitts, 9. 516 (*raivrit*); 9. 572 (*raivrit*). *See* *Discomfit*.
- Discomfitt**, *pl.* *s.* discomfitts, defeated, 9. 487; *pl.* *pl.* 10. 92, 18. 568; *pp.* 4. 280, 7. 358, 8. 114, 9. 629, 12. 111, 13. 396, 14. 324, 15. 380, 16. 240, 17. 589, 18. 80, 19. 624; *Dis-cumfyt*, 18. 479. *See* *Discomfit*.
- Discomfiting**, *s.* defeat, 18. 190.
- Discomfittour**, *s.* discomfiture, 20. 527. *See* below.
- Discomfittur**, *s.* defeat, 13. 276, 19. 628.
- Discure**, *v.* to discover, make known, 4. 607. *See* *Discour*.
- Discurouris**, *s.* *pl.* spies, scouts, 9. 244, 11. 475, 14. 526, 18. 22, 19. 282, 506, 783.
- Disese**, *s.* want of ease, disquiet, misery, 3. 563; *Disess*, discomfort, 5. 73.
- Disheryss**, *v.* to disinherit, 2. 107.
- Disparit**, *pp.* in despair, 4. 99; *Disparyt*, 3. 195.
- Dispend**, *v.* to spend, 1. 319, 2. 130; *pl.* *pl.* *Dispendit*, 13. 456.
- Dispending**, *s.* means of spending, *i.e.*, money to spend, 8. 509.
- Dispess**, *v.* to despise, 5. 50.
- Dispit**, *s.* despite, injury, 10. 6.
- Dispitfully**, *adv.* angrily, 13. 70; with spite, mercilessly, 16. 632.
- Dispitously**, *adv.* angrily, spitefully, 2. 137, 11. 608 (E.); *Dispitusly*, cruelly, severely, 1. 200, 3. 457; *Dispitwisly*, cruelly, 19. 563; *Dis-pitwisly*, angrily, 10. 656.
- Dispitouss**, *adj.* disdainful, cruel, spiteful, 1. 196.
- Displayit**, *pl.* *s.* displayed, 17. 551; *pp.* 8. 48, 12. 412, 15. 361, 16. 346, 19. 310.
- Disponis**, *fr.* *s.* disposes, 11. 29; *pl.* *s.* *Disponit*, 19. 115; *pp.* 11. 273.
- Dispulzeit**, *pp.* spoiled, stripped, 13. 501.
- Disputacioun**, *s.* disputation, argument, 1. 250.
- Dispyt**, *v.* to spite; *pl.* *pl.* *Dyspytyt*, spited, hated, *readings in* E., 5. 49, 50 (*for notes*).
- Dispyte**, *s.* spite, 2. 455.
- Disrayed**, *pl.* *pl.* disordered, 14. 550 (H.); *pp.* *disarrayed*, 17. 123 (E.).
- Dissaf**, *v.* to deceive, 4. 237, 268; *pl.* *s.* *Dissaut*, 4. 272; *pp.* *Dissautit*, 18. 173.
- Dissat**, *s.* deceit, 4. 247.
- Disseuerit**, *pp.* dissevered, parted, 20. 192.
- Distans**, *s.* distance, 7. 620.
- Distrenjit**, *pp.* compelled, 4. 231; *Distrenzeit*, constrained, 12. 338, 19. 172. *From* Lat. *stringere*.
- Distrowbiling**, *s.* disturbance, trouble, 5. 216.
- Distroy**, *v.* to destroy, 12. 251; *pl.* *s.* *Distroit*, 8. 514; *pl.* *pl.* *Distroyit*, 17. 530, 18. 557, 19. 192; *pp.* *Distroyit*, 17. 538, 19. 123; *pres. part.* *Distroyand*, 17. 531, 18. 553, 20. 27.
- Diswsyt** (E.), *pp.* out of use, unaccustomed, 19. 183.
- Disyly**, *adv.* dizzily, 2. 422.
- Dittit**, *pp.* stopped up, 6. 168. A.S. *dyttan*, to close up.
- Do**, *gerund*, to do, 1. 586; *pres. part.* *Doand*, acting, in action, exerting themselves, 3. 585, 18. 67. A.S. *dōn*. *See* *Dois*.

- Do, *v.* to thrive, succeed, 2. 128.  
A.S. *dugan*, to thrive, G. *taugen*;  
quite distinct from A.S. *dōn*, to do.
- Dochtrys, *s. pl.* daughters, 1. 200.
- Doggedly, *an error in H. for* douchtely, 10. 727, 13. 150.
- Dois, *pr. s.* does, acts, 6. 342, 11. 643, 20. 553; causes, 3. 564; *pr. pl.* do, 13. 26; *imp. pl.* act, fight, 16. 620.
- Dois, *an error in E. for* Deis, 2. 340 (*footnote*).
- Dome, *s.* doom, 1. 235; *pl.* Domys, dooms, judgments, 4. 713.
- Done to ded, *pp.* slain, 1. 347. *See* Ded.
- Dongin, *pp.* thrown, 17. 832 (E.). *See* Dyng, Doungyn.
- Dosnyt, *pp.* dazed, stunned, 17. 721, 18. 126 (E.). Formed from the root *das-* (in Swed. *dasa*, to lie idle) with the suffix *-na* (Goth. *-nan*), used to form verbs of passive signification, so that *dasna*=to become stupefied. The same root appears in Eng. *dose*, and perhaps in *dare*, to lie idle, used by Chaucer. Cf. Icel. *dasask*, to grow exhausted.
- Dowbill, *adj.* double, 1. 5; Dowbill, 4. 236.
- Douchtely, *adv.* valiantly, 4. 92, 6. 240, 9. 713, 10. 710, 12. 61. And see 10. 727.
- Douchty, *adj.* doughty, valiant, 1. 532, 2. 166, 11. 315.
- Doughtely, *adv.* doughtily, 15. 319 (H.). *See* Douchtely.
- Doune, *adv.* down, 11. 576; *thair down*, down there, down below, 10. 647, 11. 300.
- Doungyn, *pp.* thrown, 9. 473, 10. 794, 17. 376. *See* Dyng.
- Dour, *adj.* hardy, bold, 10. 159, 170. Fr. *dur*.
- Dout, *s.* fear, 3. 311, 12. 64, 17. 630, 19. 668; uncertainty, 14. 207.
- Dout, *v.* to doubt, be in doubt, 4. 714; to fear, 8. 257; *pres. part.* Doutand, fearing, 5. 34; *pt. s.* Doutit, 9. 538; *pp.* Doutit, feared, 16. 235. Fr. *douter*.
- Dowbill, *adj.* double, 4. 236. *See* Doubill.
- Dowblyt, *pp.* doubled, 1. 307.
- Dowchty, *adj.* doughty, 1. 538. *See* Douchty.
- Dowt, *s.* fear, 7. 357. *See* Dout.
- Dowtit, *pp.* feared, dreaded, in E., 5. 507 (*footnote*). *See* Dout, *vb.*
- Dowtyne, *s.* doubting, doubt, 14. 230.
- Doyn, *pp.* done, 6. 650; Doyne, 3. 281, 20. 464. *See* Do; and *see* Daw.
- Doysnyt, *pp.* stupefied, stunned, 18. 126. *See* Dosnyt.
- Drafe, *pt. s.* drove, 5. 634. *See* Drif.
- Dragoun; *to raiss dragoun*, to harry the country, 2. 205; see the note, p. 232.
- Draw, *v.* (1) to draw, eviscerate, 2. 455; *pr. s.* Drawis, inclines (one), 7. 175; *pt. s.* Drew, 2. 467; (2) Draw, *v.* to withdraw, 8. 59; *pp.* Drawin, drawn, 4. 176, 17. 871, 19. 56; Drawyn, 19. 621; *imp. pl.* Drawis, draw ye, 4. 322.
- Draw-brig, *s.* drawbridge, 17. 757.
- Dre, *v.* to hold out, endure, 1. 327, 4. 650, 7. 181, 18. 53; *pres. part.* Dreand, enduring, 2. 494. A.S. *drægan*, to endure, suffer.
- Dred, *pt. s.* dreaded, 1. 293; *pt. pl.* 12. 74; *pp.* Dred, 15. 535; *pres. part.* Dredand, fearing, 3. 671, 4. 417, 5. 188, 6. 300, 8. 69, 10. 480, 17. 514, 19. 598.
- Dreding, *s.* dread, 4. 761.
- Dreid, *gerund*, to be dreaded, 2. 272. *See* Dred.
- Dreid, *s.* fear, 5. 313, 6. 410, 11. 412; *but drede*, without doubt, 4. 277; *withouten dreid*, without doubt, 5. 579.
- Drery, *adj.* sad, 20. 203.
- Dress, *v.* to erect, 17. 608; to arrange, 10. 212; *refl.* to direct himself, make towards, 14. 247; *pt. s.* Dressit him, took his course, 16. 411; *pres. part.* Dressand, setting (up), 17. 372. Fr. *dresser*, from Lat. *dirigere*, to direct.
- Dressyt, *pt. s.* arrayed, 14. 263 (E.). *See* above.
- Dreuch, *pt. s.* drew, 10. 781; *pl.* 4. 372; Drew, dragged, 19. 566; Dreuch, *pt. s.* drew, put, 1. 628.
- Drey, *v.* to endure, hold out, 2. 382, 3. 305, 7. 181 (E.). *See* Dre.
- Drif, *v.* to drive, 7. 66, 9. 534, 15. 335; to continue, 10. 699; Driff, 6. 247; to press, 20. 257; to pull, 10. 255; Driff furth, to continue to the end, 5. 428; *pp.* Drivin, 9. 633. *See* Drafe.
- Driff, *an error in C. for* Dress, *i.e.*, arrange, 10. 212.
- Dronken, *pp.* drunk, 14. 231; Drunkyn, 19. 355.

- Drouery**, *s.* love, 8. 492, 498 (E.); **Drowry**, 8. 498; *per drowry*, with love-service, 8. 492. O.F. *druerie*, love, love-service; *drut*, a lover; cf. O.H.G. *trûte*, beloved one.
- Drownyt**, *pt. pl.* were drowned, 4. 448; **Drownit**, 16. 444; *pp.* **Drownit**, drowned, 13. 336; **Drownyt**, 16. 665. A.S. *druncnian*, to sink.
- Drunkyn**, *pp.* drunk, 19. 355. *See* **Dronken**.
- Dryve**, *v.* to drive on, continue, 1. 310; *Drywe his werdis*, pursue his destiny, 3. 390; **Dryf**, to drive, 10. 173; *pp.* **Drywyn**, driven, 9. 156 (E.). *See* **Drif**.
- Duell**, *v.* to dwell, 11. 403; *pres. part.* **Duelland**, 16. 222, 19. 98; *pt. s.* **Dwelt**, dwelt, remained, 2. 57, 15. 313, 18. 434; **Duellyt**, dwelt, 1. 345.
- Duelleng**, *s.* stopping, delay, halt, 3. 619, 4. 563, 10. 126 (E.), 12. 12, 14. 312; household, 4. 481; **Duelleng**, country, 13. 544.
- Duk**, *s.* duke, 3. 77.
- Duk-peris**, *s. pl.* Douze Pairs, or Twelve Peers of France, 3. 440. *See* the note, p. 240.
- Dule**, *s.* sorrow, grief, 19. 221, 20. 483, 496, 578, 586. F. *dueil*, mourning.
- Dulfull**, *adj.* doleful, 20. 246. *See* above.
- Dure**, *s.* door, 19. 656; **Dur**, 2. 61; *pl.* **Durys**, 12. 402.
- Durst**, *pt. pl.* durst, 12. 90.
- Durwarth**, *gen. sing.* of the doorward, of the gatekeeper, 3. 101. *See* the note, p. 238.
- Dusche**, *s.* a heavy fall, 17. 698; a crushing blow, 12. 55, 16. 130; *pl.* **Duschis**, severe blows, 13. 147. Cf. Mid.Du. *doesen*, pulsare cum impetu et fragore (Kilian). Also E. Fries. *dössen*, to strike.
- Duschit**, *pt. s.* fell heavily, 17. 693; *pp.* 16. 165. *See* above.
- Duschit**, a reading in C. for **Ruschit**, 6. 629 (footnote).
- Dushing**, *pres. pt.* falling with a crash, 17. 721 (H.); striking heavily, 13. 71 (H.). *See* above.
- Dutchpeeres**, *s. pl.* twelve peers, 3. 440 (footnote).
- Dwngeoune**, *s.* dungeon, 15. 211, 17. 224.
- Dwngin**, *pp.* struck, 17. 832. *See* **Dyng**, **Doungyn**.
- Dycht**, *pp.* arrayed, 11. 128 (E.H.); made ready, 3. 225; *gert he dycht*, he caused to be set in array, 2. 565. *See* **Dicht**.
- Dyd**, *pt. s.* did, 1. 463. *See* **Do**.
- Dydis**, *s. pl.* trenches, 17. 276, 363, 503. *See* **Dik**.
- Dyn**, *s.* din, noise, 11. 555 (E.).
- Dynyr**, *s.* dinner, 14. 188.
- Dyng**, *v.* to strike, 10. 618, 15. 480; to drive, 19. 336; to throw, 10. 410; **Dyng on**, to strike at, attack, 14. 439; *pres. part.* **Dyngand**, striking blows, 16. 209\*; *pt. s.* **Dang**, dealt blows, 2. 382, 8. 330; *pt. pl.* **Dang**, 8. 337; *pp.* **Dongin**, thrown, 17. 832 (E.); **Dwngin**, struck, 17. 832. Icel. *dengja*, to hammer. *See* also **Dang**, **Doungyn**.
- Dynit**, *pt. pl.* dined, 11. 381.
- Dynnyt**, *pt. s.* fell with a heavy sound, 16. 131. *See* **Dyn**.
- Dynt**, *s.* a blow, 2. 139, 3. 114, 12. 53; *pl.* **Dyntis**, 2. 369, 8. 139, 17. 155.
- Dysherysys**, *pr. pl.* disinherit, 2. 101.
- Dyspittit**, *pt. pl.* spited, hated, injured, 4. 596.
- Dyted**, *pt. s.* set forth (as if **Dychtit**), 1. 526 (a misreading; *see* footnote).
- E**, *s.* eye, 5. 506\*, 624, 7. 191; regard, 12. 306.
- Ebbit**, *pt. s.* ebbd; 17. 425; sank by the ebbing of the tide, 17. 421.
- Ec**, *conj.* eke, also, and, 1. 309. (It is almost certain that the scribe really meant to write *and*, but by a mistake of the moment substituted for it the Latin *et*. Note that the same symbol "&" was used to denote both *and* and *et*.)
- Effer**, *s.* behaviour, 1. 361; demeanour, 7. 126, 8. 382; appearance, 11. 242; equipment, 10. 196; make, stature, 20. 515; **Effere**, business, 10. 305; array, 7. 30; **Effeir**, demeanour, 5. 608; **Effeire**, appearance, 16. 27. This difficult word is also spelt **Affeir**, q.v. Both forms are variants of O.F. *affaire*, whence also Mod.E. *affair*, which *see* in the New E. Dict. Note that all the early examples of *affair* are Northern.
- Efferis**, *pr. s.* is fit, 18. 506; it behoves, is customary, 12. 413; it

- belongs, 11. 28, 77. A bad spelling of *Afferis*, *q.v.*  
*Effrait*, *pp.* afraid, 13. 173.  
*Effray*, *s.* dread, fear, terror, 11. 250, 13. 270, 16. 426, 19. 603 (E.). *F. effroi.*  
*Effraying*, *s.* fear, 12. 571.  
*Effraying*, *for* Fraying, *i.e.*, noise, 10. 653 (C.).  
*Effrayit*, *pp.* afraid, terrified, frightened, 6. 631, 7. 610, 10. 674.  
*Effrayitly*, *adv.* timidly, in a frightened manner, 13. 333, 17. 580; *Effraytly*, 5. 110, 7. 329.  
*Eft*, *adv.* again, 6. 378.  
*Eftir*, *adv.* afterwards, 1. 127, 170, 15. 186.  
*Eftir*, *prep.* after, *i.e.*, to find, 4. 616; after, 5. 511, 9. 405, 10. 569; according to, 1. 213, 15. 516; *Eftir* as, according as, 5. 74; *Eftyr*, 1. 40; = to fetch, 2. 52.  
*Eftirwart*, *adv.* afterwards, 2. 48; *Eftirward*, 10. 753; *Eftirwartis*, 1. 588.  
*Eftremess*, *s.* after-dish, second course, 16. 457 (E.). See the note, p. 283.  
*Eftsonis*, *adv.* soon after, again, 5. 68, 17. 596, 19. 296; *Eftsonys*, 2. 436.  
*Egging*, *s.* urging, incitement, 4. 539.  
*Eggis*, *pr. s.* incites to, 8. 123 (*rubric*).  
*Egriy*, *adv.* eagerly, quickly, 6. 421, 427, 13. 27; *Egryly*, 6. 642, 16. 451, 17. 725.  
*Eild*, *s.* age, 12. 322, 17. 928 (E.), 20. 43 (E.). See *Elde*. A.S. *yldo*, old age.  
*Eir*, *adv.* ere, formerly, 9. 442, 13. 219, 17. 732.  
*Eirded*, *pp.* buried, 19. 203 (*rubric in H*; *footnote*).  
*Eir-quhil*, *adv.* erewhile, ere this, 19. 142.  
*Eisfull*, *adj.* full of ease, favourable, pleasant, 5. 70.  
*Eiss*, *s.* ease, 7. 302, 14. 454, 16. 332; *at eiss*, at leisure, 15. 542.  
*Eiss*, *v.* to comfort, satisfy, 5. 291.  
*Ek*, *v.* to eke, increase, 8. 290.  
*Ek*, *adv.* also, 10. 652, 11. 471. A.S. *ēac.*  
*Elde*, *s.* age, 17. 928. See *Eild*.  
*Eld-fadir*, *s.* grandfather, 13. 694.  
*Eldris*, *s. pl.* elders, forefathers, 1. 163, 2. 166; *Eldrys*, 3. 223.  
*Elimentis*, *an error in C.* for *Climatis*, 4. 701 (*footnote*).  
*Ellis*, *adv.* else, 6. 381.  
*Elys*, *s. pl.* eels, 2. 577.  
*Emang*, *prep.* among, 3. 371, 5. 304, 10. 709, 11. 582, 12. 567, 15. 515, 19. 377, 20. 204, &c.  
*Embandownyt*, *pp.* abandoned, 1. 244 (*footnote*).  
*Embrasit*, *pt. pl.* embraced, seized, 8. 295.  
*Empriss*, *s.* enterprise, daring, 10. 507 (E.), 16. 490. See *Enpris*.  
*Emys*, *gen. sing.* uncle's, 3. 3, 6. 503, 9. 728. A.S. *ēam*, an uncle. See *Eym*.  
*Enbandownyt*, *pp.* subjected, made subject, 1. 244. See *Abandonee*.  
*Enbuschement*, *s.* an ambush, 6. 209, 8. 45, 10. 163, 18. 299, 19. 472.  
*Enbuschit*, *pt. s. refl.* lay in ambush, 8. 42; lay in wait, 6. 396; set in ambush, 16. 387; *pt. pl.* lay in ambush, 19. 427; *pp.* *Enbuschit*, in ambush, 4. 378, 6. 417, 10. 31, 16. 86, 17. 63, 19. 369, &c.  
*Enchapin*, *for* Eschaping, 7. 75 (C.).  
*Enchausyt*, *an error in editions for* Enchaufyt, 2. 395 (*footnote*). See above.  
*Enchawfyt*, *pp.* chafed, heated, made furious, 2. 395.  
*Encheif*, *ger.* to achieve, 1. 305 (*footnote*); *Encheue*, *v.* 3. 294 (*footnote*); *pt. s.* Encheefed, 3. 3, 180 (*footnote*).  
*Enchesoun*, *s.* occasion, reason, 1. 280, 4. 110; *Enchesone*, 1. 203; *Enchesoune*, reason, 1. 217; occasion, cause, 1. 487. O.F. *enchaison*, from Lat. acc. *occasionem*. See *enchaison* in *Roquefort*.  
*Enclosit*, *pp.* enclosed, 6. 242; shut up, 4. 219; shut in, 19. 710.  
*Enclynit*, *pt. s.* inclined, 17. 855.  
*Encrely*, *adv.* especially, 10. 287 (E.); where C has *Ythandly*; also in 2. 138, 7. 555 (*footnote*). See *Enkrely*.  
*End*, *v.* to come to an end, to die, 11. 553.  
*Endentur*, *s.* indenture, deed, 1. 565; *Endenturis*, bonds, 1. 513.  
*Ending*, *s.* end, *i.e.*, death, 2. 197.  
*Endit*, *pt. s.* made an end of, 17. 933.  
*Endlang*, *prep.* along, beside, 3. 414,

6. 75, 7. 27, 18. 140. A.S. *andlang*; cf. G. *entlang*.  
*Endlang*, *adv.* straight forward, 19. 356; *endlang furth*, straight onward continually, 16. 548.  
*Endyt*, *pt. s.* ended, 4. 35. *See* *Endit*.  
*Eneuch*, *adv.* enough, 4. 373, 10. 780, 17. 545, 20. 337.  
*Enew*, *pl. adj.* enough, 13. 496, 17. 404, 19. 310, 626. A.S. *genōh*, enough, *pl. genōge*; Grein, i. 438.  
*Enforsaly*, *adv.* forcibly, 5. 324, 7. 576; *Enforcely*, strongly, 13. 228 (E.); *Enforcedly*, 2. 314 (*footnote*).  
*Enforsit*, *pt. s.* forced, raised loudly, 5. 355.  
*Enforss*, *s.* force, 17. 448.  
*Enfundeyng*, *s.* 20. 75 (E.). *See* *Funding*.  
*Engreif*, *v.* to afflict, grieve, vex, 20. 200; *Engreiff*, 11. 504; *Engreve*, 20. 200 (E.); *pres. pt.* *Engrewand*, 13. 210 (E.).  
*Engynis*, *s. pl.* engines, 17. 245.  
*Engynour*, *s.* engineer, 17. 434, 17. 468 (E.), 17. 663.  
*Enkrely*, *adv.* especially, particularly, carefully, 1. 92, 3. 529; *Encrely*, especially, 1. 301; *extremely*, 1. 425; *Enkerly*, 10. 534 (E.). Cf. Icel. *einkanliga*, especially; and the prefix *einkar-*, meaning specially, very; derived from *einn*, one. Jamieson derives it from F. *en cœur*!  
*Enlumynyt*, *pp.* illumined, 20. 229 (E.).  
*Ennamylt*, *pp.* enamelled, 20. 305 (E.).  
*Ennyrmar*, *an error in C. for* *Hendirmar*, 7. 599 (*footnote*).  
*Enpriss*, *s.* enterprise, 3. 276, 20. 243; price, 10. 507.  
*Ensample*, *s.* example, 1. 119; *Ensampill*, 4. 238; *Ensampell*, *ensample*, story, 20. 563.  
*Enselyt*, *pt. s.* sealed, 1. 612.  
*Ensenȝe*, *s.* war-cry, 3. 27, 13. 267 (E.); *Ensenȝhe*, 5. 323; *pl.* *Ensenȝeis*, 13. 159, 19. 788. F. *enseigne*, a token.  
*Enspirit*, *pp.* inspired, 4. 678.  
*Enssenȝe*, *s.* war-cry, 2. 426. *See* *Ensenȝe*.  
*Entencioune*, *s.* intention, 10. 527.  
*Entent*, *s.* intention, desire, 1. 449, 3. 206; purpose, 9. 372, 10. 561, 11. 152.  
*Ententif*, *adj.* attentive, 20. 615. O.F. *ententif*, attentive; from Lat. *intendere*.  
*Ententily*, *adv.* attentively, 1. 613, 6. 72. Corrupted from *Ententify*. *See* above.  
*Ententily*, *adv.* attentively, *an error in E. for* *Ythandly*, 3. 275, 288 (*footnote*).  
*Enterit*, *pt. s.* entered, 5. 272, 7. 3, 8. 503, 9. 553; *pl.* 6. 438, 7. 26, 16. 405; *pp.* 7. 108, 8. 53, &c. *See* *Entyr*.  
*Entre*, *s.* entrance, 11. 446, 16. 380; pass, entry, 6. 362.  
*Entremass*, *s.* course of delicacies, 16. 457. *See* the note, p. 283.  
*Entremellys*, *s. pl.* skirmishes, combats, 10. 145 (E.).  
*Entyr*, *v.* to enter, 1. 623, 630. *See* *Enterit*.  
*Entyrit*, *pp.* interred, buried, 19. 224.  
*Enveremyt*, *a poor spelling in C. of* *Enveronyt*, *i.e.*, surrounded, 13. 380 (*footnote*); *so also in* 17. 638, 19. 536, 20. 445. *See* below.  
*Enveronyt*, *pt. s.* environed, surrounded, 11. 585; *pl.* went round, 13. 380; *Enweround*, 13. 380 (E.), 17. 638 (E.); *pp.* *Enveronyt*, surrounded, 11. 567, 12. 302, 17. 390, 19. 491.  
*Enwy*, *s.* envy, 1. 47.  
*Eny*, *adj.* any, 10. 200.  
*Enymyss*, *s. pl.* enemies, 6. 372, 8. 80.  
*Er*, *adv.* before, 9. 542, 13. 2. *See* *Eir*.  
*Erar*, *adv.* sooner, rather, 1. 458, 3. 266.  
*Erd*, *s.* earth, ground, 2. 423, 3. 16, 4. 686, 5. 634, 6. 128, 9. 326, 12. 551, 15. 189, 19. 519; *at erd*, on the ground, 8. 301, 16. 157; *laid at erd*, overthrown, 4. 284.  
*Erding*, *s.* burial, 4. 255, 19. 86; *Erdyng*, 4. 295. *See* below.  
*Erdit*, *pt. pl.* buried, 20. 292; *pp.* 13. 666, 15. 242, 19. 224 (E.), 20. 574, 586. Cf. Icel. *jarða*, to bury; *jörð*, earth.  
*Ere*, *s.* ear, 6. 627.  
*Ere*, *adv.* formerly, 13. 84, 16. 486.  
*Erll*, *s.* earl, 8. 400, 9. 15, 13. 401; *Erle*, 1. 67; *gen. sing.* *Erllis*, earl's, 9. 136; *pl.* *Erllis*, 2. 234; *Erllis*, 11. 162.

- Ernystfully, *adv.* earnestly, seriously, 8. 144.
- Eryness, *s.* fear, timidity, 2. 295.
- A.S. *earg*, timid, inert. The form *arzesse* occurs in The Ayenbite of Inwytt, p. 32.
- Eschailp, *v.* to escape, 3. 618;
- Eschap, 10. 81; *pt. s.* Eschapit, 7. 53, 9. 628, 20. 528; 2 *p. s. pt.* didst escape, 16. 238; *pt. pl.* 6. 430, 7. 86, 12. 153; *pp.* 7. 94, 8. 82, &c.; Eschapyt, 3. 634; *eschapyt was*, 2. 64.
- Eschap, *s.* escape, 2. 65.
- Eschaping, *s.* escape, 7. 54.
- Escheiff, *v.* to achieve, succeed, 19. 778. *See* Encheif.
- Eschele, *s.* a squadron, 8. 221;
- Escheill, 16. 401 (E.); Eschell, 12. 214 (E.); *pl.* Eschelis, squadrons, ranks, 8. 218. O.F. *eschele*, a squadron (Burguy).
- Escheve, *v.* to eschew, shun, 18. 532; *pp.* Eschevit, shunned, 20. 454. *See* Eschewe.
- Escheve, *v.* to achieve, 1. 305; generally Eschewe, 3. 292, 17. 43; *pt. s.* Eschewyt, achieved, 3. 283; *pp.* Eschewit, achieved, 12. 128, 13. 179; Eschewyt, 16. 494 (E.), 20. 16 (E.); Eschivet, 16. 494, &c. A corruption of *achieve*.
- Eschewe, *v.* to shun, 12. 473, 15. 349; *pt. pl.* Eschewit, avoided, 11. 535, 16. 207. O.F. *eschiver*; O.H.G. *skiuhan*, G. *scheuen*, to avoid.
- Eschewe, *s.* a sally, 14. 94 (E.). *See* Ischow and Ysche.
- Eschewys, *s.* *pl.* achievements, feats of arms, 20. 14 (E.).
- Escheyff, *v.* to achieve, 17. 43 (E.). *See* Escheve.
- Esit thame, *pt. pl. refl.* took their ease, 17. 797. *See* Esyt.
- Espyne, *s.* a long-boat, 17. 719. Icel. *espingr*, Swed. *esping*, a ship's boat.
- Ess, *s.* ease, 1. 228; *male ess*, disease, 20. 73.
- Essemblit, *pp.* assembled, 11. 395.
- Est end, east end, 17. 187.
- Esyt, *pt. s.* eased, comforted, relieved, 2. 555; *pt. pl. refl.* took their ease, 14. 387, 17. 483; *pp.* 3. 361. *See* Esit.
- Et, *v.* to eat, 3. 188, 7. 267, 10. 318, 14. 348; Ete, 2. 581; *pt. s.* Ete, 7. 169; *pp.* Etyn, 7. 170.
- Etlyng, *s.* endeavour, 1. 587, 3. 260;
- Etling, aim, 1. 583 (*where it seems as if etilling would be better for the rhythm*); intention, 11. 22. Icel. *ætla*, to intend.
- Euerilk, *adj.* every, 18. 250.
- Euill, *adj.* evil, bad, 11. 485.
- Euir, *adv.* ever, 1. 198, &c.
- Euirilkane, *pron.* every one, 1. 453, 5. 103, 15. 155.
- Euirmar, *adv.* evermore, 1. 155, 7. 174.
- Euyr, *adv.* ever, 2. 41, 526.
- Evin, *s.* eve, 17. 335; Evyn, 10. 372. *See* Ewyn.
- Evin, *adj.* even, 6. 164.
- Evin, *adv.* evenly, just, 19. 512; in a level position, 16. 651; just opposite, 17. 673; straight, 17. 692; Evyn, evenly, 11. 559.
- Evinly, *adv.* evenly, 10. 228; Evynly, on equal terms, 7. 103.
- Evynsang-time, *s.* vespertide, 17. 450.
- Ewyn, *s.* evening, eventide, 1. 106, 19. 719; Ewin, 17. 63. *See* Evin.
- Ewyn, *adv.* evenly, directly, 1. 61; even, 3. 136. *See* Evin.
- Ewyr, *adv.* ever, 3. 160.
- Exorcizaciones, *s. pl.* exorcisations, exorcisings, 4. 750.
- Extremyteis, *s. pl.* excesses, 6. 336.
- Ey, *s.* eye; *had ey*, had regard, 6. 523. *See* E.
- Eym, *s.* uncle, 10. 305; Eyne, 13. 697. A.S. *æam*, an uncle. *See* Emys.
- Eyn, *s. pl.* eyes, 1. 547; Eyne, 3. 526. *See* E.
- Eyss, *s.* ease, 3. 362.
- Eyte, *pt. pl.* ate, 2. 495; Eyt, 3. 539. *See* Et.
- Eyth, *adj.* easy, 17. 454. A.S. *zæð*, easy.
- Fa, *s.* foe, 2. 208, 327, 462, 5. 86;
- Faa, 18. 228. A.S. *fāh*. *See* Fais.
- Fabill, *s.* fable, an untrue story, 1. 2.
- Fading, *for* Falding, *i.e.*, falling, 13. 632 (E.).
- Fadir, *s.* father, 1. 314; Fadyr, 1. 347; *gen. sing.* Fadyr, father's, 1. 291.
- Fagaldis, *s. pl.* faggots, 17. 615 (E.); Fagattis, 17. 703.
- Faill, *s.* fail, 12. 274. *See* Fale.



- Failze**, *v.* to fail, faint, give way, 2. 393; *pr. s.* Failzeis, 1. 582; *Failzeys*, 1. 371; *pr. s. subj.* Failze, 3. 297; *Failzhe*, 1. 231; *pt. s.* Failzeit, 3. 88; *f. fete*, lost his footing, 3. 123; *pp.* Failzeit, 2. 539. *See* Fale.
- Failzeid**, *for* Failzeis, *i.e.*, fails, 4. 295 (*footnote*). *See* above.
- Fair**, *s.* fare, manner, 11. 256; journey, 4. 627, 15. 273; welfare, 16. 21.
- Fair**, *v.* to travel, go, fare, journey, 5. 486, 7. 492, 9. 179; *ger.* 20. 98. *A.S. faran*.
- Fais**, *s. pl.* foes, 2. 504, 5. 42; *gen. pl.* foes', 2. 372. *See* Fa.
- Falding**, *s.* falling, downfall, reverse, 13. 632; 3. 289 (*footnote*). *See* below.
- Faldyn**, *pp.* fallen, 11. 547. *Cf.* Dan. *falde*, to fall. *See* the note, p. 265.
- Fale**, *s.* failing, 19. 510. *See* Fail.
- Fale**, *v.* to fail, lack, 4. 255, 5. 425, 8. 460, 9. 183, 10. 818, 11. 408, 12. 204; *Falze*, 9. 40; *pr. s.* Falis, 4. 295; *Falzeis*, 11. 21; *pt. s.* Falit, 14. 365; *pt. pl.* Falit, 18. 269; *Falzeit*, failed, 5. 562, 7. 614; *pp.* Falit, 19. 476; *Falzeit*, 6. 5. *See* Failze.
- Fall**, *v.* to befall, happen, 1. 123, 2. 526, 3. 649, 4. 362, 9. 376; *pr. s. subj.* Fall, may happen, 3. 297; *pr. s.* Fallis, happens, 12. 272; *pt. s.* Fell, arrived, 1. 106; *pp.* Fallyn, happened, 19. 625; fallen (said of night), 19. 705; *Fallen faire*, happened well, 16. 668.
- Fall-brig**, *s.* fall-bridge, drawbridge, 17. 419.
- Fallow**, *s.* fellow, comrade, 6. 608, 18. 40; *pl.* Fallowis, 7. 137, 13. 580. *Icel. filagi*.
- Fallow**, *v.* to follow, 7. 141; 12. 190, 192; *pp.* Fallowit, 16. 322. (*Follow* seems better.)
- Falset**, *s.* falsehood, 1. 377, 5. 622, 10. 286 (E.), 15. 122 (E. and H.); *Falsat*, 15. 122, 244; *Falsade*, 10. 286.
- Falt**, *s.* lack, defect, want, default, 6. 345, 9. 318.
- Famen**, *s. pl.* foemen, 6. 648, 16. 189. *See* Fa.
- Fand**, *pt. s.* found, 3. 417, 5. 42, 6. 237, 11. 398, 19. 144; *pl.* 2. 19, 3. 761, 9. 580.
- Fanding**, *s.* an attempt at finding out, attempt to discover, search, 4. 691. *See* Faynd.
- Fandit**, *pp.* attacked fiercely, 12. 148 (E.). *See* Faynd.
- Fane**, *adj.* glad, 8. 112.
- Fantiss**, *s.* cowardice, faintness of heart, 12. 256; *Fantyss*, deceit, 17. 51. *See* Fayntice.
- Far**, *v.* to fare, go, proceed, 2. 303, 4. 100; *Fare*, 6. 394; *ger.* *Fare*, 16. 269; *pr. pl.* *Far*, go, journey, 3. 345; *pp.* *Farn*, fared, 4. 513, 19. 620; *Farne*, 3. 548, 17. 904 (E.); *Faryne*, 17. 904.
- Far**, *s.* fare, business, endeavour, 17. 400; good fare, good cheer, 19. 730; pomp, 20. 100; good fare, 16. 46.
- Far**, *adv.* fairly, kindly, 20. 512.
- Farand**, *adj.* handsome, well-looking, 2. 514; *weill farrand*, excellent, 11. 95.
- Fardele**, *s.* a bundle, 3. 432. *O.F. fardel* (not given by Burguy, but certified by mod. F. *fardeau*), a bundle; *cf.* Ital. *fardello*, a bundle; Port. *fardel*, a truss, pack, Port. *farda*, a soldier's dress, uniform, livery.
- Farer**, *adj.* fairer, better (luck), 10. 77; better, 10. 199, 17. 837; *superl.* *Farast*, fairest, 11. 518.
- Faring**, *s.* management (of a ship), 17. 456 (E.).
- Farlyit**, *pt. pl.* wondered, 6. 323. Scot. *farly*, *ferly*, a wonder; from *A.S. fār-lic*, sudden, lit. *fear-like*.
- Farsis**, *pr. pl.* stuff, 9. 398. *F. farcir*, to stuff.
- Fassoun**, *s.* fashion, *i.e.*, make, build, 10. 278; *pl.* *Fassownys*, fashions, ways, 17. 300.
- Fast**, *adv.* diligently, 1. 42.
- Fastar**, *adv. comp.* faster, 13. 129.
- Fasteryn** even, Eve of the fast, *i.e.*, Shrove Tuesday, 10. 372; *Fastryn evyn*, 10. 440. In Mark ix. 29, the Northumbrian version has *fastern*, where the Wessex version has *fastene*.
- Fastit**, *pt. pl.* fasted, 11. 383; *pp.* *Fastyt*, 7. 167.
- Faucht**, *pt. s.* fought, 10. 687, 12. 352, 15. 373; *pt. pl.* 6. 637, 15. 489, 17. 144. *And see* Fawcht.
- Faute**, *s.* default, lack, 9. 318 (E.), 20. 384 (E.).

- Fawcht, *pt. s.* fought, 3. 20; *pt. pl.* 1. 468, 8. 307. *See* Faucht.
- Fawt, *s.* fault, defect, lack, 3. 298. *See* Faute.
- Fay, *s.* foe, enemy, 1. 429; *pl.* Fays, 1. 223; Fayis, 1. 453; 4. 3, 6. 169. *See* Fa.
- Fay, *s.* fealty, faith, 13. 545, 14. 104, 15. 303; subjection, 13. 404; *at a fay*, lit. *at one faith*, i.e., owing fealty to the same lord, 19. 790. O.F. *fei*, faith.
- Fayn, *adv.* gladly, eagerly, 8. 20, 9. 90; Fayne, 1. 11.
- Fayn, *adj.* glad, 1. 502; Fayne, 17. 1.
- Faynd, *v.* to try, 16. 219; to put forth (used of *force*), 6. 618; *pr. pl.* tempt, 12. 364; *pt. pl.* Fayndit, attempted, 1. 42; *pp.* Fayndit, put to a severe trial, thoroughly tested, 12. 148. A.S. *fandian*, to try, tempt, prove, seek.
- Faynding, *s.* a tempting of Providence, 3. 289. Jamieson explains it by "perhaps guile"; but cf. "*ne fanda pu pines godes*"; do not tempt thy God; Deut. vi. 16.
- Fayntice, *s.* fainting, giving way, feeling discouragement, 3. 289. Jamieson translates it by "dissimulation"; but see Piers Plowman, B. v. 5, where *feyntise* can only mean a *feeling of faintness*. *And see* Fantiss.
- Fayr, *adj.* fair, good, 1. 286.
- Fayris, *pr. s. impers.* it fares, it happens, 2. 500. *See* Far, *v.*
- Fe, *s.* cattle, 10. 110, 15. 335; a fee, a fief, 13. 725. A.S. *feoh*, cattle, goods.
- Febill, *adj.* feeble, weak, 16. 355.
- Feble, *pr. pl.* grow feeble, faint, give way, 2. 384.
- Feblist, *v.* to enfeeble, 14. 349; *pp.* Feblist, 18. 256, 257. F. *faiblir*, to grow feeble.
- Fechand, *pres. part.* fetching, 3. 428.
- Fecht, *v.* to fight, 11. 9; *pr. s.* Fechtis, fights, 6. 155; *pres. part.* Fechtand, fighting, 6. 287, 8. 197, 10. 666, 11. 236, 12. 107; Fechtande, 18. 437; *pp.* Faucht, *q.v.*
- Fechtaris, *s. pl.* fighting men, 11. 106\*.
- Fechting, *s.* fighting, 4. 282, 9. 237; Fechtyn, 3. 241.
- Fechting-sted, *s.* place of fighting, battle-ground, 15. 378, 16. 663.
- Fee, *s.* cattle, property in cattle, 10. 215, 272, 13. 716; *of fee*, by fief, 11. 456. *See* Fe.
- Feild, *s.* field, 12. 447; *wan feild*, gained ground, 2. 374.
- Feill, *adj.* many, 4. 273, 659, 684, 5. 178, 6. 46, 167, 311, 391, 10. 106, 664, 14. 485, 16. 209; Feile, 2. 221; 3. 22, 374. A.S. *file*, many.
- Feill, *v.* to feel, be made aware, 11. 655; to experience, 12. 588.
- Feir, *adj.* sound, unharmed, 15. 514; *haill and feir*, safe and sound, 6. 315, 17. 897, 18. 161. Icel. *ferr*, safe.
- Feir, *s.* companion, 10. 385, 19. 553. A.S. *gefēra*, a companion on the road.
- Feit, *s. pl.* feet, 10. 380, 12. 553, 13. 31, 16. 185.
- Feldis, *s. pl.* fields, 10. 186.
- Fele, *adj.* many, 1. 294, 454; 2. 242, 3. 468, 7. 12, 10. 345, 11. 49, 16. 589; numerous, 1. 462. *See* Feill.
- Fele, *v.* to feel, 2. 506, *pt. s.* Feld, felt, 3. 140; perceived, 13. 13; *pl.* Feld, 16. 628.
- Fell, *pt. s.* belonged, 17. 176; befel, happened, 1. 170, 4. 125, 18. 564.
- Fell, *v.* to fell, quell, 5. 651; *pt. s.* Fellit, felled, 15. 185; *pp.* Fellit, felled, 10. 684, 12. 524; Fellit to fete, felled under foot, 16. 232; *pt. s.* Fellyt, overthrew, 2. 139, 3. 18, 163.
- Fell, *adj.* cruel, severe, wicked, grievous, 2. 193, 364, 15. 10, 153, 539\*, 19. 6, 20. 508. O.F. *fel*, cruel.
- Fellely, *adv.* severely, 20. 152 (E.); fiercely, cruelly, 5. 350, 12. 84. *See* Felly.
- Fellest, *adj. sup.* direst, severest, 15. 486.
- Felloun, *adj.* cruel, wicked, 5. 102, 8. 454; Felloune, 4. 234, 15. 70, 16. 457. *See* Feloune.
- Felly, *adv.* fiercely, 18. 455; cruelly, 13. 214, 15. 489; severely, 10. 479; extremely, 16. 217.
- Fellyly, *adv.* a misreading in 3. 20 (footnote).
- Felny, *for* Felony, 10. 6 (E.).
- Feloune, *adj.* cruel, fell, 1. 47, 429, 3. 103, 4. 6; Fellone, 1. 194. *See* Felloun.
- Felounly, *adv.* cruelly, 3. 20; Felonly, 1. 215, 16. 631, 20. 513; Fellounly, 1. 315.

- Felouny, *s.* cruelty, 1. 440; Felony, cruelty, fierceness, 4. 604, 6. 460; harm, injury, 10. 65.  
 Fend, *an error for* Faynd, *i.e.*, tempt, 12. 364 (E.).  
 Fendis, *s. pl.* fiends, 4. 224.  
 Fenss, *s.* fence, defence, 20. 384.  
 Fenyhe, *v.* to feign, 1. 344; *pt. s.* Fenzeit, feigned, 3. 300; *pres. part.* Fenzeand, feigning, 5. 622.  
 Fenzeing, *s.* fainting, giving way, *a reading in E. for* Stinting, 9. 255.  
 Fenzeyng, *s.* feigning, deceit, 1. 74.  
 Fer, *adj.* far, 1. 32, 11. 422.  
 Fer, *adv.* far, 4. 22, 11. 544; much, 2. 271; *be fer*, by far, by a great deal, 3. 301, 10. 637; *be full fer*, by very much, 12. 86; *on fer*, afar, 5. 618, 8. 73, 18. 85; *fer by*, far past, 10. 630.  
 Fer out, far out, *i.e.*, very much; *fer out the mair*, very much the more, 6. 666.  
 Fer, *adj.* sound (in health), 9. 231; *haile and fer*, safe and sound, 3. 92. *See* Feir.  
 Ferd, *ord. num.* fourth, 9. 593, 11. 330.  
 Ferd, *pt. s.* fared, went on, 4. 287, 16. 464. *See* Far.  
 Fere, *s.* a comrade, companion, 6. 470, 15. 63; *pl.* Feris, 6. 86\*, 12. 41. *See* Feir.  
 Fer - furth, *adv.* far forward, 19. 376.  
 Ferlifull, *adj.* wondrous, wonderful, 12. 453, 13. 638.  
 Ferly, *s.* a wonder, 3. 243, 7. 98, 9. 395, 11. 86, 12. 448, 15. 235, 17. 800, 19. 505. A.S. *færlíc*, sudden, strange, lit. fear-like.  
 Ferly, *adj.* wonderful, 11. 113, 14. 245; *thocht ferly*, thought it strange, 2. 20.  
 Ferly, *adv.* wonderfully, 14. 322; very, 19. 70.  
 Ferm, *adj.* firm, 9. 755.  
 Fermly, *adv.* firmly, 20. 178.  
 Ferrer, *adj.* further, 19. 530. (E.), 19. 537.  
 Ferrest, *adj. superl.* furthest, 19. 530.  
 Ferryit, *pp.* farrowed; *ferryit was*, had farrowed, 17. 701.  
 Fersly, *adv.* fiercely, 15. 458.  
 Ferst, *adv.* first, 4. 127.  
 Feryt, was, *i.e.*, had farrowed, 17. 701 (E.). *See* Ferryit.  
 Fesnyng, *s.* fastening, security, 20. 57. *See* Festnyng.  
 Fest, *s.* a feast, 17. 908; feasting, 19. 730.  
 Festnyng, *s.* fastening, 20. 57 (E.); fetter, 10. 763 (E. and H.); prison, 15. 309.  
 Festnyt, *pt. pl.* fastened, 13. 237; *pp.* 10. 402, 17. 716.  
 Fetonass, *error in C. for* Phitones, *i.e.*, Pythoness, female diviner, 4. 753 (*footnote*). *See* note, p. 246.  
 Fetrys, *s. pl.* fetters, 4. 15.  
 Fetterit, *pp.* fettered, 10. 763.  
 Few menzhe, a small company, 18. 13.  
 Fewale, *s.* fuel, 11. 120.  
 Fewar, *adj.* fewer, 9. 516, 17. 550.  
 Fewell, *reading in E. for* Fwaill, fuel, 4. 170 (*footnote*).  
 Fewte, *s.* fealty, service, 1. 427, 2. 459, 3. 757, 8. 19, 14. 101, 19. 67, 20. 129\*.  
 Fey, *adj. pl.* dying, 15. 45. *Icel. feigr*, fated to die.  
 Feyd, *v.* to feed, 6. 489.  
 Feyle, *v.* to feel, experience, 1. 304.  
 Feyll, *adj.* many, 8. 117. *See* Feill.  
 Feynzeyng, *s.* feigning, pretence, 1. 341.  
 Feys, *s. pl.* fiels, 1. 58.  
 Feys, *pr. s.* fees, gives a fee to, suborns, 5. 485 (*heading*).  
 Feyt, *s. pl.* feet, 2. 359.  
 Ficht, *v.* to fight, 12. 195. *See* Fecht, Fycht.  
 Fichtyne, *s.* fighting, 4. 244.  
 Fichyt, *pp.* fixed, 20. 178 (E.).  
 Fiff, *num.* five, 17. 198, 19. 38; Fiffe, 5. 381.  
 Fiff-sum, five in all, 6. 149. *Compare* Thresum.  
 Fift, *ord. num.* fifth, 6. 650, 17. 594.  
 Fill, *s.* fill, 11. 626. *Haf thair fill*, have their fill, 11. 626.  
 Fillit, *pt. pl.* filled, 17. 363; *pp.* 4. 116, 7. 173, 8. 445, 13. 113, 18. 141.  
 Fire-galdis, *s. pl.* 17. 247 (H.).  
 Firth, *s.* frith (of Forth), 16. 542, 547.  
 Fischer, *s.* fisherman, 19. 648.  
 Flaggatis, *s. pl.* faggots, 17. 615, 617, 619. Written *fagaldis* in E.  
 Flaikes, *s. pl.* hurdles, 19. 742 (*footnote*).  
 Flaill, *s.* a flail, 5. 318.  
 Flambisighand, *pres. pt.* flaunting (?), 11. 192 (E.).

- Flang, *pt. s.* flung, 16. 651; *pl.* 17. 645; kicked (said of horses), 14. 69. *See* Fling.
- Flatlyngis, *adv.* flat, 12. 59; Flatlynges, 17. 369; Flatlynys, 12. 59 (E.).
- Flaw, *pt. s.* flew, 3. 115, 10. 626, 17. 684; *pl.* 13. 41.
- Flawmand, *pres. pt.* blazing, flaming, (or perhaps) fluttering, 11. 192, 467 (E.); Flawamand, 11. 467. Cf. O.F. *flamer*, to flame; it seems rather to be this French word than connected with Swed. dial. *flomma*, to pour down in a stream.
- Fle, *v.* to flee, 8. 61; *pres. part.* Fleand, fleeing, 6. 414, 7. 331, 9. 278, 18. 78; fugitives, 15. 337\*.
- Fleairis, *s. pl.* fliers, fugitives, runaways, 3. 51, 6. 436; Fleieris, 3. 81.
- Flechand, *pres. part.* cajoling, flattering, smilingly deceitful, 5. 619. Cf. O.F. *flechir*, to bend, turn aside. *See* Godefroy.
- Flede, *pp.* fled, 13. 436.
- Fleeching, *pres. part.* flattering, in H., 5. 622 (footnote). *See* Flechand.
- Flesche, *s.* flesh, 11. 613.
- Fletand, *pres. part.* floating, 3. 630.
- Fleting, *s.* floating; hence, progress over the sea, 3. 588.
- Fleying, *s.* flight, fleeing, 19. 459.
- Fleyit, *pp.* scared, 16. 217. *See* *flezen*, in Stratmann.
- Flicht, *s.* flight, 15. 501.
- Fling, *v.* to kick, 8. 323. *See* Flyng, Flang.
- Florist, *pp.* flourished, decked, 16. 69.
- Flote, *s.* a fleet, 3. 601; Flot, 3. 456, 5. 15, 15. 286; on flot, a-float, 14. 359. Icel. *floti*, a fleet. Cf. A.S. *flota*, a ship.
- Flour, *s.* flower, chief pick, best men, choice band, 7. 562, 14. 81, 15. 473.
- Flour, *s.* flour, 8. 232.
- Floussis, *s. pl.* streams, 13. 20 (E.). *See* Fluss.
- Flure, *s.* floor, 5. 400.
- Fluss, *s.* pool, 13. 20. *See* the note, p. 268; and *see* Floussis.
- Flycht, *s.* flight, 2. 267, 3. 77. *See* Flicht.
- Flycht, a reading in editions for Stycht, 3. 658 (footnote).
- Flyng, *v.* to kick, 6. 143. *See* Fling, Flang.
- Flynging, *s.* kicking, 8. 324. *See* above.
- Flyntis, *s. pl.* flints, 13. 36.
- Flyt, *v.* to float, swim, 3. 420.
- Foley, *adv.* foolishly, in C., 5. 350 (footnote).
- Folk, *s.* folk; small folk, common people, 9. 261, 569; *pl.* Folkis, people, 13. 225 (rubric).
- Followis, *s. pl.* fellows, companions, 5. 581. *See* Follow.
- Followit, *pt. s.* followed, 6. 405, 7. 38, 8. 334, 9. 586, 13. 548, 18. 353; *pl.* 6. 597, 10. 603, 13. 561, 14. 213; *pres. part.* Followand, 4. 258, 5. 309, 6. 292, 8. 224.
- Foly, *s.* folly, 1. 221, 344, 3. 35; Folye, 11. 12.
- For, *prep.* against, 14. 115.
- For, *conj.* because, 2. 105, 503.
- Forbare, *pt. s.* forbore, spared, 6. 152.
- Forbeid, may He forbid, 12. 255.
- Forbest, *pp.* 17. 793. Either (1) rebuffed, from O.F. *buffer*, to puff out, to buffet; so explained by Sibbald, but very unlikely, as it makes the word a hybrid; or (2) "in a state of great trepidation" (Jamieson), from A.S. *bifian*, to tremble; or rather (3) severely beaten; from a verb *beft* or *beff*, to strike; *see* *Beft* in the New E. Dict.
- Forby, *adv.* by; *pas forby*, pass by, 10. 345, 13. 739. Cf. Dan. *forbi*, past, by, over, at an end.
- Fordid, *pt. s.* "did for," spoilt, destroyed, 5. 412, 9. 323; *pp.* Fordone, ended, 4. 206. *N.B.*—In the first passage, J. prints *sordid*, by mistake; in the second he has *fordyd*.
- Forfalt, *pp.* forfeited, 13. 499; *spelt* Forfaut in E. Apparently a corruption of O.F. *forfait*, culpable, Lat. *forisfactus*, by confusion with *default*.
- Forfayr, *v.* to perish, go to ruin, 1. 478; *pt. s. subj.* Forfure, should perish, come to naught, 10. 529. A.S. *forfaran*, to perish.
- Forgane, *prep.* opposite to, 16. 555. Cf. A.S. *gegnum*, forthwith, against.
- Forlorn, *pp.* completely lost, 10. 246. A.S. *forlēosan*, to lose utterly; *pp.* *forloren*.

- Forly, *v.* to violate, commit adultery with, 1. 199. A.S. *forlicgan*, to commit adultery.
- Formast, *adj.* foremost, first, 6. 337.
- Forouch, *prep.* before, 1. 163, 356, 603. See Forouth, Forow, Forrouth, Forrow.
- Forout, *prep.* without, 7. 609, 8. 483, 9. 754, 11. 444, 12. 232, 19. 535; Forowt, 3. 289, 10. 641. A short form of Forouten.
- Forouten, *prep.* without, 5. 237, 9. 733, 10. 226, 11. 250, 12. 201, 14. 510, 16. 230, 18. 192; besides, 11. 110. A.S. *forutan*, without, besides. See Forout, Foroutyn.
- Forouth, *prep.* before, in front of, 10. 602; Forowth, 3. 629. See Forrouth, Forow, Forrow, Forouch. This word is clearly the Swed. *föru*, before; Dan. *forud*, in advance. All the spellings of it in Barbour are more or less corrupt.
- Forouth, *adv.* forward, before, in front, 6. 202, 9. 582, 11. 511, 19. 544. See above.
- Foroutyn, *prep.* beside, 11. 238. See Forouten.
- Forow, *adv.* beforehand, 1. 120. See Forrow, Forouth, Forrouth, Forouch.
- Forow, *prep.* before, 8. 201 (H.). See above.
- For-owtyn, *prep.* without, 1. 96, 116, 280, 622. See Foroutyn.
- Forray, *s.* foray, 2. 281, 16. 612.
- Forray, *v.* to ravage, forage, 15. 511, 18. 273; Forra, 19. 643; *pl. pl.* Forrayit, harried, 17. 527. O.F. *fouirer*, to forage.
- Forrayours, *s. pl.* forayers, 3. 75. O.F. *fouiragier*, a forager, pillager.
- Forreouris, *s. pl.* foragers, 15. 353\*. See above.
- Forrouth, *prep.* before, 10. 816, 11. 341, 12. 41, 13. 53, 14. 322, 16. 261, 17. 194, 18. 3. See Forouth.
- Forrouth, *adv.* before, previously, 16. 504, 19. 395; forward, 7. 139; in the front, 14. 242, 16. 625; onward, 16. 96. See Forouth.
- Forrow, *adv.* formerly, before, 4. 437. See Forouth, Forrouth.
- Forrow, *prep.* before, 5. 18. See Forow, Forouth.
- Forsicht, *s.* foresight, 20. 314; Forsyht, 1. 460.
- Forspokyn, *pp.* agreed upon, 1. 514, 630, 20. 55; promised, 20. 288.
- Forss, *s.* force, 10. 784, 12. 524, 13. 254, 17. 396, 19. 633; Fors, might, 4. 132; *ma na forr*, make no account, 5. 85; *most forr*, most especially, for the most part, 8. 11.
- Forsuk, *pl. s.* shrank from, avoided, 14. 315.
- Forsuth, *adv.* verily, 9. 480, 17. 485.
- For-swat, *pp.* covered with sweat, 7. 2.
- For-swayt, *for* For-swat, 7. 2 (E.).
- Forsye, *adj.* full of force, strong, 2. 242; Forsy, 11. 215, 15. 410.
- For-thi, *adv. and conj.* therefore, 1. 464, 3. 33, 5. 530, 6. 573, 7. 554, 9. 486, 16. 569. A.S. *forþi*, on that account.
- Forthirmar, *adv.* further, 7. 8; further on, 10. 297, 12. 113, 14. 100.
- Forthward, *adv.* further, afterwards, 5. 426; forward, 16. 264.
- Fortoun, *s.* fortune, 3. 271.
- Fortrassis, *s. pl.* fortresses, 10. 155.
- Fortravalit, *pp.* overworn by toil, 3. 326, 7. 176, 368.
- Forvunderit, *pp.* greatly astonished, 6. 10.
- Forzet, *pp.* forgotten, 1. 16.
- Fothyrt, *s.* fother, load, 10. 198 (E.). See Fudyr.
- Foul, *s.* a bird, 7. 188.
- Foull, *adj.* foul, 5. 404; bad, 9. 272.
- Fouly, *adv.* foully, cowardly, 8. 110; disgracefully, 6. 156.
- Found, *v.* to go, 10. 256. A.S. *fundian*, to tend to, go forward.
- Foundyn, *pp.* found, 1. 60.
- Fowlely, *adv.* cowardly, 9. 275. See above.
- Fowly, *adv.* foully, 7. 615; cowardly, disgracefully, 9. 91, 15. 350.
- Fox, *s.* fox, 19. 648.
- Foyssoun, *s.* plenty, abundance, great number, 17. 308, 18. 417, 19. 482; Foyssoun, plenty, 15. 93 (E.). O.F. *foison*, plenty; from Lat. acc. *fusionem*. See Fusioun.
- Fra, *prep.* from, 1. 187, 439; (*follows its case*), 11. 422; *conj.* from the time that, 5. 56, 8. 1, 9. 110, 14. 56. Icel. *frá*, from; Eng. *fro*.
- Frakly, *adv.* keenly, 7. 166. A.S. *frac*, *frac*, bold; Icel. *frekr*, greedy.
- Framing, *an error for* Fraying, noise, 10. 653 (H.).

- Franchiss, *s.* freedom, 11. 268.  
 Franch-men, *s. pl.* Frenchmen, 10. 749.  
 Fra-thine, *adv.* thenceforward, 3. 353, 10. 636, 13. 671.  
 Fray, *s.* fear, terror, 15. 255. *See* Effray.  
 Fraying, *s.* clashing, 10. 653. O.Fr. *freier, froier*, Lat. *fricare*, to rub.  
 Frayit, *pp.* terrified; *or* rather, beset with terrors, 2. 47 (*footnote*). *See* Effray.  
 Fre, *adj.* free, 1. 246.  
 Fredome, *s.* freedom, 1. 225.  
 Frely, *adj.* noble, 3. 578. A.S. *frēolic*, liberal, noble.  
 Frer, *s.* friar, 18. 300.  
 Freris, *gen. pl.* Friars'; *i.e.*, the Greyfriars' church, 2. 33. *See* the note, p. 231.  
 Freschly, *adv.* freshly, 11. 192, 13. 126.  
 Frest, *s.* delay, 2. 277, 7. 547.  
 Icel. *frest*, delay; A.S. *fyrst*, an interval.  
 Freyast, *adj. superl.* freest, 1. 164.  
 Freynd, *s.* a friend, 4. 11.  
 Freyndsome, *adj.* friendly, 1. 88.  
 Friendfull, *adj.* friendly, 1. 88 (*footnote*).  
 Froggis, *s. pl.* frocks, 10. 375. F. *froc*. G. Douglas also has the spelling *frog*.  
 Frontly, *adv.* face to face, 16. 174. Cf. F. *de front*, in front; said of attacking an enemy. *Both* MSS. have this reading; the reading *stoutlynys* in J. is wrong.  
 Frount, *s.* front, 17. 569.  
 Froytis, *s. pl.* fruits, 10. 191.  
 Frusch, *s.* rush, 17. 569 (E.); Frusche, rush, broken order, 14. 212, 542; a breaking noise of weapons, 12. 545, 16. 160; crash, collision, 16. 626; charge, onset, 15. 478; a sudden breaking of the ranks, 13. 292. F. *froisser*.  
 Fruschand, *pres. pl.* battering, ramming with their heads noisily, 16. 161. F. *froisser*, to break.  
 Frusching, *s.* breaking, 12. 504. *See* Frusch.  
 Fruschit, *pt. s.* broke, 12. 57 (E.).  
 Fruschit, *pp.*, an error for Ruschit, *i.e.*, driven back, 12. 121 (E.).  
 Frutis, *s. pl.* fruits, 10. 191 (E.).  
 Fryst, *adv.* first, 1. 255, 542, 8. 9 (E.), 17. 53 (E.).  
 Fude, *s.* food, 10. 189.  
 Fudyr, *s.* a load, cart-load, 10. 198. Cf. A.S. *fōðer*, a mass, load.  
 Fule, *s.* a fool, 4. 222; *gen. sing.* Fulis, 1. 582; Fulys, 11. 21.  
 Fule-hardyment, *s.* fool-hardiness, 6. 337, 340.  
 Fullely, *adv.* fully, 4. 264, 9. 579; Fullyly, completely, 2. 423.  
 Fullfill, *v.* to fulfil, 10. 64; *pp.* Fulfillit, filled full, 5. 46, 12. 423, 10. 294, 19. 105; performed, 5. 532; Fulfillyt, 1. 400.  
 Fulyt, *pp.* befooled, 4. 222 (*footnote*).  
 Fundying, *s.* benumbment with cold, 20. 75; *see* the note. Jamieson's explanation, "asthma," is a bad guess, and wrong. The word is of French origin; cf. F. *fondre*, to melt; *s'effondrer*, to give way.  
 Fundyn, *pp.* found, *i.e.*, provided for, 1. 322; found, 9. 663, 10. 29, 16. 267, 18. 274, 20. 281, 482; Fundin, 6. 190, 7. 244, 10. 523.  
 Fur, *pt. s.* fared, 2. 507; fared, acted, did, 2. 503. *See* Fure.  
 Furd, *s.* ford, 6. 78; Furde, 8. 53, 15. 356; *gen.* Furdis, ford's, 6. 118.  
 Fure, *pt. s.* fared, 13. 653; *pl.* Fure, went on his way, 16. 288. *See* Fur, Far.  
 Furrut, *pp.* furred, 16. 421, 485.  
 Furth, *adv.* forth, 4. 121, 5. 247, 9. 362; hereafter, 1. 14; forward, 11. 390; continually, 16. 531; *do furth*, continue to perform, 1. 256.  
 Furthir, *imp. s.* 3 *p.* further, advance, 4. 627.  
 Furthwardis, *adv.* forwards, 4. 488; Furthwarde, 16. 61, 17. 591; Furthward, 16. 73.  
 Fusioune, *s.* plenty, abundance, 9. 439, 13. 71, 14. 228, 15. 93, 16. 167, 17. 175; numbers, quantity, 16. 588. *See* Foyssoun.  
 Fusoun, *for* Fusioune, 9. 439 (E.).  
 Fut-breid, *s.* foot's breadth, 11. 365.  
 Fute, *s.* foot, 1. 103, 3. 118, 6. 591; *on fut*, on foot, 9. 377; *on fute*, 3. 20; *pl.* Fut, foot, feet (in measuring), 10. 547, 17. 939.  
 Fute, *s.* a child, 3. 578. *See* the note, p. 241.  
 Fut-hate, *adv.* (lit. foot hot), with all speed, 3. 418; Fut-hat, 13. 454. *See* the note to 3. 418, p. 240.  
 Fwaill, *s.* fuel, 4. 64, 170.  
 Fwnzeit, *pt. pl.* foined, fenced, 8.

- 307; Fwyngyt, 8. 307 (E.). See *foine* in Chaucer.
- Fycht, *s.* fight, battle, 2. 242. See Ficht.
- Fyffe, five, 8. 181.
- Fyft, *card. num.* fifth, 2. 17 (*footnote*); see note to the line, p. 231.
- Fyften, *ord. num.* fifteenth, 2. 17.
- Fynding, *s.* finding, discovery, 3. 422.
- Fyne, *adj.* fine, good, 11. 417.
- Fyre, *s.* fire, 17. 246, 429; *pl.* Fyres, 19. 482.
- Fyrth, *s.* firth, 18. 267, 14. 33 (E.).
- Fyschit, *pp.* fixed, 20. 178.
- Ga. *v.* to go, 1. 330, 2. 10, 11. 642; let him go, 1. 433; Ga we, let us go, 2. 49, 5. 79. See Gayn.
- Gabbing, *s.* lying, falsehood, deceit, 4. 301, 5. 510; *pl.* Gabbingis, lies, 4. 768.
- Gabbit, *pp.* lied, 4. 290. F. *gaber*, to mock.
- Gaddering, *s.* gathering, company, 6. 389; Gadering, 6. 462, 7. 397; Gaderyng, host, 9. 217.
- Gaderit, *pl. s.* gathered, assembled, 4. 187, 9. 197, 10. 370, 14. 19, 15. 429, 16. 29, 17. 10, 18. 235, 19. 274, 20. 398; *pl. pl.* 17. 182, 539, 821; Gadderit, gathered themselves, 15. 462; *pres. part.* Gaderand, 14. 320. A.S. *gaderian*, to gather.
- Gadryng, *s.* gathering, assembly, 1. 595. See Gaddering.
- Gadwand, *s.* whip, whip-stock, 10. 232. A.S. *gād*, a goad, whip.
- Gaff, *pl. s.* gave, 2. 164, 10. 779; Gaf, 1. 565, 13. 198; *gaf the bak*, turned their backs, fled, 18. 323; Gaiff, 2. 131, 5. 643; *pl.* Gaff, 13. 147; Gaiff, 3. 23, 8. 314.
- Gainestand, *v.* to withstand, 15. 298 (H.); *pl. s.* Gainestood, resisted, 10. 287 (H.).
- Gaittes, *s. pl.* goats, 18. 451 (H.).
- Galay, *s.* galley, 3. 593, 4. 372; *pl.* Galays, 10. 35; Galais, 4. 463, 629.
- Galay, *v.* to reel, 2. 422. A.S. *gūlan*, to hinder; also, to astonish, terrify; cf. *gallow*, *i.e.*, frighten, in "King Lear," iii. 2. 44. (Doubtful.)
- Gammyn, *s.* game, *i.e.*, joy, 19. 804; sport, play, amusement, 15. 314; affair, 7. 36; or *al the gammyn ga*, ere all the sport be over, 9. 466; *the gammyn ga*, the game may go, affairs may turn out, 11. 319; Gammyn, game, *i.e.*, amusement, 3. 465. A.S. *gamen*, sport.
- Gan, *pt. s.* (used as auxiliary) did, 1. 184, 2. 10.
- Gane, *pp.* gone, 9. 111. See Gayn.
- Ganesay, *v.* to gainsay, 1. 210 (*footnote*).
- Gane-saying, *s.* contradiction, 1. 580.
- Gang, *v.* to go, walk; *gang no ryd*, walk nor ride, 4. 193; to go, 2. 276, 15. 91; *ger.* 7. 596; *pr. s.* Gangis, goes, 10. 421; *pres. part.* Gangand, going, 7. 581, 10. 465, 18. 18; marching, 11. 343; walking, 4. 633.
- Ganging, *s.* going, approach, 14. 400 (E. and H.).
- Gardiss; *gardez vous de Francis*, take heed to yourselves of Francis, 10. 747.
- Garnisht, *pp.* stored, 10. 311 (H.); provided, 17. 713 (H.). See Warnist.
- Garnisoun, *s.* provision, store, 17. 294 (E.).
- Garris, *pr. s.* makes, 7. 246; *pt. s.* Gart, caused, 7. 267. See Ger.
- Gast, *s.* ghost, *g. he gaf*, gave up the ghost, 19. 214.
- Gat, *s.* a way, 6. 577, 7. 42, 8. 65, 9. 628, 11. 443, 12. 85, 13. 646, 19. 691; a gate, 15. 348\*; a passage, 13. 202; Gate, a way, 6. 8; *na gat*, in no way, 10. 230; *pl.* Gatis, ways, 1. 338; *gen. sing.* Gatis, of a way; *a gatis*, of one way, *i.e.*, in one and the same way, 4. 702. Icel. *gata*, a road, way.
- Gayly, *adv.* gaily, 11. 128.
- Gayn, *pp.* gone, 2. 80; Gayne, 1. 144, 3. 473. See Gane, Ga.
- Gayne-cummyng, *s.* against-coming, *i.e.*, attack, 2. 450.
- Gayne-gevyng, *s.* giving again, restoring, 1. 115.
- Geddis, *s. pl.* pikes, jacks, 2. 576. Icel. *gedda*, the pike (fish).
- Geir, *s.* gear, equipment, 9. 709, 17. 702, 859. A.S. *gearwa*, preparation. See Ger. *sb.*
- Generally, *adv.* generally, 11. 208.
- Ger, *s.* gear, property, 18. 160; provisions, 8. 458; armour, 5. 110, 18. 165. See Geir.
- Ger, *v.* to cause, 1. 299, 4. 654, 5.

- 265, 17. 271; *pr. s. subj.* may make, 1. 16; *pr. s.* Gerris, makes, 6. 332, 9. 94; *pr. pl.* Gerris, cause, 11. 491; *pt. s.* Gert, caused, made, 1. 355, 2. 13, 5. 117, 6. 187, 8. 444, 10. 748, 12. 7, 14. 296, 17. 90; *gert helde*, caused to incline, 8. 14; *pl.* Gert, 2. 506, 4. 30. *Ger mak*, to cause to be made, 1. 491. Icel. *göra*, to make.
- Gess; *to gess*, to take a guess, 14. 270.
- Gestis, *s. pl.* perhaps for *gistis*, joists, beams, 17. 597. See the note.
- Get, *v.* to get, 9. 165, 11. 175; to keep, 15. 264.
- Gevyn, *pp.* given, 1. 317, 2. 122, 11. 32; Gevin, 9. 445, 11. 40; Gevin to hous, taken home, 20. 102. See Gif.
- Gewe, *pt. s.* gave, 16. 130 (E.). See Gif.
- Ghyle, *s.* guile, 1. 172.
- Gif, *v.* to incline, lit. give, 19. 107; *pres. s.* Giffis, give, 1. 227; inclines, 19. 97; *pl.* Giffis, give, 4. 721; *pp.* Giffin, given, disposed, 4. 735; *pres. pt.* Gifand, 13. 160. A.S. *gifan*.
- Gif, *conj.* if, 1. 12; Gif, 4. 106, 8. 131; *bot gif*, unless, 8. 64. A.S. *gif*, Mæso-Goth. *jabai*, compounded of *jah*, also, and *ibai*, where *ibai* corresponds to Icel. *ef*, if, from Icel. *ef*, doubt. Quite unconnected with *give*.
- Girns, *s. pl.* traps, gins, 2. 576 (*foot-note*). See "*Gren*, a gin or snare," in Halliwell's Dictionary.
- Gladship, *s.* gladness, joy, 8. 253, 12. 209, 17. 11, 19. 750. A.S. *gladscipe*.
- Gladsum, *adj.* glad, blithe, merry, 11. 256, 12. 157, 16. 41, 17. 5; kindly, 9. 728.
- Gladsumly, *adv.* gladly, 16. 20.
- Glaid, *adj.* glad, merry, 1. 332.
- Glaidschip, *s.* gladness, in E., 5. 298 (*foot-note*). See Gladship.
- Gle, *s.* glee, 17. 908, 19. 804; game, sport, 9. 701, 15. 176; *3heid the gle*, the game went, 1. 90. See Glew. A.S. *glæo*.
- Glemand, *pres. part.* gleaming, 8. 226.
- Glen, *s.* glen, 4. 372 (*foot-note*).
- Glew, *s.* game, affair (lit. glee), 6. 658; contrivance, 17. 403 (C.). See Gle.
- Gliffnyt, *pt. s.* looked up quickly, took a glimpse, 7. 184. Cf. Scot. *gliff*, a glance.
- Glitterand, *pres. pt.* glittering, 8. 233.
- Glowand, *pres. part.* glowing, 4. 113.
- Gluffnyt, *an error in C. for* Gliffnyt, 7. 184 (*foot-note*).
- Gnaw, *v.* to gnaw, bite, eat, 19. 664.
- Gottyn, *pp.* got, 2. 3, 10. 452; arrived, 18. 454; begotten, 20. 131; Gottin, obtained, 19. 785; got, 14. 223.
- Gouernale, *s.* power to govern, 11. 161; government, 16. 358; Gouvernale, 1. 192 (*foot-note*).
- Gouernit, *pt. s.* governed, 20. 603; led, 12. 499; *pl. refl.* Gouernit thame, shifted for themselves, 4. 459; Gouernyt thaim, governed themselves, contrived to exist, lived, 2. 588; *pp.* Gouernit, led, 13. 571, 19. 467; governed, 1. 486, 8. 496, 10. 156, 16. 321, 20. 311; controlled, 6. 369.
- Gown, *s.* gown, 19. 352; *pl.* Gownys, 8. 468.
- Graith, *adj.* ready, 4. 759. Icel. *greiðr*, ready.
- Graithed, *pt. pl. a reading in H. for* Redyt, *i.e.*, made ready, 9. 171 (*foot-note*). (The sense is the same; see above, and Grathit.)
- Graithly, *adv.* directly, 19. 708. Icel. *greiðliga*, readily. See Grathly.
- Grant, 1 *p. s. pr.* I agree, 4. 352; *pt. pl.* Grantit, assented, 7. 133; *imp. pl.* Grantis, grant ye, 1. 420; *pt. s.* Grantit, confessed, 19. 61; *pp.* Grantit, confessed, 19. 48.
- Granting, *s.* confession, 19. 45.
- Granyng, *s.* groaning, 13. 157.
- Granys, *s. pl.* groans, 13. 35.
- Grass, *s.* grace, 14. 361.
- Grathit, *pp.* prepared, 5. 387; *pt. pl.* Grathyt, furnished (said ironically), 13. 127 (E.). See Graithed.
- Grathly, *adv.* speedily, 10. 205. See Graithly.
- Gravyn, *pp.* buried, 4. 309.
- Gray, *adj.* gray, 12. 18. (So in H.; C. has gay.)
- Gress, *s.* grass, 2. 361, 8. 445 (E.); *pl.* Gressys, grasses, herbs, *reading in E. for* Grewis, 5. 13 (*foot-note*).
- Gret, *adj.* great; in *gret thing*, in a



- great measure, 17. 196; *pl. adj.* as *sb.* great men, 14. 390; Grete, 10. 73.
- Gret, *v.* to weep, 3. 347, 16. 228; *pt. s.* Gret, wept, 3. 511, 5. 285; *pt. pl.* Gret, 3. 507; 1 *p. s. pr.* Grete, I weep, 16. 231; *pres. part.* Gretand, 5. 157. A.S. *grētan*, to weep.
- Gretar, *adj.* greater, 20. 463.
- Greeting, *s.* weeping, 3. 514, 522, 527, 20. 197, 489.
- Gretumly, *adv.* greatly, extremely, 1. 365, 2. 291, 3. 668, 8. 105, 9. 537, 10. 101, 11. 494, 12. 364, 13. 210, 17. 331, 18. 322, 19. 113. The formation of the word is obscure; perhaps *gretum* answers to A.S. *grēatum*, dat. pl. of *grēat*.
- Greving, *s.* grieving, harm, 8. 510.
- Greving, *for* Grewing, *s.* horror, 19. 555 (C.). See below.
- Grevit thame, *pt. s.* it made them shudder, 15. 541; where *grevit* is written for *grewit* or *growit*. Cf. Dan. *gru*, horror. See Grow.
- Grevousar, *adj. comp.* more grievous, harder, 10. 636.
- Grewis, *s. pl.* groves, 5. 13. See the note, p. 247.
- Greyne, *adj.* green, 11. 372.
- Grow, *v.* to quake with terror, 17. 696; *pt. s.* Growyt, shuddered, was shocked, 20. 517; *pt. s. trans.* it made them shudder, 15. 541 (E.); see Grevit. Cf. Dan. *gru*, horror; G. *grauen*.
- Growis, *pr. s.* grows, increases, 19. 638; *pres. part.* Growand, growing, 16. 395.
- Growyng, *s.* terror, 19. 555. See Grow.
- Gruching, *s.* grudging, reluctance, 16. 19.
- Gruchys, *pr. s.* lit. grudges; finds fault, opposes (you), 2. 123.
- Grunches, *pr. s.* grumbles, 2. 123 (*footnote*).
- Grunching, *s.* complaint, 16. 9 (C.), (*footnote*).
- Grund, *s.* ground, land, 20. 324.
- Grundyn, *pp.* ground, sharpened, 12. 520.
- Gryppyt, *pt. s.* gripped, seized, 1. 115.
- Gud, *adj.* good, 1. 4, 9. 12.
- Gude, *s.* property, 17. 105; *pl.* Gudis, goods, 17. 517.
- Gyff, *conj.* if, 1. 154, 159, 3. 38, 9. 210. Bot *gyff*, unless, 1. 159. See Giff.
- Gyff, *pr. s. subj.* may he give, 1. 34. See Gif.
- Gyit, *pp.* guided, 19. 708. O.F. *guier*, to guide.
- Gyle, *s.* guile, 6. 4.
- Gyn, *s.* stratagem, device, 15. 222; Gyne, engine, 17. 682, 691; *pl.* Gynis, engines, 17. 250; Gynys, nets, 2. 576. Short for F. *engin*, Lat. *ingenium*.
- Gynour, *s.* engineer, 17. 468, 690, 718; 17. 681 (E.). Formed from *gyn*.
- Gyrd, *s.* stroke, blow, 5. 629. From A.S. *gyrd*, a rod, stick.
- Gyrdand, *pres. part.* striking right and left, 2. 417. See above.
- Gyrdit, *pp.* girt, 17. 616. A.S. *gyrdan*, to gird.
- Gyrmand, *pres. part.* grinning, 4. 322.
- Gyrnyng, *s.* grinning, 13. 157.
- Gyrss, *s.* grass, 8. 445, 11. 372, 12. 582. A.S. *gers*, *gars*.
- Gyrth, *s.* sanctuary, 4. 47, 51; sacred protecting power; gave *na gyrik*, respected not the sanctuary, 2. 44. Icel. *gríð*, a truce; also a sanctuary, asylum.
- Haberiownys, *s. pl.* habergeons, 11. 131 (E.). See Chaucer, Prol. 76.
- Haboundance, *s.* abundance, 14. 229 (E.).
- Haboundyt, *pt. s.* abounded, 13. 716 (E.), 744 (E.).
- Hachit, *s.* a hatchet, 10. 174.
- Had, *pt. s.* took, conveyed, 15. 240; *had nocht been*, had it not been for, 3. 216. See below.
- Haf, *v.* to have, 4. 277, 5. 392, 6. 326; *pr. s. subj.* have, 6. 334; Haf, *v.* 11. 19, 18. 70. 1 *p. pr. pl.* Haffis, we have, 3. 316; *pr. s. as fut.* Haffys, he shall have, 1. 434; *imp. pl.* Haffis, have ye, 13. 305; *pt. s.* Haid, had, 1. 38; *pl.* Haid, had, 1. 514.
- Haill, *adj.* whole, all of them, 14. 490; all *haill*, entirely, 10. 793, 11. 3; *haill and feir*, safe and sound, 15. 514; *haill and fer*, 9. 231. See Feir. Icel. *heill*, hale.
- Hailsed, *pt. s.* saluted, 3. 500 (*foot-note*); a better reading than Haylist. See below.

- Halsyt, *pt. s.* saluted, 2. 153. (*See* above.) It occurs in Piers Plowman, B. 5. 101, 7. 160. Swed. *helsa*, to salute; cf. Swed. *helsa*, health. Not to be confused with A.S. *healsian*, to embrace round the neck. *See* Halsit.
- Halche, *s.* haugh, 16. 336 (E.). Cf. *halke*, a corner, lurking-place, in Chaucer. *See* Hawch.
- Hald, *v.* to hold, 1. 154, 410; to esteem, 2. 389; to keep, 6. 183; to keep on, 8. 65; *bargane hald*, to engage in fighting, 4. 96; *pres. part.* Haldand, 14. 409; *pp.* Haldin, holden, kept, 5. 88, 9. 457, 13. 370; *pp.* Haldyn, holden, held, 1. 118; esteemed, 20. 364; Haldyne, kept, 13. 542; *pr. pl.* Haldis, hold, 1. 488; possess, 4. 349, 726; *imp. pl.* Haldis, continue, 7. 123. Icel. *halda*, A.S. *healdan*.
- Haldaris, *s. pl.* holders, *i.e.*, defenders of the castle, 4. 82.
- Halding, *s.* holding, possessions, 19. 66.
- Hale, *adj.* whole, 1. 137, 8. 425; complete, 4. 167. *See* Haill.
- Hale, *adv.* wholly, 1. 65, 185; *all hale*, entirely, 1. 497, 11. 4, 15. 202, 18. 238. *See* Haill.
- Halely, *adv.* wholly, 3. 45, 4. 598, 5. 303, 6. 293, 9. 360, 14. 551, 15. 224; exactly, 4. 772.
- Half, *s.* side, 9. 309, 11. 175, 16. 399, 17. 191; *pl.* Halfis, sides, 4. 150, 16. 676, 17. 566; Halfis, 19. 516. A.S. *healf*, half, side.
- Half-deill, *s.* half part, half, 14. 188, 497.
- Halfin dall, *for* Halfin dell, *i.e.*, half part, 14. 497 (E.).
- Halist, *for* Halsit, 7. 116 (E.).
- Halle, *adj.* whole, 1. 274. *See* Hale, Haill.
- Hals, *s.* neck, 5. 575, 7. 114, 583; Halss, 6. 627, 20. 307. Icel. *hals*, A.S. *heals*, neck.
- Halsing, *s.* salutation, 7. 117. *See* below.
- Halsit, *pt. pl.* saluted, 4. 636, 7. 116, 13. 525. *See* Halsyt.
- Haltand, *pres. part.* halting, *i.e.*, lame, 18. 275.
- Haly, *adj.* holy, 1. 139, 4. 683, 10. 737, 19. 722. A.S. *hālig*.
- Haly, *adv.* wholly, 1. 16, 2. 453, 5. 57, 6. 182, 10. 378, 14. 79, 18. 308. *See* below.
- Halyly, *adv.* wholly, entirely, 1. 316, 540. *See* above, and *see* Halely.
- Halyst, *an error in E. for* Halsyt, 4. 636 (*footnote*), 13. 525. *See* Halsit.
- Hamelat, *s.* hamlet, 4. 195; Hamlet, 9. 403; Hamillet, 9. 403 (E.).
- Hamly, *adj.* homely, kindly, 19. 794.
- Hamly, *adv.* in a homely manner, kindly, 11. 259 (E.), 18. 546. *See* below.
- Hamlyly, *adv.* in a homely way, heartily, 17. 4 (E.). *See* above.
- Hamvardis, *adv.* homeward, 7. 492; Hamwarde, 19. 751; Hamward, 16. 472; Hamwart, 16. 472 (E.); Hamward, 6. 294.
- Hand; *at hand*, in hand, under guidance, *i.e.*, well trained; said of a horse, 1. 120 (cf. Shak. Jul. Cæs., iv. 2. 23); near, 6. 604; *at his hand*, close at hand, 7. 72; *at thar hand*, close at their hand, 3. 54, 7. 563; *tak on hand*, undertake, 1. 268, 13. 368; *tuk on hand*, undertook, 14. 10.
- Hand-ax, *s.* hand-axe, 5. 606.
- Hand-ax-schaft, *s.* shaft of a battle-axe, 12. 57, 97.
- Handillit, *pp.* handled, 17. 416. *See* Handlyt.
- Handis, *s. pl.* hands, 9. 481, &c.
- Handles, *a misspelling of* Ayndless, 10. 609 (E.).
- Handlyt, *pp.* handled, 10. 648, 693; Handillit, 17. 416.
- Hangis, *imp. pl.* hang, 4. 322; *pp.* Hangit, hung, 4. 176, 17. 871; Hangyt, 4. 34.
- Hansell, *s.* hansom; a first portion of goods delivered to a buyer; here (ironically) first defeat, 5. 120.
- Hap, *s.* good fortune, success, 12. 554 (E.); good luck, 5. 538, 15. 392.
- Happely, *adv.* luckily, 17. 438.
- Happyn, *v.* to happen, 4. 728; *pr. s. subj.* Happin, it may happen (to him), 11. 644; *pr. s.* Hapnys, it happens, 5. 248; *pt. s.* Hapnyt, it happened, 3. 481, 4. 396; Hapnit, 13. 176; Hapynnyt, 7. 400 (E.); *pt. s. subj.* Hapnyt, it should happen, 11. 596, 20. 137 (E.), 20. 148; *pp.* Hapnyt, 10. 694.
- Har, *s.* hair, 1. 384, 397.
- Hard, *pt. s.* heard, 1. 437, 503; 2. 113; 1 *p.* I heard, 1. 384; *pp.* Hard, 2. 93.

- Hard, *adj.* severe, 9. 36.  
 Hardely, *adv.* hardily, 11. 411.  
 Hardiment, *s.* hardihood, 11. 490; *pl.* Hardimentis, deeds of valour, 13. 179 (E.). See *Hardymment*.  
 Hardiss, *s.* hards (of flax), 17. 612.  
 Hardnyt, *pt. pl.* incited (lit. hardened), 12. 500.  
 Hardy, *adj.* hardy, bold, 1. 28, 11. 249, 500; 13. 77. F. *hardi*.  
 Hardymment, *s.* hardihood, courage, boldness, 6. 353, 9. 632, 15. 270, 16. 20; deed of valour, 12. 509. O.F. *hardiment*, courage.  
 Hardynes, *s.* hardship, 1. 448. Cf. *hardness*.  
 Harnass, *s.* armour, 9. 360, 11. 112, 116, 239; Harness, 12. 465; Harnase, 11. 421. O.F. *harnas*, *harnois*.  
 Harnast, *pp.* harnessed, equipped, 9. 710; Harnasyt, 9. 710 (E.).  
 Harnys, *s. pl.* brains, 1. 294, 3. 128, 5. 625, 10. 236; Harniss, 5. 633. Icel. *hjárnir*, the brain.  
 Harnys, *s. pl.* brains, but here an error for Arrows, 18. 417 (E.).  
 Harrow, *s.* harrow, 19. 175.  
 Hart, *s.* heart, 1. 28.  
 Hartfully, *adv.* heartily, gladly, 3. 510.  
 Hass, *pr. pl.* have, 11. 273; Has, 12. 79; 1 *p. s. pr.* Has, 13. 642.  
 Hastely, *adv.* hastily, 11. 625.  
 Hastit, *pt. s. refl.* hurried himself, 11. 549.  
 Hat, *pt. s.* was named (M.E. *hight*), 4. 585, 8. 34, 9. 692, 12. 451, 14. 252, 20. 473; *pp.* named, 14. 106, 18. 462. A.S. *hātan*, to call, to be named.  
 Hat, *adj.* hot, 4. 113, 8. 66, 12. 145; Hate, 6. 305. See *Het*.  
 Hat, *adv.* hotly, 10. 693, 16. 648.  
 Hat, *s.* hat, 12. 22, 16. 419, 481, 485.  
 Hatit, *pl. s.* hated, 6. 502, 9. 465, 20. 524 (H.).  
 Hattyn, *pp.* named, 10. 750, 14. 376. See *Hat*, *v.*  
 Havyn, *s.* haven, 17. 306.  
 Hawbrekis, *s. pl.* hauberks, 8. 232.  
 Hawbryschownys, *s. pl.* habergeons, 11. 131.  
 Hawch, *s.* haugh, 16. 336. See *Halche*.  
 Hawe, *v.* to have, 1. 5, 21; *imp. pl.* Hawys, have ye, 13. 305 (E.).  
 Hawtane, *adj.* proud, 1. 196. F. *hautain*.  
 Hawyng, *s.* (lit. having), manner, mien, 7. 135, 11. 246.  
 Hay, *s.* hay, 10. 152, 169.  
 Haylist, *pt. s.* greeted, 3. 500. *Sic*; miswritten for *haylist*. See *Halsit*, *Hailsed*.  
 Hayme, *s.* home, 14. 278, 18. 510; *adv.* homeward, home, 16. 667;  
 Haym, *adv.* 14. 271, 16. 472, 18. 341. Icel. *heimr*, home; *heim*, *adv.* homeward.  
 He, *adj.* high, haughty, proud, 6. 116; Hee, 7. 109; *adv.* on high, loudly, 4. 416. See *Hey*.  
 Hecht, *v.* (1) to promise, 12. 384; 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise, 12. 318; *pt. s.* promised, 10. 262, 579; (2) *pt. s.* was named, 10. 27, 17. 152. A.S. *hātan*, to promise, to be named.  
 Hed, *s.* head, 2. 589.  
 Hed, *v.* to behead, 5. 402; Hede, 4. 30; *pp.* Hedit, 19. 57.  
 Hede-soyme, *s.* the rope reaching to the heads of the oxen, the traces, 10. 180. See the note, p. 261.  
 Hedis, *s. pl.* heads (of their horses), 9. 610.  
 Heid, *s.* heed, 18. 150.  
 Heid, *s.* head, 3. 138; *off thine awyne heid*, as of your own will, 2. 121; *pl.* Hedis, 9. 610.  
 Heill, *s.* heel, 16. 596.  
 Heir, *adv.* here, 4. 125, 5. 69, 11. 181; *heir and their*, everywhere, 6. 27.  
 Heirschip, *s.* the harrying, destruction, 9. 300. A.S. *herian*, to ravage with an army.  
 Heit, *s.* heat, 11. 611. See *Het*.  
 Held doune, *pt. pl.* continued, 15. 171.  
 Helde, *v.* to incline, 8. 14; Heldand, *pres. part.* inclining, 5. 153.  
 Heling, *s.* covering, 5. 11, 17. 598.  
 Helit, *pt. s.* hid, 18. 308, 19. 64; *pl. hid*, 4. 373; covered, 8. 469, 10. 375, 11. 185; *pp.* covered, 9. 128, 11. 107, 12. 146, 13. 431. A.S. *helan*, to cover, hide.  
 Helit, *pp.* healed, 15. 85.  
 Hell, *s.* hell, 3. 708.  
 Helmys, *s. pl.* helmets, 19. 396.  
 Helping, *s.* helping, succour, 3. 148.  
 Helpis, *pr. s.* helps, assists, 6. 17, 20. 506; *pt. s.* Helpit, 19. 611; *pl. pl.* 17. 486; *pp.* 11. 636, 12. 142.  
 Hely, *adv.* highly, aloud, 2. 315, 3. 734; haughtily, proudly, 8. 143, 18. 509; highly, 1. 577.  
 Helyng, *s.* healing; *into helyng*, in health, 5. 438; Helyne, 15. 84.

- Helyt, *pp.* covered, 10. 169, 14. 290.  
*See* Helit.  
 Hemp, *s.* hemp, 10. 352 (*H. rubric in footnote*).  
 Hempyn, *adj.* hempen, 10. 360.  
 Hendir, *adj.* past; *this hendir day*, in days past, 10. 551. Cf. *Icel. endr*, formerly, which seems to have been confused with *Icel. hindirdags*, the day after to-morrow; which is quite a different thing.  
 Hendirmar, *adj.* more backward; lit. hinder-more, 7. 599.  
 Henmast, *adj.* hindmost, last, 8. 245, 12. 268, 13. 579, 19. 583.  
 Her, *s.* master (?), 9. 640.  
 Her, *adv.* here, 1. 419, 5. 267, 10. 554, 12. 240; in this case, 12. 366.  
 Her, *v.* to hear, 1. 445, 2. 184, 13. 34; *pr. pl.* 2 *p.* ye hear, 8. 489.  
 Herbery, *s.* lodging, 2. 280, 4. 466, 14. 153, 16. 439, 18. 332, 19. 388; encampment, 7. 308; Herbry, 4. 516, 7. 320, 14. 461; quarters, 17. 535. A.S. *herebeorga*, shelter for an army.  
 Herbery, *v. reflex.* to harbour, to lodge themselves, to take lodging, 2. 276, 300, 449, 12. 9, 19. 510; *pt. s.* Herberyd, lodged, 1. 599; *pt. pl.* Herbreit thame, 19. 390; Herbreyt, lodged, 14. 169; *pp.* Herbreit, lodged, 5. 48; Herberyit, 9. 689. *See* above. *See also* Herbryit.  
 Herbreouris, *s. pl.* 'herbergeours,' men sent to find lodgings, harbingers, 16. 465, 18. 334, 344.  
 Herbreyng, *s.* lodging, 9. 703.  
 Herbry, *s.* quarters, 17. 535, &c. *See* Herbery.  
 Herbryit, *pt. s.* tarried, dwelt, 6. 86; Herbryd, 10. 42 (E.); *pt. pl.* Herbryit thame, lodged, 11. 359, 12. 391, 18. 340, 19. 500; *pp.* Herbryit, lodged, 2. 341, 17. 206. *See* Herbery, *v.*  
 Herd, *adj.* hard, 12. 530, 14. 26, 19. 642.  
 Herd, *adv.* hard, 18. 482.  
 Herd, *pt. s.* heard, 1. 314.  
 Here, *v.* to hear, 5. 543.  
 Herkynand, *pres. part.* hearkening, listening, 6. 107.  
 Herrodis, *s. pl.* heralds, 12. 371. O.F. *heraut*.  
 Hert, *s.* heart, 11. 571, 18. 229.  
 Her-till (E.), hereto, to this, 13. 241.  
 Hertit, *pt. s.* encouraged, 16. 662.  
 Hertly, *adv.* heartily, 19. 100.  
 Heryed, *pt. s.* harried, a reading in H. for Ryotit, 9. 500 (*footnote*). *See* below.  
 Heryit, *pt. s.* harried, 9. 298; *pl.* 19. 280. A.S. *herian*, to ravage.  
 Heryng, *s.* hearing, 1. 5, 10.  
 Hes, *pr. pl.* have, 17. 904\*. *See* Hass.  
 Het, *adj.* hot, 4. 114, 154. *See* Hat.  
 Het, *s.* heat, 11. 612. *See* Heit.  
 Hevaly, *adv.* heavily, 7. 209.  
 Hevede, *s.* head, 5. 11. A.S. *hēafod*.  
 Hevin, *s.* heaven, 20. 250; Hevyn, 2. 144.  
 Hevy, *adj.* heavy, dull, 7. 174; *hevy will*, ill will, 17. 20.  
 Hew, *v.* to cut down, 16. 476; to hew, 19. 541; *pt. s.* Hewit, cut, 10. 233.  
 Hewid, *s.* head, 2. 121 (*footnote*).  
 Hewinis, *gen. sing.* heaven's, 8. 234. *See* Hevin.  
 Hewit, *pp.* hued, coloured, 8. 230.  
 Hewy, *adj.* heavy, 2. 369. *See* Hevy.  
 Hewyly, *adv.* heavily, 3. 235.  
 Hewyn, *s.* heaven, 2. 341; *gen.* Hewynnis, 20. 414. *See* Hevin.  
 Hewynes, for Hevynes, 7. 175 (E.).  
 Hey, *adj.* high, 1. 102, 276, 378, 17. 608. *See* He, Heych.  
 Hey, *adv.* aloud, 2. 383.  
 Heych, *adj.* high, 4. 117.  
 Heycht, *s.* a height, 3. 707.  
 Heychtly, *adv.* proudly, 12. 250 (E.).  
 Heyit, *pp.* exalted, 4. 667 (*footnote*).  
 Heyr, *adv.* here, 1. 416, 623. *See* Her.  
 Heyt, *pp.* raised on high, exalted, 4. 667.  
 Hicht, 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise you, I assure you, 7. 156, 8. 268, 9. 480, 10. 514, 721, 18. 482. *See* Hecht.  
 Hicht, *pt. s.* hight, was called, 5. 209, 8. 453, 10. 153, 17. 150. *See* Hecht, Hycht.  
 Hicht, *s.* a promise, 14. 16, 15. 425.  
 Hicht, *s.* height, 4. 667, 9. 508, 18. 419, 449; high position, 10. 52; summit of power, 5. 183; on *hicht*, on high, aloft, aloud, 5. 631, 11. 397, 13. 723, 16. 407; into the *hicht*, openly, 5. 487.  
 Hiddillis, *s.* a hiding-place, 6. 382. A.S. *hydels*, a den. *See* Hyddillis.  
 Wyclif has *hidils*, *hidlis*, *hiddlis*, *hudlys*, Deut. 27. 15; Josh. 2. 1; 1 Kings 13. 6; Is. 48. 16; Mat. 6. 4; John 18. 20.

- Hidwysly, *adv.* hideously, 10. 685 (E.).
- Hidwyss, *adj.* hideous, 3. 724.
- Hillis, *gen.* hill's, 10. 83.
- Hing, *v.* to hang, 2. 455, 4. 30, 54.
- Icel. *hengja*, to hang up. *See* Hyng.
- Hint, *pt. s.* seized, 7. 580; *pl.* 8. 470. A.S. *hentan*, to seize. *See* Hynt.
- Hir, *pron.* her, 17. 407.
- His; Hannibal his *used for* Hannibal's, 3. 232; *see also* 6. 435, 446.
- His, *gen.* (signifying duration); *his lifytyme*, in his lifetime, 4. 713.
- His, *for* his men, 3. 372.
- Ho, *s.* halt, ceasing, 20. 429\*. Cf. Chaucer, *Kn. Tale*, ll. 848, 1675.
- Hobland, *pres. part.* dancing or hovering about, rising and falling in a surge, 4. 447. Probably related to Howand, *q.v.*
- Hobleris, *s. pl.* men on horseback, light-armed horsemen, 11. 110, 13. 640; Hobeleris, 11. 110 (E.); Hobillers, 11. 110 (H.); Hobilleris, 16. 80 (E.). *See* Hobeleris in Jamieson; and *see* below.
- Hobynis, *s. pl.* horses, 14. 68, 500. They seem to have been small, nimble horses, for reconnoitring, &c. *See* *Hobin* in Roquefort's *Glossaire*.
- Hoill, *s.* hole, 19. 669.
- Holl, *adj.* hollow, deep, 8. 176.
- Holl, *adj.* whole, unbroken, 6. 78.
- Holles, *s. pl.* holes, 11. 153 (H.).
- Hone, *s.* delay, 6. 564 (E.), 14. 182 (E.). *See* Hoyn.
- Honeste, *s.* honour, decorum, 1. 548.
- Honorabily, *adv.* honourably, 1. 357, 13. 664.
- Honorit, *pt. s.* honoured, 16. 672; *pt. pl.* 20. 359.
- Hontyne, *s.* hunting, 4. 513.
- Hoost, *s.* host, army, 13. 734.
- Hop, *s.* hope, 4. 104.
- Horn, *s.* horn, 6. 469.
- Horsit, *pt. pl.* horsed, put him on horseback, 4. 285; *pp.* Horsit, mounted, horsed, 8. 171, 11. 294, 12. 48, 16. 514, 19. 342, 376\*; Horsyt, 13. 56 (E.); Horssit, 11. 637.
- Horss, *s.* a horse, 1. 207; *pl.* Horss, 3. 22, 8. 446, 11. 107, 13. 589; Hors, 8. 323; *gen. pl.* Horss, 2. 359. A.S. *hors*, *pl. hors*.
- Hostage, *s.* hostage, pledge, 10. 133 (E.) *Better* *Homage*, as in C.
- Hostes, *s.* hostess, 4. 635.
- Houed, *pt. s.* it behaved, 10. 39 (H.).
- Hount, *v.* to hunt, 7. 399.
- Houss, *s.* house, home, 5. 522, 7. 151, 393; *gen. sing.* Housis, 7. 163; *pl.* Housis, 8. 514. A.S. *hūs*.
- Howand, *pres. part.* hovering, halting, waiting in readiness, 15. 461 (E.), 18. 116, 19. 585 (E.). Written for *hovand*, *pres. part.* of *hove* or *hove*, to hover or wait about. *See* *hovin*, in *Stratmann*, and my note to P. *Plowman*, C. xxi. 83. *See* Hufe.
- Howe, *for* Hufe, 19. 345 (E.).
- How-gatis, *adv.* how, 4. 439; How-gat, 2. 156, 5. 597, 6. 308, 8. 102.
- Howis, *s. pl.* holes, 11. 153. A.S. *hol*, a hole.
- Howis, *s. pl.* hoes, 17. 344. It is not quite clear what kind of instrument is intended, or what was its use. F. *houe*, a hoe.
- Howss, *s.* house, 1. 534; *pl.* Howsis, 12. 396. *See* Houss.
- Howyt, *pt. s.* waited, 18. 299 (E.). *See* Hufe, Howand.
- Hoyn, *s.* delay, 5. 602, 6. 564, 10. 226, 14. 182. *See* "*hone*, delay, cessation," in *Stratmann*. *See* Hone, Ho, Howand.
- Hude, *s.* a hood, 18. 308; *pl.* Hudis, hoods, 19. 332 (E.).
- Hufe, *v.* to hover, lie in wait, 19. 345; *pres. part.* Hufand, waiting, 19. 585; *pt. s.* Hufit, waited, 18. 299. *See* Howand, Huvande.
- Humely, *adv.* humbly, 3. 762; Humyly, 1. 578; Humylly, 18. 404.
- Hund, a hound, dog, 1. 207, 6. 469. A.S. *hund*. *See* Iiwnd.
- Hunder, *for* Hundred, 14. 67 (E.).
- Hundreth, *card. num.* hundred, 14. 534, 17. 739.
- Huntand, *pres. part.* hunting, 20. 21.
- Husband, *s.* a small farmer, 10. 151, 387; *gen. sing.* Husbandis, 7. 151; *pl.* Husbandis, husbandmen, 17. 542.
- Huvande, *pres. part.* hovering, waiting, 15. 461. *See* Hufe.
- Iiwdis, *s. pl.* hoods, 19. 332. *See* Hufe.
- Ihwmylly, *adv.* humbly, 9. 302. *See* Humely.
- Ihwnd, *s.* hound, 6. 491. *See* Hund.
- Hy, *s.* haste, hurry, 16. 585; pressing business, 15. 162; *in hy*, in haste, 1. 147, 353, 439, 5. 58, 7. 6, 17. 31. &c. *See* below.

- Hy, *v. reflex.* to hasten himself, to make haste, 3. 635. A.S. *higian*, to hic, make haste.
- Hyar, *adj.* higher, 17. 602. See Hye.
- Hycht, 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise (you), 13. 16; *pt. s.* promised, 2. 206. See Hicht.
- Hycht, *pt. pl.* were called, were named, 2. 243. See Hicht.
- Hycht, *s.* height, 1. 77, 452, 608; *at hycht*, aloft, in good estate, 13. 713. See Hicht.
- Hyd, *v.* to hide, 4. 120; *pp.* Hyd, hidden, 4. 118.
- Hyddillis, *s.* a hiding-place, 5. 306, 436. It is properly not plural, but singular, being the A.S. *hydels*, latibulum. See *hudels* in Stratmann; and see Hiddillis.
- Hyde, *s.* skin, 3. 584; *pl.* Hydys, hides, 2. 511.
- Hydvisly, *adv.* hideously, horribly, 7. 327. See below.
- Hydwisly, *adv.* hideously, horribly, 4. 416, 10. 448, 683.
- Hydwiss, *adj.* hideous, dreadful, 5. 2, 13. 43, 19. 760; also 10. 594 (C.), where Hydwis will hardly rime. See below.
- Hydwouss, *adj.* hideous, terrible, 10. 594 (E.); Hydvouss, terrific, 10. 22. See above.
- Hye, *adj.* high, 2. 33, 11. 308; proud, 9. 85; *hye and law*, high and low, wholly, entirely, 10. 471; *comp.* Hyer, higher, 1. 608; Hyar, 17. 602. See He.
- Hye, *adv.* loudly, 14. 437.
- Hye, *v.* to heighten, exalt, 10. 264, 17. 939; *pt. s.* Hyet, exalted, 10. 288.
- Hye-gat, *s.* highway, 8. 164. See Gat.
- Hyllis, *s. pl.* hills, 2. 508, 11. 185. See Hillis.
- Hyltis, *s. pl.* hilts, 10. 682.
- Hyme, *pron.* him, 9. 465; usually Hym.
- Hyne, *s.* hind; lit. a servant, but here a boy, 11. 217. A.S. *hina*, a domestic servant.
- Hyne (E.), hence, 12. 460. [So in H.; C. om.] A.S. *heonan*, hence.
- Hying, *ger.* to hang, 19. 69; *pp.* Hyngit, hung, 19. 57. See Hing.
- Hynt, *pt. s.* seized, caught, 2. 415, 3. 113, 7. 588, 8. 83, 16. 602; *pt. pl.* Hynt; *hynt of*, took off, 12. 144. A.S. *hentan*, to seize. See Hint.
- Hyr, *poss. pron.* her, 1. 528.
- Hyrcheoune, *s.* an urchin, *i.e.*, hedgehog, 12. 353. O.F. *herisson*, F. *hérisson*, a hedgehog; also applied, in war, to chevaux-de-frise.
- Ic, 1 *p. pron.* I, 1. 384, 619, 2. 20, 5. 411 (E.). A.S. *ic*. See Ik.
- Ieopardies, *s. pl.* skirmishes, 12. 373 (H.).
- Iff, *conj.* if, 3. 96. See Giff.
- Ik, *pron.* I, 1. 617, 2. 46, 3. 110, 5. 506 (E.). See Ic.
- Ik, *adv.* eke, also, 3. 326. See Ek.
- Ile, *s.* isle, island, 3. 577, 681, 4. 339; *pl.* Ilis, 15. 287, 295. O.F. *isle*.
- Ilk, *adj.* same, very, 1. 512; each, 6. 575, 12. 222, 14. 396; Ilke, each, 10. 698. A.S. *ylc*, same; *alc*, each.
- Ilka, *adj.* each, 2. 74, 16. 367, 17. 725; every, 8. 26. See Ilkane.
- Ilkadele, *adv.* in each part, wholly, 20. 166 (E.).
- Ilkane, *for* ilk ane, every one, 2. 404; each one, 15. 64; Ilkan, 2. 334; Ilkone, each one, 11. 383. Sometimes written *ilka*, *g.v.*
- Ill, *adj.* evil, wicked, 3. 103. Icel. *illr*, ill, evil.
- Ill, *s.* evil, sickness, 9. 61.
- Illumynit, *pt. pl.* illumined, 8. 228; *pp.* Illwmynyt, enlightened, 20. 229.
- In, *s.* lodging, 2. 53. A.S. *inn*, a chamber. See Innys.
- Inbryng, *v.* to bring in, introduce, 3. 268.
- Inew, *adj.* enough, 1. 558. See Enew.
- Inewch, *adv.* enough, 1. 286, 627; Inew, 17. 545 (E.).
- Infair, *s.* "an entertainment given to friends, upon newly entering a house," as Jamieson well explains it, 16. 340. A.S. *infær*, an entrance.
- Infermite, *s.* infirmity, 20. 244.
- In-forcelly, *adv.* with great force or strength, 2. 310, 314.
- Inforsit, *pt. pl.* strengthened, 4. 65.
- Ingrevand, *pres. part.* annoying, 13. 210. Lit. 'engrieving.'
- In hy, *adv.* in haste, 16. 445, 690; and very frequently elsewhere. See Hy.
- Iniquite, *s.* iniquity, 1. 470.
- In-myd, *prep.* amid, 12. 576.
- Innouth, *prep.* within, 5. 348. Cf. A.S. *innod*, what is within; but the

- word may be no more than a variation of *inwith*, *q.v.* Cf. also Swed. *inuti*, within.
- Innys, *s. pl.* lodgings, quarters, tents, 2. 1, 11. 137, 12. 330, 13. 506, 14. 90, 17. 482, 20. 354. See *In*.
- Inquir, *v.* to enquire about, 4. 221.
- Instrumentis, *s. pl.* instruments, implements, 17. 342.
- In-sundir, *adv.* asunder, 17. 698.
- Interludys, *s. pl.* interludes, episodes, 10. 145.
- Intermelle, *adv.* confusedly, 14. 215.
- In-till, *prep.* in, into, 1. 186, 2. 71, 2. 218, 11. 261, 15. 159, 285; during, 1. 340.
- Into, *prep.* in, 1. 602, 2. 357, 3. 412, 16. 182; *into the se*, to sea, 20. 321; *into party*, partially, 5. 115. Very common.
- In-twyn, *adv.* asunder, 8. 175.
- Invy, *s.* envy, 4. 225, 15. 405, 16. 344.
- Inward, *adv.* towards the inner part, 10. 397.
- Inweround, *pp.* environed, 11. 607 (E.).
- Inwith, *prep.* within, *in H.*, 5. 348 (*footnote*), 11. 601 (*footnote*). It occurs in Chaucer, C. T., B. 1794.
- Iolely, *adv.* finely, bravely, excellently, 9. 201, 15. 328, 16. 514, 578. See *Ioly*.
- Iolite, *s.* jollity, 16. 48 (E.).
- Ioly, *adj.* festive, inclined to festivity, 1. 332, 8. 455; in good spirits, 4. 517; fine, good, 11. 524; handsome, 12. 180. F. *joli*.
- Journee, *s.* a day's work, a feat of arms, 13. 323; a combat, battle, 20. 494; a successful day's work, 16. 670; battle-day, 13. 721; Journye, a combat, 13. 480; *pl.* Journeis, day's journeys, 14. 315; battles, 16. 22.
- Ioweie, *s.* jewel, 18. 560.
- Ire, *s.* anger, 2. 66, 396.
- Irn, *s.* iron, 10. 364; Irne, 14. 290; *adj.* iron, 10. 361 (E.). For other examples of *irn*, see *iren* in Strattmann.
- Irne-bandis, *s. pl.* iron bands, 17. 616.
- Irusly, *adv.* angrily, 8. 144 (E.).
- Is, 1 *p. pl. pr.* we are, 3. 317.
- Isch, *v.* to issue, to come forth, 2. 248, 258, 278; *pl. s.* Ischyt, 2. 310, 5. 112; Ished, 10. 663 (H.); *pl. pl.* Ischit, 3. 231. O.F. *issir*, Lat. *exire*.
- Ischow, *s.* issue, outlet, 14. 354 (E.).
- Iss, *pr. s.* is, 16. 534.
- Itlandly, 2. 57 (*footnote*); 14. 320 (H.). See *Ythandly*.
- Iugis, *s. pl.* judges, 1. 223.
- Iugis, *imp. pl.* judge ye, consider, 6. 269; *pl. pl.* Iugit, judged, 11. 18; *pp.* judged, 1. 89; adjudged, 19. 68.
- Iuntly, *adv.* exactly, 17. 689. In Wallace, vii. 1148, a bridge is described as "weill and *junctly* maid"; and the phrase "*rycht juntly*," *i.e.*, in close order, occurs in the same, xi. 857. See note, p. 287.
- Iuperdy, *s.* jeopardy, hazard, danger, a hazardous plan or enterprise, a bold attempt, feat, 6. 534, 7. 364, 10. 340, 413, 524, 539, 11. 51, 14, 421; *pl.* Iuperdyss, 10. 145, 19. 632; Iupertyss, 10. 788 (E.).
- Iupertyss, *for* Iuperdyiss, 10. 788 (E.).
- Iustit, *pl. pl.* jousted, 19. 787.
- Iustying, *s.* jousting, 19. 520.
- Iwill, *s.* evil, 4. 735.
- Iwiss, *adv.* verily, certainly, 16. 654. A.S. *gewis*, certain; Du. *gewis*, certainly.
- Karlis, *s. pl.* churls, peasants, 3. 226.
- Icel. *karl*, a peasant.
- Keip, *s.* heed, 1. 95. See *Tane*, *Kep*.
- Ken, *v.* to acknowledge, recognise, perceive, 3. 750, 13. 50; to know, 6. 18, 11. 219; to shew, teach, direct, suggest, 10. 544, 17. 68; *pl. s.* (or *pl.*), Kend, knew, 1. 320, 327; *pp.* Kend, known, 7. 272.
- Icel. *kenna*, to know, teach.
- Kendlyt, *pp.* kindled, 17. 429. Cf. *Icel. kynda*, to kindle; *kyndill*, a candle.
- Kenly, *adv.* keenly, bravely, 5. 365.
- Kennys, *pr. s.* instructs, 4. 748. See *Ken*.
- Kep, *s.* heed; *takand kep*, taking heed, 1. 212. See *Keip*.
- Kepar, *s.* keeper, 10. 552.
- Kepit, *pl. pl.* kept, guarded, 14. 115, 17. 177, 19. 190; watched, 14. 197; *pp.* Kepit, 18. 512; *imp. pl.* Kepys, keep yourselves, 3. 200.
- Kerss, *s.* Carse, *i.e.*, low land beside a river, 12. 392. Cf. *The Carse o' Gourie*. Sw. *kärr*, a fen.
- Kest, *pl. s.* cast, threw, 16. 653, 20. 424; *kest of*, cast off, doffed, 16. 601; *pl. pl.* Kest, 8. 469, 11. 593, 14. 70.
- Keyn, *adj.* keen, bold, 8. 280.

- King, *an error in E. for Ying*, 3. 216 (*footnote*).  
 Kinrik, *s.* kingdom, 5. 168; *pl.* Kinrykis, 1. 551.  
 Kirk, *s.* church, 13. 512. *See* Kyrk.  
 Knaf, *s.* boy (lit. knave), 8. 508; *pl.* Knafis, boys, 9. 375\*. *See* Knave.  
 Knaiff child, *i.e.*, a male child, boy, 13. 693. *So in* Chaucer's *Clerkes Tale*, Group E, 612.  
 Knave, *s.* a boy, 1. 288; *pl.* Knavis, 15. 339.  
 Knaw, *v.* to know, 1. 130, 12. 178; 2 *p. s. pr. subj.* thou mayst know, 9. 752; 1 *p. s. pr.* I know, 7. 100. A.S. *cñawan*. *See* Knawis.  
 Knaw, *a reading in E. for Knaf*, 8. 508 (*footnote*).  
 Knaue, *s.* boy, 3. 585.  
 Knawis, *imp. pl.* know ye, 12. 184; *pp.* Knawin, known, 4. 686, 19. 605; Knawyn, 7. 146, 11. 162; Knawin, experienced, 20. 352. *See* Knaw.  
 Knowlage, *s.* knowledge, 1. 337.  
 Knawyng, *s.* knowledge, 6. 556.  
 Kne, *s.* knee, 11. 366.  
 Knelit, *pt. s.* kneeled, 20. 221; *pl.* 18. 537; Knelyt, 12. 477; *pres. part.* Kneland, 12. 481.  
 Knit, *pp.* closely joined in the rank of battle, 2. 292. *See* Knyt.  
 Knokyt, *pt. pl.* knocked, 2. 59.  
 Nychtis, *s. pl.* knights, 2. 53, 11. 466.  
 Nychtlik, *adv.* in a knightly manner, 15. 53.  
 Knyff, *s.* knife, dagger, 16. 417; Knyff, 10. 416. *See* Knyvis.  
 Knyt, *pt. s.* knit, fastened, closely linked, 16. 396, 611; closely arrayed, 12. 469. *See* Knit.  
 Knyvis, *s. pl.* knives, daggers, 11. 591; Knyvys, 1. 356. *See* Knyff.  
 Kow, *s.* a cow, 18. 275; *pl.* Ky, kine, cows, 6. 405, 10. 381, 15. 338. A.S. *cū*, *pl. cy*.  
 Ky, *s. pl.* cows, 15. 338, &c. *See* above.  
 Kyn, *s.* kindred, 2. 112; *na kyn*, of no kind, 5. 362, 6. 663, 10. 362.  
 Kynde, *adj.* akin, 9. 448.  
 Kyndly, *adj.* preordained by the influence of the stars, 4. 721, 726, 740; naturally, 4. 735.  
 Kyne, *s.* kind; *na kyne*, of no kind, 8. 363. *See* Kyn.  
 Kynrik, *s.* kingdom, 4. 553, 13. 701, 19. 10; Kyngrik, royal power, 1. 57; Kynryk, kingdom, 1. 68, 2. 104; royal power, 1. 158. A.S. *cynerice*, a kingdom.  
 Kyrk, *s.* church, 2. 71, 4. 12. *See* Kirk.  
 Kyrnaill, *s.* a battlement, 10. 365; Kyrneill, 17. 359; Kyrnell, 10. 402. O.F. *crenelle*, F. *creneau*, a battlement.  
 Kyt, *s.* a wooden pail, 18. 168, 223. Jamieson says—"a wooden vessel or pail in which dishes are washed." Cf. A.S. *cytel*, a kettle.  
 Ladis, *s. pl.* loads, 8. 450, 463, 467.  
 Laddis, *s. pl.* lads, 13. 341.  
 Ladeis, *s. gen.* lady's; *our ladeis ewin mary*, our Lady Mary's eve, 17. 335.  
 Lafe, *s.* the remainder, the rest, 8. 507; Laiff, 5. 370; Laif, 17. 920. A.S. *lāf*, the remainder. *See* Layff, Lave.  
 Laigh, *adj.* low, 13. 651 (H.).  
 Lame, *s.* loam, earth, the grave, 19. 256 (H.).  
 Lamytt, *pp.* lamed, 4. 284.  
 Land; *land to tak*, to land, disembark, 16. 557; *tuk land*, disembarked, 16. 551.  
 Landar, *s.* laundress, 16. 273. F. *lavandière*. *See* Lauender.  
 Land-brist, *s.* surf, breakers on the shore, 4. 444. Cf. Icel. *brestr*, crash, clash, rattle.  
 Landis, *s. pl.* lands, 11. 125.  
 Lang, *adv.* long, 4. 118, 7. 109, 10. 565; a long time, 9. 749.  
 Langar, *adv.* longer, 4. 43.  
 Langes, *pr. s. impers.* belongs, 1. 162 (*footnote*).  
 Langir, *adj. comp.* longer, 1. 598, 622; Langar, 6. 554, 7. 547.  
 Lansit, *pt. s.* leapt, sprang, dashed quickly, 8. 25; Lansyt, 3. 122. Cf. F. *se lancer*, to rush upon.  
 Lanss, *s.* leap, dash, 10. 414. *See* above.  
 Lap, *pt. s.* leapt, 9. 566, 13. 658; *pl.* 10. 238, 242, 660; *lap on*, sing., took horse, 2. 28, 142, 5. 214; *pl.*, 2. 14, 3. 345.  
 Lardenere, *s.* larder, 5. 410.  
 Larg, *adj.* liberal, 1. 363; Large, 11. 148. O.F. *larger*, liberal.  
 Largess, *s.* bounty, 10. 288, 20. 224 (E.); liberty; *at his largess*, at large, at full liberty, 7. 378.  
 Laseir, *s.* leisure, 13. 602; Lasare, 5.



- 390; *Laser*, 13. 59; *Lasair*, 6. 660.  
*See Layser.*
- Lat*, *imp. s.* let, permit, 1. 78, 498;  
*pt. s.* caused, directed, 11. 484 (E.);  
*pt. pl.* *Lete*, let, 9. 184. *See Let*,  
*v.* to let alone.
- Lat*, *s.* let, hindrance, 12. 516.
- Lat*, *adj.* late, 7. 236. *See Layt.*
- Late*, *s.* gesture, demeanour, 7. 127.  
*Icel. ldi*, manners.
- Lauchand*, *pres. part.* laughing, 2. 34.
- Laucht*, *adj.* low, small, 11. 19 (E.).
- Lauchtane*, *for* *Lawchtane*, 19. 672  
 (E.). *See Lawchtane.*
- Lauender*, *s.* laundress, 16. 292 (E. and  
 H.), 16. 273 (H.). *See Landar.*
- Launce*, *s.* a jump, spring, leap, 10.  
 414 (E.). *See Lansa.*
- Laute*, *s.* loyalty, fidelity, 5. 162, 10.  
 285, 13. 711, 19. 140, 20. 552. O.F.  
*leaute*. *See Lawte.*
- Lave*, *s.* the remnant, the rest, 2. 306,  
 368, 15. 172 (E.), 15. 372. *See Lufe*,  
*Laif*.
- Law*, *adj.* low, 13. 653\*, 17. 380, 729.  
*See Lawch.*
- Law*, *adj. as sb.* a low place, 3. 707;  
 the low part of the country, 6.  
 518.
- Law*, *adv.* low, in a low voice, 4. 200;  
 low, 8. 474; to the bottom, 10.  
 124; *hye and law*, high and low,  
 wholly, altogether, 4. 594, 10. 471;  
*hey na law*, none of any sort, 3. 556.  
*See Cleyn*, *adv.*
- Lawch*, *adj.* low, 13. 651, 14. 339.  
*Icel. ldr*, low.
- Lawchtane*, *adj.* made of cloth (?), 19.  
 672. So explained by Jamieson;  
 but perhaps "woollen" is meant.  
*Cf. Icel. lagdr*, a lock of wool.
- Lawer*, *adj. comp.* lower, 1. 58.
- Lawit*, *pp.* lowered, brought low, 13.  
 658.
- Lawit*, *an error for* *Lamit*, 4. 284  
 (footnote).
- Lawte* (*for* *lawete*), loyalty, *i.e.*, truth,  
 1. 125; fidelity, loyalty, 1. 364, 14.  
 10, 18. 122, 20. 147, 516, 562; true  
 word of honour, 12. 318. *See Laute.*
- Layd*, *pp.* laid; *layd at erd*, laid upon  
 the earth, overthrown, 3. 16.
- Layd-men*, *s. pl.* lit. load-men, *i.e.*,  
 men in charge of a pack-horse, 8.  
 466. *See Ladis.*
- Layff*, *s.* the remainder, the rest, 7.  
 24, 10. 460, 11. 179, 12. 140, 13.  
 413. *See Lufe*, *Laif*, *Lave*.
- Layit*, *pp.* laid, *in E.*, 5. 388 (footnote).
- Layndar*, *s.* laundress, 16. 273 (E.),  
 16. 292. *See Landar.*
- Layser*, *s.* leisure, 20. 234 (E.). *See*  
*Laseir.*
- Layt*, *adj.* late, 14. 164. *See Lat.*
- Leawte*, loyalty, fidelity, truth, 1. 400,  
 576, 5. 530. *See Lawte.*
- Lechis*, *s. pl.* leeches, doctors, 5. 437,  
 17. 485. A.S. *læce*, a physician.
- Lechyng*, *s.* healing, 13. 46.
- Ledar*, *s.* leader, *i.e.*, governor, 3. 660;  
 a leader, 2. 260; the man who holds  
 the hound in the leash, 7. 20;  
*Ledeir*, leader, 11. 522; *pl.* *Ledaris*,  
 leaders, 11. 160.
- Leddir*, *s.* a ladder, 9. 384, 10. 546,  
 557, 642; *pl.* *Ledderis*, ladders, 9.  
 314, 10. 360, 17. 34.
- Lede*, *v.* to carry (hay), 10. 165. *Lead*  
 is still used provincially in this sense.  
*See Leid.*
- Leding*, *s.* government, lit. leading, 1.  
 579, 2. 90; command, 15. 302;  
 company, 9. 19; *Ledyng*, command,  
 20. 411.
- Lee*, *v.* to give the lie; *a bad reading*  
*in E. in* 7. 623; see footnote and  
 note to the line.
- Leeching*, *s.* attendance by a medical  
 man, 15. 84 (H.). *See Lechyng.*
- Leesing*, *s.* a lie, untruth, *in H.*, 5.  
 510 (footnote). A.S. *læsung*, a  
 falsehood.
- Leffyt*, *pt. s.* remained, became, 4.  
 264 (footnote).
- Left*, *pt. s.* left, *i.e.*, ceased, 15. 126;  
*pp.* left, 19. 584.
- Left*, *pt. pl.* left, *i.e.*, lost, 16. 456  
 (E.).
- Left*, *pt. pl.* remained, 6. 31.
- Lege*, *adj.* free, full, uncontrolled;  
*lege pouste*, full power, 5. 165. *See*  
*F. lige* in Brachet's Etym. Fr. Dict.,  
 where *lige* is derived from G. *ledig*,  
 free. A *liege lord* is a free lord;  
*see* Mahn's Webster.
- Leid*, *v.* to lead, 1. 270, 11. 413; to  
 control, govern, 1. 38; to carry hay,  
 10. 195. *See Leyd*, *Lede*.
- Leif*, *v.* to leave, 4. 608; to leave,  
 quit, 6. 193, 17. 519, 18. 146; to  
 leave off, 6. 157, 10. 159. A.S.  
*læfan*.
- Leif*, *to, ger.* to leave (= to be left),  
 6. 335. *See above.*
- Leif*, *s.* leave, 4. 582, 5. 176; *Leiff*,  
 16. 8; *but leif*, without leave, 17.  
 863.
- Leiffand*, *pres. part.* living, 2. 548.

- Leill, *adj.* leal, trusty, 4. 576, 5. 293, 10. 270, 17. 560. *See* Lele, Leyle.
- Leiss, *v.* to lose, 12. 124, 17. 516.
- Leit, *pt. s.* considered, 19. 680; *let*, 5. 623, 14. 355; *pt. pl.* Leit, *let*, 14. 412; *leit lichtly*, *pres. pl.* think lightly, 12. 250; *pt. s. subj.* Leit, would *let*, 17. 850. A.S. *lætan*.
- Lele, *adj.* leal, loyal, true, 1. 375, 5. 296. *See* Leill, Leyle. O.F. *loial*, *leal*, loyal.
- Lelely, *adv.* leally, faithfully, loyally, 2. 171, 13. 545, 19. 202, 20. 134; *Lely*, 1. 436, 19. 190, 20. 349; *Lelyly*, 3. 176.
- Lemand, *pres. part.* gleaming, 8. 226 (H.). *See* below.
- Leme, *s.* a flame, 11. 191 (E.). A.S. *lōma*, a ray of light.
- Lemman, *s.* sweetheart, 15. 351 (E.). A.S. *leof man*.
- Lendit, *pt. s.* dwelt, 5. 125. *Icel. lemda*, to land, settle. *See* Leynd.
- Lenteryne, *s.* Lent, spring-season, 10. 815; *Lentryne*, 10. 815 (E.). A.S. *lencten*, spring; and *ryne*, a course.
- Lenth, *s.* length, 1. 531.
- Lenye, *adj.* lean, thin; but probably with the additional notion of supple, 1. 387. Cf. "*Lennock*, slender, pliable. *North*;" Halliwell.
- Lepe out, *i.e.*, come forward, be drawn from its place of concealment, 18. 502. *See* Lap.
- Lesing, *s.* lying, falsehood, 4. 480, 19. 122; *but lesing*, without lying, truly, 13. 231; *Lesyng*, 3. 521, 7. 77, 16. 23. A.S. *læsung*, a falsehood.
- Lesit, *pp.* lost, 13. 629; *pt. pl.* lost, 17. 166, 18. 160; *Lesyt*, lost, 16. 456. A.S. *lōsan*, to lose.
- Less, *adj. pl.* less; *less and mare*, less and greater, all of them, 5. 338, 8. 120.
- Less, *adv.* less, 8. 121, 11. 223.
- Lessit, *pt. pl.* lost, 12. 347. *See* Lesit.
- Lessyt, *an error in editions for* Leflyt, *i.e.*, remained, 4. 264 (*footnote*).
- Lest, *v.* to last, endure, 7. 65; *ger.* to last, 19. 188 (E.); *pr. s. subj.* may lose, 1. 14; *pt. s.* Lestit, lasted, 14. 202, 17. 866, 20. 272; *pp.* Lestit, lasted, 19. 229; *pres. part.* Lestand, lasting, 5. 520, 8. 520, 16. 531, 19. 204. A.S. *læstan*, to last.
- Lest, *pr. s. impers.* it pleases, 7. 314. A.S. *lystan*, to please.
- Lest, *sup. adj.* least, 6. 537; fewest in numbers, 16. 187.
- Lest, *s.* last (?); *a misreading for* Frest, 2. 277 (*footnote*).
- Lesting, *s.* lasting, endurance, 9. 283.
- Lesyt, *an error for* Sesyt, seized, 10. 759 (E.).
- Let, *v.* to let alone, neglect, 1. 254; to relinquish, leave off, 1. 299, 5. 621; *pt. pl.* Lete, *let*, 9. 184; *pt. s.* Letted, ceased, left off, 15. 126 (H.). A.S. *lætan*, to release.
- Let, *v.* to hinder, delay, 11. 276, 16. 557, 19. 210; to prevent, 3. 362, 12. 302; *pr. s. subj.* Let, hinder, consign to oblivion, 1. 15; *pt. s.* Lettit, hindered, 10. 320; Lettyt, stopped, 3. 241; Lettit, prevented, 13. 279; hindered, 16. 329; *pt. pl.* Lettit, prevented, 10. 64. A.S. *lettan*, to prevent, hinder.
- Let, *s.* hindrance, delay, 1. 598, 622, 2. 31, 179, 3. 690, 6. 554, 9. 408, 535, 19. 449; obstacle, 7. 172.
- Letless, *adj. or adv.* without let, without hindrance, 16. 568. *See* Let, *s.*
- Letting, *s.* delay, hindrance, 2. 29, 3. 397, 613, 4. 489; Lettyng, 11. 278.
- Lettir, *s.* letter, *i.e.*, written account, text, 10. 353; *pl.* Lettrys, deeds, 20. 44; *pt. as sing.* Lettres, a letter, 2. 80; Letteris, 17. 39.
- Leuand, *pres. part.* living, 15. 183 (E.).
- Leuir, *adv.* rather, 3. 228.
- Leve, *v.* to remain, 3. 584; *pr. s.* Levis, leaves, 6. 349; *1 p. pl. pr. subj.* Leve, we leave (it) alone, 12. 196 (E.); *imp. pl.* Levys, leave, 3. 324; *pt. s.* Levit, left, 8. 277, 9. 423; Levyt, remained, 3. 282; Levit, gave (him) leave, 16. 9; permitted, 19. 126; *pt. pl.* Levit, left, 14. 301, 20. 480; left behind, 13. 623; *pp.* Levit, left, 5. 371, 10. 460, 13. 24, 619, 14. 309, 17. 474, 18. 501; given leave, permitted (*or* dismissed), 20. 355; *levit of*, dismissed by, 20. 577; Levyt, left, 20. 112 (E.).
- Leve, *s.* leave, 11. 649 (E.); *pl.* Levis, leave-takings, 16. 689. *See* Leyf.
- Leverè, *s.* delivery, 14. 233 (E.).
- Leve-takyng, *s.* leave-taking, 3. 347.
- Levys, *pr. s.* lives, 1. 228, 3. 378; *pt. s.* Levyt, lived, 1. 331, 2. 508; *pt. pl.* .. 275; *pp.* Levyt, 1. 233. A.S. *leoſtan*, to live.

- Lewand, *for* Liffand, living, 7. 359 (E.).
- Lewe, *v.* to leave, 19. 407; to remain, 16. 275; *pt. s.* Lewyt, left, finished, 3. 568; left off, 15. 126 (E.); permitted, 19. 126 (E.); *pt. s.* Lewyt, remained, 13. 619 (E.); *pp.* Lewit, left, 20. 112; Lewyt, 3. 593. *See* Leve, *v.*
- Lewys, *s. pl.* leave-takings, 20. 109 (E.); Lewis, leaves, 16. 67. *See* Leve, *s.*
- Leyd, *pr. s. imp.* may He lead, 8. 263. *See* Leid, Lede.
- Leyf, *s.* leave, 5. 253. *See* Leve.
- Leyff, *v.* to leave, 19. 421; Leyve, to leave undone, 1. 247.
- Leyff, *v.* to live, 1. 212, 3. 265.
- Leyle, *adj.* leal, true, 2. 516. *See* Leill.
- Leyme, *s.* flame, 11. 191. *See* Leme.
- Leynd, *v.* to remain, dwell, stay, 3. 747; *pt. s.* Leyndyt, waited, tarried, 5. 125 (E.). *See* Lendit.
- Leysch, *s.* leash, 7. 414.
- Leyt, *pt. s.* let, 10. 232. *See* Leit.
- Liaud, *pres. part.* lying, staying, 5. 571, 6. 312, 9. 105, 14. 222, 17. 491, 18. 356, 478, 19. 315, 568, 646, 801, 20. 17, 24; waiting, 15. 549. *See* Ly.
- Libbard, *s.* leopard, 14. 2; Libard, 15. 524.
- Licht, *s.* light, 6. 216.
- Licht, *adj.* light, 13. 56; idle, 7. 112; active, 10. 61.
- Lichtit, *pt. s.* alighted, 14. 121; *pl.* 18. 407; *pp.* 13. 588, 14. 183, 18. 463.
- Lichtly, *adv.* easily, 12. 46, 459, 15. 337, 16. 616.
- Liff, *s.* life, 10. 417; *on lif*, alive, 7. 65; *pl.* Liffis, lives, 4. 137; Liffys, 2. 527.
- Liff, *a misprint in editions for* Liffis, 2. 498 (*footnote*).
- Liffand, *pres. part.* living, 4. 227, 7. 100, 13. 322, 18. 240; alive, 15. 183; *pt. s.* Liffit, lived, 5. 508, 10. 487; *pr. pl.* Liffis, live, 1. 366; *pp.* Lift, 12. 281, 17. 927.
- Lift, *s.* sky, 16. 692. A.S. *lyft*, air, sky.
- Lik, *v.* to please, 4. 389; *pr. s.* Likis, it pleases, 3. 170, 6. 655; *pt. s.* Likit, it pleased, 1. 505, 17. 272; *pres. part.* Likand, pleasing, 1. 9. A.S. *lician*, to delight.
- Lik, *adj.* likely, probable, 16. 324.
- Liking, *s.* pleasure, joy, 1. 199, 10. 793, 19. 112, 20. 620; liberty, liberty to please oneself, 1. 226, 247; *at liking*, at their ease, 3. 560. *See* Lyking.
- Liklynes, *s.* (1) likeness, 3. 88; (2) likelihood, 11. 244.
- Liknyt, *pp.* likened, 1. 396, 11. 367, 14. 314.
- Lingand, *pres. part.* forming a line, 19. 356 (E.).
- Lisnyt, *pt. s.* listened, 6. 72, 9. 685.
- List, *pr. s.* pleases, 3. 519. A.S. *lystan*, to please. *See* Lest.
- Litill, *adj.* little, 1. 173, 9. 2; Littill, 12. 19.
- Littar, *s.* a litter, 9. 106.
- Liverye, *s.* livery, 19. 36.
- Lochit, *pp.* lodged (?); *a poor reading in C. for* Lowysyt, 6. 253 (*footnote*). *See* Lowss.
- Loft; *on loft*, aloft, 13. 652. *See* Lift.
- Loge, *s.* lodge, tent, 19. 660 (E.); *pl.* Logis, lodges, lodging, 7. 550. *See* Luge.
- Logyng, *s.* lodging, place of encampment, 2. 282.
- Logyt thaim, *pt. pl. reflex.* lodged, 2. 304.
- Lompnyt, *for* Lownyt, 15. 276 (E.). *See* Lownyt.
- Lordingis, *s. pl.* sirs, 1. 445, 4. 550 (*footnote*), 11. 271, 16. 614.
- Lorn, *pp.* lost, 7. 44; Lorne, 10. 106. A.S. *geloren*, lost, *pp.* of *leosan*, to lose.
- Losengeour, *s.* a lying fellow, 4. 108. O.F. *losange*, a lie; *losangeor*, a liar.
- Losit, *pt. pl.* were lost, perished, 18. 176. *See* below.
- Lossit, *pt. pl.* lost, 11. 590; Lossyt, 16. 232 (E.); 18. 160 (E.).
- Louch, *s.* loch, lake, 3. 430, 14. 354; *gen. sing.* Louchhis, 3. 414.
- Louch, *for* Clewch, 16. 386 (E.).
- Louchside, *s.* loch-side, side of a lake, 3. 109.
- Loud and still, *adv.* under all circumstances, 3. 745. *See* Halliwell's Dict.
- Loup, *s.* a leap, 10. 414 (H.). *See* Lowp.
- Loving, *s.* praise, 6. 326, 16. 534; Lovyng, 4. 549, 6. 283, 12. 124.
- Lovit, *pt. s.* praised, 17. 918; *pt. pl.* 4. 515, 6. 314, 7. 294, 8. 106, 12. 152, 14. 311, 18. 564; *pres. part.*

- Lovand, 8. 377; *pp.* Lovit, 5. 649, 19. 297; Lovyt, 1. 406, 476. A.S. *lofian*, to praise.
- Low, *s.* flame, 4. 124. Icel. *logi*, a flame.
- Lowand, *pres. part.* praising, 8. 377 (E.). *See* Lovit.
- Lownyt, *pp.* sheltered, 15. 276. Icel. *logn*, Swed. *lugn*, calm; *see* loun, in Jamieson. (J. reads *lompnyl*, as in E., and renders it "laid with trees.")
- Lowp, *v.* to leap, 13. 652. Icel. *hlaupa*, to leap.
- Lowp, *s.* a leap, 6. 638. *See* above.
- Lowss, *v.* to loose, 10. 765; *pp.*
- Lowsyt, loosened, 6. 253. Icel. *losa*, to loosen; A.S. *lōsan*.
- Lowtyt, *pt. s.* made obeisance to, 2. 154; Lowtit, bowed down, 5. 253. A.S. *hlūtan*, to bow.
- Lowyng, *s.* praise, 3. 543. *See* Loving.
- Lowyt, *pt. s.* loved, 10. 285 (E.). *See* below.
- Luff, *s.* love, 2. 515, 520; *gen. pl.*
- Luffis, of their lady-loves, 3. 349; *acc. pl.* 3. 351. A.S. *lufu*.
- Luffand, *pres. part.* loving; hence, kind, 1. 363, 4. 7, 5. 41 (E.); 1 *p. s. pt. t.* Lufit, I loved, 10. 554; *pt. s.* Lufit, 6. 491, 8. 492, 10. 285, 292, 13. 475, 584, 16. 672, 20. 516; Luffyt, 1. 364; Luffit, 6. 498; *pt. pl.* Lufit, 7. 136; Lufyt, 1. 360; *pr. s.* Lufis, loves, 16. 599; *gerund.* Luff, to be loved, 1. 365. A.S. *lufian*.
- Luffely, *adv.* lovingly, 17. 315 (E.).
- Luffy, *adj.* lovable, pleasing, 1. 389.
- Lufre, *s.* delivery, gift, 14. 233. Jamieson has "*lovery, lufray*, bounty; Dunbar." The word is a mere corruption of O.F. *livree*, a present of food, or of clothes; E. *livery*.
- Luf-tenand, *s.* lieutenant, 14. 139, 255.
- Luge, *s.* lodge, tent, hut, 19. 653, 660; *a reading in C. for* Lugas, 7. 550 (*footnote*); Luggis, lodges, sort of tents, 19. 392. F. *loge*.
- Luging, *s.* lodging, 4. 494, 6. 1.
- Lugit, *pt. pl.* lodged, 9. 203, 11. 138; *refl.* 9. 206, 19. 478; *pp.* Lugit, lodged, 7. 516. F. *loger*.
- Luk, *v.* to look, *see*, ascertain, 1. 350, 8. 419; *imp. pl.* Luk, take care, 12. 217; *pt. s.* Lukit, 4. 321, 616, 18. 37, 19. 669; Lukyt, 6. 667; *pres. part.* Lukand, looking, 3. 579.
- Lukyit, *pt. s.* looked at, observed, 1. 613. *See* above.
- Lump, *s.* a heap, 15. 229; crowd, 19. 377 (E.); company, 15. 342 (E.).
- Lurdane, *s.* a lazy fellow, rascal, 4. 108. O.F. *lourdein*, a blockhead, lazy fellow (Roquefort); Mod. F. *lourdaud*, a blockhead; from *lourd*, dull.
- Lurkand, *pres. part.* lurking, 5. 192, 7. 71, 8. 474; Lurkande, 10. 627.
- Lusumly, *adv.* lovesomely, lovingly, 17. 315.
- Lwmp, *s.* crowd, throng, 19. 377. *See* Lump.
- Ly, *v.* to lie, lodge, dwell, 1. 358, 9. 59, 14. 66; to be laid upon (him), 4. 581; to lodge, 18. 291; *pr. s.* Lyis, lies, 20. 546; is lodging, 5. 77; *pres. part.* Lyand, 5. 473, 6. 166, 9. 46, 10. 510, 13. 661, 17. 647, 19. 673; *pp.* Lyin, lain, 11. 355. A.S. *licgan*.
- Lycht, *adj.* light, 2. 521. *See* Licht.
- Lychtly, *adv.* 6. 638. *See* Lichtly.
- Lychttyt, *pt. pl.* lightened, 3. 624; *pp.* Lychttyt, 3. 616. (Used of lightening a ship.)
- Lyff, *s.* life, 1. 108, 270, 607; *off lyve*, alive, 1. 293; *pl.* Lyffis, lives, 10. 106. *See* Liff.
- Lyffand, *pres. part.* living, 2. 169. *See* Liffand.
- Lyff-dayis, *s. pl.* life-days, *i.e.*, length of life, 3. 293.
- Lyking, *s.* pleasure, 14. 17. *See* Liking.
- Lyknyt, *pp.* likened, compared; *mycht lyknyt*, might have compared, 3. 73. *See* Liknyt.
- Lymmys, *s. pl.* limbs, 1. 108, 385, 398.
- Lyne be lyne, *i.e.*, line by line, from beginning to end, 17. 84.
- Lyng, *s.* a line, direct course; only in phrase *in a lyng*, straight forward, 2. 417, 19. 285; and *intill a lyng*, 6. 560, 12. 49.
- Lynt, *s.* lint, 17. 612.
- Lynyng, *adj.* linen, 13. 422.
- Lypnyng, *s.* trust, 12. 238; Lypynyng (E.). *See* *lipnen*, to trust, in Stratmann.
- Lyve-tyme, lifetime, 1. 308.
- Lyvis, *s. pl.* lives, 11. 590, 12. 245. *See* Liff.
- Lyvys, *pr. pl.* live, 1. 293; *pt. pl.* Lywytt, 1. 19. *See* Liffand, Levys.

- Ma, v.** to make, 1. 33, 5. 9, 7. 121, 11. 340; *pres. s. subj.* Ma, may make, 2. 6, 4. 561; *ma weill of*, to make much of, praise, 16. 592. *See also* Mais, Makand.
- Ma, pr. s.** may, 7. 533; *ma fall*, it may happen, perhaps, 9. 376.
- Ma, adj.** more (in number), 2. 9, 7. 261, 8. 398, 11. 636, 12. 565, 14. 273, 16. 497; others, 5. 152. *A.S. mā.*
- Macyss, s. pl.** maces, 12. 579, 13. 17. *O.F. mace*, a mace. *See* Mas.
- Mad, pp.** made, 12. 122.
- Magre, s.** ill will, 17. 60. *O.F. mal grē*; whence also the prep. below.
- Magre, prep.** in spite of, 1. 453, 2. 112, 3. 451, 4. 738, 8. 80, 9. 675, 12. 464, 17. 789, 18. 453; *magre his*, in spite of him, 2. 124, 3. 125, 4. 194; *magre thairis*, in spite of them, 4. 153, 10. 118, 13. 170, &c.
- Maieste, s.** majesty, 1. 132, 431.
- Mail3e, s.** mail (armour), 11. 107 (E.). *See* Male.
- Maill-eiss, s.** disease, 20. 75. *See* Male-ess.
- Mair, adv.** more, 7. 371; *mair and mair*, more and more, 12. 563.
- Mais, pr. s.** makes, 6. 234, 12. 252; *Maiss*, 2. 330, 469; *pl.* Mais, make, 11. 368; *pt. s.* Maid, made, 5. 297, 17. 5; 2 *p. pt. s. subj.* wouldst have made, 1. 428; *ph.* Maid, made; *ves maid*, had become, 13. 683; *weill maid*, well-shaped, 1. 385. *See* Ma, Makand.
- Maist, adj. superl.** most, greatest, 1. 131, 459; supreme, 1. 178.
- Maistres, s.** mistress, 1. 550.
- Mr'stri, s.** mastery, open violence, 1. 112.
- Maistris, s. pl.** arts, 19. 182.
- Makand, pres. part.** making, 9. 137;
- Makis, pr. s.** makes, 16. 276; *pp.* Makyn, made, 19. 375\*. *See* Mais, Ma.
- Malencoly, s.** dudgeon, 16. 128.
- Male, s.** mail, 11. 107. *O.F. maille*, from Lat. *macula*.
- Male-ess, s.** disease, 20. 73. *See* Maill-ese. *F. mal aise.*
- Malice, for** Mal ese, *i.e.*, disease, 20. 493 (E.).
- Man, 2 p. pl. pr.** ye must, 7. 137. *Icel. munu.*
- Manance, an error in editions for** Manauce, 3. 608 (footnote); so also
- Mananss should rather be** Manans, 17. 664. *See* Manauce.
- Manasing, s.** menacing, 8. 408.
- Manauce, s.** menacing, threatening, 3. 608; *pl.* Manaus (a better reading than Mananss), threats, 17. 664. *F. menace*; *O.F. manache*, a threat.
- Manausyt, pt. s.** menaced, 2. 68; *Mannausit*, 11. 150.
- Mandment, s.** commandment, 4. 85, 332. It occurs in *P. Plowman*.
- Mane, s.** main, strength, 5. 454, 6. 318.
- Maner, s.** manner, 1. 4, 11. 501; *Maneir*, 7. 220.
- Maner, s.** manor, mansion, 16. 337.
- Manerlik, adv.** mannerly, correctly, properly, 3. 72.
- Mangery (E.), s.** feast, 20. 67. It occurs in *P. Plowman*, *C.* 13. 46.
- Manheid, s.** manhood, valour, 3. 162, 6. 122, 7. 223, 15. 151, 19. 105; *Manhede*, 19. 589.
- Mankynd, s.** human nature, 4. 530.
- Manland, s.** mainland, 3. 389.
- Manlyly, adv.** in a manly manner, 2. 486, 14. 275, 282 (E.); *Manlily*, 8. 315 (E.); *Manlely*, 3. 149.
- Mannasyng, s.** threatening, menace, 4. 528, 6. 621.
- Mannausit, pt. pl.** menaced, 11. 150. *See* Manausyt.
- Mannys, gen. sing.** man's, 1. 10.
- Manrent, s.** homage, 5. 296, 16. 303, 20. 129\*; *Manredyn*, 16. 303 (E.); 20. 129\* (E.). The latter is perhaps the more correct form; cf. the *A.S.* suffix *-ræden*.
- Manteme, v.** to maintain, 4. 573; *Manteym*, 10. 779, 11. 318, 11. 231 (E.); *Manteyme*, 10. 184 (E.), 16. 34; *pt. s.* Mantemyt, maintained, 10. 289, 20. 605; *pl.* 13. 280, 15. 52.
- Mantill, s.** mantle, cloak, 5. 317, 19. 672.
- Mar, adj.** more, longer, greater (with reference to *size* rather than *number*, and frequently used after the preposition *but, i.e.*, without), 1. 142, 2. 12, 12. 314; *less and mare*, all, 5. 338; *in less and mare*, in every way, 4. 568.
- Mar, v.** to mar, spoil, 17. 930.
- Marchandiss, s.** merchandise, 9. 440.
- Marchand-shippis, s. pl.** merchant-ships, 19. 193.

- Marcheand, *pres. part.* bordering upon, 1. 99. *See* below.  
 Marchis, *s. pl.* marches, *i.e.*, borders, 15. 403, 431, 531, 16. 434, 17. 221. Icel. *mark*, A.S. *mearc*, a mark, boundary.  
 Marrass, *s.* morass, marsh, 6. 55, 11. 287; *pl.* Marrass (or Marrasis), morasses, marshes, 8. 35. O.F. *marois*, *mareis*, F. *marais*.  
 Marschall, *s.* marshal, *i.e.*, steward, 2. 4, 11. 456, 13. 54, 89.  
 Martirdome, *s.* slaughter, 6. 289, 8. 58; massacre, 18. 326.  
 Martymes, *s.* Martinmas, 9. 127.  
 Mas, *s. pl.* maces, 11. 600; Mase, 13. 17 (E.); Masis, 11. 600 (E.). O.F. *mace*, *pl.* *maces*.  
 Masonis, *s. pl.* masons, 17. 937.  
 Mast, *adj. superl.* most (with reference to *size* or *importance*, not often to number), principal, chief, 5. 446, 8. 11, 9. 421; greatest, 11. 470, 17. 95, 316, 470, 818. *See* Maist, and Forss.  
 Mast, *adv.* most, 11. 244, 508.  
 Masteris, *s. pl.* masters, 4. 411.  
 Masterit, *pl. s.* mastered, overcame, 7. 211.  
 Mastrice, *s.* mastery, superiority, superior forces, 4. 524; a feat of skill, 6. 566. (A *sing. sb.* to be distinguished from the succeeding one.) O.F. *maistrice*, skill.  
 Mastry, *s.* mastery, a difficult feat, 4. 706; force, 7. 354; *pl.* Mastriss, forces, 18. 260. O.F. *maistrice*, skill.  
 Mate, *adj.* dispirited, 17. 794. O.F. *mat*, feeble, dispirited.  
 Mater, *s.* matter, cause, 4. 216, 11. 320; Matir, 3. 301.  
 Maturite, *s.* slowness, deliberation, 11. 583.  
 Maucht, *s.* might, 2. 421, 12. 534, 15. 489, 19. 588; Mawcht, 11. 439. A.S. *meaht*.  
 Mawch, *s.* kinsman, 15. 274\*. Icel. *maðr*, A.S. *mað*, a kinsman.  
 Mawite, *s.* wickedness, 4. 730; malicious intent, 5. 524; Mavite, 6. 212, 19. 235; Mawyte, evil, guile, 1. 126, 19. 235 (E.). O.F. *mautê*.  
 Mawyte, Mautie, *errors in* 6. 252 (*footnote*).  
 May, *adj. pl.* more in number, 1. 458, 2. 229. *See* Ma.  
 May, *pr. s.* is able; *see* *Mychtis*; 3. 366.  
 Mayn, *s.* main, strength, 1. 444, 2. 38, 6. 261, 9. 152, 19. 452; Mayne, 10. 634. *See* Mane.  
 Mayn, *s.* moan, lament, 5. 175, 15. 235; Mayne, 20. 277.  
 Maynteym, *v.* to maintain, 2. 189, 11. 263; Maynteme, 8. 252, 10. 184; *pr. pl. subj.* Maynteyme, may maintain, 13. 709; *pl. s.* Mayntemyt him, maintained himself, 2. 486. *See* Manteme.  
 Mayr, *adj.* more, 1. 39.  
 Mayr, *adv.* more, 7. 555. *See* Mar.  
 Mayss, *pr. s.* makes, causes, 1. 226, 510; *pl.* make, 1. 249. *See* Mais.  
 Mayst, *adv.* most, 1. 46. *See* Maist.  
 Meased, *pp.* moderated, 16. 134 (H.).  
 Meekle, *adj.* great, 2. 245\*. *See* Mekill.  
 Meill, *s.* meal, 5. 398, 505.  
 Meit, *v.* to meet, 5. 59, 6. 203;  
 Meite, 3. 395; *ger.* Meit, 16. 40;  
*imp. pl.* Meit, meet ye, 12. 226.  
 Meite, *s.* meat, 3. 393. *See* Met.  
 Mekill, *adj.* much, 1. 170, 246;  
 great, 1. 402, 17. 183, 18. 308; big, 16. 625. A.S. *micel*.  
 Mekly, *adv.* meekly, 11. 258.  
 Melland, *pres. part.* mixing, mingling, 16. 65. O.F. *mesler*, *meller*, to mix.  
 Mellè, *s.* an affray, fight, battle, contest, combat, 6. 361, 635, 7. 360, 622, 630, 10. 184, 433, 11. 379, 497, 13. 401, 14. 63, 232, 15. 367, 16. 188, 515, 18. 185; *originally* a mixture, medley, 5. 404; *pl.* Melleis, conflicts, 17. 120. O.F. *meslee*, *medlee*, *mellee*, from the verb *mesler*, which from Low Lat. *misculare*, a frequentative of Lat. *miscere*, to mix, mingle. Our *medley* answers to the O.F. form *medlee*; whilst the O.F. *mellee* has clearly given rise to the modern "mill" in the sense of fight.  
 Mellit, *pp.* mixed together, 5. 409, 6. 356, 10. 517, 15. 68, 17. 614. *See* above.  
 Mellyng, *s.* encounter, 7. 481; Mellyne, medley, 5. 406. *See* Mellè.  
 Menand, *pres. part.* moaning over, lamenting, 3. 186, 7. 232, 8. 358. A.S. *mænnan*, to moan.  
 Mencione, *s.* mention, 6. 494, 17. 469.  
 Mengit, *pl. s.* mingled, mixed, 6. 360. A.S. *mengian*, to mix.  
 Mengze, *s.* company, 2. 75, 227, 475.

3. 39; Mengne, host, 3. 105. *See* Menje.
- Menit, *pl. s.* bemoaned, lamented, 5. 451. *See* Menyt.
- Mennys, *gen. pl.* men's, 1. 583, 2. 218.
- Menovny, *s. pl.* minnows, 2. 577.
- Mensk, *s.* honour, 4. 549, 13. 264, 16. 621. Icel. *mennska*, humanity; *mennskr*, human; cf. A.S. *mennisc*, mannish, human.
- Menskfully, *adv.* honourably, 19. 86. *See* above.
- Mensky, *for* Menskfully, 19. 86 (E.).
- Menyng, *s.* remembrance, 4. 326. *See* Menys.
- Menyng, *s.* lamentation, lit. moaning, 13. 483, 15. 238.
- Menys on, *imp. pl.* remember, think upon, 12. 269. *See* Meyn. A.S. *mēnan*, to think of, mean.
- Menyt, *pl. s.* lamented, bemoaned, 7. 33, 9. 300, 12. 97, 15. 232; *pl.* 18. 207, 19. 219, 20. 568; *pp.* 11. 579, 18. 210. A.S. *mēnan*, to moan.
- Menje, *s.* a company of followers, train, band, host, 2. 509; *a few menje*, a small band, 5. 15; Menzhe, 2. 177, 4. 390, 6. 388, 11. 427, 16. 375. O.F. *maisnee*, *meisnee*, *meigne*, a band, troop.
- Mercy, *an error in E. for* Mastry, 13. 412 (footnote).
- Merdale, *s.* pack of camp-followers, lit. a dirty crew, 9. 249. *See* the note, p. 258.
- Meritis, *s. pl.* merits, deserts, 15. 516.
- Merk, *adj.* dark, 10. 383. Icel. *myrkr*, E. *murky*. *See* Myrk.
- Merk-schot, *s.* a mark-shot, *i.e.*, the distance between the marks or butts in practising archery, 12. 33.
- Merring, *s.* marring, injury, 19. 155. *See* below.
- Merrys, *pr. s.* mars, spoils, wears away, 1. 271. *See* Mar.
- Merye, *adv.* merry; *mak merye*, 10. 390.
- Mesour, *s.* moderation, 16. 323. F. *mesure*.
- Mess, *s.* mass, 11. 376, 384.
- Mess, *s.* (-mas) *Seint Iohnnis mess*, St John's mas, St John's day, 10. 816. *See* above.
- Messingeris, *s. pl.* messengers, 1. 138.
- Mesur, *s.* measure, 1. 570; moderation, 9. 661; *our mesur*, beyond measure, 17. 810; *at all mesure*, in every proportion, 10. 281.
- Mesurabill, *adj.* moderate, middle-sized, 10. 280.
- Mesurit, *pp.* measured, 17. 617.
- Met, *s.* meat, food, 3. 316, 4. 64, 7. 153, 9. 333; dinner, 7. 268.
- Metyng, *s.* meeting, 3. 15, 8. 242.
- Meyk, *adj.* meek, 1. 390.
- Meyn, *v.* to remember, be mindful of, 16. 525; Meyne, 15. 351; *1 p. s. pr.* Meyn, I think of, remember, 12. 291; Meyne, I make mention of, 10. 736. *See* Menys. A.S. *mēnan*, to think of.
- Meyne, *v.* to moan, lament, 15. 237. *See* Menyt.
- Meyt, *v.* to meet, 3. 413, 15. 359. *See* Meit.
- Meyt, *s.* meat, 3. 361. *See* Met.
- Misfure, *pl. s. ruby.* should go amiss, should fail, 10. 529 (E., H.).
- Mislykand, *adj.* displeasing, 17. 830 (H.).
- Misteir, *s.* trade, craft, 17. 938; Mister, 17. 435. *See* below.
- Mister, *s.* trade, 17. 435; Misteir, 17. 938. O.F. *mestier*, F. *métier*; Lat. *ministerium*. *See* below.
- Mister, *s.* need, 11. 452, 17. 743, 753. O.F. *mestier*, 'besoin'; Godefroy. *See* above.
- Mistraisted, *pl. pl.* mistrusted, suspected, 10. 327 (H.).
- Moble, *s.* moveable property, *in E.*, 5. 275 (footnote).
- Mocht, *pl. s.* might, could, 1. 298, 7. 120.
- Moder, *s.* mother, 4. 241.
- Mody, *adj.* proud, brave, 9. 659, 20. 394 (E.). *See* Mwdy.
- Mole, *s.* the "mull" of Cantire, 3. 696. Gaelic *maol*, a promontory.
- Mon, *1 p. s. pr.* I must, 3. 323; *pr. s.* must, 13. 652, 16. 275; *pr. pl.* 19. 174; *1 p. pr. pl.* we must, 9. 31, 19. 644. Icel. *muna*.
- Mone, *ger.* to have remembrance, 19. 526. Icel. *muna*, to remember.
- Mone, *adj.* many, 1. 523.
- Monest, *pl. pl.* admonished, 12. 379 (E.).
- Monesting, *s.* admonishing, exhortation, 20. 412 (E.); *pl.* Monestingis, 4. 533 (footnote).
- Moneth, *s.* month, 15. 78.
- Montane, *s.* mountain, 10. 24.
- Monteyle, *for* Montane, 11. 601 (E.).
- Mony, *adj.* many, 1. 336.
- Monymentis, *s. pl.* documents, 20. 44 (E.).

- Monys, *gen.* moon's, 6. 216. *See* Moyn.  
 Monyss, *v.* to admonish, 12. 383 (E.; *monast*, C.); *pt. pl.* Monyst, admonished, 12. 379.  
 Mor, *adj.* greater, 10. 199. *See* Mar.  
 Morn, *s.* morrow, 1. 601; *to-morn*, to-morrow, 1. 621.  
 Morsellis, *s. pl.* morsels, 9. 398.  
 Moss, *s.* a moss, moor, bog, 8. 167, 19. 738; *pl.* Mosiss, mosses, 8. 173.  
 Mot, *imp. p.* 3 *p.* may he, 4. 26.  
 Moucht, *pt. pl.* might, 17. 118, 19. 406; 1 *p.* *s. pt.* I might, 6. 666. *See* Mocht.  
 Mounth, *s.* the Grampians, 8. 393 (E.).  
 Mow, *s.* a heap of corn, 4. 117.  
 Mowcht, *pt. s.* might, could, 16. 371 (E.); *pl.* 19. 439. *See* Moucht.  
 Mowence, *s.* mutation, change, 1. 134. O.F. *muance*. (Jamieson's explanation is quite wrong.)  
 Moyn, *s.* the moon, 4. 617, 6. 100; Moynes, 4. 127.  
 Mude, *s.* courage, 19. 622. A.S. *mōd*.  
 Murnyn, *s.* mourning, lament, 2. 469; Murnyng, 3. 350, 13. 648.  
 Mute for Mwt, *q.v.*, 13. 60 (E.).  
 Mwbill, *s.* moveable goods, chattels, property, 5. 275. F. *meubles*.  
 Mwde, *s.* mood, 20. 203. *See* Mude.  
 Mwdy, *adj.* proud, courageous, 20. 394. *See* Mody.  
 Mwr, *s.* moor, 13. 552; Mwre, 7. 108. A.S. *mōr*.  
 Mwryt, *pp.* walled, blocked (up), 4. 164. F. *mur*, a wall.  
 Mwt, 1 *p. s. pr.* I treat of, tell, 13. 60. Originally a law term; O.F. *moutir*, *motir* (Godefroy).  
 Mycht, *s.* might, 1. 12, 402, 607, 5. 174; *at thar mychtis*, to the best of their power, 3. 190; *all mychtis may*, can do all things, 3. 366.  
 Mychty, *adj.* mighty, 1. 474.  
 Myd-cause, middle of the causey or causeway, 18. 132.  
 Myddis, *s.* midst, 15. 167.  
 Mydlike, *adj.* moderate, rather insignificant, 3. 71. Cf. A.S. *medlic*, little, *medeme*, moderate.  
 Mydmorne, *s.* mid-morn, mid-morrow, 9. 587, 14. 206.  
 Mydsummer, *s.* Midsummer, 10. 821.  
 Mydwart, *s.* middle; *in mydwart*, in the middle, 3. 682.  
 Mydwatter, Mid wattir, *errors in editions for Mydwart*, 3. 682 (*foot-note*). *See* above.  
 Myldly, *adv.* mildly, 11. 259.  
 Myle, *s.* mile, 7. 525.  
 Myn, *poss. pron.* my, 1. 163.  
 Myne, *v.* to mine; *myne down*, undermine, 10. 771; *ger.* to undermine, 17. 600.  
 Myrakill, *s.* a miracle; *to myrakill*, as a miracle, 17. 825; *pl.* Myraclis, 17. 875.  
 Myrk, *adj.* dark, 5. 21, 9. 373, 10. 588, 620. Icel. *myrkr*, dark.  
 Myrknes, *s.* darkness, 5. 106.  
 Myrthis, *s. pl.* (*as sing.*), mirth, joy, 16. 237.  
 Myschance, *s.* mishap, misfortune, 1. 221; Myschans, 9. 272, 15. 251.  
 Myscheiff, *s.* misfortune, 2. 45; mishap, 1. 310, 3. 254, 4. 159, 11. 502; evil case, 12. 400, 13. 627; peril, 11. 605; ill fate, sad end, 10. 105, 19. 71. O.F. *meschief*.  
 Mys-dyd, *pt. s.* did amiss, 2. 43.  
 Mysfall, *v.* to mishap, to come to evil, 12. 365.  
 Mysliking, *s.* displeasure, vexation, 3. 516. *See* Liking.  
 Myssit, *pt. s.* missed, 12. 50, 19. 504, 597.  
 Myst, *s.* mist, 9. 577.  
 Mysteir, *v.* to be necessary, 17. 215. Formed from the sb. *myster*.  
 Myster, *s.* need, want, 3. 357, 7. 142, 8. 398, 10. 305 (E.), 14. 530, 17. 386, 19. 616; Mystir, 11. 346. *See* Mister.  
 Mysteris, *s. pl.* crafts, arts, trades, 'misteries', 12. 414, 17. 542. *See* Mister.  
 Mystir, *adj.* lacking, needful, 4. 631. *See* Myster.  
 Mystrowing, *s.* suspicion, 10. 329.  
 Mystrowit, *pt. s.* mistrusted, suspected, 10. 327.  
 Myt, *s.* a mite, a wee bit, 3. 198, 12. 188.  
 Na, *adj.* no, 1. 15, 59, 371.  
 Na, *conj.* nor, 1. 16, 233, 318; 3. 496, 4. 119; than, 3. 229, 6. 538; *na thay war*, but they were, 5. 372.  
 Na war, had it not been for, but for, 7. 218; were it not for, 6. 342; Na war it, had it not been, 3. 642; Na war, except that, 8. 83.  
 Nacioun, *s.* nation, 10. 331.  
 Nakit, *adj.* naked, 13. 459; Nakyt, unarmed, 7. 330, 10. 431, 13. 98,



19. 568. (It generally means 'unprovided with defensive armour.')  
 Nakyn, of no kind, 2. 168, 4. 146, 9. 143; *nakyn wiss*, way of no kind, no way, 5. 268; *na kyn thing*, lit. a thing of no kind, in no degree, 5. 362; Nakin, 10. 703 (E.).  
 Namly, *adv.* especially, 4. 763, 5. 393.  
 Nane, *adj.* none, 1. 129, 173; no, 12. 205.  
 Nanyis, for the, *adv.* for the nonce, 10. 58. The old form was *for then ams*, for the once, where *then* is the dat. case of the article.  
 Narrow, *adj.* narrow, 10. 18.  
 Narrowit, *pt.* s. grew narrow, 16. 381.  
 Nave, *s.* fist, 16. 129. See Nevis.  
 Na-viss, *adv.* in no wise, 6. 594.  
 Nawyn, *s.* shipping, 3. 393.  
 Naylis, *s. pl.* nails, 3. 459.  
 Nayme, *s.* name, 10. 153.  
 Ne, not (*with verbs*), 1. 293.  
 Ne war, *conj.* had it not been that, but for that, 2. 424. See Na war.  
 Neil, *s.* need, extremity of peril, great danger, 2. 231.  
 Nedill, *s.* needle, *i.e.*, magnetic needle, compass, 5. 23.  
 Nedlyngis, *adv.* necessarily, of necessity, 9. 725. The suffix *-lyngis* is adverbial, and not uncommon in Middle English.  
 Nedyt, *pt.* s. was needful, needed, 3. 692, 19. 213; *pl.* Nedit, were necessary, 17. 352.  
 Neefe, *s.* fist, 16. 129 (H.). See Nevis.  
 Neid, *s.* need, necessary business, 1. 254.  
 Neid, *adj.* needful, 10. 576.  
 Neid, *adj.* of necessity, 10. 39, 11. 361, 19. 174.  
 Neid, *v.* to need, 13. 46.  
 Neid-way, *adv.* of necessity, 19. 156; Neidwais, necessarily, 5. 242, 11. 285 (C.).  
 Neir, *adv.* nearly, 5. 44, 12. 105.  
 Neir, *adv. comp.* nearer, 16. 258.  
 Neirhand, *adv.* near, 6. 381, 16. 538; nearly, close, 9. 129; *prep.* close to, 9. 685.  
 Neist, *adj. superl.* next, nearest, 1. 55; Neyst, 1. 63; Neist, next, following, 10. 821 (E.).  
 Nekbane, *s.* neck-bone, 1. 218. (Read *nekkebane*, in three syllables.)  
 Nemmyt, *pp.* named, appointed, 8. 215, 10. 387. A.S. *nemman*, to name, call.  
 Ner, *adj.* near, 1. 380.  
 Ner, *adv.* nearly, 1. 345, 2. 199, 7. 568.  
 Ner, *adv. comp.* nearer; *ner and ne*, nearer and nearer, 3. 606, 6. 88, 91.  
 Ner, *prep.* near; *ner hand*, near at hand, 3. 716, 12. 108 (E.). See Neirhand.  
 Nethir, *adj.* lower, 10. 21.  
 Nethring, *s.* abasement, 19. 155 (E.). A.S. *nidherian*, to abase.  
 Neuir, *adv.* never, 1. 166.  
 Neuth, *prep.* beneath, 11. 538; Newth, 11. 537 (E.). A.S. *neutan*, below.  
 Nevis, *s. pl.* fists, 20. 257; Newys, 3. 581; Newffys, 20. 257 (E.). *The sing. appears as Nave*, 16. 129; New, 16. 129 (E.); Neefe, 16. 129 (H.). Icel. *hnefi*, the fist.  
 Nevo, *s.* nephew, 9. 738, 11. 440, 16. 44, 17. 55; Newo, 11. 440 (E.).  
 New, *s.* nief, fist, 16. 129 (E.). See Nevis.  
 Newffys, *s. pl.* fists, 20. 257 (E.). See Nevis.  
 Newlingis, *adv.* newly, soon, *in E.*, 5. 122 (*footnote*); Newlyngis, 14. 86, 19. 375°. Cf. Nedlyngis.  
 Newo, *for* Nevo, 11. 440 (E.).  
 Newth, *prep.* beneath, 11. 537 (E.), 538 (E.). See Neuth.  
 Newys, *s. pl.* fists, hands, 3. 581. See Nevis.  
 Neych, *v.* to approach, 17. 419 (E.).  
 Neyd, *adv.* of necessity, 14. 108. See Neid.  
 Neyst, *adj. superl.* next, 14. 21 (E.). See Neist.  
 Nigramansy, *s.* necromancy, 4. 747. Lat. *nigromantia*, now called 'the black art'; an odd corruption of the Greek.  
 No, *conj.* nor, 4. 212, 653, 7. 363, 8. 481, 9. 375.  
 Nobill, *adj.* noble, 11. 218.  
 Noblay, *s.* nobility, noble rank, 8. 211, 15. 271 (E.); Nobillay, 8. 211 (C.); 9. 95, 17. 225. O.F. *nobilité*, *nobilete*.  
 Nobleis, *gen. pl.* nobles', 2. 182.  
 Nocht, *adv.* not, 1. 58, &c.; *nocht bot*, only, merely, 1. 2.  
 Nocht-for-thi, *adv.* nevertheless, notwithstanding, 2. 39, 3. 124, 4. 282, 5. 563, 7. 220, &c. (Very com-

mon.) A.S. *nā* for *pī*, not on that account.  
 None, *s.* noon (*but probably an error for mone = moon*), 4. 617 (*footnote*).  
 Norist, *pp.* nourished, exercised, 19. 164. *See* Nwrist.  
 North, *adj.* northern, 19. 121; *north half*, the north side (of), 19. 316, 20. 325.  
 Northir, *adj.* northern, 17. 846.  
 Not, *s.* employment, 13. 173. A.S. *notu*, use.  
 No-thing, *s.* nothing, 9. 164.  
 Nothir, *conj.* neither, 1. 500.  
 Nothir, *an error in J. for Noy*, 6. 666 (*footnote*).  
 Nouthir, *conj.* neither, 9. 41, 11. 412, 18. 534.  
 Nouthir, *adv.* not at all, 6. 522.  
 Novelreis, *s. pl.* novelties, 19. 394. (Occurs in Chaucer's Squieres Tale.)  
 Noy, *v.* to vex, annoy, harm, 6. 666; *pr. s.* Noyis, grieves, 20. 506 (E.); *pres. part.* Noyand, vexing, 18. 554. O.F. *nuire*, to injure.  
 Noy, *s.* annoyance, trouble, 3. 554, 10. 155\*. O.F. *nuire*, to injure, Lat. *nocere*.  
 Noyis, *s.* noise, 5. 116, 6. 102, 7. 338, 13. 34, 19. 535, 564; Noys, 10. 411. *See* Noy.  
 Noyne, *s.* noon, 17. 130, 397, 659.  
 Noyus, *adj.* noisome, difficult, 19. 742. *See* Noy.  
 Nuk, *s.* nook, 17. 93 (E.); Nwk, point, headland, 4. 556; Nwke, nook, corner, 17. 93.  
 Nwrist, *pp.* nourished, 6. 487. *See* Norist.  
 Nwrtour, *s.* nurture, artificial control or teaching, 4. 732.  
 Nycete, *s.* folly, a piece of folly, 7. 379 (E.). *See* Nysste.  
 Nycht, *s.* night, 2. 552; *on nyctis*, by nights, by night, 7. 506.  
 Nychtbur, *s.* neighbour, 1. 87; Nychtbour, 16. 478; *pl.* Nychtbowris, 20. 273 (E.).  
 Nychtingale, *s.* a nightingale, 5. 4.  
 Nychtyrtale (E.), *s.* night-time, 19. 495. Used by Chaucer, Prol. 97. Cf. Icel. *náttartal*, a tale or number of nights; *náttarþel*, midnight.  
 Nygramansour, *s.* necromancer, 4. 242. *See* Nigramansy.  
 Nynt, *ord. num.* ninth, 19. 527.  
 Nysste, *s.* a nicety, *i.e.*, a folly, 7. 379.  
 Nyt, *pt. pl.* denied, 1. 52. F. *nier*, to deny.

Obeiss, *ger.* to obey, 16. 312, 20. 147; *pt. s.* Obeyisit, obeyed, 9. 304; *pl.* 9. 461, 20. 302. O.F. *obeir*, to obey.  
 Obeyсанд, *pres. part. as adj.* obedient, 4. 603, 8. 10, 10. 132, 258.  
 Oblesteris, *s. pl.* (a bad spelling for *arblastaris*), men armed with arblasts or crossbows, 17. 236. *See* note on p. 285.  
 Obstakill, *s.* obstacle, 16. 260 (E.).  
 Occisioune, *s.* slaughter, 14. 220.  
 Occupy, *v.* to possess, 1. 98, 111, 152; 9. 698; *pr. pl.* 4. 524; *pt. s.* Occupyit, 9. 675.  
 Ocht, *s.* aught, 3. 282.  
 Of, *prep.* with, 4. 319, 345; 8. 228, 16. 634; out of, 16. 352, 17. 765; for (after *pray*), 19. 100; some of, 14. 362, 16. 145; *as of*, as amongst, 5. 493; *of befor*, formerly, 19. 260.  
 Of, *adv.* off, 19. 332.  
 Off, *prep.* of, 1. 27, &c.; with, 11. 47. A.S. *of*. *See* Of.  
 Off lyve, alive, 1. 293.  
 Of-new, *adv.* anew, lately, 14. 92. (Used by Chaucer.)  
 Ofstiss, *adv.* often, 4. 389, 5. 265, 7. 17, 9. 634, 10. 152, 561, 811; 11. 487, 15. 334, 19. 131; Ofstys, 3. 316, 427, 564. Lit. oft-times; A.S. *sib*, a time.  
 Oftymis, *adv.* oft-times, 4. 230.  
 Oist, Oyst, *s.* a host, body of men, 7. 337, 338 (E.).  
 On, *prep.* in, 1. 4; *maid on*, made up, 5. 54; *quhy maid thou on*, why didst thou make up, 5. 52; *on liff*, alive, 18. 154; *on raw*, in a row, 17. 348; *on slepe*, asleep, 7. 192; *on stray*, astray, 13. 195; *on wry*, awry, 4. 705.  
 On-ane, *adv.* anon, immediately, 4. 86, 364.  
 On-bak, *adv.* aback, 15. 484. A.S. *onbac*, backward.  
 Onpayit, *pp.* unpaid, 1. 257.  
 On-till, *prep.* until, to, 4. 303.  
 Ony, *adj.* any, 1. 60.  
 Oost, *s.* host, army, 13. 263. *See* Ost.  
 Oppinly, *adv.* openly, 9. 361, 17. 881; Oppynly, 10. 511, 11. 633.  
 Oppyn, *adj.* open, 5. 382, 9. 350, 17. 926.  
 Oppyn, *v.* to open, 7. 274, 15. 212; *pt. s.* Opnyt, 10. 225; *pp.* Opnyt, 10. 176, 17. 136; Opynnyt, 10. 176 (E.).

- Opynly, *adv.* openly, 20. 498. *See* Oppinly.
- Opynnyng, *s.* opening, 3. 532.
- Or, *conj.* ere, 1. 297, 535; 2. 484, &c.; *or cuir*, before ever, 16. 429.
- Ordanit, *pt. s.* ordained, 11. 172; proposed, 15. 34; appointed, 13. 53, 17. 505; prepared, made preparations, 16. 288, 17. 259; arranged, 11. 351, 17. 298, 20. 65; *refl.* arrayed himself, 8. 195; *pt. pl.* Ordanit, made ready, prepared, 17. 400, 626; arranged, 5. 305, 11. 304, 17. 95, &c.; *pp.* Ordanit, ordained, 11. 166, 181; arranged, 17. 563; arrayed, 8. 218, &c. (Of very frequent occurrence.) *See* Ordayn.
- Ordanyng, *s.* intent, preparation, 19. 26.
- Ordayn, *v.* to provide, 1. 358. *See* Ordanit.
- Ordinanss, *s.* ordinance, 11. 30; Ordinans, order, arrangement, 17. 101; Ordynance, arrangement, 1. 79.
- Ost, *s.* host, army, 2. 559, 3. 15.
- Othir, *adj.* different, 1. 392; *othir sum*, some others, 1. 52.
- Otow, *prep.* out from, 8. 90; beyond, 8. 448; *written* Otowth, 8. 90 (E.). Cf. Swed. *utåt*, outwards.
- Oucht, *adv.* at all, 2. 123, 7. 252, 9. 749; *oucht lang*, rather long, 15. 428.
- Oucht, *for* Owth, *prep.* above, 10. 746 (E.).
- Ouerstrowed, *pp.* overstrewn, 14. 443 (H.).
- Quirmair, *adv.* lit. more upward; hence, more backward, somewhat backwards, 6. 632. *See* Owyr-mar.
- Oulk, *s.* week, 14. 132 (H.); *pl.* Oulkes, weeks, 9. 359 (H.). (Here *ul* is a misprinting for *w*, due to a misreading; *oulk* stands for *owk*, *q.v.*)
- Our, *prep.* over, above, 1. 232, 2. 78, 3. 409, 420, 428, &c. *Our thar hand*, through their hands, 18. 502.
- Our, *adv.* very, 18. 510; *our few*, very few, too few, 13. 566; over, across, 9. 405; *set our*, put off, 11. 31 (*rubric*).
- Our-cum, *v.* to overcome, 6. 372; *pt. s.* Ourcome, subdued, 1. 110; recovered, 18. 134; *pp.* Our-cum-myn, overcome, 3. 438.
- Our-drawyn, *pp.* drawn across, 15. 286.
- Ourdriff, *v.* survive, overcome, 4. 661; *pp.* Ourdriffin, overpast, 5. 3; Ourdrivyn, brought to an end, 19. 481.
- Our-ga, *v.* to overcome, become conquerors; *our-ga apon*, to conquer, 6. 364.
- Our-hy, *v.* to overtake, 3. 737, 6. 598 (Lit. to hasten over.) *See* Hy, *v.*
- Ouris, *poss. pron.* ours, 4. 523, 12. 309.
- Our-ryd, *v.* ride over, 12. 548; Our-raid, *pt. s.* over-rode, rode over, 9. 513, 13. 736.
- Our-saile, *v.* to sail across, 3. 686.
- Ourstrak, *pt. s.* struck at, 5. 630.
- Ourta, *v.* to overtake, 3. 97, 6. 593, 10. 80, 18. 325; to advance, 8. 190; Ourtak, 4. 138; to overspread, 11. 125; *pp.* Ourtane, overtaken, 3. 612, 12. 80; condemned, 19. 55.
- Ourthwort, *adv.* overthwart, across, 8. 172. (Chaucer has *ouertwart* in the *Knights Tale*.)
- Our-tuk, *pt. s.* overtook, reached, 2. 381; *pl.* spread over, occupied, 12. 439; overtook, 6. 440.
- Ourtummyllit, *pt. pl.* upset, 16. 643.
- Outane, *prep.* except, besides, 5. 340, 9. 462, 10. 504, 18. 9, 19. 38; Outaken, 13. 482, 17. 15; Outakin, 5. 397; Outakyn, 5. 413, 6. 407, 9. 664, 10. 705, 733.
- Out-cummyng, *s.* coming out, sallying out, 4. 361.
- Outhir, *conj.* either, 6. 504, 9. 235, 15. 218.
- Out-our, *prep.* across, beyond, 8. 393, 10. 157, 19. 314, 744; above, 9. 489 over, 9. 316, 10. 700.
- Outrage, *s.* great injury, 4. 647; disgrace, 19. 304; absurdity, 19. 408.
- Outrageous, *adj.* excessive, extreme, 6. 126, 8. 270, 11. 32.
- Outrageouss, *adv.* extremely, 6. 19.
- Outraying, *s.* great misfortune, 18. 182.
- Ottak, *prep.* except, 5. 104. *See* Outane.
- Outyng, *s.* outing, expedition, 19. 620.
- Ovir, *adj.* upper, 10. 452.
- Owcht, *s.* aught, anything, 1. 251. *See* Oucht.
- Owk, *s.* a week, 14. 132; *pl.* Owkis, 9. 359. Cf. Dan. *uge*, a week.

- Owt, *prep.* out, 2. 199, 352.  
 Owtakyn, *prep.* except, 3. 614;  
 Owtane, 2. 185, 473. See Outane.  
 Owth, *prep.* from, 11. 614; above,  
 10. 746; outside, 17. 598. Cf. A.S.  
*ūt*, out; also A.S. prefix *ōð-*, from,  
 out of = G. *ent-*.  
 Owth, *adv.* above, 18. 418; beyond,  
 14. 352.  
 Owthir, *adj.* other, 10. 24. See  
 Outhir.  
 Owtouth, *prep.* beyond, 8. 448 (E.).  
 See Otow.  
 Owtrageous, *adj.* extreme, 3. 132.  
 See Outrageous.  
 Owyr-mar, *adv.* backwards, in retreat,  
 2. 440. See Ouirmair.  
 Oxin, *s. pl.* oxen, 10. 381; Oxyne,  
 388.  
 Oysis, *pr. pl.* use, are used, 11. 227;  
 use, 12. 414; 1 *p. s. pl.* Oysit, I  
 used, 10. 565; *pp.* Oysit, used, 11.  
 222. F. *user*.  
 Oyss, *s. use*, benefit, 17. 252, 19. 196.  
 O.F. *us*, use, Lat. *usus*.  
 Page, *s. a page*, 3. 755, 19. 693; a  
 boy, youth, 1. 289.  
 Pailjownys, *s. pl.* pavilions, 3. 239,  
 19. 542. See Paljeonis. Gaelic  
 and Irish *paillian*, a tent, con-  
 tracted from O.F. *pavillon*, a tent.  
 Palfray, *s. a horse*, 2. 118.  
 Palliouns, *s. pl.* tents, 3. 239 (*footnote*).  
 See Paljeonis.  
 Palmesonday, *s. Palm Sunday*, 5. 335  
 (H.), (*footnote*); 15. 100.  
 Palmys, *s. pl.* palms, palm-branches  
 (really branches of willow), 5. 312.  
 See Castle Dangerous, cap. xix.  
 Paljeonis, *s. pl.* tents, pavilions, 17.  
 299; Paljeonys, 11. 117, 17. 480;  
 Paljeownys, 11. 139, 12. 461, 19.  
 386, 391, 514, 561, 566; Paljownys,  
 12. 215. See Pailjownys.  
 Panch, *s. paunch*, belly, 9. 398.  
 O.F. *panche*, *pance*, Lat. acc. *pan-*  
*ticem*, from nom. *pantex*.  
 Pane, *s. pain*, trouble, 7. 626, 8. 177,  
 18. 192; pains, 8. 350. F. *peine*.  
 See Payn.  
 Pantener, an error in other editions  
 for Pautener, *q.v.*  
 Par, for; *par cheryte*, for charity, 1.  
 418, 3. 324. O.F. *par*, for.  
 Parage, *s. lineage*, 1. 102, 276. O.F.  
*parage*, *paraige*, rank, noble line-  
 age, noble birth; from O.F. *par*, a  
 peer.  
 Paramouris, *adv.* in the way of love,  
 as a paramour, 13. 485. F. *par*  
*amours*.  
 Parc, *s. park*, 13. 230. See Park.  
 Paris, *s. pl.* pairs, 13. 463.  
 Park, *s. park*, 11. 422. See Parc.  
 Parleament, *s. parliament*, 1. 602.  
 Part, *s. pl.* parts, in *phr.* twa part  
 = two parts, 5. 47; Parteis, *pl.*  
 parts, parties, 6. 545, 557, 565. See  
 Party.  
 Partenerys, *s. pl.* partners, 2. 517.  
 Partenit, *pt. s.* pertained, 20. 313.  
 Partis, *s. pl.* sides; *drew to partis*,  
 took sides, 7. 624; Parteis, parts,  
 sides, 10. 75. See below.  
 Party, *s. part*, 2. 215, 3. 461, 4. 640,  
 6. 537; *most party*, chief part, 15.  
 65; *in party*, in part, partly, 3.  
 292; side, 13. 470; *pl.* Parteis,  
 parts, sides, 10. 75; parties, 6. 557,  
 565; *drew to partis*, took sides, 7.  
 624. See Part, Partis.  
 Pasche-ewyn, *s. Paschal eve*, 15. 105  
 (E.).  
 Pasche-oulk, *s. Paschal week*, 15. 101  
 (H.). See Oulk.  
 Paske-day, *s. Easter-day*, 15. 248.  
 Paske-evin, *s. Easter eve*, 15. 105.  
 Pask-owk, *s. Passover-week*, 15. 101.  
 See Owk.  
 Pass, *v.* to pass, to go, 6. 594, 8. 178;  
 Pas, 11. 287; *pt. s.* passed, crossed,  
 3. 455; surpassed, 5. 465, 9. 504;  
*pl.* passed, went, 16. 294, 18. 369;  
 passed, crossed over, 9. 408, 10. 95;  
*pp.* Passit, passed, crossed, 7. 110,  
 10. 629, 14. 372, 19. 314, 20. 432;  
*passit ar*, have passed, 7. 39; *passit*  
*was*, had passed, 6. 80, 584; Passit,  
 past, gone, 13. 563, 16. 319, 19.  
 230; gone by, 9. 109; *pt. s.* Past,  
 went, 10. 114; 2 *p. s. pr.* Passis,  
 thou goest, 2. 127; *pres. part.* Pas-  
 sand, surpassing, 5. 198.  
 Pass, *s. a pace*, rate of going, 7.  
 203\*.  
 Pautener, *adj.* rascally, ribald, 1.  
 462, 2. 194. "Pautonnier, a lewd,  
 stubborn, or saucy knave;" Cot-  
 grave. "Pallotier, pautonnier,  
 homme sans profession ni demeure  
 fixe; homme de mauvaise vie,  
 méchant, hautain, misérable, gueux,  
 coquin;" Burguy. Jamieson ex-  
 plains it rightly, but misprints it  
*pantener*.  
 Payit, *pt. pl.* paid, 20. 26; *pp.*  
 pleased, 14. 234, 20. 211.

- Payment, *s.* payment, *i.e.*, delivery of blows, 6. 148.
- Payn, *s.* pain, hardship, 1. 309; trouble, 10. 638; *but* payn, without trouble, 10. 243; Payne, trouble, 10. 604, 635; *pl.* Paynys, pains, griefs, 2. 517. *See* Pane.
- Payn, *v. refl.* to take pains, endeavour, 10. 211; Payne, 12. 526, 17. 145, 395; to toil, struggle, 15. 483.
- Payss-wouk, *s.* the Paschal week, 15. 101 (E.).
- Pearly, *adv.* openly, 10. 315 (H.). *See* Appertly.
- Pedaill, *s.* rabble, 13. 229 (H.). *See* Pitaill.
- Peill, *s.* a peel, a fort, small castle, 10. 137, 152, 193, 207, 223, 252, 797; *pl.* Pelis, 10. 147. From O.F. *pel*, Lat. *pālus*, a stake; hence, a stockade, a small fort; and finally, a stone peel.
- Peir, *v.* to make equal, 9. 666. O.F. *par*, equal.
- Penars, *s.* penance, punishment, 19. 51.
- Pennownys, *s. pl.* pennons, 8. 227, 11. 132\*, 11. 465, 12. 461. O.F. *pennon*, a standard, ensign; from Lat. *penna*.
- Pennystane, *s.* a flat stone, used as a quoit, 13. 581 (E. and H.); Pennystane cast, the distance to which such a stone can be thrown, 16. 383.
- Pensalis, *s. pl.* small pennons, 11. 193; Pensalls, 11. 465 (H.). O.F. *pennoncel*, dim. of *pennon*, an ensign.
- Peralis, *s. pl.* perils, 4. 146.
- Peralous, *adj.* perilous, 3. 685.
- Percass, *adv.* perchance, accidentally, 2. 530, 3. 481, 7. 307. O.F. *per cas*, by chance.
- Perde, *F. par dieu* (an oath); used merely to signify verily, indeed, of a sooth, 5. 545, 6. 357, 9. 84, 19. 689.
- Perell, *s.* peril, 7. 193, 10. 590, 12. 529; *pl.* Perellis, 9. 96; Perellys, 3. 559.
- Perelouss, *adj.* perilous, 5. 420, 10. 21, 13. 51; Pereluss, 10. 595, 18. 461.
- Perfay, *for* per fay, by my faith, verily, 1. 39, 2. 212, 5. 279, 6. 614, 10. 81, 11. 38, 19. 557. O.F. *per fei*, by my faith.
- Perfit, *adj.* perfect, 17. 928.
- Performyst, *pp.* performed, 12. 6. O.F. *parformir*, to achieve (Rogier fort).
- Peris, *s. pl.* peers, equals, 9. 489.
- Perplexité, *s.* danger, 11. 619.
- Perquer, *adv.* by heart, thoroughly, 238. O.F. *per quer*, *per cuer*, heart.
- Persauit, *pt. s.* perceived, 6. 387, 135, 9. 687, 10. 38, 16. 480, 134; *pl.* 5. 92, 10. 51, 19. 208; 18. 378.
- Persavyng, *s.* perception, 4. 358, 367; perceiving, sight, 5. 289; been seen, 10. 571, 641; knowledge, 572; Persawying, perception, 596; being seen, 2. 15.
- Persawe, *v.* to perceive, 1. 82; *pr.* I perceive, 2. 326.
- Persecucioun, *s.* persecution, 4. 5.
- Perssit, *pt. pl.* pierced, 14. 292. *percer*.
- Pert, *adj.* brisk, 10. 531.
- Pert, *for* Apert, 10. 73 (C.).
- Pesabilly, *adv.* peaceably, 5. 231.
- Pess, *s.* peace, 1. 80, 8. 125, 9. 184, 257; subjection, 13. 558, 14. 9.
- Pes, peace, 2. 499; *cum till pess*, become subject to him, 8. 1.
- resauit till his pess*, received under his protection, 10. 127.
- Petè, *s.* pity, 3. 523.
- Peth, *s.* path, pass, 18. 366, 4. 441.
- Pettaill, *s.* rabble, 11. 238 (E.).
- Pitaill.
- Petuisly, *an error in E.*, 3. 562 (*for note*).
- Petwisly, *adv.* piteously, sadly, 3. 5.
- Pik, *s.* pitch, 17. 611.
- Pikkis, *s. pl.* picks, *i.e.*, pick-axes, 540. *See* quotation from Lydg in the note to l. 528, p. 236.
- Pitaill, *s.* rabble, 13. 229 (E.); Pit 11. 420 (E.). O.F. *pietaille*, infantry, men of arms on foot, rabble from O.F. *piet*, the foot.
- Pitè, pity, 1. 481, 10. 155\*, 451; 528; Pittè, 1. 480.
- Pith, *s.* strength, might, 3. 599.
- Pithones, Pythoness, *i.e.*, witch Endor, 4. 753. (The reading should be *Phitones*; see the note, p. 246.)
- Pittyt, *pp.* full of pits, 11. 388 (E.).
- Pitwysly, *adv.* piteously, 3. 549, 1. 413.
- Place; *left place*, lost ground, 13. 2; *See* Plass.

- Plane, *adj.* plain, open, 19. 49; *plane melle*, open fight, 18. 79.  
 Plane, *s.* plain, 7. 613; *pl.* Planys, 8. 5, &c. *See* Planys.  
 Planer, *adj.* full, plenary, 1. 624.  
 Planetis, *s. pl.* planets, 4. 695.  
 Planly, *adv.* openly, plainly, 9. 512, 10. 520, 11. 17, 12. 199, 16. 259, 19. 54.  
 Planys, *s. pl.* plains, 2. 496, 8. 5, 132. *See* Plane.  
 Plass, *s.* place, 8. 76, 19. 485; *wan plass*, gained ground, advanced, 12. 563; *left place*, lost ground, retreated, 13. 271.  
 Play, *s.* pleasure, 5. 73; *pl.* Playis, games, tricks, 19. 364.  
 Playn, *adj.* plain, flat, 9. 57; open, 11. 551, 630; 19. 45, 410; Playne, flat, 11. 360; open, 2. 254.  
 Playn, *s.* plain, open country, 6. 518, 8. 138, 19. 493; Playne, open ground, 11. 540, 12. 349.  
 Playne-land, *s.* plain country lowlands, 11. 337.  
 Plenȝe, *v.* to complain, 11. 320; *pt. s.* Plenȝeit, 4. 215. O.F. *plaindre*.  
 Plenȝeing, *s.* complaining, 3. 647.  
 Plesance, *s.* pleasure, power to please, 1. 5, 6. O.F. *plaisance*.  
 Plesand, *pres. part.* pleasing, pleasant, 1. 10, 208, 10. 282; Plesande, 5. 8. *See* Pleyss.  
 Plewch, *s.* plough, 19. 175.  
 Pleyss, *v.* to please, 1. 198. F. *plaisir*.  
 Plungyt, *pt. pl.* plunged, 2. 355; Plungit, 12. 568.  
 Pollis, *s. pl.* pools, 12. 395, 404.  
 Portray, *v.* to draw, paint, picture, 10. 743 (E. H.); *pp.* Portrait, painted, 10. 743; moulded, made, proportioned, 10. 281.  
 Porturat, *pp.* portrayed, formed, a reading in E. for Portrait, 10. 281.  
 Possessiownis, *s. pl. (as sing.)* possession, 16. 216.  
 Potacioune, *s.* potion, drink, 20. 535.  
 Pottis, *s. pl.* pots, *i.e.*, round deep holes, 11. 364, 371; Pottys, 11. 385. Deep, round holes, not very large, are still called *pots* in Craven, Yorkshire.  
 Pottit, *pp.* filled with 'pots' or pits, pitted, 11. 388. *See* above.  
 Pouer, *adj.* poor, 9. 442. *See* Pouir.  
 Pouerail, *s.* rabble, a reading in H. for Merdale, 9. 249 (footnote). *See* below.  
 Pouerale, *s.* rabble of camp-followers, 8. 275, 11. 238, 420; Poverail, 13. 229; Poueralȝe, rabble, 8. 368. O.F. *pouraille*, poor people (Roquefort).  
 Pouerly, *adv.* poorly, 7. 536.  
 Pouir, *adj.* poor, 4. 343, 16. 292; Pouer, 9. 442. O.F. *povre*, F. *pauvre*. (The *u* is here probably a *v*.)  
 Poustè, *s.* power, 5. 165, 8. 236, 9. 4, 757; dominion, 16. 358. O.F. *poeste*, *poesteit*, from Lat. acc. *potestatem*, power. *See* Lege.  
 Poustè, *s.* power, an error in E. for Sauftè, safety, 10. 442 (footnote). *See* above.  
 Powdir, *s.* dust, 11. 616. F. *poudre*, Lat. *pulvis*.  
 Powertè, *s.* poverty, 3. 551.  
 Powstè, *s.* power, 1. 110, 2. 100, 126, 4. 4, 5. 650, 7. 519; Powstè, 1. 131. *See* Poustè.  
 Poynt, *s.* right point of time, right moment, 4. 383, 7. 388, 396, 500; adventure, 8. 517; opportunity, 13. 598; time of peril, 16. 278; feat of arms, 9. 631; *pl.* Poyntis, points, 11. 565; feats, achievements, 10. 341, 16. 499; *at poynt*, in the right direction, 3. 702 (cf. the *points* of a compass); *at poynt*, at all points, fully, 6. 406, 10. 283; *in sic poynt*, in such good array, 12. 93; *into sic poynt*, at such a point (of death), 4. 331.  
 Poyntȝe, *s.* puny matter, skirmish, 16. 307 (E.). *See* Punȝe.  
 Pray, *v.* to pray, 12. 477; Prayit, *pt. s.* prayed, 14. 332, 20. 201; *pl.* 11. 380.  
 Pray, *s.* prey, booty, 2. 445, 9. 530, 534; *pl.* Prayis, booty, plunder, spoils, 15. 382, 17. 891. O.F. *praie*, *proie*; Lat. *prada*, prey.  
 Pray, *v.* to spoil, ravage, 17. 226; *pt. s.* Prayit, despoiled, 15. 330. O.F. *praer*, *preier*, *proier*, to spoil.  
 Prayer, *s.* prayer, 12. 478.  
 Prechyt, *pt. s.* preached to, 3. 299.  
 Preif, *pr. pl.* prove, test, shew, 9. 29. *See* Preuit.  
 Prek, *v.* to spur, hasten (lit. prick), 19. 423; *pt. s.* Prekit, spurred, 11. 574; *pt. pl.* Prekit, 16. 623, 19. 370; Prek we, let us spur, 16. 615; *pres. part.* Prekand, spurring, 19. 360. *See* Prik.  
 Presand, *s.* present; *in presand*, as a

- present, 18. 542; *intill presand*, as a present, 18. 170.
- Presens, *s.* presence, 5. 497.
- Presentit, *pp.* presented, 15. 301.
- Presit, *pt. s.* harassed, 7. 287; Presyt, beset, 10. 316; *pt. pl.* Presit, pressed upon, pressed hard, 6. 533, 13. 192, 213; *pp.* Presit, hard pressed, 13. 128, 18. 414. *See* Press.
- Presit, *pp.* prized, valued, esteemed, 6. 270. *See* Priss.
- Presoners, *s. pl.* prisoners, 4. 314; Presoneris, 9. 456, 17. 891.
- Presounce, *s.* prison, 1. 279, 4. 15, 5. 155; Presoun, 1. 282; Preson, 6. 259.
- Press, *v.* to throng, 19. 79; Press thame, press themselves together, 6. 83; *pt. s.* Pressit, pressed upon, 12. 133; advanced, 18. 105; pressed, 20. 427; *pt. pl.* Pressit, pressed, 9. 715; pressed hard on, 18. 421; drove, 17. 641; advanced, 17. 466, 566; charged, 12. 573; *refl.* hurried, endeavoured, 17. 408; hastened, 15. 469; *pp.* Pressit, hard pressed, 17. 165; *pres. part.* Presand, 17. 373. *See* Presit.
- Press, *s.* distress, 3. 129.
- Presumyt, *pt. s.* presumed, 1. 572, 11. 143.
- Preualy, *adv.* privily, 15. 113. *See* Preuely.
- Preuatè, *s.* privacy, retirement, 5. 306, 6. 547; secrecy, 11. 478; secret plot, 10. 161; private needs, 5. 572. *See* Priuatè.
- Preuè, *adj.* still, quiet, 4. 382, 498; private, 5. 62; confidential, 9. 227; Prevè, privy, still, quiet, 10. 582, 12. 388; *folk preue*, privy council, 13. 722; *preue consell*, 11. 270; *preue nedis*, privy needs, 5. 566. *See* Prewè, Priuè.
- Preuè, *s.* privy, 5. 556.
- Preuely, *adv.* secretly, 9. 314.
- Preuit, *pt. s.* proved, attempted, 10. 342. *See* Preif.
- Prewè, *adj.* privy, secretly attached, 5. 494; (men) nearly related, 20. 568; secret, 17. 64; closely hid, 8. 51. *See* Preuè.
- Price, *s.* praise, 1. 25. *See* Priss.
- Prid, *s.* pride, 1. 408.
- Prik, *v.* to prick, wound, 13. 634; to spur, 13. 57; Prikit, *pt. s.* spurred, rode hard, 13. 314, 16. 122; *pl.* 6. 412, 9. 617, 12. 501; Prikyt, 2. 430; Prik we, let us spur, 12. 467; *pres. part.* Prikand, spurring, riding hard, 6. 421, 11. 570, 12. 548, 19. 347. *See* Prek.
- Priss, *v.* to prize, esteem, 6. 505; *pt.* to be prized, or esteemed, 7. 99, 16. 224, 17. 924; *pt. s.* Prisit, praised, 16. 672, 18. 403; Prisyit, praised, esteemed, 3. 156; *pl.* Prisit, praised, 8. 105; *pp.* Prisit, prized, 6. 325, 10. 776, 11. 316; praised, 10. 299, 16. 502, 525, 686, 18. 436, 20. 243, 366, 375.
- Priss, *s.* praise, fame, renown, 6. 328, 12. 125, 20. 564; price, value, & 79. *See* Pryss.
- Priuatè, *s.* privacy, 2. 8. *See* Preuatè.
- Priuè, *adj.* privy, secret, intimate, 1. 544. *See* Preuè.
- Proffer, *s.* offer, 20. 538.
- Profferit, *pt. s.* proffered, offered, 20. 340; *pp.* offered, 20. 533.
- Prophesye, *s.* prophecy, 10. 740.
- Propir, *adj.* own, 15. 209.
- Proplexitè, *s.* perplexity, trouble, 12. 530. [A false form; due to confusion between the contractions for *pro* and *per*.] *See* Perplexitè.
- Propyrtè, *s.* peculiarity, peculiar state (of service), 1. 234.
- Provit, *pt. pl.* tried, 17. 666; *pp.* Prowit, proved, *i.e.*, achieved, 13. 741. O.F. *prover*, Lat. *probare*.
- Prowd, *adj.* proud, 19. 561.
- Prowe, *v.* to prove, display, 3. 57.
- Prowes, *s.* prowess, 9. 503.
- Prowyt, *pt. s.* proved, tested, *in E.*, 5. 363 (footnote).
- Pruf, *imp. pl.* let us prove, let us try, 7. 22; *pt. s.* Prufit, 5. 363; *pp.* Prufit, shewn, exhibited, 5. 174.
- Pruwe, *v.* to prove, test, essay, 9. 29 (E.).
- Pryd, *s.* pride, 12. 223.
- Pryd, *v. refl.* pride ourselves, 19. 695.
- Pryme, *s.* prime (nine o'clock?), 15. 55.
- Prysit, *pt. s.* prized, 11. 58. *See* Priss.
- Pryss, *s.* praise, 1. 21, 3. 175.
- Pryss, *v.* to praise; *gerund*, to pryss = to be praised, 1. 239. *See* Priss.
- Pulaile, *s.* poultry, 11. 120 (E.). F. *poulaile*, poultry.
- Pulis, *s. pl.* pools, 12. 395, 404 (E.). *See* Pollis.
- Pund, *s. pl.* pounds (of money), 18. 521; a thousand pund, 18. 285.
- Pundelan, *s.* warrior, hero, 3. 159. The sense is clear, but the etymol.

- ogy doubtful. I can hardly suppose, with Jamieson, that it is the same word with *pantaloon*! If a mere guess may be made, it seems to me just possible that the word may have been an epithet of a hero, like Fierabras; *pundelan* might, in O. French, be *puin-de-leine*, i.e., fist of wood; cf. Goetz with the iron hand.
- Punsoune, *s.* a dagger, 1. 545. See the note, p. 229.
- Punȝe, *s.* a small matter, a skirmish, 12. 373 (E.); *pl.* Punȝeis, skirmishes, (lit. puny matters), 12. 373. See Pwnȝhè.
- Pupill, *s.* people, 2. 543.
- Pur, *adj.* poor, the poor, 1. 276.
- Puraill, *s.* rabble, 11. 420 (H.); Purall, 11. 238 (H.). See Pouerale.
- Purchas, *v.* to acquire, 10. 321, 355; Purchase, to procure, 7. 496; Purchase, to get, 2. 581, 17. 62; to procure, 6. 29; Purches, to acquire, obtain, 1. 433, 2. 572; to find out, 10. 515; *pl. s.* Purchast, procured, 9. 543. O.F. *purchacier*, to procure, obtain.
- Purchass, *s.* endeavour, 5. 534, 10. 513; attempt, 19. 12; contrivance, 19. 32; Purchase, contrivance, 19. 30.
- Purchasesand, *pres. part.* acquiring, 2. 188.
- Purchasesyng, *s.* acquisition, getting of food, 2. 579.
- Pure, *adj.* poor, 20. 604. See Pur.
- Purpos, *s.* intent, result of a design, 3. 263; Purpos, purpose, 5. 542.
- Purway, *v.* to provide, provide for, 4. 64, 5. 74; to provide for oneself, 11. 10, 75, 12. 220; to send, ordain, 18. 58; *pr. pl.* let them provide for themselves, 11. 64; *pl. s.* Purvait, provided, 17. 249; *refl.* Purvayit, provided for himself, 10. 586, 19. 531; *pl.* provided, 11. 76; Purvait, purveyed, 17. 246; *pp.* Purvait, provided, equipped, 4. 168, 11. 14, 12. 326; Purvayit, 14. 193; Purwait, 2. 269; Purwayt, 2. 259; Purwayit, 9. 424 (E.). O.F. *pourveoir*, Lat. *providere* (Roquefort).
- Purvians, *s.* provisions, 4. 397.
- Pusonyt, *pp.* poisoned, 20. 609 (E.).
- Pusoune, *s.* poison, 20. 536 (E.); Pwsoune, 1. 533.
- Pusoune, *a reading for* Punsoune in E.; 1. 545 (footnote).
- Put againe, *v.* to repulse, drive back, 16. 147, 17. 396; *put agane*, driven back, repulsed, 12. 355.
- Pwnȝhè, *adj.* as *sb.* a small skirmish, 16. 307. See Punȝe.
- Pwnyst, *pp.* punished, 20. 520.
- Pwsoune, *s.* poison, 1. 533. See Pusoune.
- Pykis, *s. pl.* pikes, 17. 344.
- Pyne, *s.* pining, pain, suffering, punishment, 1. 212; pain, misery, 2. 494, 5. 73. A.S. *pin*, pining, suffering.
- Quadruplit, *pp.* quadrupled, 18. 30.
- Quantite, *a* great number, a quantity, 6. 235, 11. 206, 473, 12. 101; distance, 6. 76.
- Quatribill, *adj.* quadruple, 18. 30 (E.).
- Quantiss, *s. pl.* devices, 11. 194 (E.). See Quyntis.
- Quer, *s.* choir, 20. 293 (E.), *numbered* 20. 287 in P.; Queyr, 19. 293.
- Questionyng, *a reading in* E., 6. 87, 94 (footnotes). See also the note, p. 250. *Questionyng* is a misreading; the scribe was thinking of *questing*; see Quhestlyng.
- Quethirand, *for* Quhedirand, 17. 684 (E.).
- Queyn, *s.* queen, 20. 99; Queyne, 20. 85.
- Queyr, *s.* a choir, 19. 293. See Quer.
- Quh-, *answers to* E. wh-, and A.S. hw-.
- Quha, *pron.* whosoever, whoever, 1. 391, 445, 2. 388, 6. 171, 16. 599. (Not used as a simple relative in the nom. case.) *Gen.* Quhais, whose, 17. 28; *abl. or dat.* Quham, 4. 111.
- Quhar, *adv.* where, 1. 354; *neuir-quhar*, nowhere else, 11. 39. A.S. *hwar*.
- Quharfor, wherefore, 1. 308.
- Quhar-throuch, whereby, 1. 170; Quhar-throu, 7. 89.
- Quhat, *pron.* what, 1. 93, 141; *adv.* how, 1. 215; Quhat for, what with, 13. 211, 214.
- Quhat-kyn, of what kind, 2. 226, 3. 675, 4. 649, 8. 407, 10. 638.
- Quhat-sa-euyr, whatsoever, 2. 41.
- Quhat-to, to what, 11. 28.
- Quhedirand, *pres. part.* whizzing, making a booming sound, 17. 684. Cf. A.S. *hwōðerian*, to murmur, to



- roar, *Ælfric's Hom.* ed. Thorpe, ii. 388. See *Quhiddir* in the Gloss. to G. Douglas, ed. Small.  
*Quheill*, *s.* a wheel, 13. 637; *Quhelis*, *gen.* wheel's, 13. 647; *pl.* *Quhelis*, 17. 609. A.S. *hwēol*.  
*Quhen*, *adv.* when, 1. 250, 15. 315.  
*Quhenar*, *adj.* fewer, 11. 605. See *Quheyne*.  
*Quhestlyng*, *s.* baying (of a dog), 6. 94; *Quhistlyng*, 6. 87. Apparently merely a form of *whistling*. MS. E. has *questioning*, an inferior form of *questing*, lit. searching, especially used, however, of the baying of a hound. See *quest* in Halliwell. Cf. O.F. *querre*, to search.  
*Quhet*, *s.* wheat, 5. 398.  
*Qubethir*, *conj.* whether, 1. 177.  
*Qubethir*; *the qukethir*, nevertheless, 1. 332, 2. 231, 3. 14, 4. 160, 10. 384, 13. 357.  
*Quheyne*, *adj.* few, 2. 244, 3. 249, 9. 488, 11. 49, 14. 505, 15. 17, 330; *Quheyne*, few, small, 13. 595, 15. 549; *as sh.* *Quheyn*, a small member, 8. 368, 17. 67. See *Quhoyn*.  
*Quhile*, *s.* a while, time, 1. 171, 326, 4. 3, 7. 194. A.S. *hwīl*.  
*Quhile*, *adv.* sometimes, at times, 1. 338, 2. 574, 3. 262. See *Quhill*.  
*Quhilis*; *the quhilis*, whilst, 7. 540.  
*Quhilk*, which (of the two), 1. 77. A.S. *hwylc*.  
*Quhill*, *conj.* until, 1. 407, 2. 17, 176, 11. 538, 15. 239, 18. 518; *adv.* whilst, 1. 60, 270; sometimes; *quhill to*, *quhill fra*, sometimes on one side, sometimes on the other, to and fro, 10. 604.  
*Quhilum*, *adv.* formerly, once, whilst, 3. 207; *Quhilom*, once, 4. 753; *Quhilum*, sometimes, 3. 705. A.S. *hwilum*, at times.  
*Quhistlyng*, *s.* baying (of a dog), 6. 87. See *Quhestlyng*.  
*Quhit*, *adj.* white, 8. 232. A.S. *hwīt*.  
*Quhom*, *dat.* to whom, 4. 21. See *Quha*.  
*Quhone*, *adj.* few, 9. 163 (E.). See *Quhoyn*.  
*Quhone*, *s.* a few, 8. 368 (E.). See *Quhoyn*.  
*Quhonnar*, *adj.* fewer, 11. 605 (E.). See *Quhoyn*.  
*Quhow*, *adv.* how, *rubric*, p. 3. A.S. *hwa*, *hū*.  
*Quhoyn*, *adj.* few, 9. 163, 15. 363, 17. 135. Cf. A.S. *hwōn*, a little; *hwōnlic*, small; *hwōne*, *hwōne*, a little.  
*Quhyne*, *adv.* whence, 7. 240.  
*Quhytyss*, *s.* *pl.* an error for *quhytys*, or rather *quyntyss*, i.e., devices, 13. 183 (E.). See *Quyntis*.  
*Quit*, *adj.* free, 18. 543.  
*Quouk*, *pl.* *s.* quoke, quaked, shook, 2. 365.  
*Quyntis*, *s.* cognisances, armorial devices, 13. 183; *Qwyntiss*, 11. 194. O.F. *cointise*. See the note, p. 268.  
*Quytly*, *adv.* freely, securely, 10. 548; freely, 10. 824; wholly, 9. 651, 18. 484.  
*Qwyrbollē*, *s.* boiled leather, i.e., hardened leather, 12. 22. Fr. *cuir bouilli*. See the note, p. 265.  
*Qwyt*, *v.* to quit, i.e., requite, repay, 2. 30; to requite, 2. 438.  
*Qwyt*, an error in E. for *Quytly*, 9. 651 (footnote).  
*Rabutyt*, *pp.* defeated, repulsed, 12. 168 (E.). O.F. *rebouter*, to repulse; from O.F. *boter*, to push. See *Rebutyt*.  
*Rad*, *pp.* rode, 4. 28; *pl.* *s.* 3. 29. See *Raid*.  
*Rad*, *adj.* afraid, frightened, 12. 431, 14. 439, 15. 76. Icel. *hræddr*, afraid, timid; Swed. *rädd*, fearful.  
*Radnes*, *s.* fear, 9. 104. See above.  
*Raid*, *pl.* *s.* rode, 1. 413, 6. 133, 215, 519, &c.; *pl.* 2. 17, 9. 582, 12. 13, 14. 407, 16. 154, 18. 10; *pl.* *s.* subj. would ride, 17. 851.  
*Rair*, *v.* to roar, 4. 418, 5. 97; *Rar*, 10. 685.  
*Raiss*, *s.* race, current, 3. 687; swift course, rush, 5. 638; *Rase*, 3. 697. A.S. *rās*, a race, a stream.  
*Raiss*, *pl.* *s.* rose, 4. 130, 416, 6. 233, 9. 430, 20. 254; *pl.* 3. 580, 7. 198, 9. 708. See *Riss*.  
*Raith*, *adv.* soon, quickly, 4. 45. See *Rath*.  
*Rakit*, *pl.* *s.* went (lit. wandered), 13. 524. Icel. *reika*, to wander, to take a walk.  
*Randoun*, *s.* swift course, rush, only in phr. in a *randoun*, i.e., in a furious course, 6. 139, 17. 694, 18. 130; *intill a randoun*, 19. 596; *in randoun richt*, with downright force, 5. 632. O.F. *random*, force, impetuosity; *à random*, with force and violence, impetuously.

- Rangale, *s.* rabble, camp-followers, 8. 198 (E.), 11. 111, 12. 474; Rangald, 8. 198; Rangall, 13. 341. Cf. Icel. *hrang*, din, tumult, as of a crowd.
- Range; *on range*, in a rank, in a row, in "Indian file," 10. 379.
- Rangit, *pp.* ranged, ranked, 11. 431.
- Ranowne, renown, 8. 520.
- Ransoune, *s.* ransom, 4. 83, 11. 577, 13. 72.
- Ransownyt, *pt. pl.* ransomed, 2. 466; *pp.* Ransonyt, 18. 520.
- Ranyt, *pt. s.* it rained, 3. 235.
- Rapis, *s. pl.* ropes, 10. 360, 557; 15. 280; Rapyys, 3. 691, 19. 541.
- Rar, *v.* to roar, 7. 327, 10. 685. *See* Rair. A.S. *rarian*, to roar.
- Rase, *s.* race, current, 3. 697. *See* Raiss.
- Rass, *v.* to raise, 3. 134; *pt. s.* Rasit, 4. 243, 756; *pt. pl.* 6. 419, 10. 56, 17. 110; hoisted sail, 16. 692; *pp.* 6. 276, 20. 64. Icel. *reisa*, to raise.
- Rass, *pt. s.* rose, 10. 657. *See* Raiss.
- Rath, *adv.* soon, quickly, 4. 285, 5. 417, 8. 322. A.S. *hræð*, swift, quick.
- Rairret, *s.* retreat, 17. 471; Retret, 17. 460.
- Raucht, *pt. s.* reached, extended, 10. 23; dealt (a blow), gen. *raucht a rout*, 2. 420, 3. 114, 5. 632, 7. 623, 10. 235, 19. 587; *pl.* 8. 298.
- Raw, *s.* row, rank, 11. 431; *on raw*, in a row, 5. 590, 8. 450, 12. 36, 17. 348, 19. 393.
- Rawnge, *for* Range, *i.e.*, row, 10. 379 (E.).
- Rayde, *pt. pl.* rode, 14. 329. *See* Raid.
- Rayne, *s.* rain, 3. 241.
- Raynge, *v. refl.* rank themselves, 17. 348. *See* Rangit.
- Raysyt, *pt. pl.* raised, hoisted (sail), 3. 695. *See* Rass.
- Reale, *adj.* royal, 13. 30 (E.). O.F. *real*, Lat. *regalis*.
- Realtè, *s.* royalty, royal state, 2. 183. *See* below.
- Reawtè, royalty, royal blood, 1. 45; royalty, 1. 164; kingdom, 1. 593; royalty, 20. 87 (E.). O.F. *reiaute*, *reialte*, royalty. *See* Rialtè.
- Rebaldail, the rabble, common fellows, 1. 103. *See* below.
- Rebaldis, *s. pl.* ribalds, wretches, 16. 137. O.F. *ribald*.
- Rebelland, *pres. part. as adj.* rebellious. 9. 649, 10. 129 (E.).
- Rebouris, at, *i.e.*, in great dislike, 13. 486 (E.). *See* the note, p. 270.
- Reboyting, *s.* repulse, 12. 339.
- Reboytit, *pp.* repulsed, 12. 84, 168, 176, 183, 336, 16. 658, 17. 25, 461, 18. 335. *See* below.
- Rebuting, *s.* defeat, 12. 339 (E. and H.). *See* below.
- Rebutyt, *pp.* repulsed, 2. 468, 16. 658 (E.); Rebutit, 7. 617, 13. 77, 14. 318. O.F. *rebouter*, to repulse; *from boter*, to push.
- Reconfort, *v.* to encourage, 9. 97.
- Reconforting, *s.* comfort, encouragement, 11. 199, 14. 190.
- Reconsalit, *pp.* reconciled, 9. 740.
- Recooled, *pt. pl.* recoiled, drew back, 13. 217 (H.).
- Recordyt, *pp.* recorded, told, 1. 72.
- Recour, *s.* recovery, 2. 543.
- Recoveryng, *s.* recovery, 3. 16.
- Recryand, *adj.* recreant, acknowledging oneself to be a coward, cowardly, 6. 258, 13. 108.
- Red, *s.* rede, counsel, 1. 348, 3. 494. *See* Rede, *s.* and Will.
- Red, 1 *p. s. pr.* I advise, 12. 325, 18. 32. *See* Rede, *v.*
- Red, *pt. s.* read, 3. 436; *pp.* read, 2. 93. *See* Redys.
- Red, *v.* to save, 4. 132, 19. 677. A.S. *hreddan*, to rid, deliver; cf. G. *retten*, to save.
- Reddy, *adj.* ready, 9. 182, 11. 432, 19. 453, 718; near, short (of a way), 17. 555.
- Rede, *s.* counsel, 1. 546, 568; *tane to rede*, adopted the advice, 12. 389, 17. 267. A.S. *rād*, counsel, advice.
- Rede, *v.* to advise, 19. 148; 1 *p. s. pr.* I advise, 7. 534, 15. 19. A.S. *rādan*, to read, to advise.
- Rede, *adj.* red, 2. 361. A.S. *rād*, red.
- Redyt, *pt. pl. refl.* got themselves ready, 9. 171.
- Redys, *pr. pl.* read, 1. 17, 2. 528.
- Refe, *v.* to reave, take away, 3. 720. *See* Reft.
- Reff, *for* Reif, 5. 118 (footnote).
- Refrenje, *v.* to refrain, 4. 731.
- Refresche, *v.* to refresh, 13. 614; *pp.* Refreschit, refreshed, 14. 132.
- Reft, *pt. s.* reft, took away, 16. 418; *him reft*, deprived him of, 2. 36; bereft, 15. 192; *pt. pl.* Reft, took away, 3. 715.

- Refuss, *v.* to shrink from, 12. 528; *pp.*  
 Refusit, shrunk from, 12. 205.  
 Regnyt, *pt. s.* reigned, 13. 698.  
 Regratit, *pt. s.* regretted, 15. 233;  
*pres. part.* Regratand, lamenting,  
 20. 259.  
 Rehers, *v.* to rehearse, tell, 10. 346;  
 Reherss, 8. 518.  
 Reid, *s.* counsel, advice, 2. 122. *See*  
 Rede.  
 Reid, *v.* to read, 2. 84; to speak, 10.  
 276; *pr. s. subj.* may he advise, 11.  
 53.  
 Reif, *s.* what can be reft, *i.e.*, plunder,  
 5. 118. A.S. *rāf*, plunder.  
 Reif, *v.* to plunder, 16. 551. A.S.  
*rāfian*, to plunder.  
 Reiffar, *s.* robber, 19. 667 (E.).  
 Reik, *v.* to reach, 17. 419.  
 Reik, *s.* smoke, 4. 130. A.S. *rīac*, *rīc*,  
 reek, smoke. *See* Reyk.  
 Reiosyng, *s.* rejoicing, 11. 415.  
 Reiosyt, *pt. s.* rejoiced, made glad, 2.  
 551; *pp.* Reiosit, rejoiced, joyful,  
 11. 269.  
 Reirward, *s.* rearguard, 8. 71, 342;  
 16. 58.  
 Rek, 1 *p. s. pr.* I reckon, I care, 7. 24 (H.).  
 Releif, *s.* a sum of money paid to a  
 lord on entrance to an inheritance,  
 12. 320. *See* *Releif* in Blount's Law  
 Dictionary.  
 Releif, *v.* to relieve, 11. 505, 15. 257;  
 Relief, 11. 347; Releiff, 18. 268;  
*pt. pl.* Relevit, relieved, 19. 799; *pp.*  
 Relevit, relieved, supplied, 19. 803;  
 Relewyt, relieved, supplied, 4. 456  
 (footnote).  
 Releyit, *pp.* provided with relays or  
 extra stores, 4. 456. *See* *Relay* in  
 Richardson.  
 Relit, *pt. pl.* reeled, 12. 513; Relyt,  
 14. 69 (E.); *pres. part.* Reland, reel-  
 ing, giving way, 8. 328.  
 Rely, *v.* to rally, call back, 3. 34, 4.  
 156, 426; 7. 491, 19. 580; *imp. s.*  
 Relye, rally, 13. 371; *pt. s.* Releyt,  
 rallied, 2. 401, 427; 7. 51; *pt. pl.*  
 Releyt, rallied, 20. 500; Relyit, 20.  
 440 (E.); *pp.* Releit, *pp.* rallied, 7.  
 91. O.F. *ralier*, to rally; from *lier*,  
 to bind.  
 Relyng, *s.* reeling, wavering, 13. 265;  
 lack of steadiness, 12. 110; Relying  
 (for Relyng), recoiling, 12. 110  
 (E.).  
 Remanand, *s.* remnant, rest, 4. 408,  
 6. 604, 7. 337, 8. 49, 340, 9. 278,  
 10. 690, 17. 98, 18. 106, 19. 373.  
 Rengze, *s.* rein, 2. 415. *See* *Reap*.  
 Renk, *s.* rank (of fighting men), 1.  
 365. *See* the note, p. 234.  
 Renommè, *s.* renown, 4. 774, 9. 48  
 (E.). O.F. *renuance*, *renom*, re-  
 nown.  
 Renommyt, *pp.* renowned, 9. 95  
 (E.).  
 Renowmè, *s.* renown, 9. 550 (E).  
*See* *Renommè*.  
 Renownee, *s.* renown, 8. 290. *See*  
*Renommè*.  
 Renowning, *s.* renown (a bad reading),  
 11. 182 (H.).  
 Renownyt, *pp.* renowned, 1. 32, 10.  
 787, 11. 162, 18. 429; Renowuit, 4.  
 370, 9. 503, 19. 103.  
 Renyt, *pp.* denied, 9. 739. O.F. *reni-*  
*er*, to deny, refuse.  
 Renze, *s.* rein, 11. 175, 13. 297.  
 Repair, *s.* dwelling, resort, haunt, 4.  
 479; place of meeting, 6. 548; re-  
 turn, 18. 557; one's own home, 18.  
 563; Repare, place of shelter, 16.  
 667; Repar, dwelling, abode, 16.  
 310. (From the verb *to repair*.) *See*  
 below.  
 Reparis, *pr. s.* repair, dwell, 4. 477;  
*pres. part.* Reparand, returning, 20.  
 442; Reparande, repairing, making  
 a stay, 15. 404; *pp.* Reparit, re-  
 turned, 6. 112, 7. 82, 12. 86, 20. 2,  
 436. O.F. *reparier*, to return to  
 one's home; Lat. *repatriare*.  
 Reparyng, *s.* repair, haunt, 4. 495.  
 Repentand, *pres. part.* repenting, 19.  
 211.  
 Repentans, *s.* repentance, 20. 249.  
 Repreif, *s.* reproof, blame, 4. 581.  
 Reprief, *v.* to reprove, 5. 84; *pp.* Re-  
 preuit, reprovèd, 16. 605.  
 Reprowyt, *pp.* reproved, blamed, 2.  
 116, 16. 605. (E.).  
 Repugned, *pt. pl.* repulsed, 4. 93 (H.;  
 footnote).  
 Requir, 1 *p. s. pr.* I require, I charge,  
 12. 263.  
 Rerit, *pt. pl.* reared, 14. 69.  
 Rerward, *s.* rearguard, 11. 340. *See*  
 Reirward.  
 Resaiff, *pr. s.* 1 *p.* I receive, 13. 530;  
*pt. s.* Resautit, 10. 127, 16. 20, 17. 4,  
 18. 225; Resavit, 20. 339; Resavyt,  
 1. 355; 2 *p. pl. pr. subj.* Resave, ye  
 receive, 1. 419; *pt. pl.* Resautit, 4.  
 273, 13. 16; *pp.* Resautit, 9. 523, 13.  
 611, 18. 535, 20. 104.  
 Resawyt, *pt. s.* received, 2. 163, 3. 661.  
*See* above.

- Rescours*, *s.* rescue, 3. 76, 13. 369, 583; 17. 901 (E.); *Rescourss*, 13. 368, 19. 642. O.F. *rescousse*, succour; see *escorre* in Burguy.
- Reserwyt*, *pl. s.* reserved, kept secret, 1. 132.
- Reset*, *s.* place of refuge, 5. 415, 6. 447, 10. 139. O.Fr. *reces*, a place of refuge; Burguy. Derived from Lat. *recipere*.
- Resett*, *an error in E. for Resettit*, 9. 282 (footnote).
- Resettit*, *pp.* received, harboured, 9. 282. From *reset*, *q.v.*
- Resisteris*, *s. pl.* resisters, foes, 18. 214.
- Reskew*, *v.* to rescue, 3. 81, 11. 6, 33, 67; *pl. s.* Reskewyt, 3. 51; *pl.* Reskewit, 10. 731; *pp.* Reskewit, 10. 728, 823, 11. 532.
- Reskewing*, *s.* rescue, 5. 419.
- Reskowrss*, *s.* rescue, succour, 17. 901. See *Rescours*.
- Respit*, *s.* delay, 8. 344.
- Ressawe*, *v.* to receive, 18. 546; *pp.* Ressawyt, 3. 360. See *Resaiff*.
- Retennew*, *s.* retinue, 15. 429.
- Reuersit*, *pl. s.* reversed, turned over, 16. 417; *Reversit*, 15. 191.
- Revar*, *s.* river, 14. 337.
- Revard*, *v.* to reward, 4. 480; *pp.* Revardit, 4. 666.
- Revarding*, *s.* remuneration, 9. 321.
- Revede*, *pp.* rest, 5. 12. (The more usual form is *reft*; *reved* is older.)
- Reveling*, *s.* revelation, 10. 738.
- Revit*, *pl. pl.* robbed, took away, 13. 23. See *Refe*.
- Rew*, *v.* to have pity, 16. 280; to cause (him) to repent, 2. 327; *pl. s.* Rewit, rued, 4. 593.
- Rewardit*, *pl. s.* rewarded, 10. 254.
- Rewate*, *s.* kingdom, 3. 60. See *Reawtè*.
- Rewis*, *s. pl.* streets, 14. 221; *Rewys*, 15. 71. F. *rue*, a street.
- Rewlit*, *pl. s.* ruled, 8. 127.
- Rewth*, *s.* pity, compassion, ruth, 3. 534. See *Rew*.
- Rewyn*, *pp.* riven, *i.e.*, had their clothes torn, 2. 510.
- Reyk*, *s.* smoke, vapour, 4. 124. See *Reik*, *s.*
- Reynje*, *s.* rein, 11. 175 (E.). See *Renje*.
- Riall*, *adj.* royal, *i.e.*, great, 12. 557. See *Reale*.
- Rialtè*, *s.* royal power, state, pomp, 16. 48, 20. 87, 132. See *Reawtè*.
- Ribalds*, *s. pl.* ribalds, 1. 103 (footnote).
- Riche*, *v.* to enrich, 13. 743.
- Richess*, *s.* riches, wealth, 13. 450\*, 449.
- Richt*, *s.* justice; *richt vald*, justice would require, 16. 598; *at all richt*, in every suitable way, 10. 312; *all at richt*, in good order, 14. 171.
- Richt*, *adv.* very right, 15. 82; down-right, 5. 632.
- Richtwisness*, *s.* righteousness, 20. 555; *Richtwisnes*, 10. 289. A.S. *rihtwisnes*.
- Rid* (see *Ryde*), 12. 557 (E.).
- Ridand*, *pres. part.* riding, 1. 484, 2. 343, 9. 213, 16. 572, 17. 204; *pp.* Ridin, ridden, 4. 45. See *Ryd*.
- Rif*, *v.* to rive, 20. 255, 258.
- Rif*, *an error in C. for Drif*, 7. 66 (footnote).
- Rik*, *s.* kingdom, 8. 234. A.S. *rice*, power, a kingdom.
- Ring*, *v.* to reign, 20 (colophon). See *Ryng*.
- Rinke*, *a misreading*, 2. 365 (footnote). See the note, p. 234.
- Rinnand*, *pres. part.* running, 2. 120 (footnote). See *Ryn*.
- Riss*, *v.* to rise, 11. 487, 12. 554. See *Raiss*.
- Roct*, *pl. s.* raught, dealt (a blow), 6. 626. See *Raucht*.
- Rod*, *s.* road, path, 6. 237, 10. 379, 559; *Roid*, 10. 559 (E.).
- Roid*, *s.* rood, cross, 12. 256 (E.).
- Roid*, *adj.* severe, 15. 54 (E.). See *Ryde*.
- Roid*, *for Vyde*, 6. 288 (E.).
- Romanys*, *s.* romance, 1. 446, 2. 46, 3. 437; *pl.* 9. 492.
- Romble*, *s.* (for *Rymmyll*), 12. 557 (E.). See *Rymmyll*.
- Rose*, *s.* a rose, 11. 546.
- Rost*, *v.* to roast, 7. 153; *pl. pl.* Ros-tit, wasted, 7. 165.
- Rottyn*, *pp.* rotten, 19. 178.
- Roucht*, *pl. s.* dealt (lit. reached), 12. 53, 15. 188; *pp.* 11. 608, 12. 521. See *Raucht*.
- Roucht*, *i p. s. pr. subj.* I should not reck, 7. 24. A.S. *reccan*, to reck; *pl. t. ic röhle*.
- Roucht*, *pl. s.* recked; *a bad reading in E. in* 7. 623.
- Rounnyngis*, *s. pl.* runnings, skirmishes, 18. 68 (E.).
- Rouschit*, *pl. s.* rushed, fell quickly, 3. 139. See *Rusche*.

- Rout, *s.* a company, troop, host, band, 2. 149, 6. 517, 568, 570, 9. 329, 342, 581, 11. 218, 538; the ordinary people, 9. 504. O.F. *rote*, *route*, a band. See Rowt.
- Rout, *s.* a blow, 5. 632. See Rowt.
- Routand, *an error for* Rownand, 12. 360 (E.).
- Routit, *pt. s.* snored, 7. 192. A.S. *hrutan*, to snore.
- Rowit, *pt. pl.* rowed, 4. 368, 5. 19; Rowyt, 3. 425, 577; *pres. part.* Rowand, rowing, 3. 580.
- Rowm, *s.* room, space, 6. 234; Rowme, 11. 123, 469, 13. 92, 14. 69, 20. 460; wide space, 16. 196. A.S. *rūm*, space.
- Rownand, *pres. part.* whispering, 12. 360. A.S. *rūnian*, to whisper.
- Rownyng, *s.* whispering, 12. 368.
- Rowt, *s.* a company, band, troop, 4. 190, 6. 109, 9. 567, 12. 336, 16. 467; *pl.* Rowtis, 12. 424, 18. 10, 20. 358.
- Rowt, *s.* a blow, 6. 626; *pl.* Rowtis, blows, 2. 356, 9. 587, 13. 212, 15. 490. See Rout. Cf. E. *rou*, a defeat.
- Roydly, *adv.* fiercely, 11. 599, 13. 69; severely, 12. 513; rudely, roughly, 11. 545, 13. 31, 18. 331. See Ruyd.
- Ruce, *s.* praise, 20 (colophon). Icel. *hrós*, praise.
- Rude-eyyn, *s.* eve of the Rood, *i.e.*, of the Exaltation of the Cross, 17. 634.
- Rudly, *adv.* rudely, 9. 750 (E.).
- Ruflyt, *an error in E. for* Ruschit, 4. 145 (footnote).
- Rusche, *v.* to drive back, defeat, overthrow, 14. 200, 17. 146, 18. 456; Russ, 12. 527; *pres. part.* Ruschand, rushing, dashing, 15. 38; *pt. s.* Ruschit, overthrew, 2. 404, 3. 29; rushed, 6. 227, 10. 427, 19. 560; fell quickly, 5. 645, 6. 629; charged, 13. 69; burst, 12. 57; Rushed, drove, 16. 198\*; *pt. pl.* Ruschit, fell down, 12. 513; rushed, 10. 71, 91; overthrew, 13. 193; repulsed, 4. 93, 145. (This word is very characteristic of Barbour.) A.S. *hrōsan*, to fall down, rush; Swed. *rusa*, to rush.
- Russ, *v.* to overthrow, 12. 527. See above.
- Ruyd, *adj.* rude, severe, 2. 356. F. *roide*, rough, fierce.
- Ruydly, *adv.* rudely, boisterously, 2. 349.
- Ruys, *s. pl.* streets, 15. 71 (E.). See Kewis.
- Rybbaldail, *s.* low company, 1. 335.
- Rybbaldy, *s.* low dissipation, 1. 341.
- Rycht, *s.* right, 1. 78, 159.
- Rycht, *adv.* right, exactly, 1. 8; 10. 84.
- Rychtwisly, *adv.* righteously, 1. 366.
- Rychtwiss, *adj.* right, true, proper, 1. 159. A.S. *riktwis*.
- Ryd, *v.* to ride, 2. 73, 12. 224; *pres. part.* Rydand, riding, 4. 190, 8. 75, 11. 589, 12. 27, 16. 401, 19. 288, 308; *pp.* Ryddin, ridden, 17. 256; Ryddyn, 14. 326; Rydyn, 19. 596.
- Ryde, *adj.* severe, 12. 557. See the note, p. 267. It is difficult to tell whether this is connected with Icel. *reiðr*, angry, or with *roydly* and *ruyd*.
- Ryg, *s.* ridge, 19. 308, 314. A.S. *hrycg*, the back.
- Rygorously, *adv.* strictly, 4. 88; severely, 6. 136.
- Ryme, *s.* rime (*generally misspelled* rhyme), verse, 3. 178. A.S. *rīm*.
- Rymnyll, *s.* a blow, 12. 557. Jamieson gives "*remyllis*, blows," as occurring in the Houlate, iii. 16. Cf. Dan. *ramme*, to hit, strike.
- Ryn, *v.* to run, 1. 103, 6. 593; *pres. s.* Rynnys, runs, 2. 434; Rynnys, 20. 558; *pres. part.* Rynand, 5. 648, 6. 56, 17. 609; Rynnand, 3. 684. Icel. *renna*, to run.
- Ryng, *v.* to reign, 1. 78, 6. 192, 19. 28; *ger.* 19. 10 (E.); *pres. part.* Ryngand, reigning, 6. 191. O.F. *regner*, to reign.
- Ryngis, *s. pl.* rings, 3. 209.
- Ryoll, *adj.* royal, 13. 30. See Reale.
- Ryot, *s.* riot, depredation, 17. 510.
- Ryot, *pt. s.* in phr. *ryot to*, made riot in, harried, 5. 181.
- Ryotit, *pt. s.* harried, spoiled, 9. 500, 8. 127 (E.).
- Ryss, *v.* to rise, 1. 573, 3. 310, 718, 10. 678; *pp.* Rysyn, risen, 8. 216, 14. 177; Ryssyn, 4. 166.
- Ryth, *adv.* right, wholly, 1. 194.
- Sa, *adv.* so, 1. 30, 5. 53, 11. 641, &c.
- Sa, 2 *p. pl. pr.* say ye, 7. 258.
- Sad, *adj.* heavy, 12. 134.
- Sad, *am, an error in E. for* Set, 3. 319 (footnote).

- Sadly**, *adv.* in a settled manner, resolutely, 13. 494; firmly, closely, 13. 374; in good order, 17. 567.  
**Sadylt**, *pt. s.* saddled, 2. 141.  
**Saff**, *pr. s. subj.* may save, 20. 210; *pt. s.* Saffit, saved, 4. 137. *See* Sauf.  
**Sagat**, *adv.* in such wise, *in E.*, 7. 368 (*footnote*). From *sa*, so, and *gat*, way.  
**Saik**, *s.* sake, 7. 244.  
**Sair**, *adv.* sorely, 9. 469; *by sair*, dearly pay for, 18. 514.  
**Sais**, *pr. pl. say*, 12. 398; *imp. pl. say ye*, 12. 199.  
**Sak**, *s.* sake, 6. 503, 9. 22.  
**Sakless**, *adj.* innocent, 20. 175. From A.S. *sacu*, strife; hence, crime, or a criminal charge.  
**Saland**, *pres. part.* sailing, 19. 193. *See* Salit.  
**Sald**, *pp.* sold, 5. 610, 19. 178.  
**Salit**, *pt. s.* sailed, 16. 17; *Salyt*, 14. 378 (*E.*), 20. 322; *pl. Salit*, 16. 556, 657, 18. 203.  
**Sall**, 1 *p. s. pr.* I shall, 1. 156; 2 *p. s. pr. Sall*, 1. 156; *pr. pl. Sall*, shall, will, 1. 129; 2 *p. pl. pr. zhe sall*, ye shall, 4. 659.  
**Salmond**, *s.* a salmon, 19. 664; *pl. Salmonys*, 2. 576.  
**Salss**, *s.* sauce, 3. 540.  
**Salt**, *s.* assault, 17. 356 (*E.*); *pl. Saltis*, 18. 68. *See* Sawt.  
**Salusit**, *pt. pl.* saluted, 4. 509.  
**Salys**, *s. pl.* sails, 15. 282, 289, 16. 692.  
**Sammyn**, *adv.* together, 5. 72, 212, 251, 400, 6. 82, 370, 454, 580, 7. 513, 8. 278, 9. 270, 10. 19, 12. 164, 16. 567, 19. 498, 20. 257; *Samyn*, 2. 349, 3. 47. Cf. *Mæso-Goth. samana*, together; A.S. *samod*, together; *Mæso-Goth. sama*, the same. *See* below.  
**Samyn**, *adj.* same, 1. 252, 2. 25, 3. 589, 4. 420; *Samine*, 10. 563 (*H.*); *Sammyn*, 7. 140, 10. 192, 11. 492. Cf. *Mæso-Goth. sama*, the same.  
**Sanct**, *s.* saint, 1. 353, 5. 336, 17. 875 (*E.*). Lat. *sanctus*.  
**Sanctit**, *pp.* sainted, 17. 286, 875.  
**Sang**, *s.* song, 3. 178.  
**Sanyt**, *pt. s.* crossed himself, blest himself, 7. 98, 9. 395. O.F. *seigner*, I.at. *signare*, to mark with the sign of the cross. *See* Sayn.  
**Sar**, *adv.* sorely, 2. 351, 450, 19. 598. *See* Sayr.  
**Sarraly**, *adv.* closely, in close order, 8. 822, 9. 140, 176, 13. 569, 16. 114, 608, 17. 96, 18. 157, 195. Cf. "with *serried* shields in thick array;" *Paradise Lost*, i. 548. F. *serrer*, to close fast. Jamieson explains it by "artfully," as if from A.S. *searolice*, artificially.  
**Sarray**, *adj.* close; *used as adv.* closely, 8. 296. *See* note to the line, p. 225; and *see* above.  
**Sary**, *adj.* sorry, 2. 65, 5. 450, 9. 44, 12. 141, 19. 42.  
**Sat**, *pt. s.* became, suited, 1. 394. Cf. *sitlande*, becoming, suitable; *Morte Arthure*, ed. Brock, 953, 1501.  
**Saucht**, *pp.* reconciled, 10. 300. Cf. A.S. *sahit*, peace; *sahltian*, to make peace.  
**Sauf**, *v.* to save, 4. 147, 10. 698; *pr. s. imper.* may he save, 6. 672, 8. 263; *ger.* to sauff, to save, *i.e.*, saving (your presence), 3. 173.  
**Sauflly**, *adv.* safely, 10. 484, 14. 34.  
**Saufte**, *s.* safety, 3. 183, 4. 559. *See* Savitè.  
**Saull**, *s.* soul, 20. 163, 346; *pl. Saulys*, 20. 476; *Saule hele*, soul's health (salvation), 20. 346 (*E.*). A.S. *sawol*.  
**Savit**, *pp.* preserved, saved, 4. 537, 12. 317, 20. 180. *See* Sauf, Sawyt.  
**Savitè**, *s.* safety, 4. 536, 9. 523, 10. 441. *See* Sauftè.  
**Savourit**, *pp.* scented, 16. 70.  
**Saw**, *s.* saying, 4. 260, 638, 11. 302; *pl. Sawis*, sayings, words, speeches, 4. 323, 9. 686. A.S. *sagu*, a saying, saw.  
**Saw**, *pt. pl.* saw, perceived, 7. 131.  
**Sawerand**, *pres. part.* giving out a (sweet) savour, 16. 70 (*E.*). *See* Savourit.  
**Sawff**, *imp. s.* 3 *p.* may he save, save, 2. 145. *See* Sauf.  
**Sawffly**, *adv.* safely, 3. 359.  
**Sawftè**, *s.* safety, 4. 536 (*footnote*). *See* Sauftè.  
**Sawin**, *pp.* sown, 4. 685. *See* Note, p. 563.  
**Sawt**, *s.* assault, 9. 350 (*E.*), 17. 356. *See* Salt.  
**Sawyt**, *pp.* saved, 2. 338; *pr. s.* Sawys, saves, 10. 571 (*E.*).  
**Sayand**, *pres. part.* saying, 11. 412, 12. 361.  
**Sayn**, *pr. s. subj.* may he bless, 9. 24; *pt. s.* Sanyt hym, blessed himself, 7. 98, 9. 395. O.F. *seigner*,

- Lat. *signare*, to make the sign of the cross. See *Sanyt*.
- Saynd, *s.* message, 5. 196. A.S. *sand*, a sending.
- Sayr, *adv.* sorely, 1. 440. See *Sar*.
- Scaffaldis, *s. pl.* scaffolds, 17. 343 (E.); Scaffatis, 17. 343, 601.
- Scaill, *s.* a dispersed company, a body of men in loose order, 15. 341, 353. But see the note, p. 280.
- Scaill, *v.* to disperse (*neuter*), to fly in different directions, 15. 337\*, 17. 99. See below.
- Scale, *v.* to disperse (*neuter*), 6. 575; Scale thame, to disperse themselves, 12. 465; Scaill, 15. 337\*, 17. 99; *pl. s.* Scalit, dispersed, 6. 428, 7. 299; *pl. s.* 93, 9. 429, 13. 73; *pp.* Scalit, dispersed, scattered, 5. 447, 6. 28, 9. 264, 12. 466, 13. 84, 14. 300, 15. 546, 16. 211, 17. 104, 19. 806. Icel. *skilja*, to separate.
- Scarsly, *adv.* scarcely, hardly, 20. 38.
- Scath, *s.* harm, 8. 358, 9. 541, 10. 5; Scaith, 1. 202; *pl.* Scathess, damages, 20. 50. See *Skaith*.
- Scath, *v.* to scathe, harm, injure, 4. 363, 7. 304, 13. 110; *pl. pl.* Scathit, harmed, 10. 59.
- Scathfull, *adj.* harmful, 5. 249.
- Scathless, *adj.* unharmed, 18. 200, 19. 683.
- Schair, *pl. s.* shore, cut, 15. 82. See *Schar*.
- Schap, *v.* to shape, intend, 19. 389; to prepare, 17. 606; Schap hym, to get himself ready, 5. 219; Schape thame, to dispose themselves, 13. 301; *pr. pl.* Schapis thaim, address themselves, endeavour, 2. 324; *imp. pl.* Schapis, contrive, 12. 211; 1 *p.* Schap we vs, let us prepare ourselves, 11. 61; *pp.* Schapen, fitted, 20. 206.
- Schar, *pl. s.* shore, cut, carved (the meat), 2. 92; cut, 8. 172; Schare, 6. 137, 628; *pl.* Schar, cut, 12. 575, 16. 450; Schare, 8. 55. See *Schar*.
- Schavaldwris, *s. pl.* wanderers, 5. 205. The readings *sodiowrys* (E.), and *souldiers* (H.), mean 'soldiers.' Innes guesses it to mean 'chevaliers' (!), which is most unlikely. Jamieson notes a form *schawaldouris*, said to mean 'wanderers in the woods, subsisting by hunting,' with a reference to Wyntown, vii. 29. 217. But the right form seems to be *shaveldour*, a vagrant. See *Prompt. Parv.*, p. 444, note 2.
- Schaw, *v.* to shew, 4. 261; 1 *p.* *pr.* I shew, 4. 486; *pr. s.* Schawys shews, 1. 8; *pl. s.* Schawit, shewed, 17. 47; Schawyt, 1. 605, 2. 367, 10. 161 (E.).
- Schaw, *s.* thicket, shaw, 5. 58; *pl.* Schawys, shaws, thick grove, 3. 479. Dan. *skov*, a wood, Icel. *skógr*.
- Schawdest, *adj. superl.* the shallowest (part), 9. 354. See *Schald*, shallow, in Jamieson.
- Schawing, *s.* shewing, outward exhibition, external sign, 16. 95.
- Schawyt, a poor reading for *Blenknyt*, in E., 8. 217.
- Schaym, *s.* shame, 7. 632.
- Sched, *pl. s.* cleft, parted, 1. 294.
- Scheld, *imp. s.* 3 *p.* may he shield, 2. 145.
- Scheldis, *s. pl.* shields, 6. 217, & 227, 11. 461.
- Schent, *pp.* disgraced, 4. 280; put to shame, 7. 615. A.S. *scendan*, to destroy.
- Scher, *v.* to shear, *i.e.*, to carve the meat at dinner, 1. 356; to cut, 10. 174, 12. 519; to cut up, 20. 571 (E.); *pres. part.* Scherand, shearing, cutting, 16. 455. See *Schar*.
- Schetis, *s. pl.* sheets, 13. 225 (*rubric*).
- Schew, *pl. s.* shewed, 10. 161. See *Schaw*.
- Scheyne, *adj.* shining, bright, glorious, 11. 461, 12. 443, 18. 172.
- Schiltrum (E.), *s.* a squadron, 12. 429, 433, 444; 13. 175. So spelt in E.; C. has *childrome*. A.S. *scildtruma*, an armed company, lit. a troop-shield; from A.S. *scild*, a shield, and *truma*, a troop. See note to xii. 429, p. 267.
- Schipfar, *s.* journeying in a ship, a sea voyage, 3. 692; Schipfair, 3. 686.
- Schipping, *s.* shipping, 16. 16 (E.); Schippyne, 3. 400.
- Schippis, *s. pl.* ships, 10. 98.
- Schippit, *pp.* shipped, embarked, 14. 20, 16. 37; Schippynt, took ship, 3. 575.
- Schir, *s.* sir, 11. 632, &c.
- Schire, *adj.* bright, 5. 26. A.S. *scīr*, bright, sheer; *Meso-Goth. skēirs*, clear. See *Schyre*.

- Schirreff, *s.* sheriff, 16. 583.  
 Scho, *pron. fem.* she, 3. 626, 4. 274, 7. 239, 10. 741, 13. 637, 16. 276, 17. 672 (where it refers to the 'sow'); *spelt* Sche, 13. 635. A.S. *śō*.  
 Schoir, *adj.* sheer, steep, 10. 22; Schore, 10. 600. *See* Schore.  
 Schonand, *pres. part.* shunning, 5. 201.  
 Schop, *v.* to make, prepare, 16. 573. *See* Schap.  
 Schor, *s.* menace, clamour, 6. 621 (E.), 11. 562. *See* Schoyr.  
 Schore, *adj.* steep, sheer, 10. 600; Schoir, 10. 22. Cf. Icel. *skör*, a rim, edge; *skara*, to jut out.  
 Schort, *adj.* short, 7. 268.  
 Schot, *s.* shot, stone shot for war-engines, 11. 119; shot, shooting, 13. 48, 52, 75.  
 Schot, *s. pl.* shot, 17. 351.  
 Schot, *pt. pl.* rushed, dashed, 8. 54, 14. 210; jumped, 9. 387; *pl.* rushed, 9. 591, 10. 654, 16. 406, 17. 111. A.S. *scōtan*, to shoot; also, to rush, dash.  
 Schot, *s.* rush, dash, onset, 12. 77. *See* above.  
 Schour, *s.* shower, 13. 43.  
 Schout, *s.* shout, cry, 6. 158, 16. 406; Schowt, 6. 145, 12. 77 (E.).  
 Schout, *v.* to shoot, rush, 15. 458 (E.) *See* Schute.  
 Schowtit, *pt. pl.* hooted at, 9. 366.  
 Schoyne, *s. pl.* shoes, 2. 510.  
 Schoyr, *s.* menace, threatening, noisy clamour, 6. 621. Cf. Old Swed. *skorra*, to make a grating sound; Icel. *skara*, to poke the fire; G. *schüren*, to stir, poke, rake; Dan. *skurre*, to grate. Jamieson explains it by "a threatening," and cites passages where such is clearly the right sense. *See* Schor.  
 Schraiff, *pt. pl.* shrove (themselves), 11. 377 (E.).  
 Schrevyn, *pp.* shriven, 19. 211.  
 Schuk, *pt. s.* shook, reeled, 2. 380.  
 Schuldur, *s.* shoulder, 6. 628; *pl.* Schulderis, shoulders, 9. 356; Schuldrys, 1. 386.  
 Schupe, *pt. s.* intended, lit. shaped, 9. 704, 16. 76; Schup him, prepared, 6. 394; *pl.* Schup, arranged, 19. 415; endeavoured, attempted, 10. 450, 19. 339 (E.); intended, 9. 150; Schupe, planned, plotted, 5. 539; prepared, 14. 39; purposed, intended, 18. 291; Schupe thame, proposed, intended, 6. 41, 12. 344, 16. 438, 17. 311, 333; Schupe we vs, if we attempted, 11. 292. *See* Schap.  
 Schute, *v.* to shoot, launch, 4. 629; to shoot (arrows), 13. 59, 65; to push, 3. 117; to dash, rush, 7. 390; Schut, to dash, rush, 11. 596; *pres. part.* Schutand, shooting, 16. 121. *See* Schot.  
 Schynand, *pres. part.* shining, 4. 166, 6. 100, 8. 46, 11. 188, 14. 177.  
 Schynnyng, *s.* sheen, brightness, 6. 217.  
 Schyr, *s.* sir, 1. 73, 157, &c.  
 Schyre, *adv.* brightly, 4. 619, 19. 662. *See* Schire.  
 Schyrreffys, *s. pl.* sheriffs, 1. 190.  
 Scottis, *adj.* Scotch, 11. 8, &c.  
 Scounryt, *pt. pl.* gave way, felt fear, retreated, 17. 651 (E.). Cf. Lowland Sc. *scunner*, to loathe, which see in Jamieson; A.S. *scunian*, to shun. *See* Skownrand.  
 Scowking, *s.* skulking, cowardice, 8. 140; *into scowkyng*, in a treacherous manner, traitorously, 7. 130. Cf. Dan. *skulke*, to slink, Du. *schuilen*, to lurk, Swed. *skyla*, to hide.  
 Scowmar, *for* Scummar, 14. 375 (E.).  
 Scowryt, *pp.* scoured, 3. 542.  
 Scrymmyng, *s.* skirmishing, 19. 521. O.F. *escrimer*, to fence; cf. Eng. *scrinmage*.  
 Sculking, *for* Scowkyng, 7. 130 (E.).  
 Scummar, *s.* a rover, 14. 375. Cf. Du. *zeeschuimer*, a pirate, corsair; *zeeschuimen*, to rove the seas.  
 Scurreours, *s. pl.* scouts, 14. 487 (*foot-note*; *rubric* in H.). The full form is *discourours*, q.v.  
 Se, *s.* the sea, 1. 325, 346, 6. 211, &c.; lake, 10. 23, 34; *Scottis se*, the firth of Forth, 9. 329; *by se*, by sea, 13. 615; *pl.* Seis, lakes, 15. 275.  
 Se, *v.* to see, 5. 503, 8. 132, 11. 472; *imp. 3 p.* may he watch over, may he preserve, 3. 172, 5. 653, 9. 234. *See* note to Chaucer, Pard. Tale, Group C, l. 715 (Clarendon Press).  
 Secreis, *s. pl.* secrets, 4. 577 (*foot-note*).  
 Seculer, *s.* secular men, laymen, 4. 12.  
 See, *s.* lake, sea, 10. 130. *See* Se.  
 Sege, *s.* a siege, 4. 45, 9. 332, 10. 114 (E.); *pl.* Segis, 20. 64 (E.). *See* below.  
 Sege, *s.* seat, throne, 4. 228 (*foot-note*); *pl.* Segis, seats, thrones, 4.



- 228; mansions (in astrology), 4. 697. F. *siege*, a seat.
- Segit, *pt. s.* besieged, 11. 114; *pres. part.* Segande, besieging, 17. 511.
- Seid, *s.* seed, kindred, 1. 63.
- Seik, *adj.* sick, 9. 112.
- Seik, *v.* to seek, 5. 557, 6. 461.
- Seiknes, *s.* sickness, 4. 191, 9. 35.
- Seile, *s.* seal, 1. 611; Seyle, 1. 613.
- Seir, *adj.* various, several, separate, 4. 752, 5. 432, 8. 230, 13. 723; many, 19. 358. Cf. Icel. *ser*, for oneself; also, separately, one by one.
- Seis, *s. pl.* lakes, 15. 275. *See* Se.
- Seis, *pr. pl.* see, 9. 89; 2 *p. s. pr.* seest, 4. 301. *See* Se, *v.*
- Sek, *ger.* to seek, 19. 602.
- Sekir, *adj.* secure, 9. 381; safe, 2. 238, 17. 170; sure, 5. 515, 14. 26; firm, 11. 399; steadfast, 10. 284; Sekyr, firm, 11. 249. Du. *seker*, G. *sicher*, safe.
- Sekirly, *adv.* certainly, of a surety, 4. 216, 662; 18. 31, 51, 60; 20. 278; Sekyrly, 1. 426, 2. 472, 3. 673, 4. 32. *See* above.
- Sekirnes, *s.* security, 4. 178; Sekirness, confirmation, 20. 150; Sekyrness, security, 3. 665. *See* Sekir.
- Sekkis, *s. pl.* sacks, 8. 444.
- Selwyn, a reading in E. for Self, 8. 484.
- Selys, *s. pl.* seals, 20. 56, 136; *gen. sing.* seal's, 20. 26. *See* Seile.
- Sembland, *s.* semblance, appearance, show, 8. 238, 9. 250.
- Semble, *s.* assembly, troop, throng, 2. 380.
- Semys, *pr. s.* it seems, 3. 168, 170; *pt. s.* Semyt, it seemed, 11. 133, 12. 186, 13. 572; *thame semyt*, it seemed to them, *i.e.* they seemed to themselves, 12. 147.
- Sen, *conj.* since, 1. 261, 507, 6. 120, 7. 15, 9. 744, 12. 48. Cf. A.S. *sinnan*, afterwards.
- Send, *pt. s.* sent, 1. 145, 2. 176, 13. 677, 14. 8, 15. 137; *pl.* 7. 164; *pp.* Send, sent, 4. 52, 18. 380.
- Sensyne, *adv.* afterwards, 1. 451 (*foot-note*).
- Sent, *s.* scent, 6. 500. (The spelling *sent* is right; from F. *sentir*.)
- Sentens, *s.* meaning, 4. 260.
- Senzjory, *s.* dominion, lordship, sovereignty, 5. 232, 8. 14, 9. 303, 11. 45, 19. 4; Senzhory, 1. 97, 12. 298; Senzeroy, 15. 324; Senzhowry, 1. 151.
- Ser, *adj.* various, separate, 3. 270, 11. 171, 12. 511, 13. 427, 17. 636, 19. 176, 20. 50. *See* Seir.
- Sergeandis, *s. pl.* servants, *in* E., 6. 68 (*foot-note*).
- Sermonyng, *s.* explanation, discourse, 4. 278. Used by Chaucer, Kn. Tale, 2233.
- Seruit, *pt. s.* served, served at meat (*ironically*), 16. 451. *See* Serwe.
- Serwandis, *s. pl.* servants, slaves, 3. 220.
- Serwe, *v.* to serve, 16. 595; *pt. s.* Serwyt, 2. 171; *pl.* 3. 762; *pp.* Serwyt, 1. 436.
- Serwyt, *pt. s.* served, performed, 10. 342 (E.). A poor reading for Preuit.
- Sesand, *pres. part.* seizing, 10. 774; *pt. s.* Sesit, 6. 447, 9. 439, 10. 490; *pt. pl.* Sesit, seized, 14. 130, 17. 107; Sesyt in, seized upon, 15. 338; *pp.* Sesit, 5. 370, 13. 606, 17. 174; confiscated, 13. 499.
- Sesing, *s.* possession, 6. 496. Cf. the phr. to be *seised* of a thing.
- Sesoun, *s.* season, 4. 105; Sesoun, 7. 497.
- Sess, *v.* to seize, 10. 108; *pt. s.* Sessit, 15. 512; *pp.* 10. 759. *See* Sesand.
- Set, *v.* to set, place, employ, 1. 11; to set, put, 7. 172; to attribute, 17. 826; *set help thartill*, give help in the matter, 10. 100; 1 *p. s. pr.* I account, 3. 319; *pt. s.* Set, 9. 51; ferried, 14. 382; Set in, *pt. pl.* turned (their horses' heads) inwards, 9. 610 (see the note, p. 259); *pp.* Set, set in one's place, seated, 1. 621; set, put, 10. 228, 16. 427; *pres. part.* Settand, setting, 10. 257; *pr. s.* Settis, puts, 4. 696; *imp. pl.* Settis, 11. 563.
- Seth, *v.* to seethe, boil, 20. 571.
- Setis, *s. pl.* traps, snares for game, 3. 479. From the verb *to set*.
- Settirday, Saturday, 11. 352.
- Sevintene, *card. num.* seventeen, 13. 645.
- Sex-sum, six in all, 6. 231.
- Sexty, *card. num.* sixty, 6. 31; Sextè, 19. 35.
- Seying, *s.* sight, 17. 88.
- Seyk, *v.* to seek, 10. 453.
- Seyle, *s.* good, 1. 303. A.S. *sæl*, a good time.
- Seyn, *pp.* seen, 6. 21, 569; 7. 553, 11. 264; Seyne, 10. 591, 16. 179.
- Seynd, *v.* to send, 3. 748.
- Seyss, *v.* to seize, 9. 530. *See* Sess.

- Shaldest, *a reading in E. and H. for*  
 Schawdest, 9. 354 (*footnote*).  
 Shame, *ger.* to feel ashamed, 7. 436.  
 Shawis, *pr. s.* shews, 4. 121. *See*  
 Schaw.  
 Shraf, *pt. pl. refl.* shrived themselves,  
 11. 377.  
 Sib, *adj.* akin, related; *sib men*, kins-  
 men, 17. 318 (*see below*). A.S. *sib*,  
 related, akin.  
 Sib-man, *s.* relation, kinsman, 5. 495;  
*pl.* Sibmen, relatives, 3. 403, 17.  
 318. *See above*.  
 Sic, *dem. pron.* such, 1. 77, 7. 633, 8.  
 180. *See* Sik.  
 Sich, *v.* to sigh, 3. 350.  
 Sid, *s.* side, 2. 74.  
 Sik, *adv.* such, 3. 62. *Sik* stands for *slik*  
 or *silk*, more likely for the former;  
 cf. Icel. *sílk*, such; A.S. *swylc*,  
 such.  
 Siss, *s. pl.* times, 5. 178, 15. 393, 20.  
 225. *Siss* stands for *sithis*, *pl.* of  
*sith*, a time. *See below*.  
 Sith, *s. pl.* times; *feill sith*, 9. 737.  
 A.S. *sith*, a time.  
 Sittand, *pres. part.* sitting, 10. 763;  
*pr. s.* Sittis, sits, 12. 172; *pp.* Sit-  
 tyn, sat, 7. 269.  
 Sittell, *an error for* Rebell, 10. 129  
 (H.).  
 Skaith, *s.* scath, harm, evil, injury, 1.  
 82, 9. 211; damage, 5. 418 (H.).  
*See* Scath.  
 Skalyt, *pp.* dispersed; or *pt. pl.* dis-  
 persed themselves, 2. 307; *pp.*  
 dispersed, 2. 394, 8. 326 (E.). *See*  
 Scale.  
 Skant, *adv.* scarcely, 20. 434 (H.).  
 Skill, *s.* reason, 1. 214, 7. 362, 12. 260;  
*glossed by* reason in H., 9. 751;  
 choice, in *phr. of skill*, *i.e.*, by  
 choice, 8. 436. Icel. *skil*, discern-  
 ment.  
 Skownrand, *pres. part.* loathing, in  
 E., 5. 201 (*footnote*). *See* Scounryt,  
 Skunnyrrit.  
 Skry, *for* Ascry, *s.* clamour, outcry,  
 19. 564 (H.).  
 Skulking, *s.* lurking about, 8. 140 (E.).  
 Skunnyrrit, *pt. pl.* shunned, retreated,  
 gave way, 17. 651. *See* Skownrand,  
 Scounryt.  
 Sla, *v.* to slay, 2. 207, 3. 98, 6. 441,  
 14. 442; *pr. pl.* Sla, slay, 1. 489;  
*pres. part.* Slaand, slaying, 19. 574;  
 Slayand, 17. 592, 19. 567; *pp.*  
 Slane, 4. 94.  
 Slaid, *pt. pl.* slid, 10. 700; 1 *p. s.*  
*pt.* I slid, 10. 558; Slayd, *pt. pl.*  
 passed swiftly, 3. 701. *See* Slyd.  
 Slak, *s.* hollow place, depression, 14.  
 536.  
 Slane, *pp.* slain, 4. 94. *See* Sla.  
 Slang, *pt. s.* threw, 17. 645 (H.); *see*  
 also 16. 651.  
 Slauchtir, *s.* slaughter, 19. 567.  
 Slayand, *pres. part.* slaying, 17. 592,  
 18. 553. *See* Sla.  
 Slayd, *pt. pl.* slid, passed swiftly, 3.  
 701. *See* Slaid.  
 Sle, *adj.* sly, crafty, skilful, 5. 513,  
 16. 335; knowing, 4. 212; experi-  
 enced, 19. 179.  
 Slear, *adj.* (lit. slyer), more skilful, 17.  
 244. *See above*.  
 Sleast, *adj.* most skilful, 17. 435, 938.  
*See above*.  
 Slely, *adv.* silyly, 1. 150, 8. 442, 9.  
 353; cautiously, 19. 538.  
 Slepan, *pres. part.* sleeping, 5. 83,  
 7. 204, 290, 326.  
 Slepe; *on slepe*, asleep, 7. 192.  
 Slepit, *pt. s.* slept, 7. 188; *pl.* 9. 377.  
 Sleuch, *pt. pl.* slew, 1. 285. *See*  
 Slew.  
 Sleuth, *s.* slot, track, 7. 21, 44. Icel.  
*síðr*, a track.  
 Sleuthhund, *s.* a sleuth-hound, slot-  
 hound, 6. 484, 669. *See above*.  
 Slew, *pt. pl.* struck; *slew fyre*, struck  
 fire, 13. 36. *See* Sla, and Strake.  
 Slewth-hund, *s.* Slooth-hound, 6. 36  
 (E. and H.). *See* Sleuthhund.  
 Slicht, *s.* sleight, guile, craft, 5. 105,  
 488, 8. 505, 10. 334, 18. 198; stra-  
 tagem, 16. 84. *See* Slycht.  
 Slidand, *pres. part.* gliding, 3. 627.  
 Slike, *adv.* 'slick,' quickly, rapidly,  
 and smoothly, 6. 78.  
 Slop, *s.* a gap, 8. 274; *pl.* Sloppis,  
 breaches, gaps, 8. 179, 182. Cf.  
 Dan. *slap*, relaxed, slack. Burns  
 has *slaps* in Tam o' Shanter, 1. 8.  
 Sloppes, *a reading in* H. *for* Soppis,  
 8. 326 (*footnote*).  
 Slow, *pt. s.* slew, 15. 221. *See* Sla.  
 Sluth-hwnd, sleuth-hound, 6. 36. *See*  
 Sleuthhund.  
 Slycht, sleight, 1. 112, 2. 324, 3. 262;  
 deceit, 1. 528. *See* Slicht.  
 Slyd, *v.* to slide, slide down, descend,  
 3. 707; Slyde, 10. 596; *pp.* Slyd-  
 din, slidden, slid, 17. 126. *See* Slaid,  
 Slayd.  
 Slyk, *s.* slime, wet mud, 13. 352. Cf.  
 Du. *slijk*, dirt, mud, mire; E.  
*sludge*.

- Smat, *pt. s.* smote, 6. 136, 639.  
 Smerly, *adv.* quickly, soon, 5. 596, 6. 21, 12. 71, 13. 106, 16. 600, 17. 174.  
 Snaw, *s.* snow, 9. 128.  
 Snell, *adj.* sharp, biting, severe, 3. 377. A.S. *snell*, quick, sharp; G. *schnell*, quick.  
 Snored, *pt. s.* snored, a gloss in H. upon Routit, 7. 192 (*footnote*).  
 Snuke, for Nwk (nook), 4. 556 (*footnote*). And see below.  
 Snwk, *s.* a promontory, 1. 188. Jamieson has "*snuk*," a small promontory with a reference to Wallace, vii. 1044.  
 Sobit, or Sovit, an error in C. for Salit, 14. 378 (*footnote*).  
 Socht, *pt. pl.* sought, *i.e.*, went, 6. 625; *pp.* attacked, 12. 390, 15. 544. See Sought.  
 Sodayly, *adv.* suddenly, 1. 324.  
 Sodiourys, *s. pl.* soldiers, in E., 5. 205 (*footnote*).  
 Soft, *adj.* kindly, benign, 4. 697.  
 Soiorne, *s.* sojourn, dwelling, 9. 369; Soiorn, 7. 385.  
 Soiornyng, *s.* sojourning, sojourn, 9. 189. See Soiournyng.  
 Soiourne, *v.* to dwell, stay, remain, 3. 323.  
 Soiournyng, *s.* dwelling, delay, delaying, 1. 96, 2. 16; Soiowmyng, dwelling, 3. 386. See Sudiornyng, Soiornyng.  
 Solace, *s.* consolation; hence, amusement, diversion, entertainment, 3. 465; Solass, 13. 718, 20. 95.  
 Solacius, *adj.* agreeable, 10. 290.  
 Somdeill, *adv.* to some extent, in some measure, 13. 510.  
 Somownys, *pr. s.* summons, 1. 592.  
 Soday, Sunday, 11. 374.  
 Sone, *adv.* soon, 1. 181, 203, 2. 452. See Soyn.  
 Sone-in-law, *s.* son-in-law, 17. 219.  
 Sonkyn, *pp.* sunken, 3. 417.  
 Sonnys, *s. gen.* sun's, 11. 190, 612.  
 Sonoday, Sunday, 5. 335.  
 Sop, *s.* a sup, a slight meal; esp. of spoon-meat, 12. 409.  
 Sop, *s.* a round, compact body, a compact troop of men, 3. 47, 7. 567. Cf. Icel. *soppr*, a ball, *svöppr*, (1) a sponge, (2) a ball. In Danish, *sop* means a toadstool.  
 Soppis, *s. pl.* heaps, 8. 326. See above.  
 Sordid, an error in J. for Fordid, 5. 412.  
 Sorowit, *pt. s.* sorrowed, 20. 284; *pl.* 484.  
 Sought, *pp.* sought, 2. 23; *pt. s.* pursued, 15. 214; *pt. pl.* sought, examined closely, 3. 479; searched, 10. 760; attacked, 16. 356. See Socht.  
 Souerany, *adv.* supremely, 10. 299, 16. 502\*.  
 Soune, *adv.* soon, 1. 566.  
 South cuntre, south country, 16. 77.  
 Southren, *adj.* southern, 17. 843.  
 Sow, *v.* gall, sting, wound, 16. 391 (E.). See Jamieson, and the gloss to Minot's Poems, ed. Hall.  
 Sow, *s.* a 'sow,' an implement of warfare so called, 17. 597, 621. See note on p. 287.  
 Sower, an error for Summer, *i.e.*, great beam, 17. 696 (E. and H.).  
 Sowing, *s.* pricking, stinging, galling (with spear-points), 16. 628. Cf. Scot. *sow*, to smart, feel stinging pain. See Sow, *v.*  
 Sowme, *s.* a sum, number, 17. 67 (E.).  
 Sowne, *s.* sound, loud cry, 10. 411, 12. 328.  
 Sowrchargis, for Surcharge, 16. 458 (E.).  
 Sowth, *adv.* southwards, 16. 265.  
 Soym, *s.* trace of a cart, 10. 233. Cf. Icel. *saumur*, Swedish *söm*, a seam. See note to 10. 180, p. 261.  
 Soyme, 10. 180 (E.). See Hede-soyme; and see above.  
 Soyn, *adv.* soon, 4. 126, 179, 5. 90; Soyne, 5. 38, 15. 306. See Sone.  
 Space, *s.* length of time, 11. 9. See Spass.  
 Spar, *v.* to fasten, 10. 230; Spare, 5. 389; *pt. s.* Sparit, fastened, barred, 10. 459; Sparryt, barred, 10. 459 (E.); Sparit, *pt. pl.* barred, 6. 444, 17. 168. A.S. *sparran*, to fasten; Dan. *spar*, a rafter, spar.  
 Sparit, *pt. s.* spared, 5. 362, 9. 297; *pl.* Sparyt, 4. 10.  
 Spass, *s.* space, short time, 15. 285. See Space.  
 Spayn, *v.* to span, take in hand, 3. 582; *pt. pl.* Spaynyt, spanned, took in hand, 3. 583. A.S. *spannan*, Icel. *spenna*, to span, grasp.  
 Speciall, *adj.* specially attached, intimate (with), 5. 501.  
 Specialtē, *s.* special liking, partiality, 7. 246.  
 Sped, *pt. pl.* prospered, 17. 898.

- Spedaly, *adv.* speedily, 6. 301.  
 Spedfull, *adj.* useful, necessary, 3. 574; advantageous, 4. 551, 12. 194. See Speidfull.  
 Spediast, *adj. superl.* speediest, 6. 591.  
 Speid him, *v.* to hasten, 15. 337;  
 Speid ws, speed ourselves, make haste, 2. 293; *imp. s.* 3 *p.* Speid, may (God) prosper you, 18. 389.  
 Speid, *s.* speed, haste; *bettir speid*, with all haste, 4. 507; *gude speid*, very fast, 6. 409.  
 Speidfull, *adj.* advantageous, 5. 486, 9. 56, 11. 289. See Spedfull.  
 Speir, *s.* spear, 5. 607, 9. 387. See Sper.  
 Speir, 2. *p. s. pr.* ask, 4. 494. See Sperit.  
 Spek, *v.* to speak, 4. 200; *imp. pl.* 1 *p.* let us speak, 4. 3; *pres. part.* Spekand, 11. 257, 19. 307, 613.  
 Spek, *s.* speech, 1. 393, 4. 252, 5. 61, 9. 33, 18. 523, 20. 96; conversation, 17. 71; discussion, consultation, 1. 72, 5. 333; Speke, 10. 4, 396; proposal, 7. 157.  
 Speking, *s.* speech, 1. 428, 7. 125; discourse, 3. 181.  
 Sper, *s.* spear, 3. 459, 5. 640, 9. 506, 16. 602, 17. 380; *pl.* Speris, 11. 465, 587.  
 Spering, *s.* enquiry, information, 5. 490; asking, 16. 24; Speryng, enquiry, 3. 568. See below.  
 Sperit, *pt. s.* enquired, asked, 4. 467, 6. 306, 10. 522, 16. 21, 19. 599; asked about, 5. 301; Sperit at, asked of, 5. 39, 14. 472; Speryt at, 3. 547; *pp.* Sperit, 17. 903. A.S. *spirian*, to enquire, track.  
 Sperit, *pp.* found out, a reading in E. for Spyt, 10. 559 (*footnote*).  
 Sperit, *s.* spirit, 4. 757.  
 Sper-lynth, *s. pl.* spear-lengths, 17. 572.  
 Sper-men, *s. pl.* spearmen, 15. 220.  
 Speryt, *pt. pl.* sparred up, fastened up, 4. 14. See Spar.  
 Spilling, *s.* spilling, 13. 19.  
 Spokin, *pp.* spoken, 17. 50; Spokyn, 20. 220.  
 Spoulzeing, *s.* spoiling, stripping the slain, 13. 457. See Spulzeit.  
 Sprraith, *s.* spoil (*but the text may stand*), 13. 457 (H.); *perhaps the right reading in* 5. 118 (*see footnote*). Jamieson has — "Spreith, Spreth, Sprraith, Spreath, prey, booty;" with references to Wytoun and Douglas. Cf. O. Irish *spré*, Gaelic *spreidh*, cattle.  
 Spredis, *pr. pl.* spread, 16. 67.  
 Sprent, *pt. pl.* sprang, 12. 49; see the note, p. 266. Cf. Icel. *spretta* (for *sprenta*), to start, spring. See *sprenten* in Stratmann.  
 Spryng, *v.* to spread abroad, 2. 78. A.S. *springan*, to scatter; cf. E. *sprink-le*.  
 Spryngaldis, *s. pl.* catapults, engines for shooting heavy missiles, 17. 247.  
 O.F. *springale*, (1) a kind of dance; (2) a catapult; from G. *springen*, to spring.  
 Spulzeit, *pp.* spoiled, stripped, 13. 459, 16. 666. From Lat. *spoliare*, to despoil.  
 Spuris, a *misprint* in J. for Speris, 13. 315 (*footnote*).  
 Spuris, *s. pl.* spurs, 6. 226, 11. 558; Spuryrs, 8. 79.  
 Spy, *v.* to spy, see, 15. 114; *pt. s.* Spyt, spied about, 9. 353; *pp.* Spyt, spied, 10. 559, 19. 485, 528.  
 Spytis, *s. pl.* spies, 7. 386.  
 Spyrtyt, *pt. s.* enquired, 3. 486. See Sperit.  
 Squyaris, *s. pl.* squires, 16. 80.  
 Squyary, *s.* a company of esquires, 20. 320.  
 Stab, *v.* to stab, 19. 545; *pt. pl.* Stabbit, 19. 565.  
 Stabill, *v.* to establish, secure, 19. 138.  
 Stabilly, *adv.* stably, firmly, 13. 635, 19. 201.  
 Stabing, *s.* stabbing, 17. 785 (E.).  
 Stablist, *pt. s.* secured (lit. established), 10. 303.  
 Stad, *pp.* beset, hard pressed, placed in peril, 3. 363, 4. 169, 198, 6. 664, 11. 610, 13. 604; situated, placed in difficulty, 9. 163, 13. 654, 14. 378; &c. (Common.) Cf. E. *bestead*.  
 Staffing, *s.* thrusting, 17. 785. Jamieson gives — "*Staff-suerd*, a sword for thrusting;" with references to Wallace, iii. 178, vi. 737. The Edinb. MS. has *stabbing*.  
 Staff-slyngis, *s. pl.* staff-slugs, slings furnished with a stout staff, 17. 344.  
 Staill, *s.* a fixed position, 17. 97. See the note, p. 285; and see *Stale* in Jamieson.  
 Stakker, *v.* to stagger, 2. 422 (*footnote*).  
 Stale, for Scale, so printed in J., *perhaps rightly*, 15. 341 (E.).

- Stalwart, *adj.* stalwart, stout, sturdy, valiant, 1. 19, 11. 362; strong, vehement, 1. 468, 3. 732; Stallwart, stout, 9. 699; Stalward, strong, 4. 80, 10. 491, 20. 52; severe, 11. 401; great, 18. 310; Stalwarde, hard, 9. 518; Stalvard, strong, 16. 356. A.S. *stahweorð*, perhaps for *staðolweorð*, firm.
- Stalwartly, *adv.* vehemently, 2. 66; Stalwardly, stoutly, sturdily, strongly, 8. 86, 11. 157, 234, 429; Stallwardly, valiantly, 4. 186.
- Stampyng, *s.* a stamping, noise of feet, 7. 269.
- Standand, *pres. part.* standing, 6. 77, 9. 454, 10. 744, 17. 135.
- Standaris, *for* Standartis, 11. 465 (E.).
- Standartis, *s. pl.* standards, 11. 465.
- Standyn, *pp.* stood, 7. 572.
- Stane, *s.* stone, 15. 49. But see the note, p. 278.
- Stane-cast, *s.* stone's throw, 13. 581, 20. 425<sup>n</sup>.
- Stane-ded, *adj.* stone-dead, 7. 471.
- Stanis, *s. pl.* stones, 18. 419; Stanys, 10. 57, 17. 351.
- Stark, *adj.* strong, 1. 398, 4. 72, 6. 126, 10. 112, 16. 625, 17. 280, 623. A.S. *stearc*, Icel. *sterkr*, strong.
- Starkar, *adj. comp.* stronger, 6. 538, 15. 491 (E.). See *Sterkar*.
- Starkest, *adj. superl.* strongest, 4. 74; Starkast, 17. 697.
- Starkly, *adv.* strongly, 13. 372 (E.).
- Stat, *s.* position, estate, 10. 264; condition, state, 7. 128; State, a good condition, successful position, 1. 297; *pl.* Statis, estates, 20. 162; conditions of life, 1. 337.
- Stature, *s.* stature, 10. 280.
- Stay, *adj.* steep, 10. 25, 19. 319. Cf. Icel. *stigi*, a steep ascent; A.S. *stigan*, to climb.
- Sted, *s.* stead, place, 2. 36, 4. 420, 6. 312, 7. 336, 15. 240, 16. 438, 19. 722, 20. 254; Stede, 6. 548, 7. 600, 17. 311. A.S. *stede*.
- Sted, *s.* steed, horse, 2. 424, 3. 111, 128; *pl.* Stedys, 2. 13.
- Sted, *pp.* bestead, beset; *hard* sted, hardly beset, 2. 47. See *Stad*.
- Steid, *s.* stead, place, 1. 610. See *Sted*.
- Steid, *s.* steed, horse, 8. 79. See *Sted*.
- Steill, *s.* steel, 13. 14, 17. 714.
- Steir, *v.* to steer, *i.e.*, direct, 20. 401; to govern, manage, control, 6. 334, 20. 142.
- Steir, *v.* to stir, 9. 382. A.S. *styrian*.
- Steir, *s.* rudder, 4. 630. A.S. *steör*, government.
- Steir, on, *i.e.*, a-stir, 7. 344, 19. 577.
- Stekand, *pres. part.* sticking, stabbing, 13. 70 (E.). See below.
- Stekis, *pr. pl.* fasten, shut up, bar up, 19. 687. Cf. Du. *stekem*, to stick; also, to put, place. See below.
- Stekit, *pt. s.* stuck, pierced, stabbed, 6. 143, 10. 416; *pt. pl.* 8. 321, 14. 293, 19. 563; *pp.* 10. 684, 12. 507, 14. 68. A.S. *stician*, to stab.
- Stemmand, *pres. part.* steering in one direction, holding a straight course, 5. 25. Cf. Dan. *stemme*, to attune; *stemme een for*, to dispose one towards.
- Stent, *for* Stentit, 19. 391 (E.). See below.
- Stent, *v.* to extend, spread, 19. 514; *pt. pl.* Stentit, pitched, 19. 391; *pp.* Stentit, 16. 282, 17. 300, 19. 386, 516. Used of pitching a tent; merely a peculiar spelling of *extend*.
- Steppis, *s. pl.* steps, 10. 361.
- Ster, *v.* to govern, 1. 43. See *Steir*.
- Ster, *s.* the rudder, 3. 576; Stere, 4. 374. See *Steir*.
- Sterand, *pres. part.* steering, *reading in E.*, 5. 25 (footnote).
- Sterand, *pres. part.* stirring, active, 11. 129. See *Stere*.
- Sterap, *s.* stirrup, 3. 118, 125, 143; *pl.* Sterapys, 3. 120; Sterapis, 12. 51. A.S. *stir-rāp*.
- Stere, *v.* to stir, 10. 628. See *Steir*.
- Stering, *s.* stirring, 10. 209, 652.
- Stering, *s.* direction, 11. 182; government, 9. 510, 17. 456.
- Steris, *pr. s.* steers, *i.e.*, governs, 11. 27; directs, 12. 42.
- Steris, *s. pl.* stars, 4. 675.
- Sterkar, *adj. comp.* stronger, 15. 491. See *Stark*.
- Stern, *s.* a star, 4. 127; *pl.* Sternis, 4. 711. Cf. Icel. *stjarna*, Dan. *stjerne*. (Here from the Scandinavian; not from High German.)
- Stert, *v.* to start, mount up quickly, 3. 709; *pt. s.* jumped, 3. 128; *pl.* started, 7. 271; rushed, 8. 471; quickly retreated, 6. 632.

- Stertling, *s.* restless motion, 3. 704.  
 See *Startle* in Jamieson.  
 Stew, *s.* mist, 11. 614. Properly  
 'dust'; Dan. *sivv*, dust, G. *staub*.  
 The waterfall named the *Staubbach*  
 (dustfall) is so called because it is  
 dispersed into light spray.  
 Steward, *s.* steward, 11. 449.  
 Steyr, *v.* to govern, *lit.* to steer, 1.  
 38. See *Steir*, *Ster*.  
 Stikis, *s. pl.* sticks, 11. 372.  
 Stint, *v.* to stop, 10. 716.  
 Stinting, *s.* stopping, delay, 9. 255.  
 Stith, *adj.* stiff, hardy, 8. 384; strong,  
 4. 101, 5. 458, 9. 343, 11. 558, 12.  
 92, 13. 151. A.S. *stith*, strong;  
 now corrupted to *stiff*.  
 Stithly, *adv.* severely, 10. 326; firmly,  
 12. 381. See above.  
 Stoking, *s.* thrusting, 17. 785. F.  
*estloquer*, to thrust.  
 Stole, *s.* throne, *lit.* stool, 2. 151, 180.  
 A.S. *stól*.  
 Stomakys, *s. pl.* stomachs, 3. 542.  
 Stonay, *v.* to astonish, confound,  
 amaze, dismay, 3. 82, 6. 123, 11.  
 226, 18. 547 (E.), 19. 630, 20. 514;  
*pt. s.* Stonait, astonished, 6. 257;  
 Stonayit, defeated, 16. 495; dis-  
 mayed, 3. 165, 10. 783; *pp.*  
 Stonayit, dismayed, 9. 603, 13.  
 287; made afraid, 9. 537. O.F.  
*estonner*.  
 Stoppit, *pp.* stopped, 8. 60, 17. 306.  
 Stot, *v.* to stop, 3. 66. Cf. Du.  
*stuiten*, to stop, rebound; M. Eng.  
*stoten*, to stutter, stammer (Prompt.  
 Parv., p. 477).  
 Stound, *s.* time, 3. 140, 9. 270, 10.  
 501; short space of time, 17. 370;  
 Stounde, while, time, 15. 186. A.S.  
*stund*, a period.  
 Stour, *s.* a conflict, combat, battle,  
 1. 24, 468; 2. 355, 379; 8. 269,  
 11. 401, 12. 577, 13. 189, 14. 198.  
 O.F. *estour*, conflict; from Icel.  
*styr*, stir, commotion.  
 Stoutar, *adj. comp.* stouter, bolder, 15.  
 524.  
 Stoutest, *adj. superl.* boldest, 11. 470.  
 Stoutly, *adv.* boldly, 11. 158.  
 Stoutlynys, a misprint in J. for  
 Frontlynys, 16. 174 (E.). See  
 Frontly.  
 Stoutnes, *s.* stubbornness, 7. 356.  
 Stowpand, *pres. part.* stooping, 8.  
 297.  
 Stowtar, *adj. comp.* stouter, sturdier,  
 14. 2.
- Stra, *s.* a straw, 3. 320, 6. 505.  
 Straif, *pt. pl.* strove, 6. 185.  
 Strait, *adj.* narrow, 3. 110. See *Strat*.  
 Strait, *s.* straits, narrow channel, 3.  
 688. See *Strat*, *Strate*.  
 Strak, *s.* stroke, 5. 643 (C.), 10. 432,  
 12. 60, 17. 697; *pl.* Strakis, 6. 645,  
 12. 134; Strakys, 2. 364.  
 Strak, *for* Straucht, *adv.* straight, 8. 4  
 (E.), 6. 587 (E.).  
 Strake, *pt. s.* struck, 17. 870; *pl.*  
 Strak, struck, 11. 558; spurred, 20.  
 458.  
 Strake, *pt. pl.* struck, 7. 153. (Such is  
 the reading in Hart; but the reading  
*slew* of the MSS. should have been  
 retained. See *Slew*.)  
 Strat, *adj.* narrow, 6. 362, 10. 18;  
 Strate, 6. 58, 7. 529, 8. 32, 10. 559.  
 O.F. *estroit*, F. *étroit*, narrow;  
 Lat. *strictus*.  
 Strate, *s.* narrow pass, 4. 458, 9. 570.  
 See *Strait*.  
 Strater, *adj. comp.* narrower, 14. 114.  
 Stratest, *adj. superl.* narrowest, 6.  
 463.  
 Stratly, *adv.* closely, straitly, hardly,  
 7. 216, 11. 609, 17. 737; tightly,  
 10. 366; strictly, 18. 512.  
 Stratnes, *s.* narrowness, 12. 430.  
 Straucht, *adj.* straight, 11. 438;  
 Strawcht, 2. 312.  
 Straucht, *adv.* straight, 6. 43, 587;  
 9. 34, 192; 12. 13, 499, 14. 22, 16.  
 443.  
 Straucht, *pt. pl.* stretched out, 2. 348;  
*pp.* 8. 297. A.S. *streccan*, to stretch;  
*pp. gestreht*.  
 Stray; *on* stray, astray, 13. 195.  
 Streccour, *s.* a dog for the chase; *lit.*  
 a runner, 6. 487. Perhaps related  
 to the A.S. *strican*, to continue a  
 course, rather than to *streccan*, to  
 stretch. See *Strikand*.  
 Strekit, *pt. s.* stretched, 18. 130; *pp.*  
 Strekit, stretched, extended, long,  
 4. 704, 10. 367, 17. 929, 18. 365,  
 19. 317. A.S. *streccan*.  
 Strekyt, *pp.* stricken, *i.e.*, fought, a  
 reading in E. for *Strikyn*, 13. 152,  
*footnote*.  
 Stremand, *pres. part.* streaming, 12.  
 560.  
 Stremys, *s. pl.* streams, *i.e.*, currents,  
 3. 684.  
 Strenth, *s.* strength, 1. 524; strong  
 place, 4. 458 (*footnote*).  
 Strenthly, *adv.* strongly, forcibly, 4.  
 541 (*footnote*).

- Strenththi, *adj.* strong, 4. 653 (*foot-note*).  
 Strenthtis, *s. pl.* strengths, forces, powers, 2. 523. *See* Strenth.  
 Strenzeit, *pp.* constrained, 12. 248. O.F. *straindre*, Lat. *stringere*.  
 Strewit, *pp.* strewn, 14. 304.  
 Strikand, *pres. part.* leading, going, 6. 238. A.S. *strican*, to go, continue a course; Toller.  
 Strikand, *pres. part.* striking, 6. 234; *pp.* Strikin, fought (said of a battle), 13. 152, 227.  
 Strinth, *s.* strength, force, 8. 505, 9. 40, 10. 334, 17. 779, 19. 136; a stronghold, 3. 44.  
 Stro, *s.* a straw, 3. 320 (*footnote*). *See* Stra.  
 Strowit, *pp.* strewn, 14. 443, 16. 633; Strowyt, 16. 69 (E.).  
 Stroy, *v.* to destroy, 9. 455.  
 Stryff, *s.* strife, 7. 628.  
 Stryk, *v.* to strike, 10. 179, 11. 598; *pp.* Strykyne, stricken, fought, 11. 348 (*rubric*).  
 Strynth, *s.* strength, force, 5. 224, 9. 658, 13. 221; feat of strength, 16. 646; *pl.* Strynthis, forts, 5. 469, 16. 223, 18. 251.  
 Strynthit, *pp.* strengthened, 17. 331.  
 Stude, *pt. s.* stood, 6. 244, 14. 157; *pl.* 9. 140, 14. 174, 19. 325.  
 Stuff, *s.* provision, 17. 176; equipment, 5. 258.  
 Stuff, *v.* to fill, 17. 213; filled, stored, provisioned, 8. 100, 11. 47, 14. 91, 17. 232, 254, 263, 350; Stuffyt, 1. 189; *pt. pl.* Stuffit, provisioned, 16. 223.  
 Stunay, *v.* to astound, stun, dismay, 1. 299. *See* Stonay.  
 Sturdy, *adj.* strong, violent, 3. 698.  
 Sturdyly, *adv.* sturdily, 2. 363; Sturdely, boldly, 8. 471.  
 Sture, *adj.* sturdy, strong, 10. 158, 12. 92. A.S. *stôr*, Icel. *stórr*, great, vast.  
 Sturting, *an error in editions for* Stinting, 7. 545 (*footnote*).  
 Stycht, *s.* fixed position, firm place, 3. 658. *See* the note, p. 242.  
 Synt, *v.* to stop, stem, 2. 372; to stop, stay, arrest, 5. 184, 6. 178, 10. 432, 12. 54, 13. 95, 17. 697; *pt. s.* Syntyty, stopped, 3. 52; *pl.* Synttit, stayed, 17. 657.  
 Synt, *s.* stoppage, delay, 2. 140.  
 Stynting, *s.* a stop, stoppage, delay, 7. 40, 12. 14, 16. 618; resistance, 7. 545.  
 Styth, *adj.* strong, 10. 84, 364. *See* Stith.  
 Stythly, *adv.* strongly, firmly, 3. 120, 4. 14; stoutly, 11. 158 (E.).  
 Sua, *adv.* so, 1. 291, &c. *See* Swa.  
 Suagat, *adv.* so, in such wise, 4. 307, 602; 6. 603.  
 Subtilite, *s.* crafty work, fine workmanship, 20. 306.  
 Succourss, *s.* succour, 19. 641.  
 Succudry, *s.* presumption, pride, 11. 11, 12. 297, 16. 327, 18. 183; Succuedry, 16. 327 (E.); Surcquidry, 11. 11 (H.). O.F. *sorcuiderie*, presumption, usually in the form *sorcuidance*; from O.F. *sor*, Lat. *super*, and *cuidere*, Lat. *cogitare*.  
 Suddandly, *adv.* suddenly, 6. 11, 7. 184; Suddanly, 7. 505; Suddanely, 15. 119.  
 SudIorne, *s.* sojourn, 20. 356.  
 Sudiornyng, *s.* staying, resting, 6. 26.  
 SudIorny, *pt. pl.* sojourned, 16. 47; *pp.* 16. 52.  
 Suelt, *pt. s.* died, 4. 311. A.S. *suel-tan*, to die, perish. The *pt. pl.* *suelle*, died, occurs in P. Plowman, C. Pass. xxiii. 105.  
 Suerdis, *s. pl.* swords, 12. 574; *gen. sing.* Suerdys, sword's, 2. 139.  
 Suet, *s.* life-blood (lit. sweat), 13. 32, 16. 232 (E.). *See* the note to the former passage; and *see* Swat.  
 Sufficyand, *pres. part.* sufficient, sufficiently good, 1. 368.  
 Sukudry, *s.* presumption, 11. 11 (E.). *See* Succudry.  
 Suld, *pt. pl.* should, 1. 3, &c. *See* Sal.  
 Sum, *adj.* some, 1. 49, 4. 677; *used indefinitely*, some people, 2. 295; othir sum=some others, 1. 52.  
 Sum, *suffix*, in all, altogether; *fiff sum*, five in all, 6. 149; *sex sum*, six in all, 6. 231. Cf. Icel. *saman*, together, as in *þrír saman*, three together. *See* Thresum.  
 Sumdeill, *adv.* somewhat, 1. 383; partially, to some extent, 4. 670, 5. 358, 6. 382, 11. 237; Sumdele, 2. 273; *as sb.* Sumdeill, somewhat, 13. 326.  
 Sumkyn, of some kind, 10. 519. Cf. Alkyn, Nakyn.  
 Summer, *s.* principal beam, 17. 696. *See* the note, p. 287.  
 Summer, 19. 746 (E.). *See* Swmmer.  
 Summitè, *s.* summit, top, 3. 706. Pronounced as a trisyllable—*sum-mit-è*.

- Summond, *pp.* summoned; *gert summond*, cause to be summoned, 13. 734; *gert be summond*, 11. 208.
- Supleyng, *s.* supply, 13. 595 (E.). See *Supple*, *s.*
- Supple, *v.* to supply, *i.e.*, assist, 11. 627 (*rubric*).
- Supple, *s.* support, reinforcement, 13. 225 (*rubric*).
- Suppos, *conj.* although, 1. 2, 3. 467, 19. 692.
- Suppowale, *s.* a reinforcement, 16. 139; Suppowall, 16. 111, 139 (E.). Cf. O.F. *appui*, support; O.F. *sous-poiel*, appui (Godefroy).
- Suppriss, *v.* to surprise, 6. 37, 42, 11. 647, 15. 119; *pp.* Supprisit, taken unawares, 18. 426.
- Surcharge, *s.* additional load (of provisions; *but ironical*), 16. 458.
- Sur-noune, *s.* surname, 17. 152. Cf. E. *re-noun*, also from Lat. *nomen*.
- Surquedry, *s.* presumption, 18. 183 (E.). See *Succudry*.
- Sutell, *adj.* subtle, 19. 32.
- Sutelte, *s.* subtle device, subtlety, wile, 1. 172, 3. 611, 4. 267, 10. 535, 17. 666.
- Suth, *adj.* true, 1. 9, 5. 609. A.S. *sōð*.
- Suth, *s.* truth, 10. 293.
- Suthfast, *adj.* true, 1. 3, 13. 36, 504. A.S. *sōðfast*.
- Suthfastly, *adv.* truly, 4. 328.
- Suthfastnes, *s.* truth, 17. 457. A.S. *sōðfastnes*.
- Suthly, *adv.* truly, verily, surely, 6. 32, 7. 258, 16. 483.
- Swa, *conj.* so, 1. 15. See *Sua*, *Sway*.
- Swagat, *adv.* so, in such wise, 2. 293, 3. 52, 5. 300, 7. 508, 9. 317, 11. 566, 12. 262, 17. 25, 18. 402. From *swa*, so, and *gat*, a way.
- Swagatis, *adv.* so, in such wise, 19. 253. See above.
- Swak, *s.* a blow, 5. 643. Another form of *swap*. See *Swakked*, *Swappit*.
- Swakked, *pt. s.* threw quickly and violently, 10. 623 (H.), 17. 691 (H.). See *Swappit*.
- Swane, *s.* a swain, hind, peasant, 5. 235; *pl.* Swanys, 13. 229, 341; 15. 339.
- Swappit, *pt. s.* drew quickly, whipped out, 6. 229, 7. 591 (*pl.* Swappyt, 2. 363); hurled, threw, 10. 623, 17. 691, 18. 136; shot, flew, 17. 675, 683. Cf. Icel. *svipa*, to sweep, to swoop. Jamieson quotes from Palsgrave—"I swappe, I stryke, Ie frappe."
- Swar, *pt. s.* swore, 1. 165, 13. 560.
- Swat, *s.* sweat, 11. 613, 12. 146.
- Swavnand, *pres. part.* swooning, 17. 648.
- Sway, *adv.* so, 4. 571. See *Swa*.
- Sweit, *adj.* sweet, 16. 66; Sweyt, 1. 390; Swet, 9. 482.
- Swerdis, *s. pl.* swords, 11. 600. See *Suerdis*.
- Swilk, *pron.* such, 1. 109, 7. 364, 9. 641 (E.). A.S. *swylc*.
- Swith, *adv.* soon, quickly, 4. 275, 5. 136, 7. 348, 10. 399, 11. 559, 14. 451, 16. 40, 17. 806, 19. 605, 792. *Alswith*, as quickly as possible, 14. 451. A.S. *swithe*, strongly.
- Swm, *some*, 16. 111. See *Sum*.
- Swmmer, *s.* sumpter-horse, 19. 746. O.F. *sommier*; from *somme*, a load, Low Lat. *sagma*, Gk. *σάγμα*.
- Swoir, *pt. pl.* swore, 17. 665. See *Swour*, *Swar*.
- Swome, *v.* to swim, 3. 431.
- Swonand, *pres. part.* swooning, 17. 648 (E.).
- Sworn, *pp.* sworn; *thocht he had sworn*, though he had sworn to the contrary; a phrase implying—in spite of all his efforts, 3. 135.
- Swour, *pt. s.* swore, 1. 571, 2. 66; *pl.* 3. 757, 17. 665 (E.). See *Swoir*, *Swar*.
- Swycht, *an error for* Wycht in E., 2. 120 (*footnote*).
- Swylk, *dem. pron.* such, 1. 85, 101, 333. See *Swilk*.
- Swyng, *s.* a swinging blow, 15. 188; a swing, a hasty turn, 17. 574.
- Swyr, *s.* a "neck" or depression between two hills, 17. 13; see the note, p. 284.
- Swyth, *adv.* quickly, 2. 1, 316. See *Swith*.
- Swyth, *an error for* Schut, *i.e.*, shoot, 13. 565 (E.).
- Syb, *adj.* akin, 13. 511. See *Sib*.
- Sychand, *pres. part.* sighing, 5. 147.
- Sycht, *an error in editions for* Fycht, 2. 388 (*footnote*).
- Syd, *s.* side, 2. 346, 348; Syde, 10. 13, 13. 68; *on syde*, aside, 11. 344.
- Sykes, *s. pl.* trenches, 19. 742 (*footnote*). See below.
- Sykis, *s. pl.* rills, 11. 300. Icel *stik*, a ditch, trench, furrow.
- Symonet, *a blunder in* E. for *Symon* het, 9. 10 (*footnote*).
- Sympill, *adj.* simple, inoffensive, 1. 463; trustful, 1. 126; small, weak, 5. 258, 10. 307, 11. 202; silly, forgetful, 1. 615.



- Sympilly, *adv.* in a simple manner, inexpensively, 1. 331; Sympilly, weakly defended, 17. 134.
- Syn, *adv.* afterwards, 1. 601; then, 1. 443. *See* Syne.
- Syndir, *adj.* sundry, various, 5. 506. *See* Syndri.
- Syndrely, *adv.* asunder, separately, 12. 138.
- Syndri, *adj.* sundry, separate, 9. 441, 10. 188, 17. 297; Syndry, 5. 7; Syndir, 5. 506.
- Syne, *adv.* afterwards, soon afterwards, 1. 145, 174, 3. 342, 4. 127, 8. 401, 15. 138; next, 6. 229, 17. 332; then, 11. 216, 437, 12. 170; at last, 1. 450. (Short for *Sythyn*.)
- Synnsy, *s. pl.* sins, 20. 180.
- Syr, *s. sire*, lord, 1. 283, 3. 659.
- Systir, *s. sister*, 1. 51; *gen. sing.* sister's, 1. 557.
- Syt, *v.* to sit, 7. 267, 10. 608; *pres. part.* Sytand, 6. 203, 7. 238; Syttand, 10. 611.
- Syth, *s. pl.* times, 3. 470; Sythis, times, 3. 58. A.S. *sið*, a time.
- Sythyn, *adv.* afterwards, 2. 85. A.S. *sið ðam*, for *sið ðam*, after that.
- Syttyn, *pp. sat*, 7. 407.
- Ta, *v.* to take, 1. 496, 498, 4. 104, 5. 328, 8. 444; *imp. s.* take, 4. 638; *gerund*, to ta=to be taken, 6. 335; *subj. pr.* I *p.* that we (may) take, 5. 72. *And see* Tan, Tais.
- Ta; the ta=thet a, the one, 3. 239, 4. 306, 16. 386. (Ta never occurs in this sense unless the word the precedes it.) *See* Tothir.
- Taile (?), *v. refl.* 18. 238 (E.). This reading is perhaps wrong. Jamieson makes *taile*=Mid. Eng. *tolle*, to allure, and compares Icel. *tala*, to entice. This gives—"he determined that he would entice himself to destroy Scotland." But it is hardly possible that this can be right, as it makes very poor sense. It is more probable that *him taile*=bind himself; and that it is allied to *tailze*=covenant, agreement, used in the same MS. *See* Tailze.
- Taill, *s. tale*, 9. 576, 17. 835; with *thair taill*, according to their tale, 15. 539\*.
- Taill, *s.* payment of a due by an heir on his succession, 12. 320. *See* Tail, Tails, and Tallage in Blount's Law Dict.
- Tailze, *s.* covenant, agreement, 20. 134 (E.). MS. C. has *tale*, as if the connection were, not with F. *tailleur*, to cut, to tax, but with E. *tale*; cf. Icel. *tal*, a talk, parley, speech, account.
- Tailzeit, *pp.* agreed upon, 19. 188 (E.). MS. C. has *talit*, q.v.
- Tailyie, *s.* tallage, tax, 12. 320 (H.). *See* *taillit* in Cotgrave.
- Tais, *pr. s.* takes, 2. 146, 6. 222, 8. 406, 11. 460, 12. 1; Tais, 3. 287.
- Taisyt, for Tasyt, 5. 623 (E.).
- Takand, *pres. part.* (in *phr. takand kep*=taking heed), 1. 214; *and see* 6. 288, 13. 160.
- Takill, *s.* tackle (of ships), gear, 3. 713, 4. 374.
- Takinning, *s.* token, 9. 507 (E.). *See* below.
- Taknyng, *s.* a token, sign, 4. 558, 10. 471 (E.), 12. 23, 16. 421; evidence, 6. 93, 13. 45. A.S. *tācn*, a token; *tācnian*, to betoken; *tācnung*, a sign.
- Tak on hand, 1. *p. s. pr.* I assert, 2. 20, 15. 213; Tak kep, take heed, 17. 61; *pr. s.* Takys, seizes, 3. 541; *pp.* Takyn, taken, 4. 652, 15. 253, 17. 171.
- Takyn, *s.* token, sign, signal, 9. 507, 10. 741, 19. 368. A.S. *tācn*, a token.
- Takynnyng, *s.* token, evidence, 19. 29; a sign, 6. 93 (E.). *See* Taknyng.
- Tald, *pt. s.* told, 1. 563, 5. 40; 1 *p.* I told, 15. 178; *pp.* 7. 522.
- Tale, *s.* number, computation, 11. 5; *be tale*, by number, i.e., as ascertained by counting, 16. 507. A.S. *tal*, number.
- Talent, *s.* purpose, will, 3. 694.
- Talit, *pp.* reckoned, 19. 188. A.S. *talian*, to reckon, compute. *But see* Tailzeit.
- Tan, *pp.* taken, 9. 317; Tane, 1. 113, 324, 521, 8. 375, 18. 135; tane keip=taken heed, 1. 95, 113. *See* Ta.
- Tane, the, the one, 16. 123. *See* Ta.
- Taneys, an error in E. for Tane, 3. 210 (footnote).
- Tary, *v.* to tarry, make to stop, 6. 602; *pres. part.* Taryand, tarrying, 6. 603.
- Tasit, *pt. s.* put ready for shooting, placed in readiness, 5. 623. The expression *tasit the vyre* is, liter-

- ally, drew back (or bent) the bolt of the cross-bow; which is a contradiction. It means that he bent back, not the *bolt*, but the *bow*. O.Fr. *teser*, *toiser*, from Lat. *tensus*.
- Taskar, *s.* a thresher, 5. 318. The word here is not *tasker*, one who undertakes a task (see J.), but a misspelling for *tarskar* or *thersker*, *i.e.*, a thresher, from the A.S. *þerscan* (cf. Du. *dorschen*), to thresh. "*Triturator*, a tasker;" Nominale M.S. xv. cent.; quoted by Halliwell, *s.v.* Jamieson himself quotes: "The *taskers* are those who are employed in threshing out the corn."
- Tastit, *pt. s.* tested, tried, 9. 388. Mid. E. *taste*, *tasten*, to test.
- Taucht, *pt. s.* gave, 2. 130; committed, 10. 43; delivered, 10. 253. Chaucer has *take* in the sense of *to give*; so also in *Piers Plowman*. But here Icel. *taka*, to give, is confused with A.S. *tācan*, to teach, shew.
- Tauld, 1 *p. s. pt.* I told, 1. 76; *pt. s.* 2. 83. See Tald.
- Tayne, *pp.* taken, 4. 51. See Tan.
- Te, *v.* to tie, 15. 282. A.S. *tigan*, *tigian*.
- Tell, *v.* to count, enumerate, 1. 295. A.S. *tellan*.
- Templis, *s. pl.* temples, 3. 222.
- Tend, *ord. num.* tenth, 4. 460, 9. 495.
- Tenderly, *adv.* tenderly, 16. 228.
- Tene, *s.* vexation, 2. 377. A.S. *tēona*, injury. See Teyne.
- Tent, *s.* attention, heed, 10. 395, 13. 196, 16. 98, 20. 380. Cf. E. *tend*.
- Tentively, *adv.* attentively, 1. 613 (*footnote*), 7. 555 (*footnote*).
- Ter, *s.* tar, 17. 611.
- Teris, *s. pl.* tears, 3. 348.
- Testament, *s.* will, 20. 160.
- Tey, *v.* to tie, 15. 282 (E.). See Te.
- Teyne, *s.* harm, 18. 233. See Tene.
- Tha, *pron. pl.* those, 2. 463, 11. 336, 18. 350. See Thai.
- Thai, (1) *pron.* they, 1. 2, &c.; *dat.* and *acc.* Thaim, 1. 33, 42; (2) those, 7. 185, 11. 371, 12. 414; *dat.* of those, 7. 212 (the prep. of governs a dative). See Tha.
- Thaim-selwyn, *pron.* themselves, 1. 502.
- Thair, their, 7. 165. See below.
- Thairis, (1) *poss. pron.* theirs, 1. 471, 3. 745; of thairis=some of their own property, 18. 199; *thai and thairis*, 13. 201; (2) *gen. pl.* of them; *magre thairis*, in spite of them, 10. 118, 4. 153.
- Thak, *s.* thatch, roofing of a house, 12. 396.
- Thame, *dat.* to them, 7. 528.
- Than, *conj.* except that, 1. 501.
- Than, *adv.* then; or *than*, or even, 1. 217.
- Thankit, *pt. s.* thanked, 5. 142, 9. 737, 19. 113, 20. 235; Thankyt, 3. 668; *pl.* Thankit, 18. 537.
- Thar, *pron. poss.* their, 1. 22, 14. 498, &c. A.S. *þara*, of them.
- Thar, *adv.* there, 1. 59, &c. A.S. *þar*.
- Thar, *pr. s. impers.* it needs, it is necessary, 8. 257, 12. 300. Misprinted *char* in J. in both places; misprinted *char* in P. in the first instance only. Icel. *þarf*, *impers. verb.* it needs. See Thurt.
- Tharby, *adv.* thereby, near that place, 2. 536.
- Thareftir, *adv.* thereafter, 1. 591.
- Tharfor, *conj.* on that account, 17. 586.
- Thar-fra, *adv.* away, afar, 16. 244; therefrom, from it, 10. 366.
- Thar-through, *adv.* thereby, 2. 42, 527.
- Thartill, *adv.* thereto, 1. 12, 506, 625. See Till.
- Tharup, *adv.* up there, 10. 433.
- The morn, on the morrow, 14. 478. Cf. A.S. *þȳ*, instrumental and ablative case of the def. article.
- The quethir, however, and yet, nevertheless, 1. 332. See Quethir.
- Theif, *s.* a thief, 6. 470; *voc.* thief! 10. 231; *gen.* Thefis, 6. 470; *pl.* Thevis, thieves, 7. 289.
- Them-selwyne, *pron.* themselves, 13. 234.
- Then, *conj.* than, 1. 458.
- Thiddir, *adv.* thither, 1. 592; Thid-dyr, 1. 413.
- Thiddirwart, *adv.* thitherwards, thither, 1. 411; Thiddirward, 10. 404.
- Thik, *adj.* thick, close together, 9. 336, 11. 367. See below.
- Thik, *adj.* thick, 4. 126. (Perhaps *thak-burd*=thatching-board (E.) is better.)
- Thikast, *adj. superl.* thickest, 17. 156.
- Thine, thence; *fra thine*, from thence, thence, 5. 190.
- Thine-furth, *adv.* thenceforth, 17. 722.
- Thing; *a gret thing*, a great deal, very much, 13. 134.
- Thing, *s. pl.* things, property, 3. 620; Thingis, property, 3. 630.

- Think, *pr. s. impers.* it seems; *me think*, it seems to me, 3. 67.  
 Thinkand, *pres. part.* thinking, 9. 554.  
 Thir, *pron. dem.* those, 1. 76, 3. 249, 13. 653, 17. 589; these, 4. 248, 7. 303\*, 10. 788, 16. 523; these men, 10. 48; *thir menze*, that host, 15. 142, 19. 47. Icel. *þeir*, they.  
 Thirl, *v.* to enthrall, 1. 263 (*footnote*); *pp.* Thirlit, 1. 222 (*footnote*). Probably a misreading in Hart's edition. Of no authority.  
 Thiskyn, of this kind, such, 16. 49 (E.).  
 Thocht, *conj.* though, 1. 518, 2. 390.  
 Thocht, *pt. s.* thought, 1. 65; *impers.* it seemed, as in *thaim thocht*, it seemed to them, 1. 79.  
 Thole, *v.* to suffer, endure, 4. 207, 10. 104, 14. 213, 20. 170; Thoill, to permit, suffer, 4. 659, 18. 532; to endure, wait, 9. 28; *pres. part.* Tholand, enduring, 13. 200; *pt. s.* Tholyt, suffered, 1. 567; Tholde, 6. 179 (*heading*); *pl.* Tholyt, 3. 372; *pp.* Tholyt, suffered, 3. 555; Tholit, endured, 17. 472. A.S. *þolian*, to suffer, endure, tolerate.  
 Tholyt, *pt. s.* an error in E. for Trewynt, 17. 228.  
 Thouch, *conj.* though, 3. 201, 6. 472, 9. 87, 12. 296. A.S. *þeah*.  
 Thought, *conj.* though, although, 1. 264. See Thocht.  
 Thought hym, *pt. s.* it seemed to him, 4. 618. See Thocht.  
 Thow, *adv.* when, 11. 31 (*rubric*). A.S. *þā*, when.  
 Thowlesnes, *s.* heedlessness of conduct, 1. 333. Formed not from A.S. *þeowian*, to serve, but from A.S. *þeaw*, nianner, behaviour; whence *theowles*, devoid of good manners, ill-behaved, which may be compared with Scot. *thewless*, inactive, which see in Jamieson.  
 Thra, *adj.* eager, 18. 71. Icel. *þrár*, stubborn, obstinate; Mid. Eng. *thro*.  
 Thrang, *s.* throng, press, 2. 357, 11. 224; crowd (of ships), 3. 713; press, 13. 156 (E.); throng, 17. 156; stress, distress, hardship, peril, 10. 117, 15. 353; *in thrang*, in a state of persecution, 7. 251. A.S. *þringan*, to crowd.  
 Thraw, *s.* a throw; *i.e.*, a little while, a short space of time, 4. 140, 5. 159, 7. 34, 572, 9. 407, 11. 303, 17. 40. A.S. *þræg*, *þræh*, a space of time.  
 Thraw, an error in H. for Draw, 8. 59 (*footnote*).  
 Thraw, *pr. s. subj.* may turn, 13. 654\*. A.S. *þrāwan*, to throw, to turn round.  
 Thrawing, *s.* throwing, 13. 156.  
 Threldome, *s.* thralldom, 1. 265, 2. 506. See below.  
 Threllis, *s. pl.* slaves, thralls, 3. 220. A.S. *þræl*, a slave, thrall. See Thryll.  
 Thresscher, *s.* thresher, in E., 5. 318 (*footnote*).  
 Thresum, *adj.* with three at a time, 3. 420. See Sum.  
 Thret, *pt. pl.* threatened, 6. 536. A.S. *þrætian*, to threaten, is a weak verb.  
 Thretty, *card. num.* thirty, 4. 405. A.S. *þritig*.  
 Thrid, *ord. num.* third, 2. 305. A.S. *þrida*.  
 Thrilde, *pt. pl.* pierced, 2. 540 (*footnote*). See Thrillit.  
 Thrieldome, *s.* thralldom, 12. 281.  
 Thrillage, *s.* thralldom, servitude, slavery, 1. 101, 275, 471; Thrillag, 1. 471. See Threllis.  
 Thrillit, *pt. pl.* pierced through, charged through, 16. 430; *pp.* pierced through, 9. 609. A.S. *þirlan*, to pierce through, to thrill.  
 Thring, *v.* to throng, press, 19. 70; *pres. part.* Thringand, thronging, 17. 758. A.S. *þringan*, to press.  
 Thristill, *s.* a throstle, thrush, 5. 4. A.S. *þrostle*, a throstle.  
 Thristing, *s.* thrusting, 13. 156. Icel. *þrýsta*, to thrust.  
 Throppill, *s.* the windpipe, 7. 584. Cf. A.S. *þrot-bolla*, the throat-pipe.  
 Throt, *s.* throat, 9. 389.  
 Throuch, *prep.* through, by, 1. 177.  
 Throuch, an error in J. for Throuth, better Trough (truth), 4. 223 (*footnote*).  
 Throu-out, throughout, 11. 392.  
 Throw, *prep.* through, 2. 538, 11. 363; by means of, 1. 152.  
 Throwand, *pres. part.* writhing, 15. 230. A.S. *þrāwan*, to throw, twist; cf. Lat. *torquere*, to twist.  
 Thryldome, *s.* thralldom, 1. 269.  
 Thryll, *s.* a thrall, slave, 1. 243, 251, 270. See Threllis.  
 Thryllage, *s.* thralldom, 1. 352.  
 Thryng, *v.* to press, go closely, 6. 82;

- pres. part.* Thyrngand, thronging, pressing, 6. 133. *See* Thring.
- Thurch, Thurth, *errors for* Thurt, 6. 121 (*footnote*).
- Thurst, *pt. pl.* might, could, 20. 107 (E.). Certainly miswritten for *Thurft*, which is the proper form. Thus *thurfte* occurs in the Ancren Riwe, p. 336; Ormulum, l. 16, 164; in the sense of needed, behoved. Cf. A.S. *þorfta*, *pt. t.* of *þurfan*, to need; Goth. *þaurfta*, *pt. t.* of *þaurban*, to need.
- Thurt, *pt. s.* needed, 6. 121. This is the *pt. t.* of *Thar*, *q.v.*; it is contracted from *thurft* (*see above*). *See þurte* in Will. of Palerne, 3788; and *see þurfen* in Stratmann.
- Thusgat, *adv.* in this manner, thus, in this way, 1. 275, 2. 167, 3. 267, 4. 304, 6. 157, 9. 228, 15. 525, 17. 878.
- Thusgatis, *adv.* thus, 19. 613. *See above*.
- Thws, *adv.* thus, 2. 508.
- Thyn, *adv.* thinly, 4. 685.
- Thynk, 1 *p. s. pr.* I purpose, 1. 33.
- Thyrland, *pres. part.* piercing, making holes in, 2. 540. *See* Thrillit.
- Thyrdome, *s.* thraldom, 1. 236. *See* Thryldome.
- Thyrlit, *pp.* pierced through, 9. 608 (E.), 16. 430. *See* Thrillit.
- Tid, *s.* time, 1. 407, 2. 25. A.S. *tīd*, time.
- Till, *prep.* to, 1. 35, &c.; for, 3. 761, 14. 5, 19. 637; to (*as sign of gerund*), 11. 254. Icel. *tíl*, to.
- Till-hewyn, *pp.* (*a false form for to-hewyn*), hewn about, severely scarred, 20. 367. (*N.B.*—The A.S. prefix *tō* represents two prefixes that are really distinct, and are distinguished in German as *zu* and *zer*. To hew in twain = A.S. *tō-hēawan* = G. *zerhauen*; but we have here the A.S. *tō* (which answers to the G. *zer*), replaced by the Icel. prefix *tíl*.
- Till-hewyt, *pt. s.* (*a false form for to-hewyt*), hewed in twain, cut in half, 2. 381. (*N.B.*—Even *to-hewyt* is a late and corrupted form, as the verb *to hew* was originally a strong one. *See above*).
- Timmeris, *for* Tymbrys, *q.v.*, 19. 396 (E.).
- Tit, *adv.* soon; *als tít*, very soon, as soon as possible, 4. 289, 757. Icel. *tít*, soon, neuter of *adj.* *títtr*, frequent; cf. Dan. *tídt*, often.
- Tit, *pt. s.* drew, drew quickly, snatched, 5. 603. Cf. A.S. *tyht*, a movement; *tēon*, to draw, pull, tug.
- Titar, *adv. comp.* sooner, 4. 269, 5. 529. *See* Tit, *adv.*
- Tithand, *s.* tidings, news, 4. 468, 6. 376, 9. 219, 17. 903; *pl.* Tithandis, tidings, 5. 143, 17. 829. Icel. *tíðindi*, Dan. *tíðende*, news.
- Tithing, *s.* tidings, news, 2. 454, 3. 452, 6. 466, 12. 358, 19. 121. *See above*.
- To, *adv.* too, 16. 458.
- To, *conj.* till, 5. 193.
- To-fruchyt, *for* To-fruschit, 13. 146 (E.).
- To-fruschyt, *pp.* broken to pieces, 2. 350; dashed in pieces, 8. 303, 10. 597; bruised severely, 20. 385; *pl.* To-fruschit, crushed, 13. 146; *pt. s. subj.* To-fruschyt, might crush, 17. 667. A hybrid word. The prefix is the A.S. *tō-*, in twain; the verb is the F. *froisser*, to dash.
- To-ga, *pt. s.* fled (*better than to ga*), 8. 351; *pt. pl.* fled, dispersed, departed, 9. 263, 269; 17. 104, 575. An anomalous form; the sense requires the past tense, but the form is that of a present, or rather of the infinitive. Cf. A.S. *tō-gān*, to depart.
- Togidder, *adv.* together, 15. 69. A.S. *tōgædere*.
- To-hewen, *pp.* hewn in many places, 20. 367 (*footnote*); To-hewyn, hewn in pieces, 17. 755 (E.). *See* Till-hewyn.
- Toiljit, *reading in E. for* Tulzeit, 4. 152 (*footnote*).
- To-morn, to-morrow, 1. 124, 12. 202.
- Top our taill, top over tail, head over heels, 7. 455.
- Top-castellis, *s. pl.* top-castles, small castles made in the main-top of a war-ship, 17. 713.
- Torn, *s.* a turn; *quyt thaim torn*, requite them a turn, repay them, 2. 438.
- Torne, *v.* to turn, 3. 106.
- To-stonay (til-stonay, C., stonay, E.), *v.* to astound thoroughly, 18. 547. *See* Till-hewyn.
- Tothir, *the tothir* = *that othir*, the other, 1. 7, 165, 11. 569, 16. 399; the second, 9. 412. *Tothir* only occurs when the word *the* precedes. *That* = *that*, A.S. *þat*, neuter of def. article. *See* Ta.

- Toun; *off toun*, out of the town, away, 2. 132; *of tounne*, from home, 7. 632.
- Toung, *s.* tongue, 17. 7.
- Tour, *s.* tower, 1. 530, 9. 454, 533, 10. 436, 473; the Tower of London, 20. 39; *pl.* Touris, 9. 451.
- Tournys, *pr. s.* turns, 3. 167.
- To-vauerand, *pres. part.* wandering in different directions, 7. 302<sup>n</sup>, 331. *See* Vauerand.
- Tow, *v.* to tow, 17. 408.
- Towart, *prep.* towards, 1. 83, 5. 376, 11. 477.
- Towme, *s.* tomb, 20. 293, 589.
- Townnys, *s. pl.* tuns, *in E.*, 5. 403 (*footnote*). *See* Tunnys.
- Townys, *s. pl.* towns, 11. 138. *See* Toun.
- Townys, *gen.* tun's, 17. 618 (E.). *See* Tunnys, Townnys.
- Towris, *s. pl.* towers, 9. 451. *See* Tour.
- Towting, *s.* tooting, noise of a horn, 19. 604 (H.). *See* Tutlyng.
- Toym, *s.* leisure, 5. 642. *Ícel.* *tóm*, emptiness, leisure; *Ísmr.* empty; *Dan.* *tóm*, empty; *Scot.* *toom*, empty (Burns).
- Trace, *for* Traiss, 6. 553 (E.).
- Traine, *s.* train, *i.e.*, enticement into an ambush, 19. 360. *See* Trane.
- Traiss, *s.* trace, track, 6. 553, 9. 580.
- Traist, *adj.* trusty, worthy of trust, 1. 627.
- Traist, *v.* to trust, 4. 327 (*footnote*); *pt. s.* Traistit, 5. 527 (E.); Traistyt, 2. 250, 3. 673, 8. 396 (E.); 2 *pt. s.* *pt.* ye trusted, 1. 125. *Ícel.* *treysta*, to rely on.
- Traistly, *adv.* verily, 3. 515.
- Trammys, *s. pl.* (written 'trāmys' in MS. C.), war-engines; distinct from *cranys* (as in E.), which means machines for lifting heavy weights, 17. 245. This sense of *tram* (whence mod. E. *tram* in *tram-way*) occurs also in the Wars of Alexander, ed. Skeat, 1. 1373. *See* *Tram* in my Etym. Dictionary.
- Trane, *s.* a plot, stratagem, lit. a train, 8. 440, 10. 513, 17. 49. *See* Traine.
- Tranonting, *s.* a stratagem of war, a wile, especially used of a forced march so as to take an enemy by surprise, 7. 508, 608.
- Tranontit, *pt. s.* surprised by a forced march, 18. 360; *see also* 7. 306 (*footnote*). Apparently the F. *pres. part.* *trainant* (*i.e.*, drawing, hence, beguiling) used as a verb. *See* Trane.
- Tranontyne, *s.* 19. 694. The same as Tranonting.
- Trappit, *pp.* armed (said of horses), furnished with trappings, equipped, 14. 289, 16. 185, 18. 17.
- Trass, *s.* trace, track, 6. 583, 7. 67, 19. 758. *See* Trace.
- Trast, *adj.* trusty, confident, 9. 381, 10. 270; secure, 14. 466. *Ícel.* *traustr*, trusty.
- Trast, *s.* trust, 17. 36.
- Trast, 1 *pt. s. pr.* I trust, 7. 179; *pt. s.* Trastit, 5. 530. *See* Traist.
- Trast, *imp. pl.* trust ye; or perhaps *assouerans trast*=the trust of assurance, 11. 309. *See* above.
- Trastar, *adj.* more secure, 17. 273.
- Trastly, *adv.* securely, 7. 300, 15. 120, 19. 486, 573; trustfully, 4. 327; surely, confidently, 5. 81, 15. 126. *See* Trast, *adj.*
- Trastlyar, *adv.* with more confidence 18. 36.
- Tratour, *s.* a traitor, 4. 19.
- Tratoury, *s.* treachery, 4. 22; Tratory 10. 327.
- Travaill, *s.* trouble, 18. 233; Trauell 7. 45. *See* Trawaill, Trawell.
- Trauland, *pres. part.* toiling, wandering, 6. 380, 7. 243; Travaland toiling, 11. 369, 17. 734; fighting 9. 673; Traualande, travelling, 6. 375; Travalland, toiling, 5. 223; wandering, 7. 241; Travalit, toiled 6. 27; beset, troubled, vexed, 1. 149, 9. 55; *pt. pl.* harassed, 11. 157; toiled, 9. 165; travelled, 18. 552; *pp.* Traualit, toiled, 7. 376 troubled, distressed, 20. 328; harassed, 7. 298.
- Trauersit, *pt. pl.* traversed, went, 11. 532. *See* Trawersit.
- Trawaill, *v.* to travel, journey, 1. 325; *pr. pl.* Trawaill, travail, work hard, 4. 147; *pt. s.* Trawaylly travailed, endeavoured, 1. 97; *pt. pl.* Trawaillyt, vexed, sorely oppressed, 20. 328, 329 (E.). *See* Traualand.
- Trawaill, *s.* travel, journey, 4. 48.
- Trawail3e, labour, effort, 3. 296 hardship, 1. 23; *pl.* Trawailly travails, toils, 1. 306. *See* Travail Trawell.
- Trawailland, *pres. part.* travelling, taining trouble, 2. 571. *See* Traualan

- Trawaland, *pres. part.* travelling, or toiling, 9. 673 (E.). See Traualand.
- Trawale, *v.* to harass, trouble, 6. 602. See above.
- Traweillyt, *pt. s.* travailed, worked hard, 2. 580, 3. 278. See Trawaill.
- Trawell, *s.* travail, labour, toil, 4. 664, 6. 23. See Trawaill, Travaill.
- Trawelling, *s.* travelling, journeying about, 2. 283.
- Trawersit, *pt. s.* crossed over, went in a zigzag direction, 19. 353. See Trauersit.
- Tray, *s.* vexation, 18. 233. A.S. *tręga*, vexation.
- Trayn, *s.* train, plot, 6. 397. See Traine, Trane.
- Trayne, *ger.* to draw, entice, 19. 354. F. *trainer*, to drag.
- Tre, *s.* wood (lit. tree), 3. 584; *pl.* Treis, trees, 11. 298; branches, pieces of wood, 13. 238.
- Tresonabill, *adj.* treasonable, 5. 550.
- Trespass, *s.* sin, 12. 485.
- Trespassit, *pp.* done amiss, 11. 553.
- Tret, *v.* to treat, handle, manage, 1. 35; *ger.* to treat, 19. 129; *pt. s.* Tretit, treated, made terms, arranged, 3. 741, 5. 514, 10. 261, 481, 820, 13. 543, 674, 15. 520; 17. 19, 315; *pt. pl.* made a treaty, 4. 172; *pp.* Tretit, treated of, 20. 149; assured by treaty, 4. 177; Tretyt, treated, 1. 222.
- Treting, *s.* treating, *i.e.*, negotiations, 14. 8.
- Tretis, *s.* treaty, 11. 35; proposals of treaty, 10. 125; Tretiss, treaty, 19. 145; Tretyss, 20. 47.
- Treuth, *s.* troth, trust; *gaf treuth*, believed, 4. 223.
- Trew, *v.* to trow, trust, believe, 2. 326; *pt. s.* Trewit, 17. 228.
- Trew, *for* Trewis, truce, 19. 180 (E.). See below.
- Trewis, *s. pl.* lit. truces, *as sing.* a truce, 14. 96, 15. 126, 19. 186, 200; *used as a plural*, 19. 200 (see l. 202). O.F. *truue*, *triuue*, *triue*, *trive* (see *trive* in Burguy); whence *pl. trèves* in mod. French.
- Trewys, *s.* truce, 15. 102 (E.). See above.
- Treyn, *adj.* wooden, 10. 361. See Tre.
- Treyteris, *an error for* Tretis, 10. 125 (E.).
- Tribill, *adj.* treble, 18. 30 (E.).
- Tribulit, *pp.* troubled, 4. 58.
- Trist, *s.* assigned place of meeting, 7. 230, 8. 212, 17. 74; *set trist*, appointed, 7. 235.
- Tropellis, *s. pl.* troops, small companies, 13. 275. Cf. F. *troupeau*, a troop; O.F. *tropol*, dimin. of O.F. *trope*, a troop; which see in Burguy.
- Troplys, *for* Tropellis, *q.v.*, 13. 275 (E.).
- Trow, *v.* to believe, 2. 257, 4. 237, 7. 143; 1 *p. s. pr.* I trow, believe, 2. 111, 11. 429; Trowis, I believe, 12. 294; *pr. s.* Trowis, believes, 5. 530; *pt. s.* Trowit, believed, 4. 308, 671; trusted, 2. 472; *pt. pl.* Trowit, believed, 4. 11, 11. 168, 19. 420; expected, 2. 560; Trowyt, 1. 87; *pp.* Trowit, trusted, 19. 301. A.S. *trāwian*, to trust.
- Trowis, *s.* a truce, 15. 102. See Trewis.
- Trowtis, *s. pl.* trout, 2. 577.
- Trumpe, *v.* to sound the trumpet, 8. 293; *pres. part.* Trumpand, 9. 137; *pt. pl.* Trumpit, 17. 356, 19. 429.
- Trunsioune, *s.* truncheon, short staff, 16. 129. O.F. *tronchon*, a short piece; from Lat. *truncus*.
- Trwmp, *v.* to sound the charge on the trumpets, 12. 491. See Trumpe.
- Trwmpit, *pp.* deceived, 19. 712. F. *tromper*, to deceive.
- Trymbill, *v.* to tremble, 2. 295; Trymmyll, *pr. pl. subj.* may tremble, 12. 268.
- Tryplit, *pp.* trebled, 18. 30.
- Tuelf, *card. num.* twelve, 10. 547, 640.
- Tuk, *pt. s.* took, 1. 528; *pl.* Tuk, 14. 96; Tuk land, landed, 16. 551.
- Tulzeit, *pt. pl.* harassed, 4. 152. Apparently related to F. *louiller*, to mingle together confusedly, to shuffle together (Cotgrave); cf. Scot. *tuilzie*, a broil, a struggle, tussle.
- Tumb, *s.* tomb, 20. 293 (E.). *Numbered* 20. 287 in P.
- Tume, *s.* leisure, 17. 735. See Toym.
- Tummyll, *v.* to tumble, overthrow, 9. 452; to fall, 13. 29; *pt. s.* Tumlit, tumbled, 8. 513; *pt. pl.* Tumlit, caused to tumble, 4. 182; threw down, 10. 57; *pp.* Tumlit, tumbled, 4. 229; overthrown, 9. 325, 10. 501; Tummyllyt, 4. 182 (E.).
- Tunnys, *s. gen.* tun's; *tunnys* quan-

- tity*, contents of a tun, 17. 618; *pl.* tuns, 5. 403.
- Turnit, *pl. s.* turned, 7. 631, 8. 351; Turnyt, 16. 125, 18. 494; *pl.* Turnit, 7. 601, 9. 263, 19. 367; Turnyt, 15. 382, 16. 604, 18. 290, 20. 439; *pp.* Turnit, turned, 8. 137, 19. 447; returned, 7. 351; Turnyt, returned, 18. 343; turned, 20. 555.
- Turss, *v.* to truss, pack up, 17. 859; *pl. pl.* Tursit, 5. 391, 9. 360, *pp.* Tursit, 5. 395, 17. 884. O.F. *torser*, *trasser*, to pack up.
- Turturis (or, better, Turture), *s.* a turtle-dove, reading in E. for Thristill, 5. 4 (footnote).
- Tutlyng, *s.* tooting, blowing of a horn, 19. 604. Swed. *tuta*, to blow a horn.
- Twa, *card. num.* two, 1. 76; Tway, 14. 369.
- Twapart, or Twa part, lit. two parts, *i.e.*, two-thirds, 5. 47, 369, 17. 103.
- Twasum, for Twa men, 10. 19 (E.).
- Twiss, *adv.* twice, 12. 176. See Twyss.
- Twist, *s.* a bough, a twig, small branch, 7. 188.
- Twmmyl, *v.* to tumble, hurl, overthrow, 10. 496, 18. 418. See Tummyll.
- Twyn, *adj.* twain, two, 4. 691.
- Twyss, *adv.* twice, 3. 242. See Twiss.
- Tyd, *v.* to betide, happen, 1. 127, 12. 272, 366; Tyde, 4. 543.
- Tyd, *s.* time, 3. 24, 19. 636; Tyde, 10. 185, 16. 252. A.S. *tīd*, time.
- Tyll, *prep.* to, 1. 10; to, for, 3. 36. (Common as sign of the gerund, and as *prep.*) Icel. *tīl*, Dan. *tīl*, Swed. *till*.
- Tym, *s.* time, 6. 370; *mony tym*, often, 9. 99.
- Tymbrys, *s. pl.* crests, 19. 396. See the note, p. 291. Not from *timber*, but from F. *timbre*.
- Tymmyred, *pl. pl.* barricaded with wood, 4. 164 (footnote).
- Tyne, *v.* to lose, 1. 108, 211, 607, 3. 33, 39, 7. 21, 9. 77, 12. 374, 17. 847, 19. 693. Icel. *týna*, to lose. See Tynt.
- Tynsale, *s.* loss, damage, harm, 5. 450, 503, 12. 95, 17. 900, 19. 811; Tynsall, 11. 488, 12. 141; Tynsell, loss, 3. 647; Tynsele, loss, 19. 499. From Icel. *týna*, to lose; the suffix is probably the A.S. *sæl*, opportunity, used abstractly.
- Tynt, *pl. s.* lost, 3. 248, 8. 350; 13. 22; *pp.* 7. 45, 10. 471, 12. 56, 17. 458, 19. 681.
- Tyre, a badly written word, *mean* for, and may be read as Cyre, leather, 12. 22 (E.).
- Tysday, Tuesday, 15. 101.
- Tyt, *adv.* quickly, 2. 4. See Tit.
- Tyt, *v.* to pull, snatch, *bad tyt hy downe*, bade (men) pull him down from his horse, 16. 132. See Tit.
- Tythandis, *s. pl.* tidings, 1. 346. S. Tithandis.
- Tytar, *adv.* sooner, rather, 2. 51.
- Tytar, more quickly, 11. 225. S. Tyt, Tit.
- V. Note the use of this letter for *v* both at the beginning of words (as in *van*=*wan*=won), and in the middle (as in *arrawis*=*arrows*=arrows). So also *w* is constant written both for *v* and *u*.
- Vach, *s.* watch, guard, 9. 318, 17. 31 *pl.* Vachis, watches, guards, 6. 4, 9. 375, 10. 403, 19. 550; sentinel 7. 302.
- Vach, *v.* to watch, guard, 6. 62, 8; *pr. s.* Vachis, watches, 17. 930; *pl.* Vachit, guarded, 19. 573.
- Vading, *s.* wading, 7. 56.
- Vafand, *pres. part.* waving, 9. 245.
- Vaffand, 11. 193, 513.
- Vageowris, *s. pl.* hired soldiers, mercenaries, 11. 48. So named from their *wages*.
- Vaid, *v.* to wade, 9. 356.
- Vailjeand, *adj.* valiant, 17. 218 (H.).
- Valayis, *s. pl.* vallies, 11. 185.
- Vald, *pl. s.* would, 5. 126. (Common.)
- Valè, *s.* valley, 7. 4. (A dissyllabic word.)
- Valk, *v. (transitive)*, to wake, cause to waken, 7. 179. (Note.—I believe the *l* in this word to be due to the fact that scribes wrote *kk* in such manner that it looks like *lk*. The *valk*=*vakk*, riming with *tak*. In the same way, *valknyt* (see below) should rather be *vaknyt*. Similarly, in Bernardus, &c., ed. Lunnby, E.E.T.S., p. 19, l. 38, the word printed as *spelk* is really *spekk*, *i.e.*, speak. This imperfect *kk* (written, as I said, like *lk*) is also used by some scribes to represent a capital *k* at the beginning of a word, in which case no edit

- would be so hardy as to print *lk*. Other examples of *lk* written for *kk* occur in the word *Awalk* = awake, in Dunbar's Thirissill and Rois, stanza 2; and in Lancelot of the Laik, ed. Skeat, 1. 1049. In course of time, the scribes certainly regarded the symbol *lk* as standing for *uk*, so that we even find the extraordinary form *wolx*, for *woux*, i.e., waxed, grew, in G. Douglas, Prol. to xii. Æneid, ll. 136, 187; whence came also the still stranger form *walxis* (!), id. 151. I wish to record my belief that the words *valk*, *valknyt* (in the Bruce) should rather have been printed *vakk*, *vakknyt*, but I have allowed the familiar forms to stand, in case I should be wrong. At any rate, the *l* is surely not to be sounded like the *ll* in *call*.) See *Walk*.
- Valknyt*, *pt. s.* awoke, 7. 210, 291; *pl. s.* 6. 296. (This form is intransitive, as shewn by the insertion of *n*; cf. the suffix *-nan* in Mosso-Gothic verbs.) And see note to *Valk*.
- Vall*, *s.* wall, 10. 491; *pl.* Vallis, 6. 445. *Valje*. See *Avalje*.
- Van*, *pt. s.* won, 7. 88. See *Wan*.
- Vangard*, *s.* vanguard, 11. 164. See *Vaward*.
- Vantis*, *pr. s.* lacks, lit. wants, 5. 422.
- Vanyis*, *s. pl.* veins, 7. 173.
- Vappyn*, *s.* weapon, 5. 594; *pl.* Vappyns, 5. 393, 8. 55, 9. 711, 10. 675, 11. 592, 12. 103.
- Var*, *pt. pl.* were, 5. 433, 12. 390. (Common.)
- Vard*, *s.* ward, 9. 339.
- Vardane*, *s.* warden, 4. 474, 5. 474, 6. 507, 18. 215; *pl.* Vardanis, 9. 432; regents, 16. 33; Vardanyis, guardians, 20. 146.
- Vardanry*, *s.* wardenship, 8. 362.
- Varisoune*, *s.* reward, 10. 526. See *Warysoune*.
- Varn*, *v.* to warn, 6. 65; *pp.* Varnlt, warned, 7. 533. A.S. *warnian*, *wearnian*, to warn.
- Varnasyng*, *s.* garniture, provision, store, 6. 350. See *Varnysit*, *Varnysing*.
- Varnist*, *pp.* stored, furnished, 4. 102; *Varnyst*, 10. 311; *pt. s.* Varnyst, stored, 9. 287; *pl.* filled with stores, 16. 215. A short form of *varnysit*, q.v.
- Varnyng*, *s.* (1) warning, 5. 537, 11. 39; (2) refusal, opposition, 16. 260. See *Varn*, *Varnyt*.
- Varnysing*, *s.* provision, 17. 294. See *Varnasyng*.
- Varnysit*, *pp.* provided, furnished, 6. 120. O.Fr. *warnir*, to provide; F. *garnir*. See *Varnist*.
- Varnysoun*, *s.* garrison, 10. 325. See *Varnisoun*.
- Varnyt*, *pt. pl.* refused, 18. 332. A.S. *wyrnan*, to refuse.
- Varpit*, *pp.* thrown, 11. 602. A.S. *weorpan*, to throw.
- Varrand*, *s.* place of refuge, place of safety, shelter, 6. 422, 7. 347, 8. 485, 9. 624, 10. 453, 15. 214, 17. 581. The same word as E. *warrant*, sb. O.F. *warrant*, a protector; *warir*, to guard.
- Varrar*, *adj. comp.* more aware, more cautious, more on the watch, 5. 546. A.S. *war*, aware, wary.
- Varray*, *v.* to war against, 8. 24; *Varra*, 8. 365, 9. 27; *pr. s.* Varrayis, wars, 12. 363. See *werreye* in Chaucer, Kn. Tale, 626, 686.
- Varyit*, *pt. s.* cursed, 7. 227. A.S. *wergian*, to curse.
- Vassalage*, *s.* prowess, 16. 4. O.F. *vassalage*, prowess; *vassal*, a fighting man.
- Vassand*, *s.* weazand, 7. 584.
- Vat*, 1 *p. s. pr.* I know, 5. 537; 2 *p. s. pr.* thou knowest, 5. 241. A.S. *ic wāt*, I know.
- Vath*, *s.* danger, peril, 5. 418, 7. 305.
- Icel*, *vðði*, danger, peril; Dan. *vaade*, danger; Swed. *vdda*, an unlucky accident.
- Vatit*, *pt. s.* waited for, 5. 36, 640; waited, 5. 523.
- Vattir*, *s.* water, river, a stream, 6. 56, 7. 5, 18, 288; 19. 319.
- Vauerland*, *pres. part.* wavering, i.e., wandering about, idle, loitering, straggling, 7. 112; *Vaverand*, wavering, 12. 185.
- Vaueryng*, *s.* swerving, going astray, 6. 584. Lit. 'wavering.'
- Vaueryt*, *pt. s.* wavered, wandered about, 7. 41.
- Vaward*, *s.* vanguard, 8. 48, 11. 306, 342; 12. 11, 337, 435; *Vawarde*, 8. 343.
- Vax*, *s.* wax (for candles?), 11. 119.
- Vax-cayme*, *s.* wax-comb, honeycomb, 11. 368.
- Vay*, *s.* way, 7. 392; *pl.* Vayis, 18. 114.



- Vayd, *v.* to wade, 7. 19.  
 Vaykar, *adj. comp.* weaker, 8. 340.  
 Vayn, *s.* wain, waggon, 10. 164, 166, 181, 203.  
 Vayn, *s.* weening, intention, purpose, 7. 2, 225. See note to ii. 471, p. 235. See Veyn.  
 Vayndist, *pt. pl.* recoiled, gave way, retreated, 12. 109, 13. 217, 16. 629. O.F. *wandir*, to turn aside, escape; of Teutonic origin; cf. G. *wenden*, to turn. See note to xiii. 217, p. 269.  
 Veddir, *s.* wether, sheep, 7. 152, 164.  
 Veid, *s.* weeds, clothing, *i.e.*, armour, 16. 580. A.S. *wēd*, clothing.  
 Veill, *adv.* well, 11. 643; very, 9. 498.  
 Veillfair, *s.* welfare, 8. 377.  
 Veir, *pt. pl.* were, 18. 296. See Var.  
 Veirdis, *s. pl.* weirds, *i.e.*, destinies, fates, 18. 46.  
 Velany, *s.* disgrace (lit. villainy), 9. 545.  
 Velcom, *adj.* welcome, 7. 244.  
 Velcummyng, *s.* welcome, 18. 329.  
 Velcummyt, *pt. s.* welcomed, 16. 41.  
 Velde, *v.* to wield, 11. 97.  
 Vem, *s.* spot, stain, 15. 250. A.S. *wam*, a stain.  
 Vench, *s.* a wench, a girl, 10. 554.  
 Vencuss, *v.* to vanquish, 11. 134; *ger.* 20. 541; *pp.* Vencust, 7. 373, 8. 359, 9. 83.  
 Vend, *v.* to wend, go, 4. 609, 5. 561, 7. 399.  
 Vend, *i. p. s. pt.* weened, supposed, expected, 7. 361; *pt. pl.* 6. 24, 9. 606.  
 Venesoun, *s.* venison, 2. 574, 3. 472; Venysoun, 7. 496.  
 Vengeans, *s.* vengeance, 6. 506.  
 Vengit, *pp.* avenged, 19. 151.  
 Venyng, *s.* weening, supposition, uncertain expectation, 4. 765.  
 Venysoun, *s.* venison, 7. 496. See Venesoun.  
 Veriour, *s.* a warrior, 5. 85.  
 Verray, *adj.* true, 2. 87.  
 Vertwis, *s. pl.* virtues, 10. 295.  
 Verty, *adj.* prudent, 18. 439. *Short for* Averty, *q.v.*  
 Very, *adj.* weary, 12. 143, 17. 459, 475, 483.  
 Ves, *v.* was, 4. 94. See Wes.  
 Veschall, *s.* vessels (collectively), 11. 117; Vessell, 11. 117 (H.). F. *vaisselle*, plate; see Chaucer, C. T. Group B, 3338.  
 Vest, *adj.* western, 16. 550.  
 Veyle, *adv.* well, 1. 118. See Veill.  
 Veyn, *s.* doubt, 6. 162. See Vayn.  
 Veyr, *s.* war, 9. 292. See We Wer.  
 Viage, *s.* voyage, 5. 207, 14. 117.  
 Vicht, *adj.* vigorous, nimble, valiant, 4. 534, 5. 491, 6. 482, 8. 267, 327, 10. 45, 17. 34, 18. 125. See Wicht.  
 Victor, *s.* victory, 4. 277, 8. 288, 12. 295, 313; 18. 549; Victour, 8. 23, 380; Victory, 15. 89.  
 Vif, *s.* woman, 4. 302; *pl.* Vifs, win 12. 246.  
 Vikkid, *adj.* sorry, poor, unskilful, 76; Vikkit, cruel, 5. 12.  
 Vikkidness, *s.* poorness of spirit, feebleness, 12. 280.  
 Vilfull, *adj.* willing, anxious, 9. 625.  
 Vilfully, *adv.* willingly, 8. 462, 12. 209.  
 Vill, *adj.* wild, at a loss, 7. 2. *Ice. villr*, wild, bewildered, astray.  
 Vilonisly, *adv.* villanously, wickedly, 5. 164; Vilonyisly, 5. 150.  
 Virk, *v.* to work, 4. 744; to act, 12. 328; to influence, 4. 700.  
 Visage, *s.* face, 12. 576.  
 Viss, *s.* wise, way, 4. 363, 5. 42, 6. 492, 7. 262, 9. 29, 11. 180, 12. 874; *mony viss*, in many a way, 78.  
 Viss, *adj.* wise, 5. 267, 513; 9. 32, 10. 333.  
 Viss, *adv.* wisely, 17. 52.  
 Viss, *s.* a vice, defect, 6. 355.  
 Vissill, *v.* to exchange, 12. 58.  
 Icel. *vixla*, to cross; cognate with A.S. *wrixlian*, to exchange, (C. *wechseln*).  
 Vist, *pt. s.* knew, 4. 771, 7. 66, 12. 41. See below.  
 Vit, *pr. pl. subj.* may know, 7. 544.  
*pt. s.* Vist, knew, 4. 771, 7. 66, 12. 41. A.S. *witan*, to know.  
 Vit, *s.* wit, wisdom, 4. 742, 6. 350, 12. 668, 10. 334.  
 Vitalis, *s. pl.* victuals, 15. 92.  
 Vittalit, *pt. pl.* victualled, stored, 12. 63.  
 Vittandly, *adv.* knowingly, 11. 59. Lit. 'wittingly.'  
 Vittelleris, *s. pl.* foragers, 14. 409.  
 Vittelouris, 14. 429.  
 Vittely, *adv.* wisely (lit. wittily), 12. 264, 18. 158.  
 Vittering, *s.* information, notice especially correct information, sum-

- knowledge, 4. 562, 5. 342, 509, 534, 6. 46, 9. 564, 10. 12. Icel. *vitra*, to reveal; from *vittr*, wise.
- Vitterly, *adv.* certainly, 4. 771; Vittirly, 10. 350. Cf. Icel. *vitrliga*, wisely; from *vittr*, wise.
- Vitting, *s.* knowledge, 4. 766, 5. 540. A.S. *witan*, to know.
- Vitty, *adj.* wise, 4. 694, 9. 345; prudent, 7. 134.
- Vittying, *s.* knowledge, 14. 417 (C.), *footnote*; information, 14. 261.
- Vmbecast, *v.* to consider, ponder upon the fact, 5. 552. Icel. *um*, around, about; *kasta*, to cast; cf. E. to *cast about*.
- Vmbeset, *p. s.* beset round, beset, 9. 331, 706; Umbeset, laid in wait for, 14. 107 (H.); *pp.* beset round, 6. 535.
- Vmbestount, *adv.* sometimes, 7. 398. From A.S. *ymbe*, about, and *stund*, a time.
- Vmbethinkis 3ow, *imp. pl. refl.* be-think you, 5. 613; *pt. s. refl.* Vmbethought, bethought him, 5. 551, 6. 110, 7. 383, 16. 84, 17. 40, 771; *pl.* 19. 405. A.S. *ymbencan*, to think about.
- Vmbeweround, *pp.* environed, 11. 640 (E.). See Enveronyt.
- Vmqhile, *adv.* sometimes, 5. 441. A.S. *ymb*, about, and *hwil*, time.
- Vnabastly, *adv.* boldly, undauntedly, 6. 20, 9. 394.
- Vnarmyt, *pp.* unarmed, 7. 552, 18. 506.
- Vnbondyn, *pp.* unbound, unfastened, 10. 382.
- Vncouth, *adj.* strange, with a strange appearance, 7. 554.
- Vndir; *at vndir*, in subjection, 7. 365.
- Vndir-ta, till, *ger.* to be undertaken, 6. 348; Vndir-ta, 1 *p. s. pr.* I undertake to say, 11. 221; 1 *p. s. pr.* Vndirtak, I undertake to say, 15. 139; *pp.* Vndirtane, 6. 319.
- Vndirtane, *pp.* undertaken, 5. 331. See Vnderta.
- Vndirwardane, *s.* under-warden, 4. 400.
- Vnfair, *adj.* foul; *or perhaps s.* ill success, 15. 123. See Wnfayr.
- Vnlikly, *adj.* unlikely, improbable, 12. 128.
- Vnmaid, *pp.* unmade, not made, 4. 608.
- Vnseill, *s.* misfortune, 10. 218, 17. 376 (H.; see *footnote*). A.S. *unsæl*, misfortune; from *sæl*, opportunity, luck.
- Vnslane, *pp.* unkilld, 10. 617.
- Vnspokyn of, *pp.* unmentioned, 15. 268.
- Vnvittandly, *adv.* unwisely, 6. 523; ignorantly, stupidly, 16. 248. See Vittandly.
- Vnwemmyt, *pp.* unscarred, 20. 372, 376. See Vem.
- Vnwisly, *adv.* unwisely, 11. 38.
- Vnworthy, *adj.* unworthy, 4. 196.
- Voce, *s.* voice, 11. 407, 12. 200.
- Vod, *s.* a wood, 5. 561, 6. 670, 7. 1, 541.
- Volageouss, *adj.* giddy, light of conduct, 8. 455, 10. 533. Cf. O.F. *volage*, changeable; from Lat. *uolare*, to fly.
- Volf, *s.* a wolf, 6. 470.
- Vonand, *pres. part.* dwelling, 5. 499; Vonnand, 9. 501, 10. 160; *pt. s.* Vonnnyt, dwelt, 10. 150. A.S. *wunian*, to dwell.
- Vonyng, *pp.* won, 11. 348 (*rubric*); Vonnyn, won, *i.e.*, mown, ready for carrying, 10. 193.
- Vorde, *s.* word, speech, 15. 145; *pl.* Vordis, 11. 151.
- Vorthis, *pr. s.* becomes, 7. 174; *pt. s.* Vorthit, it became; *vorthit him slep*, it became (necessary for him) to sleep, 7. 177; *pp.* Vorthyn, become, 4. 737. A.S. *weorðan*, to become, G. *werden*.
- Voude, *adj.* mad, 17. 106. A.S. *wōd*, mad.
- Vounder, *s.* wonder, 4. 323; *as adv.* wondrously, extremely, 4. 130, 5. 135, 7. 225; Voundir, 9. 724.
- Voundis, *s. pl.* wounds, 11. 587, 15. 54.
- Voundit, *pp.* wounded, 4. 94, 5. 435, 9. 719, 10. 69, 17. 476, 809, 824.
- Vourdis, *s. pl.* words, 9. 752. See Vorde.
- Vox, *pt. s.* waxed, grew, 8. 391. A.S. *weaxan*, to grow; *pt. t. ic wēax*. See Wox.
- Vpcom, *s.* way up, lit. up-coming, 6. 167.
- Vpgang, *s.* way up, passage upwards, 6. 141, 8. 38.
- Vrang, *s.* wrong; *hass vrang*, hast wrong, *i.e.*, art in the wrong, 16. 236.
- Vrangwisly, *adv.* wrongfully, 12. 363.
- Vrathar, *adj.* angrier, more wrathful, 16. 245.

- Vre, *s.* destiny, fate, luck, especially good luck, 1. 312, 2. 434, 6. 17, 377, 9. 68, 11. 405, 15. 376, 19. 611. O.F. *cur*, *aur*, chance, luck, from Lat. *augurium*, not from Lat. *hora*; whence F. *bonheur*, miswritten for *boncur*, good fortune. The note to 15. 376, p. 280, is wrong; the word *vre* has the same meaning in that passage as in all the rest, and the line means—'had not good luck treated them so,' *i.e.*, assisted them. [The sense of 'practice' is not an uncommon meaning of *vre* in Middle English, but does not occur in Barbour. In that sense, *vre* is a different word, viz., the O.F. *cure* (Roquefort), a form of O.F. *ocurre* (Burguy); from Lat. *opera*.]
- Vrechidly, *adv.* wretchedly, 7. 339.
- Vrechidnes, *s.* cowardice, unskillfulness, 9. 76.
- Vrechit, *adj.* poor, 9. 403.
- Vrichtis, *s. pl.* wrights, workmen, 16. 335.
- Vrit, *v.* to write, 10. 748; *pp.* Vritin, 9. 656, 11. 5.
- Vroucht, *pt. s.* wrought, did, 6. 523, 8. 423; *pl.* 17. 526; *pp.* Vrocht, done, 5. 101.
- Vsage, *s.* usage, custom, habit, 1. 114.
- Vtrely, *adv.* utterly, 10. 92, 15. 291.
- Vycht, *adj.* vigorous, 10. 430. See Vicht.
- Vyde, *adj.* wide, 7. 47.
- Vyn, *v.* to win, acquire, get, 5. 11, 6. 329, 332; to defeat, conquer, 7. 532, 12. 47, 15. 295; to get in (a harvest), 10. 219; Vyn to, to attain to, reach, 15. 221.
- Vynde, *s.* wind, 4. 443; Vynd, 15. 278, 284.
- Vyndland, *pres. part.* whirling round, turning over and over, 17. 721. Cf. prov. Eng. *windle*, a wheel for winding yarn, Halliwell; Icel. *vinla*, to wind wool; G. *wendelbaum*, an axle-tree, Dan. *vindelbugt*, a spiral twist; all from the root to *wind*.
- Vyndowis, *s. pl.* windows, 12. 402.
- Vyne, *s.* wine, 4. 407, 11. 119, 14. 229.
- Vyne-sellar, *s.* wine-cellar, 5. 399.
- Vynkit, *pt. s.* slept lightly (lit. winked), 7. 182.
- Vyntir, *s.* winter, 4. 338; *vyntirtide*, the winter-season, 5. 1.
- Vyre, *s.* a crossbow-bolt, 5. 595, 62. "Vire, the arrow called a *quarra* used only for the crossebow;" Co grave. From F. *virer*, to turn.
- Wa, *s.* wa; *wa worth*, wo worth, 1. be to, 1. 515.
- Wa, *adj.* woful, sorry, sad, 1. 348, 410, 9. 42, 724, 10. 464, 11. 54, 12. 141, 13. 478, 15. 3, 19. 4, loath, 16. 650. This adjectival use of *wa* or *wo* is not uncommon in Middle English. Ex. "Hys de was *wo* to do that dede;" Rob. Brunne, Hand. Synne, 5771.
- Wach, *v.* to watch, guard, 15. 12 *pr. pl.* Wachis, 10. 572; *pt. s.* Wachit, kept watch, 19. 402; *pp.* Wachit, kept guarded, 14. 455, 15. 324.
- Wachis, *s. pl.* guards, watches, sentinels, 3. 187, 15. 127, 17. 481, 79 scouts, 19. 442.
- Waer, *adj. comp.* more sad, 16. 2 (E.). See Wa, *adj.*
- Wageouris, *s. pl.* mercenary soldiers, 11. 48 (E.). See Wageowris.
- Waid, *ger.* to wade over, 19. 760.
- Waik, *ger.* to wake, 7. 179 (E.).
- Waik, *adj.* weak; *waik and worth* weak and strong alike, 17. 931.
- Wailȝe que wailȝe (*misprinted* wail quod wailȝe in J.), avail what may, 9. 147 (E.). See Avalȝe.
- Wair, *pt. pl.* were, 5. 148, 9. 689, 8.
- Wais, *s. pl.* ways, 6. 436.
- Waist, *adj.* waste, empty, 7. 151 (E).
- Waith, *s.* danger, peril, 5. 418 (E. 7. 305 (E.). See Vath.
- Waknyt, *pt. s.* awoke, 7. 210 (E. 291 (E.). See Valknyt.
- Walageouss, *a reading in E. for* Vo geouss, 8. 455, 10. 553.
- Wald, 1 *p. s. pl.* would, 1. 11; Wifayne, would gladly, 1. 11; *pt. s.* Wald, 16. 202. (Common.)
- Wald, *s.* wold, plain, 18. 555. Douglas translates *humum* (Æn. 669) by *wald*. See *Wold* in Etym. Dictionary.
- Wale (dissyllable—*wa-lē*), *s.* a vally, 19. 414. See Valē.
- Walk, *s.* watch, guard, 17. 38 (E. [Should rather be *wakē*; see Vall
- Walk, *v. trans.* to watch, 15. 1 (E.); *pres. s.* watches, 17. 930 (E. *pt. pl.* Walkyt, watched, 17. 3 (E.); *pp.* Walkyt, watched, guarded, 14. 455 (E.); Walkit, watched (wi

- due ceremonies), 13. 513. (Should rather be *wakk*, *wakkyl*, and *wakkit*; see *Valk*.)
- Walkyn, *v.* to awake, 6. 95, 604. Properly intransitive, in which sense it means to awake from sleep; here it means, to cause to awake from sleep. (It should rather be *wakkyn*; see *Valk*.)
- Wallis, *s. pl.* walls, 9. 335.
- Wallyt, *pp.* walled, 1. 107, 2. 220.
- Walopyt, *pt. pl.* galloped, 2. 440. See Romans of Partenay, ed. Skeat, note to l. 4827.
- Walour, *s.* valour, 1. 451, 467.
- Waltering, *pres. part.* weltering, rolling, 3. 700, 719 (*footnote*).
- Wan, *pt. s.* conquered, 1. 537, 551; won, 9. 651; *pl.* won, 1. 25; Wane, defeated, 3. 250. Used like mod. Eng. *get*, as in *wan away* = got away, 16. 555; *wan our* = got over, 9. 405.
- Wandyst, *pt. pl.* recoiled, retreated, gave way, 12. 109 (E.), 13. 217 (E.), 16. 629 (E.). See Vayndist.
- Wane, *s.* weening, thought, 7. 2 (E.). See Vayn. A.S. *wæn*.
- Wane, *s.* wain, waggon, 11. 25. A.S. *wægn*.
- Wane, *s.* quantity, 17. 249; Wayne, 16. 454. It occurs in Chevy Chase, l. 74; and see other examples in Stratmann, s.v. *wæn*.
- Wantag, *s.* advantage, 8. 151 (*rubric*).
- Wapnys, *s. pl.* weapons, 10. 679, 11. 76; Wapynnys, 11. 592 (E.).
- Wapped, an error in H. for Warped, *i.e.*, threw, 3. 642 (*footnote*).
- Wappyt, *pt. s.* shot quickly, threw quickly, 17. 691 (E.). MS. C. has *swappit*.
- War, *s.* war. See Wer.
- War, *adj.* aware, 3. 12; wary, 10. 333. A.S. *war*.
- War, *s.* ware, merchandise, 19. 194.
- War, *adj. comp.* worse, 13. 219.
- War, *pt. pl.* were, 4. 353; *pt. s. subj.* would be, 3. 341; *war* him weill or *war* him wa, whether it were well or ill for him, 16. 650. See Na war, Ne war.
- Warand, *v.* to protect, 2. 504. O.F. *garantir*, *warantir*, to warrant, protect.
- Warand, *s.* warrant, security, protection, 2. 502; safety, 20. 604; place of safety, 19. 679. See Warand.
- Ward, *s.* guardianship of a minor, 12. 320.
- Ward, *s.* guard, post, 17. 627; *pl.* Wardis, wards, places to be guarded, 17. 349.
- Wardane, *s.* warden, regent, 14. 512, 17. 738, 18. 215 (E.); *pl.* Wardanys, regents, 16. 33 (E.).
- Wardanry, *s.* wardenship, office, 8. 362 (E.).
- Warisoun, *s.* reward, 20. 544. See Warysoun.
- Warld, *s.* world, 1. 240; *pl.* Warldys, 1. 404. In the latter place I prefer the reading *warld* (H.); to be pronounced nearly as a dissyllable, with trilled *r*.
- Warn, *v.* to refuse, 4. 392; *pt. s.* Warnyt, opposed, 2. 137; gave notice to, 10. 202; warned, 3. 451; *pp.* forewarned, 17. 114. A.S. *wyrnan*, to warn, refuse.
- Warnisoun, *s.* garrison, 10. 325 (H.).
- Warnist, *pp.* provided, 17. 713; Warnyst, stored, 10. 311 (E.); provisioned, 4. 102 (*footnote*); Warnysyt, stored, 16. 215 (E.).
- Warnysing, *s.* store, in E., 6. 350 (*footnote*).
- Warnysone, *s.* provision, store, 17. 294 (E.).
- Warpyt, *pt. s.* threw, cast, 3. 642. A.S. *weorpan*, to throw.
- Warrand, *s.* shelter, place of safety, refuge, 247, 10. 691 (E.); Warrande, 13. 434; *to warrand*, in safety, 13. 710.
- Warrand, *pres. part.* warring upon, 9. 649. See below.
- Warray, *v.* to war against, 5. 220, 14. 39; to make war, 20. 522; Warra, to war upon, 9. 646; *pt. s.* Warrait, warred, 9. 650; *p. pl. pt.* Warrait, ye warred upon, 9. 744; *pres. part.* Warrayand, making war, 1. 140. See Warray.
- Warraying, *s.* warring, struggle, 4. 650; Warrayng, warfare, 5. 140.
- Warrer, *adj. comp.* worse, in E., 5. 546 (*footnote*).
- Waryit, *pt. s.* cursed, 7. 228 (E.). A.S. *wergian*, to curse.
- Warysoun, *s.* reward, 2. 206, 10. 526 (E.); Warisoun, 20. 544. The O.F. *warison* or *garison* is properly security, from *warir* or *garir*, to secure; cf. A.S. *werian*, to fortify, protect. Sir W. Scott uses *warri-son* to signify "a note of assault;"

- Lay of the Last Minstrel, iv. 24, which is, I suspect, a mere blunder. *Warysoun* is the same word as our *garrison*.
- Waslage, *s.* prowess, 1. 290. *See* Was-salage.
- Wass, *pl. s.* was, 3. 133, 7. 82, 8. 164.
- Wassalage, *s.* prowess, valour, hardi-hood, 6. 22, 12. 233, 13. 137; Was-salage, 1. 472, 3. 57. *See* Vas-salage.
- Wat, *adj.* wet, 19. 692; Wate, 4. 380.
- Wat, 1 *p. s. pr.* I wot, I know, 1. 509, 2. 42, 4. 61, 12. 433, 17. 114; *badly spelt* Wate, 1. 509, 3. 521; *pr. s.* he knows, 1. 178, 4. 645, 10. 739, 11. 28; Wate, 1. 586, 3. 255; 2 *p. pl. pr.* Wate, ye know, 2. 336.
- Wattir, *s.* water, 9. 683; *wattir to ma*, to make water, 13. 603.
- Watyt, *pl. pl.* watched, laid wait for, 1. 202. *Lit. waited for*; observe the context in the two following lines. O.F. *waiter*, *gaiter*, to watch, observe; *agaiter*, to set traps for; from O.H.G. *wahtan*, to guard.
- Wauch him, *v.* to watch, be on one's guard, 1. 520.
- Waverand, *pres. part.* wandering about, 13. 517; Wauerand, 7. 112 (E.). *See* Vauerand, and note to vii. 302\*, p. 253.
- Waw, *s.* wave, 3. 709; *pl.* Wawys, 3. 699; Wawis, 3. 714.
- Wawand, *pres. part.* waving, 9. 245 (E.), 11. 193 (E.), 513 (E.).
- Waward, *s.* vanguard, 8. 48 (E.), 12. 340. *See* Vaward.
- Wawerand, *pres. part.* wavering, 12. 185 (E.).
- Waweryng, *s.* wavering, swerving, in E., 6. 584 (*footnote*).
- Waweryt, *pl. s.* wavered, 7. 41 (E.).
- Wax, *s.* wax, 15. 94.
- Way, *adj.* woful, sorry, 8. 347. *See* Wa.
- Wayis, *s. pl.* ways; or *gen. sing.* way's, 7. 36.
- Wayn, *s.* wain, waggon, 10. 221, 223, 164 (E.). *See* Vayn.
- Wayn, in E., 7. 225 (*footnote*). *See* Vayn.
- Wayne, *s.* quantity, 16. 454. *See* Wane.
- Wayne, in, in vain, 4. 48.
- Waytand, *pres. part.* watching, 13. 598; *pl. s.* Waytit, waited, 13. 520. *See* Vaitit.
- We, *s.* a little wee bit, 13. 217; a short while, 7. 182; a small space, 17. 677.
- Wecht, *s.* weight, 17. 693.
- Weddir, *s.* a wether, sheep, 7. 115, 152 (H.).
- Weddir, *s.* weather, 3. 387.
- Weddit, *pp.* wedded, 17. 29, 20. 69.
- Wedis, *s. pl.* weeds, *i.e.*, garments 11. 467, 13. 30.
- Weid, *s.* weed, *i.e.*, clothing, 11. 130 *pl.* Wedis, garments, 11. 467, 13. 30.
- Weild, *v.* to possess, have full pos-session of, 12. 321.
- Weill, *adv.* well, 1. 21, 4. 61, 11. 50 quite, 1. 455; very, 1. 359, 4. 200, 11. 572, 16. 646; Weile, well, 1. 149. *See* Ma, *v.*
- Weill, *adj.* a great number; *weill as* a great number of men, a large troop, 3. 15. The reading should rather be *feill*; cf. A.S. *fela* many.
- Weill-fair, *s.* welfare, 12. 156; Weil-far, 8. 377 (E.).
- Weir, *pl. pl.* were, 6. 184, &c.; *pl. s. subj.* might be, 10. 208.
- Weir, *s.* war, 16. 178, 492, 19. 167.
- Weir, *s.* doubt, 4. 222, 9. 637, 13. 592, 730, 16. 110, 500; *but weir* without doubt, 17. 496. Cf. *Iceel vari*, caution.
- Welanys, *adj.* villanous, 19. 106 (E.).
- Welcummyne, *s.* welcome, 19. 794.
- Welcummyt, *pl. s.* welcomed, 11. 256.
- Weld, *v.* lit. to wield; *weld the se* command the sea, get out to sea, 4. 445; *pres. part.* Weldand, ruling, 5. 445.
- Wele, *adv.* well, 1. 202; nearly about, 9. 520. *See* Weill.
- Weltir, *v.* to totter, be overturned 11. 25; *pres. part.* Weltrand, roll-ing (lit. weltering), 3. 719; Weltryt rolled about, 3. 700. A frequent ative formed from A.S. *wealtian* to roll, totter (Lye).
- Wem, *s.* stain, spot, 15. 250 (E.). A.S. *wam*, a spot.
- Wemen, *s. pl.* women, 3. 734.
- Wemmyt, *pp.* blemished, scarred, 20. 368, 370. *See* Wem.
- Wench, *s.* a girl, 10. 554 (E.).
- Wencussing, *s.* defeat, 18. 206 (E.).
- Wencusyt, *pl. s.* vanquished, 1. 554

- Wencust, 8. 117; *pp.* Wencusyt, 2. 332, 3. 196, 7. 373 (E.); Wencust, 18. 112. *See* Vencuss.
- Wend, *v.* to go, 2. 280, 4. 79, 17. 520; Went (*better spelt* Wend), 4. 257; *pt. pl.* Went, went, 4. 183; *pp.* Went, gone, 1. 589, 18. 495; *is went*, 9. 420.
- Wend, 1 *p. s. pt. t.* I supposed, weened, thought, 4. 210, 18. 50; *pt. s.* Wend, supposed, 1. 504, 15. 336; weened, 3. 453; thought, 3. 493; *pl.* Wend, 6. 664, 10. 749, 17. 463; Wende, supposed, 10. 392, 14. 428. *See* Wenys.
- Wene, *s.* supposition; *but wene*, without supposition, without doubt, 17. 251. A.S. *wēnan*, weening. *See* Vayn, Weyne.
- Weng, *v.* to avenge, 1. 461; *ger.* 18. 232 (E.); Wenge, 5. 79, 7. 35; *pt. s.* Wengyt, avenged, 1. 291; *pp.* Wengit, 8. 20.
- Wengeans, *s.* revenge, 19. 239.
- Wenys, *pr. pl.* ween, expect, 2. 288; suppose, think, 19. 695; *pt. s.* Wenit, imagined, 4. 771. *See* Wend. A.S. *wēnan*, to imagine.
- Wep, *v.* to weep, 3. 350; *pt. s.* Wepit, wept, 20. 237.
- Wer, *v.* to wear, carry about, 1. 355.
- Wer, *v.* to defend, 16. 594. A.S. *werian*, to defend.
- Wer, *pt. pl. subj.* should be, 1. 3; War, 1. 4. *See* Be.
- Wer, *s.* war, 8. 495, 13. 405, 17. 243; *of wer*, in a warlike manner, 19. 787; *apon wer*, for war, 15. 420, 16. 346.
- Wer, *s.* doubt, 14. 187, 16. 181; *but wer*, without doubt, 2. 43. *See* Weir, Weyr.
- Wer, *adj. comp.* worse, 1. 269, 3. 302, 4. 22. *See* War.
- Werd, *s.* fate, destiny, 4. 148; *pl.* Werdis, fates, destinies, 2. 329, 3. 390, 11. 50, 18. 46 (E.). A.S. *wyrð*, fate.
- Were, *ger.* to defend, 20. 379. *See* Wer, to defend.
- Were, *v.* to wear, 16. 485. *See* Wer, to wear.
- Were, *s.* war, 4. 239, 16. 28. *See* Wer, war.
- Were, *s.* sping, 5. 1. This word for "spring" is probably merely the Lat. *uer*; but the Scandinavian languages also have the word; cf. Icel. *vðr*, Swed. *vðr*, spring.
- Werraly, *adv.* verily, 15. 442. *See* below.
- Werray, *adj.* very, true, 19. 29, 20. 259.
- Werray, *v.* to make war on, fight against, 2. 462; *ger.* 8. 24 (E.); *pr. s.* Werrayis, makes war, 12. 363 (E.); *pt. s.* Werrayit, warred against, 3. 375, 9. 650 (E.); *pres. part.* Werrayand, carrying on war, 3. 259; warring against, 9. 649 (E.). *See* Warray.
- Werrayour, *s.* a warrior, *reading in E. for* Veriour, 5. 85 (*footnote*).
- Werriours, *s. pl.* warriors, 20. 416.
- Wertu, *s.* virtue, 1. 367, 371.
- Wery, *adj.* weary, 2. 441, 10. 609.
- Weryfyd, *pp.* verified, 2. 87 (*footnote*).
- Wes, *pt. s.* was, 1. 8; Wess, 14. 145. *See* Be.
- Wesand, *s.* weasand, 7. 584 (E.). C. *has* Vassand, *q.v.*
- Wethir, *s.* a wether, 7. 152 (E.). *See* Weddir.
- Wey, *s.* a wee bit, 17. 677 (E.). *See* We.
- Weyn, *pr. pl.* ween, suppose, 11. 23; Weyne, 19. 688; 2 *p.* Weyn, ye suppose, 15. 413, 16. 137. *See* Wenys.
- Weyne, *s.* supposition, doubt; *but weyne*, without doubt, 19. 292; *withouten weyne*, without doubt, 13. 260, 17. 928. *See* Wene.
- Weyr, *s.* doubt, 7. 219. *See* Weir, Wer.
- Wheene, *adj. pl.* few, 3. 249 (H.), 9. 163 (H.). *See* Quhoyn.
- Whiddering, *for* Quhedirand, *q.v.*, 17. 684 (H.).
- Whissilling, *for* Quhistlyng or Quhestlyng, 6. 87, 94 (H.).
- Wiage, *s.* voyage, journey, 3. 212, 4. 646, 8. 406. *See* Viage.
- Wicht, *adj.* nimble, vigorous, 7. 263, 9. 391, 10. 531, 11. 95, 12. 422, 14. 402, 15. 328, 16. 101, 17. 740. Cf. Icel. *vigr*, skilled in war, from *vlg*, war; cf. Swed. *vig*, active.
- Wictaill, *s.* victual, provisions, 10. 319, 19. 639 (E.); *pl.* Wictalis, 3. 401; Wictaillis, 9. 169 (E.); Wictalis, 3. 749.
- Wictaillit, *pp.* victualled, furnished with provisions, 3. 339.
- Victory, victory, 1. 473, 3. 224. (*Note*.—In the former place it is accented on the penultimate.)

- Wictour, *s.* victory, 4. 544 (*footnote*), 8. 288 (E.), 15. 393 (E.); *pl.* Wictours, 16. 180 (E.).
- Wid, *adj.* wide, great, 3. 23.
- Wifis, *s. pl.* women, 15. 536.
- Wigorously, *adv.* vigorously, 3. 142, 4. 88 (E.).
- Wikidly, *adv.* severely, 17. 809.
- Wikkitnes, *s.* wickedness, 1. 559; Wikytnes, 3. 566.
- Wilfull, *adj.* willing, 11. 266; anxious, 2. 354; Willful, 2. 345.
- Wilfully, *adv.* with good will, heartily, 2. 386, 3. 404; willingly, 2. 172.
- Wilkyt, *written for* Wikkyt, 9. 75 (E.). *See note on* Valk, *s. v.*
- Will, *s.* desire, 15. 79; will, 13. 515; *in will*, desirous, 12. 229; *pl. (but in sing. sense)*, Willis, 1. 618, 13. 515 (*footnote*), 19. 158. (The examples in 1. 618 and 19. 158 shew that the reading *willis* is probably the right one in 13. 515.)
- Will of red (lit. wild of rede or counsel), at a loss what to do, 1. 348, 3. 494, 13. 477; Will off wane (wild of weening or thought), at a loss, 1. 323, 2. 471, 7. 225. The Icel. *villr* (E. *wild*) properly means at a loss, astray, bewildered; cf. Icel. *fara villt*, to go astray. *See the note to* 2. 471, p. 235.
- Willand, *pres. part.* willing; *weill willand*, well affected, 5. 41; 1 *p. s. pr.* Will, I desire, 7. 144.
- Wirk, *v.* to work, act, contrive, 12. 312, 17. 58. *See* Wyrk.
- Wisage, *s.* visage, face, 3. 58.
- Wiss, *adj.* wise, 8. 162. *See* Wyss.
- Wiss, *s.* wise, way, 2. 549, 8. 195, 14. 447. A.S. *wis*. *See* Wyss.
- Wist, *pt. s.* knew, 14. 56, 16. 75, 243, 487; *pl.* 4. 102, 8. 481, 11. 536, 14. 359, 17. 2, 479. *See* Wyst.
- A.S. *wiste*, *pt. t.* of *witan*, to know.
- Wit, *v.* to know, 4. 673, 20. 507. *See* Wyt.
- Wit; *out of wit*, deprived of reason, 13. 143.
- With, *prep.* against, 1. 520; by means of, 1. 521; by, 2. 419, 18. 128.
- Withdrawin, *pp.* withdrawn, 13. 101.
- Withletting, *an error for* Withsetting, *i.e.*, setting ambush, 14. 107 (*rubric in H.*; *footnote*).
- Withsay, *v.* to gainsay, oppose, 1. 210.
- With-set, *pt. pl.* beset, 14. 107, 16. 512.
- Withstude, *pt. s.* withstood, resisted, 15. 298.
- With that, therewith, by that time, 15. 168.
- With-thi, *conj.* on the condition that, provided that, 1. 493, 2. 526, 270, 3. 290, 6. 354, 506, 9. 647, 14. 12. Cf. A.S. *mid þy*, on the condition that, where *þy* is the instrumental case of the demonstrative *se*.
- Wittail, *s.* victuals, 4. 170, 17. 175; Wittale, 10. 312; Wittal, 14. 447; Wittalis, 4. 451. *See* Wittail.
- Wittalit, *pt. s.* victualled, 15. 263.
- Wittely, *adv.* wisely, 13. 571, 18. 196, 19. 467.
- Witteryng, *s.* information, news, 9. 702, 19. 770; Wittering, 16. 441, 18. 205, 358; intimation, notice, 4. 642, 10. 12 (E.), 14. 417. Cf. Icel. *vitran*, revelation; *vitra*, to reveal; *vittr*, wise.
- Witting, *s.* knowledge, 4. 359, 5. 534 (E.), 16. 350, 368.
- Wittirly, *adv.* certainly, 4. 226. *See* Vitterly.
- Whispyt, *pt. s.* lisped, 1. 393, 399.
- Wmbeset, *pt. s.* beset, 9. 706 (E.). The prefix is the A.S. *ymbe*, around.
- Wmbethocht, *pp.* bethought; *wmbethocht zow*, bethought yourselves, considered, 1. 92; *pt. s.* Wmbethocht him, bethought himself, 3. 352; *pres. part.* Wmbethinkand, bethinking, 5. 551 (E.); *imp. pl.* Wmbethinkis, *for* Wmbethinkis, 5. 613 (E.). The prefix is A.S. *ymbe*, about; the verb is A.S. *ymbepencan*, to bethink oneself; Grein, ii. 771. *See* Wmbethinkis.
- Wmqhile, *adv.* at some time, 3. 256; sometimes, 3. 262; Wmqhill, 1. 335. *See* Wmqhile.
- Wnarmyt, *pp.* unarmed, 2. 284.
- Wndirta, 1 *p. s. pr.* I undertake, I take upon me to say, I affirm, I assert, 1. 292, 3. 110, 13. 44; *pt. s.* Wndertuk, agreed, 3. 662; *pp.* Wndertane, undertaken; *him wndertane*, undertaken for him, *i.e.*, on his account, 3. 744.
- Wndiscumfyt, *pp.* undiscomforted, undismayed, fearless, 3. 274.
- Wndyr, *prep.* under, 2. 359.

- Wnfayr, *adj.* evil, disastrous, 1. 123.  
 Wnhappy, *adj.* unlucky, 3. 291.  
 Wnsele, *for* Vnseill, 10. 218 (E.).  
 Wnsemlly, *adj.* unseemly, 5. 407.  
 Woce, *s.* a voice, 11. 407 (E.). *See* Voce.  
 Wod, *s.* wood, 7. 61. *See* Vod.  
 Woddy, *adj.* woody, 4. 492.  
 Wode-axis, *s.* *pl.* axes for cutting down wood, 16. 361.  
 Wodsyde, *s.* wood-side, 9. 139.  
 Woidre, *s.* stratagem, 9. 747. *See* the note to 10. 516, p. 262, where the proposal is made to read *voidry* for *victory*. The word is a corruption of the curious O.F. *voisdie*, *veisdie*, *vaidie*, treason, deceit, perfidy, explained by Burguy, *s.v.*, *vice*. Roquefort also gives *voisdie*, *voedie*, *voidie*, *voisie*, *voisise*, with the same senses; also the verb *voisier*, *vesier*, *voidier*, to deceive. Burguy takes the root of the word to be Lat. *uitium*, vice.  
 Wonand, *pres. part.* dwelling, 17. 184, 190. *See* Wonnand.  
 Wonder, *s.* a wonder, 17. 383. *See* Wondir.  
 Wonderit, *pt. pl.* wondered, 19. 755; Wounderit, 20. 504.  
 Wondir, *adv.* wonderfully, extremely, 1. 323, 10. 620; Wondre, 1. 394. *See* Wounder.  
 Wondirly, *adv.* wondrously, 1. 296, 17. 6; Wonderly, 3. 562.  
 Wone, *pp.* wont, accustomed, 3. 68.  
 Wonnand, *pres. part.* dwelling, 3. 728, 14. 14, 15. 320, 523 (E.), 16. 342; *pt. s.* Wonnyt, dwelt, 3. 1, 15. 402, 17. 16; Wonnit (who), dwelt, 5. 273; *pl.* Wonnyt, 3. 403, 8. 388. A.S. *wunian*, to dwell.  
 Wonnyn, *pp.* won, 2. 190, 7. 609, 10. 793, 11. 145, 12. 129, 17. 12, 19. 135; Wonnynne, 17. 839; *wonnyn vp*, gotten up, 10. 435. *See* Vyn.  
 Wonnynng, *s.* dwelling, 5. 177. *See* Wonnand.  
 Wood, *adj.* mad, 20. 483; Voude, 17. 106. A.S. *wōd*, mad.  
 Worschip, *s.* valour, 3. 50, 15. 154.  
 Worth, *v.* to become, 4. 244, 19. 177; *pr. s.* Worthys, it becomes, it behoves, 13. 354 (E.); *pr. pl.* Worthis, become, 16. 71; *pt. s.* Worthit, it behoved, 3. 222, 4. 194, 13. 354, 15. 274; *hym worthit neid*, it became necessary for him, 19. 209; *pp.* Worthyn, become, 4. 606, 13. 285, 19. 162; *wa worth*, wo be, 1. 515. A.S. *weorðan*, to become.  
 Worthyhede, *s.* honour, reputation, 6. 333.  
 Woud, *s.* wood, 2. 304, 7. 613.  
 Woude, *pt. s.* waded, 9. 388. A.S. *wadan*, to wade, go through; *pt. t.* *ic wōd*. *See* Waid.  
 Wouk, *pt. s.* kept watch, 2. 552. A.S. *wacan*, to arise, *pt. t.* *ic wōc*; *wacian*, to watch, *pt. t.* *ic wacode*. The strong form is used here.  
 Wouk, *s.* week, 14. 132 (E.); *pl.* Woukis, 9. 359 (E.). *See* Owk.  
 Wounder, *s.* *as adj.* wonderful, 19. 398. *See* Wondir.  
 Wounderit, *pt. pl.* wondered, 20. 504; Wonderit, 19. 755.  
 Woundit, *pp.* wounded, 10. 479, 17. 452, 459, 484.  
 Wount, *pp.* wont, accustomed, 1. 220, 16. 485, 18. 509, 19. 754.  
 Wouss (for French *vous*), you, 10. 747.  
 Woux, *pt. s.* waxed, grew, became, 2. 170, 361; 8. 391 (E.). *See* Wox.  
 Wox, *pt. s.* increased, 19. 207; grew, 9. 588, 15. 131, 20. 245; became, 5. 21; *pl.* grew, 8. 476, 9. 162, 13. 77; Woxe, 10. 189. A.S. *weaxan*, to grow; *pt. t.* *wēax*. *See* Woux.  
 Woxt, *for* Wox, became, 13. 715 (H.).  
 Woyd, *v.* to make void, to leave empty, 8. 59; *pp.* Woydyt, freed from, free from, 1. 26. *See* below.  
 Woyd, *adj.* void, empty, 19. 755.  
 Wp, *adv.* up, 10. 569, 574.  
 Wracke, *v.* avenge, wreak, 19. 424 (H.).  
 Wrang, *s.* wrong, 1. 177.  
 Wrate, *pt. s.* wrote, 1. 525; Wrat, 10. 746, 752; *pl.* Wrayt, 1. 148.  
 Wrath, *adj.* wroth, angry, 1. 201.  
 Wrayt, *pt. pl.* wrote, 1. 148. *See* Wrate.  
 Wrechitnes, *s.* misery, 1. 224; cowardice, 9. 76 (E.).  
 Wrek, *v.* to wreak, avenge, 13. 144\*; *imp. pl.* Wreik, avenge ye, 12. 227. A.S. *wrecan*, to avenge.  
 Wreth, *s.* wrath, 1. 167, 18. 534.  
 Wreth him, *pt. s. refl.* became enraged, 2. 138; Wreyth him, became wrath, 1. 165; *we also find* Wrethyt him, became enraged, 1. 425; Wrethit him, 15. 412; *pp.* Wrethit, made angry, 17. 45. (The forms *wreth*, *wreyth*, only found in MS. E., are plainly incorrect; the right form is *wrethit*.)



- Wreyth. *See* Wreth him.
- Wrocht, *pt. pl.* wrought, worked, toiled, 1. 471; Wroucht, *s.* acted, did, 18. 158; *pp.* Wrocht, wrought, done, acted, 1. 94. *See* Wyrk.
- Wry, *adj.* uneven; *on wry*, awry, 4. 705.
- Wryt, *s.* writing, 1. 13; book, 1. 343.
- Wrythed, *for* Wrethed, *pt. s. refl.* was wrath, 1. 425 (*footnote*). *See* Wreth, *v.*
- Ws, *dat.* to us, 1. 343; (after prep. *of*), 12. 250.
- Wschyng, *s.* issuing, exit, *an error for* Yschyng, 6. 363 (*footnote*).
- Wsis, *pr. pl.* are wont, are used, 11. 227 (E.); 1 *p. s. pl.* Wsyt, I was accustomed, 10. 563 (E.); *pp.* Wsit, used, 11. 222 (E.).
- Wss, *s.* use, 17. 252 (E.).
- Wtelaus, *s. pl.* outlaws, 2. 493.
- Wthyr, *adj.* other, 16. 320 (E.).
- Wtirly, *adv.* utterly, 14. 154.
- Wtouth, *adv.* outwards, forwards, 2. 299; on the outside, 4. 152 (E.). *Cf.* M.E. *outwith*, on the outside, out of, beyond (Stratmann, p. 657); also Swed. *utåt*, outward.
- Wtraly, *adv.* utterly, wholly, 3. 196; very well, 3. 674.
- Wycht, *adj.* wight, vigorous, 1. 22, 370, 518, 2. 173, 489; nimble, swift, 2. 120. *See* Wicht.
- Wycht, *an error in* 3. 699 (*footnote*).
- Wychtis, *s. pl.* wights, persons, 2. 522. A.S. *wiht*, a creature.
- Wyffis, *s. pl.* wives, 1. 199. *See* Wiffis.
- Wygorusly, *adv.* vigorously, *a reading in E. for* Rigorusly, 7. 449 (*footnote*).
- Wykkyt, *adj.* wicked, 1. 195.
- Wykkytly, *adv.* wickedly, 1. 222.
- Wyn, *v.* to win, 1. 97, 351, 2. 111; to defeat, conquer, 12. 487, 15. 338; to reap, 10. 189; *pr. s.* Wynnis, wins, 3. 175; *pr. pl. subj.* Wyn, conquer, 12. 257. A.S. *winnan*.
- Wynland, 17. 721 (E.). *See* Vyndland.
- Wynnyt, *an error in E. for* Wonnyt, 8. 388 (*footnote*).
- Wyppit, *pt. s.* wiped, 5. 647.
- Wyre, *v.* to turn, cast, 17. 704. "Vire, to veer, turne round, wheele or whirle about;" Cotgrave.
- Wyre, *a reading for* Vyre in H., 5. 595.
- Wyrk, *v.* to work, act, 2. 117; *imp. pl.* work ye, 2. 337. *See* Wrocht, Wirk.
- Wysage, *s.* visage, 1. 383. *See* Wisage.
- Wysk, *s.* a whisk, a swift stroke, 5. 641. *Cf.* Swed. *wiska*, to wag.
- Wyss, *adj.* wise, 1. 22, 121, 2. 489, 561. *See* Wiss.
- Wyss, *s.* wise, way, 1. 574. *See* Wis.
- Wyssmennys, *s. gen. pl.* wise men's, 11. 22 (E.).
- Wyst, *pt. s.* knew, 1. 141, 318, 2. 225, 562, 3. 6, 7. 187, 20. 501; *pl.* 1. 127. *See* Wist.
- Wysyllt, *pt. pl., a reading in E. for* Vissill, *q.v.*, 12. 580.
- Wyt, *v.* to know, 1. 238; *imp. pl.* know ye, 2. 2. *See* Wit.
- Wyt, *s.* wit, wisdom, 1. 344; *out of his wyt*, out of his wits, 2. 199.
- Wyth, *prep.* against, 3. 714.
- Wytnes, *s.* witness, 1. 560.
- Wytt, *an error in E. for* Wyth= against, 7. 621 (*footnote*).
- Wytteryt, *pp.* informed, *a reading in E. for* Varnit, 7. 533 (*footnote*).
- Wytryng, *s.* notice, 9. 564 (E.). *See* Wittering.
- Wytyt, *pt. s.* enquired, or learnt by enquiry, 12. 156 (E.). (Probably an incorrect form; perhaps it should be *wyst*.)
- Yar, *an error in J. for* Thar, 16. 45.
- Yare, *adj.* ready, 19. 497 (H.). A.S. *gearo*, ready. *See* Yhar, 3ar.
- Ydill, *adj.* idle, 8. 434.
- Ydilly, *adv.* idly, 10. 171.
- Yemanry, *s.* yeomanry, 16. 80.
- Yhar, *adj.* yare, ready, 2. 346. A.S. *gearo*, ready. *See* Yare, 3ar.
- Yharnit, *pp.* yearned for, desired, 7. 370. A.S. *geornian*, to desire. *See* 3arne.
- Yhe, *pron. pl.* ye, 2. 337.
- Yhed, *pt. s.* went, 2. 425. *See* 3eid.
- Yheit, *adv.* yet, 2. 217. *See* Yheyte 3eit.
- Yhemen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 13. 225 (*heading*). *See* 3eman.
- Yher, *s. pl.* years, 1. 532. *See* 3er.
- Yhet, *adv.* yet, 1. 106; *na yhet*, no yet, nor even, 1. 106.
- Yheyte, *adv.* yet, 1. 246, 2. 241.
- Yheyte, 3. 448. *See* 3eit.
- Ying, *adj.* young, 3. 216.
- Ymyddis, *prep.* in the midst of, 12. 576 (E.); Ymyddys, 5. 325 (E.).
- Yneuch, *adj.* as sb. enough, sufficient, 14. 235, 364; *pl.* Ynew, enough, 19. 626 (E.).
- Ynkirly, *adv.* particularly, 7. 555;

- specially, 10. 534, 13. 139; in particular, 15. 66; Ynkurly, quite, 7. 183. *See* Enkrely.  
 Yone, *adj.* yon, 15. 142 (H.); *pl.* yonder men, 14. 280. *See* 3on.  
 Ysche, *v.* to issue, go or come out, sally, sally forth, 4. 95, 5. 189, 8. 457, 15. 12, 118, 18. 492; *pt. s.* Yschit, 6. 404, 450, 18. 319; *pl.* Yschit, issued, sallied, 6. 418, 8. 459, 17. 137; *pp.* Yschit, 5. 338, 6. 452, 10. 218. *See* Isch.  
 Ysche, *s.* outlet, issue, exit, way out, 6. 363, 14. 354, 19. 670; sally, 19. 94. *See* above.  
 Yscheill, *s.* squadron, 12. 214. *See* Eschele.  
 Ysching, *s.* sallying out, sally, 15. 158, 246. *See* Ysche.  
 Ythand, *adj.* assiduous, busy, 3. 285. Icel. *ðinn*, assiduous, busy; *ðja*, to be busy. A better form would be *ythen*, but the form is assimilated to that of present participles. *See* Ythen.  
 Ythandly, *adv.* assiduously, 3. 275, 288; 6. 327, 10. 287, 13. 598, 14. 320; Ythanly, continually, 2. 57. *See* above.  
 Ythen, *for* Ythand, 3. 285 (*footnote*). *See* Ythand.  
 Ythenly, *for* Ythandly, 6. 327 (E.), 14. 320 (E.).  
 Ytwyn, *adv.* apart, 8. 175 (E.). *See* In-twyn.  
 3aa, *adv.* yea (*in assent*), 12. 450; 3ai 4. 470. *See* 3is.  
 3air, *adj.* ready, 4. 626. *See* Yare, 3ar.  
 3ald, *pt. s.* yielded, 7. 117, 10. 482, 13. 541; *pl.* 4. 172, 317, 17. 199; 3alde, 15. 259. *See* 3eld.  
 3ar, *adj.* yare, ready, 2. 316, 3. 679, 8. 409, 12. 409, 15. 6, 17. 702. *See* Yare, 3air.  
 3ar, *adv.* readily, quickly, 3. 696. *See* above.  
 3arne, *v.* to yearn for, desire, 2. 507; *pres. part.* 3arnand, yearning, 7. 11, 11. 525; *pr. s.* 3arnis, desires, yearns, 9. 20; *pl. s.* 3arnit, desired, 20. 209; *pl.* 3arnit, yearned, desired, 12. 282; 3arnyt, 6. 323; desired (to go), 18. 541; 2 *p. pl.* 3arnit, ye desired, 12. 282. A.S. *geornian*, to desire.  
 3arne, *adv.* diligently, 3. 547. A.S. *georne*, eagerly.  
 3arnyng, *s.* desire, wish, 3. 742, 4. 575, 5. 246, 9. 583, 17. 220, 20. 213. A.S. *geornung*, wish, desire. *See* above.  
 3ate, *s.* gate, 4. 431; 3at, 10. 225. A.S. *geat*. *See* 3et.  
 3auld, *an error for* 3eld, yield, 10. 824 (E.).  
 3ed, *pt. s.* went, 19. 660; *pl.* 3ede, 3. 112. *See* 3eid.  
 3eemsell, *s.* care, 20. 231. *See* 3em-sall.  
 3eid, *pt. s.* went, 3. 127, 302, 5. 574, 6. 490, 7. 552, 9. 701, 13. 517, 18. 390; gave himself up to, 1. 333; *pl.* 4. 410, 7. 28, 584, 9. 176, 13. 193, 16. 471, 20. 483. A.S. *zode*, Goth. *iddja*, I went. *See* 3ude.  
 3eir, *s.* year, 6. 183, 10. 821. *See* 3ere.  
 3eit, *adv.* yet, 1. 368, 556; still, moreover, 5. 463, &c.; besides, 15. 534.  
 3eld, *v.* to yield, 10. 824, 11. 33; 1 *p. s. pr.* I yield, 13. 529. *See* 3ald.  
 3eman, *s.* yeoman, 19. 165.  
 3emanry, *s.* yeomanry, body of yeomen, 15. 476.  
 3emsall, *s.* keeping, 20. 231 (E.); *to* 3emsall, under his care, 17. 222; 3emseill, 11. 329 (E.). Icel. *geimsla*, guardianship. *See* below.  
 3emyt, *pt. pl.* took care of, guarded, 11. 112, 239, 13. 230 (E.); *pp.* guarded, kept, 8. 494, 13. 678. Icel. *geyma*, A.S. *gȳman*, to watch over.  
 3ere, *s.* year, 6. 188, 10. 200; *pl.* 3er, years, 1. 39, 345. So, in 1. 522, it is probable that 3eris should be 3er.  
 3et, *s.* gate, 4. 153, 164, 10. 229, 317; *pl.* 3ettis, 5. 389, 6. 444, 18. 489. *See* 3ate.  
 3eymseill, *s.* tutoring, supervision, protecting care, 11. 329. *See* 3emsall.  
 3eyt, *adv.* yet, 2. 437. *See* 3eit.  
 3ha, *adv.* yea, 6. 613, 7. 181. *See* 3aa, 3is.  
 3harn, 1 *p. s. pr.* I yearn, I desire, 1. 158; *pp.* 3harnyt, desired, 1. 232. *See* 3arne.  
 3he, *pron.* ye, 8. 489, 12. 265.  
 3heid, *pt. s.* went, 1. 90. *See* 3eid.  
 3heir, *s. pl.* years, 9. 299. *See* 3ere.  
 3heman, *s.* a yeoman, 5. 235, 10. 172; *pl.* 3hemen, 13. 229. *See* 3eman.  
 3hemanry, *s.* yeomanry, 4. 386, 19. 171.  
 3hemar, *s.* keeper, groom, 2. 123. *See* 3emyt.

- 3hemsell, *s.* keeping, charge, 2. 136.  
     *See* 3emsall.  
 3het, *s.* gate, 17. 444. *See* 3et.  
 3heyne, *v.* to keep, take care of, 13.  
     230. *See* 3emyt.  
 3his, *adv.* yes (*wrongly used here, as  
     the question is a simple one, and the  
     right reading is 3ai, as given*), 4.  
     470; *footnote*. *See* 3is.  
 3histerday, *s.* yesterday, 1. 124.  
 3homen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 5. 257, 16.  
     101, 120. *See* 3heman.  
 3hone, *adj.* yonder, 5. 593. *See* 3on.  
 3houng, *adj.* young, 12. 322.  
 3hule, *s.* Yule, Christmas, 9. 204 (E.).  
 3humanry, *s.* yeomanry, 17. 944 (E.);  
     3hwanry, 15. 476 (E.).  
 3humen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 16. 120 (E.).  
 3hus, *adv.* yes, 9. 84. *See* 3is.  
 3hystirday, *s.* yesterday, 2. 56.  
 3ing, *adj.* young, 20. 41 (E.).  
 3is, *adv.* yes, 4. 484; 3hus (3is, E.),  
     9. 84. *Note*.—3is is the emphatic  
     form; mere assent is expressed by  
     3aa, *q.v.* *See* 3hus, 3his.  
 3oill-evyn, Yule-even, Christmas eve,  
     9. 204.  
 3ok, *v.* to yoke, 10. 215.  
 3olden, *pp.* yielded, 13. 539; yielded  
     up, 10. 804. *See* 3eld, 3ald.  
 3omen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 13. 229 (E.).  
     16. 101 (E.).  
 3on, *adj.* yon, that, 2. 105, 11. 27  
     15. 476, 19. 627; 3one, 2. 323, 1  
     458; 3ond, 9. 218, 17. 191. *See*  
     Yone, 3hone.  
 3ondir, *adv.* yonder, 19. 629.  
 3ongat, *for* 3on gat, *i.e.*, in such  
     way, in such wise, 3. 171.  
 3oung, *adj.* young, 8. 454. *See* 3im.  
 3ouris, *poss. pron.* yours, 1. 497.  
 3outheid, *s.* youth, 5. 277, 17. 93  
     3outhede, 10. 532.  
 3ow, *acc. pl.* you, yourselves, 1. 9  
     10. 422; *dat.* 1. 93. *The nom.*  
     3e, 1. 92.  
 3owr, *pron.* your, 2. 129.  
 3owtheid, *s.* youth, 1. 334. *See*  
     3outheid.  
 3ude, *pt. s.* went, 7. 36, 12. 560;  
     15. 72, 17. 530. *A.S. ic eode,*  
     *went. See* 3eid.  
 3uman, *s.* a yeoman, 10. 172 (E.),  
     151 (E.). *See* 3eman.

## INDEX V.

### PROPER NAMES IN 'THE BRUCE.'

Many of these proper names are explained and discussed in the Notes, so that it is unnecessary to explain them here at length. In order to find the place in the Notes where a name is discussed, consult Index I., pp. 298-304.

- Abyrdeyne, Aberdeen, 2. 512.  
 Abyrnethy, Schir Lowrens of, 13. 553.  
 Adam of Gordoune, 15. 333.  
 Adammis, Adam's, 15. 250.  
 Adeill, Athol (earl of), 4. 62; erill  
 Adell, earl of Athol, 5. 151; earl  
 Davy of Athol, 9. 288, 13. 490. *See*  
 Atholl.  
 Adrastus, king, 2. 529.  
 Affryk, Africa, 1. 539.  
 Air, Ayr, 5. 190, 14. 20. *See* Ar,  
 Are.  
 Airth, 13. 495 (H.). *See* Herth.  
 Alan Catcart, Sir, 9. 575.  
 Alexander (the great), 1. 529, 10.  
 706; Alysander, 3. 83; *cf.* p.  
 237.  
 Alexander (III.), 1. 37.  
 Alexander of Argyle, 10. 123.  
 Almanje, Germany, 11. 93.  
 Alphous, Alfonso, 20. 338 (H.).  
 Amecout, 11. 573 (E.). *See* Den-  
 cort.  
 Amer, the Wallang, Sir Aymer de  
 Valence, 2. 200; is defied by  
 Robert Bruce, 2. 248; attacks  
 Bruce at Methven, 2. 308; defeats  
 Bruce, 2. 398; spares his prisoners,  
 2. 457; praises Bruce, 6. 8-24;  
 seeks Bruce in Cumnock, 6. 457-  
 508; chases Bruce, 6. 532; re-  
 turns, 7. 81; praises Bruce, 7. 93-  
 104; again praises Bruce, 7. 352-  
 373; retreats, 7. 382, 8. 1; parts  
 Clifford and Vaux, 7. 625; hears  
 bad news, 8. 112; flees from the  
 battle of Bannockburn, 13. 328.  
*See also* Vallanch, Wallang.  
 Amery; *the same as* Amer, 2. 209,  
 223, 248, 457; *gen.* Ameryis, 6.  
 517.  
 Anandyrdale, Annandale, 1. 66.  
 Androu, Andrew, *i.e.*, Sir Andrew  
 Gray, 10. 644; Sir Andrew Harcla,  
 16. 511, 518.  
 Androws, St Andrews, 1. 353; bishop  
 of, 2. 81.  
 Anguss, Angus, 3. 659, 9. 307, 11.  
 336; Angouss, 19. 776.  
 Anwyk, Alnwick, 20. 10 (E.). *See*  
 Awnwyk.  
 Aquytane, Aquitaine, 11. 101; Aquit-  
 ayngne, 11. 44 (E.).  
 Ar, Ayr, 4. 38; Are, 5. 482. *See*  
 Air.  
 Arane, Arran, 4. 346, 370, 464, 5.  
 17.  
 Archbald Douglas, 19. 350, 20. 587.  
 Ardrossan, 8. 96; Sir Fergus of, 14.  
 31, 15. 193.  
 Are, Ayr, 5. 482. *See* Ar, Air.  
 Arestee, Aristæus, 10. 718, 725;  
 Ariste, 10. 718 (E.).

- Arestotill, Aristotle, 4. 739.  
 Argente, Gelis de, Sir Giles of Argentine, 11. 174, 13. 299, 467; his wacry, 13. 314.  
 Argyle, 3. 9, 18. 445; Argile, 9. 463, 11. 334; Alexander of, 10. 123.  
 Arrabe, Arabia, 1. 539.  
 Artayis, Artois (Earl of), 1. 339.  
 Arthur, king, 1. 549.  
 Arthyn, Thomas, 18. 409, 424, 434.  
 Aryk-stane, Arrick-stone, 2. 148. *See* the note, p. 232.  
 Atholl, Athol, 2. 235; earl of, 2. 480; Iohn of Athole, 3. 308; Davy of Adell, 13. 490. *See* Adeill.  
 Awnwyk, Alnwick, 20. 10.  
 Babilonys, Babylon's, 1. 530, 10. 707.  
 Balleoll, Sir Ihone the, 1. 168; Ihone the, 1. 181; the Balleoll, 1. 49.  
 Balmeburch, Bamfborough, 13. 616.  
 Balmeryne, king of, 20. 393. *See* the note, p. 295.  
 Ban, Bane; the river Bann in Ulster, 14. 371, 382.  
 Bannokburn, 12. 407, 13. 337, 351.  
 Bathket, Bathgate, 19. 206.  
 Bawmburgh, Bamfborough, 13. 616 (E.). *See* Balmeburch.  
 Bayon, Bayonne, 11. 101.  
 Beauvare, the vale of Beverley, 18. 558.  
 Bell (Sir Ingraham), 5. 483, 513.  
 Berclay, Sir David, 2. 238; Sir Moriss de Berclay, 13. 417. Breclay (Sir David), 2. 408.  
 Berwik, Berwick, 11. 136, 184, 13. 621, 625, 15. 325, 332, 343\*, 402, 435; taken by the Scotch, 17. 15-260; besieged by the English, 17. 261-490; siege raised, 17. 519, 19. 39, 20. 60, 83, 114, 318.  
 Besat, Bisset, 14. 47 (E.); Besatis, the Bissets, 14. 520.  
 Betwng, Sir Marmaduke, 13. 523; *see* the note, p. 271. However, the right name is no doubt "de Thweng." *See* the description of Danby Castle in Murray's Guide to Yorkshire, where we find—"The Bruces held it until 1271, when their great Yorkshire estates fell to four heiresses, one of whom married Marmaduke de Thweng." Doubtless, the Marmaduke who, after Bannockburn, surrendered to Bruce, and whom Bruce apparently recognised at once, was of this family, and surrendered to Bruce in particular because they were kinsmen.  
 Betyss, Betyss, 3. 74, 77. *See* the note to 3. 73, p. 237.  
 Biland, 18. 363, 368, 478, 497, 501.  
 Byland 18. 355; Bilandis abba 18. 368.  
 Binny, *the same as* Bunnok, 10. 11 (H.).  
 Bisset, 14. 47 (H.). *See* Besat.  
 Blak Dowglass, 15. 538.  
 Blar, Blair (Sir Brice), 4. 37.  
 Bonkill, Bonkle, 9. 691.  
 Boroundoun, Wilzam the, 2. 479.  
 Borowbrig, Boroughbridge, 17. 51 (E.); Borrowbrig, 17. 831.  
 Bosbek, Busbecq, 4. 249 (*rubric*). *See* note, p. 245.  
 Bothwell, 8. 111, 357, 13. 403, 66 read Buttil (Butel) *in* 9. 522, 53 *see* note to 9. 522, p. 259.  
 Bouchane, Buchan, 8. 400, 9. 15, 11. 186, 296, 280, 300.  
 Bouchquhane, Buchan, 8. 400 (E. *See* Bouchane.  
 Boune, Bohun, 12. 29 (E.). *See* Bowme.  
 Bouch, Burgh-in-Sands, 4. 31.  
 Bowrch-in-the-sand, 4. 203.  
 Bowme, *i.e.*, Sir Henry de Bohun, 1. 29.  
 Boyde, Sir Robert, 2. 244\*, 4. 3. 505, 8. 415; Sir Gilbert, 14. 406.  
 Brathwek, Brodick, 4. 388.  
 Brechine, Brechin (a place), 9. 28.  
 Sir David of, 8. 402, 9. 18, 120, 1. 208, 285, 19. 19, 59, 104.  
 Breclay, Barclay (Sir David), 2. 4. *See* Berclay.  
 Brewayne, *i.e.*, Birmingham, 14. 14.  
 Brwman, 14. 515.  
 Bretane, Britain, 1. 538, 550, 10. 1.  
 Bretane, Sir Iohne of, 18. 462, 4. 507; the marschall Bretane, 18. 4.  
 Bretangze, Brittany, 3. 687; B. anjhe, 11. 94; Bretanze, 20. 3.  
 Broite, the story of the Brut, 1. 56.  
 Broune, Sir Richard, 19. 18, 54.  
 Bruce; *variously spelt* Bruce, 1. 6 &c.; Bruss, 12. 345; Brwyss, 67, 153; Brwiss, 1. 503; Brw 1. 581; Broiss, 10. 791; Bro 9. 187; Bryss, 13. 165; *gen.* Brj 13. 311.  
 Bruce (the elder), 1. 67-167; confused with the younger Bruce, 477 (*see* note to this line, p. 2).  
 Bruce, *miswritten for* Bryce, 4. 37.

- Bruce, king Robert, 1. 477 - 20. 298; his heart carried to Spain by Douglas, 20. 423\*.  
 Bruce, Sir Edward, brother to Robert, 7. 276, &c.; his expedition to Ireland, 14. 1-16, 330; his defeat and death, 18. 1-210.  
 Bruce, Sir Nigel, brother of king Robert, 4. 61; put to death, 4. 316-332.  
 Brwman, Birmingham, 14. 515. *See* Bremaigne.  
 Bryde, saint, 19. 300, 635; *gen.* Brydis, 5. 336.  
 Brynname, Birmingham, 14. 515 (E.).  
 Bryse, Sir Blair Brice, *the right reading* in 4. 37.  
 Bryss, Bruce (Nigel), 4. 61. *See* Bruce, Sir Nigel.  
 Buchane, Buchan, 9. 110 (E.). *See* Bouchane.  
 Bunnok, William, 10. 153, 194, 211, 234; Bwnnok, 10. 220, 226, 251.  
 Burch, Burgh, 4. 205. *See* Bouch.  
 Burrow-brig, Boroughbridge, 17. 535; Borrowbrig, 17. 831.  
 But, Bute, 3. 577, 11. 336.  
 Butler, 14. 145, 513.  
 Buttill, 9. 533 (C.). *See* the note to 9. 522, p. 259.  
 Byland, 18. 355. *See* Biland.  
 Byset, Bisset, 14. 47. *See* Besat.  
 Calion, Ewmond de, 15. 321; Calyeoun, 15. 528; Calow, 15. 321, 377 (E.); and *see* 15. 394.  
 Cambell, Schir Nele, 2. 491, 3. 392, 396, 571; Cammell, schir Colyne, 16. 119, 130.  
 Cambuskyneth, 13. 493; Camyskynnel, 13. 493 (E.).  
 Campaneus, king, *i.e.*, Capaneus, 2. 534.  
 Cardross, 20. 79, 151.  
 Carleill, Carlisle, 7. 384, 394, 500, 506; Carlele, 17. 890.  
 Carnavirne, Carnarvon, 4. 73; Car-nauarane, Eduard of, 19. 255.  
 Carrik, Carrick, 4. 552, 567, 5. 125, 220, 223, 463, 478, 491, 6. 27, 373, 7. 398, 18. 118; Carryk, 1. 67, 2. 103, 11. 333; erll of Carrik, 14. 1.  
 Cartage, Carthage, 3. 211.  
 Catcart, Sir Alan, 9. 575.  
 Catone (Dionysius), Cato, 1. 343. *See* the note, p. 227.  
 Cesar, Julius, 1. 537, 3. 277.  
 Clar, Gilbert of, 13. 466, 508.  
 Clare, Sir Richard of, 14. 138, 159, 254, 317, 389, 16. 2, 18. 12; and *see* Richard of Clare.  
 Clyffurd, Clifford (Lord), 1. 287, 317, 435, 2. 112, 157, 5. 231, 7. 622, 11. 521, 12. 335; *spelt* Clifurd, 7. 561, 623, 12. 348; Cliffurde, 8. 511; *gen.* Cliffurdis, 5. 449.  
 Cobhame, schir Rauf of, 18. 410, 422, 431.  
 Coigneris, Connor, 14. 394, 408, 460, 15. 24, 35.  
 Cockdail, Cock dale, 19. 279. *See* the note, p. 291.  
 Colyne, Sir Colin (Campbell), 16. 119, 130.  
 Comyn, 3. 4. *See* Cumyn.  
 Conage, Connaught, 16. 295.  
 Coneus, *i.e.*, Caulus, 3. 85.  
 Conyngame, Cunningham, 8. 13 (E.).  
 Cornwale, 20. 323.  
 Crab, Iohn, 17. 239, 702; *gen.* Crabbis, 607.  
 Cragfergus, Carrickfergus, 14. 45, 89, 15. 97, 459, 16. 6, 38, 51, 299, 305, 680, 18. 161, 187, 191, 201.  
 Crauford, Schyr Ranald of, 4. 36.  
 Cre, Cree (river), 9. 517, 547.  
 Crechanben, Ben Cruachan, 10. 27.  
 Cristal of Setoun, 5. 171; Cristole, 5. 156; Crystall, 2. 418; Crystoll, 4. 16; and *see* Setoun.  
 Cristyn, Christian, 20. 420.  
 Culross, 18. 254.  
 Cumnok, Cumnock, 6. 463, 511.  
 Cumyn (Sir John), 1. 483, 575, 2. 27, 32, 79; Comyn, 3. 4; Cwmyn, 1. 562, 6. 503; *gen.* Cwmynis, 9. 22.  
 Cumyn, Sir Edmund, 2. 37.  
 Cuthbert, 4. 585, 604, 5. 31.  
 Cwmyne, Comyn, earl of Buchan, 8. 400, 9. 15.  
 Cwnyngame, Cunningham, 8. 13, 17.  
 Dancort, Sir William, 12. 351. *See* Dencort.  
 Dares, 1. 525.  
 David, David (king of Israel), 4. 681.  
 David, the brechyne; *see* Brechine.  
 Dauklyne, *i.e.*, Daucene, 3. 86; or *perhaps* Dancene; *see* p. 238.  
 Davy, David (son of Robert Bruce), 20. 37, 68, 84, 117, 127; David II., 13. 687.  
 De sawagiss, the Savages, or De Savages, 14. 49.  
 Dencort, Daincourt, 11. 573. *See* Dancort.

- Desmownt, Desmond, earl of, 14. 141; Desmwnd, 14. 514.  
 Devilling, Dublin, 15. 107, 16. 213, 262; Dewilling, 16. 295.  
 Dicson, Thom, 5. 279; Dicson, 5. 346.  
 Donald, Erll of mar, 19. 241, 349.  
 Donavardyne, Dunaverty, 3. 666, 677.  
 Douglas, 1. 29, &c.; *also spelt* Douglass, Dowglas, Dowglass, and *even* Dougless (13. 4); schir Wiljam off Dowglass, 1. 282; Sir James Douglas is described, 1. 288-406; his death, 20. 410 - 476; *gen.* Douglassis, 20. 481; Douglas his, 6. 435; Douglass (*as a warcry*), 16. 407; Dowglass (*as a warcry*), 18. 305; the blak Dowglass, 19. 556.  
 Douglas, Douglasdale, 5. 256, 456; Douglasdail, 5. 271, 6. 380, 8. 439; Douglasdale, 8. 426.  
 Dowglass, Archbald, 19. 350, 20. 587.  
 Downe, Down, 14. 376 (E.).  
 Driburgh, Dryburgh, 18. 339.  
 Drouchyndra, Drogheda, 16. 261.  
 Drumfreiss, Dumfries, 9. 23.  
 Duche, Dutch(land), 11. 94.  
 Duk - peris, *i.e.*, Douze Pairs, the Twelve Peers of France, 3. 440.  
 Dumbertane, Dumbarton, 15. 306, 19. 51.  
 Dumfress, Dumfries, 2. 26.  
 Dunbar, 13. 609.  
 Dundaw, Dundalk, 14. 135, 240; 18. 11, 217.  
 Dundee, Dundee, 10. 800.  
 Dunfermyne, 16. 550, 20. 291.  
 Dunkelden, Dunkeld, 16. 574.  
 Dunse park. *See* Dwnss.  
 Dunstaffynch, Dunstaffnage, 10. 113.  
 Dwn, Down, 14. 376.  
 Dwnss park, Dunse park, 17. 64, 76.  
 Dyttis, Dyctes, 1. 526.  
 Ector, Hector, 1. 395.  
 Edinburgh, 5. 473, 10. 141-756; 11. 200, 355, 18. 262.  
 Edmund, Edmund, 15. 321, 377 (E. and H.).  
 Edry-furd, 8. 34. *See* the note to 8. 28, p. 254.  
 Eduard of Carnavirne (Carnarvon), 4. 73, 19. 255; (Edward II.), 10. 322, 18. 170; *gen.* Eduardis, 13. 657. *See* Bannokburn.  
 Eduard (III.), 19. 257.  
 Eduard, *i.e.*, Sir Edward Bruce; *see* Bruce. *Gen.* Eduardis, 18. 98, 206.  
 Eduard (Edward I.), 1. 73, 408.  
 Eduard, 4. 184; Edward, 1. 179.  
 Egipt, Egypt, 1. 539.  
 Egrymor, Egrimour, 3. 441.  
 Eliss, Ellis, 16. 447; Elyss, 16. 441.  
 Endwillane, 14. 113; *perhaps the same as* Inderwillane, 16. 62.  
 Ennirkyp, Innerkip, 8. 98.  
 Enuerkethyne, Inverkeithing, 16. 54.  
 Enuerowry, Inverury, 9. 34, 19. 212; Enrowry, 9. 34 (E.). *S.* Inuerowry.  
 Erische, Irish, 14. 123, 330, 16. 30, 18. 115, 120; Erysche, 14. 448.  
 Erischry, Irishry, Irish people, 14. 16. 682, 18. 9, 59, 194; Erischry 18. 219; Eryschry, 16. 317; Erychry, 16. 301.  
 Erll of murreff, *also called* Erthomas; *see* Murreff.  
 Erll richmonde, 16. 331 (*rubric*).  
 Erskyn, Sir William of, 19. 374.  
 Eske-dale, Eskdale, 16. 508.  
 Esobell, Isabel, 13. 487.  
 Ethiocles, Eteocles, 6. 179, 200, 26.  
 Evrope, Europe, 1. 540.  
 Ewmond de Calion, 15. 321, 37. 394.  
 Fabricius, 20. 521-553.  
 Faw Kirk, Falkirk, 11. 437.  
 Felystynys, *s. pl.* Philistines, 4. 7 (*footnote*).  
 Feniss, Gylmyne de, 10. 456; Fym 10. 470.  
 Ferambrace, Fierabras, 3. 437.  
 Fergus of Ardrossane, 14. 31, 1. 193.  
 Ferrand, 4. 256; *gen.* Ferrandis, 241, 286.  
 Ferrand, the name of a horse, 2. 1. *See* the note, p. 232.  
 Fiff, Fife, 16. 552; Fyfe, 2. 206.  
 Fizwaryne, Fitzwarren, 15. 75; *see* 14. 515.  
 Flagot (the river), 3. 455.  
 Flandriss, Flanders, 19. 194.  
 Flemyne, a Fleming, 17. 239; Flemynnis, Flemings, 4. 240.  
 Flemyng, Neyll, 15. 129, 136, 226.  
 Florentyn, *adj.* man of Florence, 516.  
 Forfar, 9. 324; Forfer, 9. 310.  
 Forster, Philip the, 9. 312.  
 Forth, wattr of, the river Forth, 335.  
 Francass, William, 10. 530; Francouss, 10. 601, 643; Francoiss, 750.

- France, 4. 240, 19. 260; Fraunce, 1. 553; Franss, 11. 89, 18. 471; king of, 18. 542; a knight of, 9. 391. Franch, French, 4. 245; Franche, 18. 524.
- Fraseyr, Frasier (Sir Alexander), 2. 407; Fresale, 2. 239; Freser, 9. 9, 10. 45; Fresir, 8. 395; Freser, Simon, 9. 10.
- Fyfe, Fife, 2. 206; Fiff, 16. 552.
- Fyngall, Fingal, 3. 69.
- Fyniss, Gylmyne de, 10. 470; Feniss, 10. 456; *see* p. 262.
- Fyss - thomas, Sir Maurice Fitz-thomas, 14. 146.
- Gadyrris, Gaderis, *i.e.*, Gaza, 3. 75.
- Gallistoun, Galston, 17. 151 (E.). *See* Gawlistoun.
- Gallowais, *s. pl.* men of Galloway, 6. 32; Gallowayis, 6. 25 (*rubric*).
- Galloway, 5. 467, 6. 298, 9. 498, 10. 792, 16. 36, 503; Gallaway, 1. 188; Gallovay, 9. 476, 501, 537; Gallowa, 16. 693.
- Gascon, Gascony, 11. 93; Gascone, 15. 321.
- Gascon, a Gascon, 10. 324; Gascone, 15. 321.
- Gaudifer, 3. 73, 79. *See* the note, p. 237.
- Gawlistoun, Galston, 8. 123, 17. 151.
- Gawter the lile, Sir Walter de Lisle, 5. 203.
- Gedword, Jedworth, 8. 427. *And see* Iedworth.
- Geiles the Argentine, 11. 174 (H.).
- Gelis, Giles, 13. 299; Gyls, 11. 174.
- Gib harper, 18. 95, 165; *gen.* Harperis, 18. 223. (The sense is Gilbert the harper.)
- Gilbert Boyde, sir, 14. 406.
- Gilbert de la Hay, 2. 490, 3. 25, 6. 69, 8. 412.
- Gilbert of Clar, Sir, 13. 466, 508.
- Gilbert Mayle-Erll, 19. 16, 53. *See* Male-herbe.
- Gilbertstoun, Walter, 13. 406.
- Glaskow, Glasgow, 2. 175, 4. 13.
- Glentwell, Glentrool, 7. 494, 502, 516.
- Glowcister, Gloucester, Earl of, 4. 78, 11. 163, 12. 25, 13. 465.
- Golmakmorn, Goll Mac Morna, 3. 68. *See* the note, p. 237.
- Gordoun, Adame of, 9. 695, 720.
- Graunt sebell, *i.e.*, Great Seville, 20. 326.
- Gray, Sir Andrew, 10. 47, 644.
- Grece, Greece, 6. 214.
- Gylmyne, Gillemyn, 10. 456, 470.
- Hanibal, 3. 243; Hanniball, 3. 208.
- Harcla, Sir Andrew, 16. 511, 518, 17. 866.
- Harfurd, Hereford, 4. 78 (E.); *see* Herfurd.
- Harpar, Gib, 15. 181. *See* Gib.
- Hastyngis, Schir Ihone the, 4. 384.
- Hay, Gilbert de la, 2. 490, 3. 25, 6. 69, 8. 412.
- Hay, de la, Sir Hugh de la Hay, 2. 237, 409.
- Hennaut, Hainault, 11. 91, 19. 265; Iohne of, 19. 267, 458.
- Henry, Sir (de Bohun), 12. 29, 43, 50.
- Herdclay, Sir Andrew, 16. 511, 17. 866.
- Herfurd, Hereford, Earl of, 4. 78, 11. 163 (E.), 12. 25, 31, 13. 401, 408, 672.
- Hersildoune, Ercildoun, 2. 87.
- Herth (*perhaps for* Airth), William of, 13. 495.
- Hiltoun, Baroun of, 15. 504.
- Hulsysster, Ulster, 14. 97 (E.), 373 (E.).
- Hummyr, the river Humber, 16. 538.
- Hyrser, *for* Erischry, *q.v.*, 14. 9 (E.).
- James, James of Douglas, 1. 317, &c. (*James* is generally a dissyllable, as in 1. 29, 317, 5. 255, &c.)
- James Steward, 19. 243.
- Iedburgh, 8. 427 (H.), 10. 344 (H.), 504 (H.).
- Iedworth, 10. 344, 504; Iedward forest, 16. 363; Gedword, 8. 427; *gen.* Iedworthis, 8. 427 (E.).
- Iereby, 16. 296 (E.).
- Ieromy, Jeremiah, 4. 681.
- Ierusalem, 4. 209, 308.
- Ihonystoun, St John's Town, *i.e.*, Perth, 2. 247. *See* Iohnstoun.
- Ilis, the Isles, 18. 445; Ylis, 11. 335.
- Inchmertyn, Inchmartin, 2. 239; Inchmertyne, 2. 409.
- Inderwillane, 16. 62; *perhaps the same as* Endwillane, 14. 113. *See* the note to 14. 113, p. 274.
- Ingland, England, 1. 81; Yngland, 1. 73, &c. (The usual spelling is *Ingland*, which is very common; *see* 17. 502, 513, 525, &c.)
- Ingland, kyng of, 17. 261, 18. 565,



19. 143, 20. 28; Yngland, king of, 12. 445; *gen.* king of Inglandis, 18. 500.  
 Ingliss, English, 1. 189, 193, 16. 634, 18. 260, 370, 406, &c.; Inglissmen, 17. 329.  
 Ingram the wmfrawill, Sir Ingram de Umfraville, 2. 212; Ingerame, 19. 152; Ingerame Vmphrewell, 19. 73. *See* Vmphravell.  
 Innermallane, 14. 113 (E.).  
 Innerrowry (*better* Inuerrowry), Inverury, 9. 192 (E.).  
 Inuerrowry, 9. 209. *See* Enuerrowry.  
 Ioel, Joel, 4. 682.  
 Iohane of the tour (princess), 20. 39, 118.  
 Iohn of Logy, 19. 16, 53.  
 Iohne of Bretane; *see* Bretane.  
 Iohne, Schir Amery of saint, 16. 506.  
 Iohnnis nycht, St John's night, 13. 491.  
 Iohnstoun, Sainct, *i.e.*, Perth, 9. 323 (*footnote*).  
 Irchery, Irishry, 16. 301 (E.). *See* Erischry.  
 Irell, Uriel, 16. 296.  
 Irland, Ireland, 3. 683, 14. 7, 9, 11, 114, 139, 256, 298, 390, 16. 3-679, 18. 15; Ireland, 1. 100.  
 Irsche, Irish, 16. 309 (E.). *See* Erische.  
 Isabell, wife of Edw. II., 19. 261. *See also* Esobell.  
 Iudas, Judas, 4. 18.  
 Kentyre, Cantire, 4. 367, 11. 334; Kyntyr, 3. 385, 391, 637, 660.  
 Keth, Robert, Sir Robert Keith, 11. 455, 13. 61.  
 Keth, Sir William Keith, 17. 151, 20. 491; Keyth, 20. 592.  
 Keyth, Sir William, 20. 592. *See* above.  
 Kildar, Kildare, earl of, 14. 514; Kyldare, earl of, 14. 142.  
 Kildromy, Kildrummy, 3. 337, 367. *See* Kyndrummy and Kyldromy.  
 Killwynnyn, Kilwinning, 8. 95.  
 Kilross, 14. 252.  
 Kilsaggart, 14. 133.  
 Kirk of dowglass, 20. 585.  
 Kow-yet, Cow-gate, Cowport, 17. 35.  
 Kyldare, earl of, 14. 142; Kildar, 14. 514.  
 Kyldromy, Kildrummy, 4. 44, 59, 81 (E.); Kildromy, 3. 337, 367. *See* Kyndrummy.  
 Kyle, 8. 9, 17, 24.  
 Kylkenane, 14. 522 (E.).  
 Kyllvanane, 14. 522.  
 Kylmernok, Kilmarnock, 8. 95.  
 Kyndrummy, Kildrummy, 4. 131, 5. 149; Kyndrumy, 4. 5.  
 Kyndrony, 9. 289; Kyndrwm, 81. *See* Kyldromy.  
 Kynrike, *an error for* Lyari Limerick, 16. 265 (E.).  
 Kyntyr, Cantire, 3. 385, 391, 6. 660; Kentyre, 4. 367, 11. 334.  
 Lainenser, Leinster, 16. 297.  
 Lambyrtoun, Lamberton (William of), 1. 412.  
 Lanark, 8. 447 (E.).  
 Lancister (Earl Thomas of Lancaster), 17. 285; *spelt* Longcastell, 17. 2 (E.); Loncastell, 17. 852.  
 Lanrik, Lanark, 8. 447.  
 Laryss, Largs, 8. 97.  
 Laryss, (perhaps) Larissa, 3. 73.  
 Latyne, Latin, 4. 261.  
 Lawyne, king Laban, 3. 442, 456.  
 Ledowss, Sym of the, 10. 358, 42.  
 Ledouss, 405, 492. (*Ledouss* signifies *lead-house*, a room furnish with a *lead* or cauldron; *see* Chanc Prol. 202.)  
 Lenester, Leinster, 16. 297 (E.).  
 Lennax, Lennox, 8. 413. *See* below.  
 Leuenax, Erle of the, *i.e.*, earl Lennox, 2. 482, 3. 482, 59.  
 Leuynax, 2. 235; Lennax, 8. 413.  
 Lile, de Lisle, 5. 203.  
 Lithkew, Linlithgow, 13. 381. *See* Lythkow.  
 Lochriane, 16. 36 (E.).  
 Logane, Logan, 14. 47; Loganys, 14. 520; Walter Logan, 20. 474.  
 Logy, Iohn of, 19. 16, 53.  
 London, *for* Loudon, 4. 17 (*footnote*).  
 Longcastell, Lancaster, 17. 285 (E.).  
 Loncastell, 17. 852.  
 Lorne, lord of, 3. 1-185; Lo John of, 6. 481-585, 7. 30, 43, 10. 7, 15, 299, 305; lord of Lorn, 9. 462; Lorn (district of), 10. 9.  
 Louchlevin, Lochleven, 15. 308.  
 Louchmaban, Lochmaben, 2. 18, 147.  
 Loudon, 4. 17 (*see* the note to 4. p. 243); Lowdown, Loudoun, 124, 134, 150; Litill Lowdown, 201.  
 Lowchlomond, Loch Lomond, 406.

- Lowchryan, Loch Ryan, 16. 36.  
 Lowdiane, Lothian, 6. 7, 479, 17.  
 187, 256, 18. 250, 261, 273; Low-  
 dyan, 10. 136; Lowdyane, 17. 73,  
 941.  
 Lowrens, Lawrence; *see* Abyrnethy.  
 Lombard, Sir Piers, 10. 324; Sir  
 Peris, 761.  
 Lombardy, Lombardy, 14. 517.  
 London, London, 1. 599.  
 Lwnyk, *i.e.*, Limerick, 16. 265.  
 Lyne (river), 9. 683.  
 Lyntoun-le, 16. 336, 349, 443; Lyn-  
 taile, 16. 336 (E.).  
 Lythkow, Linlithgow, 10. 137, 148;  
 Lythkew, 13. 563; Lithkew, 13.  
 381.  
 Machabeus, Judas, 14. 313.  
 Machabeys, Maccabees, 1. 465.  
 Maij, May, 14. 21.  
 Makartane, 14. 106 (E.).  
 Makdowall, 5. 104.  
 Makfulchiane, 14. 105; Makgullane  
 (E.).  
 Makgullane, 14. 105 (E.); Makful-  
 chiane (C.).  
 Makmartane, 14. 106.  
 Maknab, Macnab, 4. 19.  
 Maknakill, 15. 219, 222.  
 Maknaughtan, Macnaughtan, 3. 153.  
 Makus, Makis; *better* Marcus; *see* 4.  
 14 (*footnote*).  
 Makyne-drosser, Mac Indrosser, 3. 99.  
 Makymnokis, 8. 28, 33. *See* the note,  
 p. 254.  
 Maleherbe, 19. 16, 53 (E.). *See*  
 Mayle-erll.  
 Maliss, Malise, 9. 433.  
 Man (isle of), 4. 14.  
 Mantrybill, Mantrible, 3. 455.  
 Mar, Donald of, 19. 349; earl of Mar,  
 19. 241.  
 Marche, March, 19. 776.  
 Marcus, bishop of Man, 4. 12.  
 Mariory, Marjory, 4. 39, 13. 686, 20.  
 133.  
 Marrok, Morocco, 3. 688.  
 Marschall bretane, 18. 473. *See*  
 Bretane.  
 Marthokys, 3. 67. Marthokys sone=  
 Macmurdoch; *see* the note, p. 237.  
 Mary, the Virgin, 17. 335; Mary-3et,  
 St Mary's gate, 17. 755, 769.  
 Mawndwell, Mandeville, 15. 111, 170,  
 187, 208; Mawndwele, 15. 243;  
 Mawndwell, 14. 47.  
 Mawndwilis, the Maundeilles, 14. 519.  
 Mawpass, Johne, 18. 224.  
 Mayle-erll, Gilbert, 19. 16; Male-erll,  
 53. *See* Maleherbe.  
 Meffayn, Methven, 2. 303; Meffen,  
 2. 312; Meffan, 3. 497.  
 Meldrom, Old Meldrum, 9. 202;  
 Meldrome, 9. 242.  
 Melross, Melrose, 18. 291, 298, 20.  
 600.  
 Menesteus, Menestheus, 2. 535.  
 Mergaret, Margaret, 10. 737.  
 Mermadak, Marmaduke, 13. 523, 526,  
 538. *See* Betwng.  
 Merss, Merse, 15. 331, 17. 185, 19.  
 776 (E.).  
 Methy, Meath, 16. 296 (E.).  
 Modreyt, Mordred, 1. 557.  
 Moffat, 9. 337.  
 Mole, Mull (of Cantire), 3. 696.  
 Monester, Munster, 16. 297 (E.).  
 Month, the Mounth, a part of the  
 Grampians, 2. 494, 8. 393, 9. 7, 304.  
*See* the note to 8. 393, p. 256.  
 Mont-peleris, Montpelier, 15. 83.  
 Mortymer, Mortimer, 20. 29, 85,  
 111.  
 Mowbray, Sir John, 8. 401, 9. 118.  
 Mowbray, Sir Philip, 2. 211, 413,  
 420, 8. 21, 74, 9. 17, 198, 281,  
 10. 806, 13. 363, 540, 14. 266,  
 403, 18. 24, 41, 133.  
 Mullyr-snwk, the Mull of Galloway  
 (*see* *Snwk* in Glossary), 1. 188.  
 Murreff, Earl of Murray, also called  
 the earl Thomas, or, at first, Sir  
 Thomas Randolph, described, 10.  
 260-299; takes Edinburgh, 10.  
 507-755; mentioned, 11. 228,  
 441, 12. 160, 531, 561, 13. 197, 14.  
 59, 82, 119, 16. 7, 44, 353, 17. 55,  
 65, 79, 138, 18. 394, 19. 69, 240,  
 618, 20. 1, 139, 300.  
 Mwnser, Munster, 16. 297.  
 Mynerff, Minerva, 4. 256; Mynerfe,  
 4. 262.  
 Myth, Meath, 16. 296.  
 Mytoun, Mitton, 17. 536, 555, 831.  
 Nele Cambell, Sir, 2. 491, 3. 392,  
 396, 571.  
 Nele the Bruce, Nigel Bruce, 2. 513,  
 3. 337; Neyle, 4. 185; Neill, 12.  
 290.  
 Nethirford, 8. 34 (E.).  
 Nevell, schir Robert de, 15. 401, 442,  
 467, 485, 496, 527.  
 Nevell, schir Ralf the, 15. 503.  
 New park, 11. 284, 357.  
 Neyll Flemyng, 15. 129, 136.  
 Norhame, Norham, 20. 7.

- Northumbirland, 4. 189, 7. 562, 13. 736, 20. 23; Northumberland, 5. 193.  
 Nyddis-daill, Nithsdale, 10. 792.
- Odymsy, O Dempsy, 14. 329.  
 Ogill, Ogle, 19. 359.  
 Olifert, Olifard, 9. 338.  
 Olywer, Oliver, 3. 439.  
 Orknay, Orkney Islands, 1. 187; Orkynnay, 17. 13.  
 Osborn, 4. 109.  
 Ouchtirhouss, Ramsay of, 14. 29.  
 Ouchtre, 18. 409 (E.).
- Palmesonday, Palmsunday, 5. 307.  
 Paryss, Paris, 1. 326, 330; Pariss, 4. 257.  
 Pascalle, Sir, 14. 516.  
 Paslay, Paisley, 19. 222.  
 Patrik, Erl, 13. 612, 19. 797.  
 Persy, Sir Henry, 4. 599, 5. 43, 75, 107, 185, 213, 217; *gen.* Persyis, Percy's, 5. 479.  
 Perth, 2. 219, 9. 330, 10. 134.  
 Philistianis, Philistians', 4. 755.  
 Pitones, *the usual misspelling of* Pythoness (Pythoness) *in old MSS.*, 4. 753 (*footnote*, and note, p. 246).  
 Pirrus, Pyrrhus, 20. 525-560.  
 Platan, 9. 312. *See* the note, p. 258.  
 Polynices, 6. 180, 199.  
 Pomfret, Pontefract, 17. 868, 878.  
 Pouty, Poitou, 11. 101; Poytow (H.).
- Ramsay of Ouchtirhouss, 14. 29.  
 Ranald Crauford, 4. 36.  
 Randell, Randolph (*i.e.*, Sir Thomas Randolph, afterwards Earl of Murray), 2. 237, 405, 463, 6. 510, 7. 87, 9. 694, 717, 10. 1, 260, 12. 349. *See* Murreff.  
 Rauchryne, Rathlin, 3. 680, 721, 725, 755, 4. 1, 337.  
 Rauf, schir (of Cobham), 18. 410; Raulf, 422, 431.  
 Rawff, Ralph, 15. 503 (E.).  
 Redis swyr, source of the Reid, 17. 13. *See* the note, p. 284.  
 Repoune, Ripon, 17. 533.  
 Richard Broune, 19. 18, 54. *See* Broune.  
 Richard; *see also* Rychard.  
 Richard of Clare, 16. 74, 99, 212, 218, 239, 18. 215. *See* Clare.  
 Richmond; *see* Rychmond.  
 Riweus, Rievaulx, 18. 498.  
 Robert, *i.e.*, Robert II., 13. 695, 20. 131.
- Robert, bishop of Glasgow, 4. 13, 1683.  
 Robert Boyde; *see* Boyde.  
 Robert Bruce; *see* Bruce.  
 Robert (Earl of Artois), 1. 340.  
 Robert Logan, Sir, 20. 473.  
 Robert of Ogill, Robert Ogle, 19. 35.  
 Robert Stiward, Robert Stewart, afterwards King Robert II., 20. 131.  
 Roger of Sanct Iohne, 5. 209.  
 Rome, 1. 542, 555, 3. 207, 212, 252, 539; empire of, 19. 470.  
 Ross, Ross, 4. 47, 49.  
 Ross, Walter, 13. 473.  
 Rownde tabill, Round Table, 13. 37. *See* the note, p. 269.  
 Roxburgh, castle of, taken, 10. 34512.  
 Ruglyne, Rutherglen (?), 10. 797.  
 Rychard (of Normandy), 3. 450.  
 Rychmond, in Yorkshire, 16. 34.  
 Thomas, earl of, 16. 400-535.  
 Rytuowis, Rievaulx, 18. 498 (E.).
- Saint Iak, Santiago, 20. 403.  
 Saint Iohne, Schir Amery of, 16. 50.  
 Saint John, Roger de, 5. 209.  
 St John, vigil of, 11. 382.  
 Samuele, Samuel, 4. 682, 757. (In 757 read *Samuellis*.)  
 Sancier, Sir William Sinclair, 20. 44471. *See* Syncler.  
 Sandylandis, 6. 395.  
 Saraceny, *s. pl.* Saracens, 1. 140.  
 Sarisenis, 13. 324, 326; Saraceny 20. 459; Sarasenys, 20. 422, 42478; Sarasynys, 20. 468; Sarzenis, 20. 348; Sarazynys, 2500.  
 Sarasyne, Saracen, 20. 394.  
 Sathanas, Satan, 4. 242.  
 Savill the graunt, Seville, 20. 3 (E.).  
 Sawagis, the Savages, 14. 521.  
 Scipio the ying, Scipio the younge 3. 216.  
 Scone, 2. 150, 178.  
 Scotland, 1. 27, &c., &c.  
 Scottis, Scottish, 6. 459, &c.  
 Scottis se, the Firth of Forth, 9. 30329, 460, 16. 676.  
 Sebell the graunt, Seville the Gran 20. 326.  
 Selcryk, Selkirk, 8. 425.  
 Setoun, Sir Christopher Seton, 243\*; Setoun, 5. 156, 171; Setoun, 2. 418, 4. 16; and *see* Crist.  
 Slenauch, *an error in J. for* Sleauch, 9. 107 (*footnote*).

- Sleuach, 9. 107 (E.). *See* Slevach.  
 Slevach, Sliach, 9. 107, 124, 129. *See* the note to 9. 107, p. 257.  
 Snawdoune, Snowdon, 4. 181.  
 Somerueile, Somerville, 2. 239; Somerweil, 2. 410.  
 Souly, lord of, 18. 472; *see* the note to 18. 524, p. 289.  
 Sowlis, the, *i.e.*, Sir John de Soulis, 14. 27, 16. 509, 18. 23, 38, 110.  
 Sowlis, the lord of, *i.e.*, Sir William de Soulis, 19. 11-48.  
 Spaldyng; *see* Sym.  
 Spanje, Spain, 3. 688, 20. 324, 395.  
 Steward, Alexander, 9. 692, 718.  
 Steward, James, 19. 243.  
 Steward, Sir John, 14. 28, 267, 404, 15. 80, 18. 23, 31, 109.  
 Steward, Sir Walter, 4. 42, 13. 3, 187, 15. 273\*, 16. 31, 17. 499, 763, 18. 486, 19. 205; Stewart, 12. 415.  
 Stewart, Sir Allan, 14. 405.  
 Strabogy, Strathbogie, 9. 188.  
 Strathern, Strathearn, earl of, 9. 340; Malise of, 433; Stratherne, 19. 776 (H.).  
 Strevillyne, Stirling, 1. 409; Strevillyn, 1. 484; Strevilling, 11. 534; Strewelyn, 10. 141 (E.); Strevilling, 10. 141, 249, 805, 13. 429, 661.  
 Surry, Syria, 1. 539.  
 Sym, Simon, 10. 358. *See* Ledowss.  
 Sym of Spaldyng, 17. 23; of Spaldyne, 17. 89.  
 Symon (Fraser), 8. 397.  
 Syncler, Sir William Sinclair, 16. 575. *See* Sancler.  
 Syr-waryn, *put* for Fitzwarine, 14. 515; *see* 15. 75.  
 Syve-warine, *an error* for Fitzwarine, 15. 75 (E.).  
 Tarbard, Tarbert, 15. 272; tva Tarbarts, the two Tarberts, 15. 290. *See* the note to 15. 272, p. 279.  
 Tay, 2. 589.  
 Tayne, Tain, 4. 47.  
 Tedeus, Tydeus, 6. 181. *See* The-deus.  
 Tevydale, Teviotdale, 10. 502; Tevydaill, 15. 329; Tevidaill, 17. 185.  
 Thebes, 2. 528, 6. 183, 198, 200.  
 Thedeus, Tydeus, 6. 198, 203, 210, 267, 284; Tedeus, 6. 181.  
 The-twengue, *for* de Tweng, 13. 523 (E.). *See* Betwng above, and the remarks on it, p. 412.  
 Tholimar, Ptolemy, 3. 84.  
 Thom Dicson, 5. 279, 346.  
 Thomas Arthyn, 18. 409, 424, 434.  
 Thomas of Down, 14. 376.  
 Thomas (of Ercildoun), 2. 86.  
 Thomas, earl of Lancaster, 17. 853, 873.  
 Thomas, earl of Murray; *see* Randell and Murreff.  
 Thomas, Schir (of Richmond), 16. 343.  
 Thrill-wall, Thirlwall, 6. 392, 402, 416, 431, 451; Thrill-vall, 6. 450; *pl.* Thrill-wallis, 5. 460.  
 Tomasswn, Iohne, 18. 117, 147, 150.  
 Torwode, Torwood, 13. 551; Torwod, 11. 210.  
 Tranentis, *gen.* Tranent's, 18. 276.  
 Treile, *for* Tyre, 10. 705 (E.).  
 Troy, 1. 395, 521.  
 Turnbery, Turnberry, 4. 619, 5. 213; Turnberiyis, Turnberry's, 4. 556, 600, 5. 187.  
 Tweid, Tweed, 17. 191.  
 Typhot, *for* Typtot, 13. 468 (E.).  
 Typtot, Payne, 13. 468.  
 Tyre, 10. 705.  
 Vallanch, Schir Amery, Sir Aymer de Valence, 5. 472, 6. 457, 476, 11. 176. *See* Wallang, and Amer.  
 Valter Steward, 17. 217, 257, 18. 486. *See* Steward, Walter.  
 Valys, Wales, 4. 76. *See* Walis.  
 Varane, Earl Warren, 18. 278.  
 Vardale, Weardale, 20. 2. *See* Wer, Wardale.  
 Vaux; *see* Wauss.  
 Vaveryng fyrth, 14. 33.  
 Verdon; *see* Wardoune.  
 Vilyame Sancler, William Sinclair, 20. 471; and *see* 20. 444.  
 Viljame of sowlis, 19. 11. *See* Sowlis.  
 Vipont; *see* Wepownt.  
 Vissman, Wiseman (William), 10. 46.  
 Vllister, Ulster, 16. 298, 317; Ulcister, 16. 683. *See* Wllister.  
 Vmphrewell, Yngerame de, Sir Ingram Umphraville, 6. 3; Vmphrevell, 9. 502, 12. 451; Vmphravell, 19. 73; Vmphrevele, 19. 141. *See* Wmfrawill, and Yngerame.  
 Walis, Wales, 1. 100, 105; Walys, 1. 119; Waliss, 11. 99; Valys, 4. 76.  
 Waliss, Welsh, 13. 419.  
 Wallang, de Valence, 2. 201; Wallanch, Sir Amer, 13. 295; Valence, 11. 176 (E.). *See* Vallanch, and Amer.

- Walter Logane, 20. 474.  
 Walter Steward, 17. 384. *See* Steward, and Valter.  
 Wardale, Weardale, 19. 270, 509, 777; Wardaill, 19. 281; Wardill, 19. 254. *See* Wer, Vardale.  
 Wardoune, Verdon, 14. 143; Wardwn, 515.  
 Warren; *see* Varane.  
 Wauss, Vaux, 7. 622.  
 Webitoun, Sir John, 8. 453, 488; Webtoun, 8. 437 (*rubric in footnote*).  
 Weik, Wick, 1. 187.  
 Wenchburg, Winchburgh, 13. 587 (E.).  
 Wepownt, *i.e.*, Vipont, 13. 472.  
 Wer, wattir of, river Wear, 19. 323; Weris wattir, 19. 328; Wer, 19. 316 (E.). *See* Wardale.  
 Williame of Erskyn, 19. 374.  
 Wilyame de Sancier, William Sinclair, 20. 444, 571.  
 Wiljam, Sir William Douglas, 1. 282.  
 Wiseman; *see* Vissman.  
 Wllister, Ulster, 14. 81, 97, 373; Wlsyster, 14. 81 (E.); Wlsister, 16. 298 (E.). *See* Vllister.  
 Wmfrawill, Umfraville, 2. 212, 252. *See* Vmphrewell.  
 Wodoune, 14. 143 (E.); W 515 (E.). *See* Wardoune.  
 Wokingis fyrrh, 14. 33 (E.).  
 Wollistar, Ulster, 14. 81 (H.).  
 Wylame, William (of Lambe 412).  
 Wynchburch, Winchburgh, 13.  
 Wyndissoyr, Windsor, 19. 259.  
 Wysman, 10. 46 (E.).  
 Yber, Lucius Iberius, 1. 554.  
 Ydymy, O'Dempsey, 14. 329 (Ylis, the Isles, 11. 335; Ilis, 1 Yngerame Bell, 5. 483, 513.  
 Yngerame de Vmphrewell, 6 483, 19. 146. *See* Ingra Vmphrewell.  
 Yngland, England, 1. 73; I 1. 81, &c.; king of, 12. 44 England.  
 Ynglis, English, 6. 459, &c.; 12. 425, &c. *See* Inglis.  
 Yrlande, Ireland, 11. 100. land.  
 Ysabell, 13. 487 (E.).  
 Ysay, Isaiah, 4. 682.  
 3ork, York, 19. 271.  
 3ork, Archbishop of, 17. 546.  
 3orkis zettis, the gates of York,

## INDEX VI.

### GLOSSARY TO "HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER," AND "A DIETARY."

The numbers refer to the lines of the poem printed at pp. 203-214. When the letter "D." is prefixed, the reference is to the poem printed at pp. 215-218.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>Abill, <i>adj.</i> apt, 228.<br/>         Acquyntans, <i>s.</i> acquaintance, 94.<br/>         Ado, <i>for</i> at do, <i>i.e.</i>, to do, D. 5. <i>See</i> the note, p. 297.<br/>         Agit, <i>pp.</i> aged, D. 3.<br/>         Aill, <i>s.</i> ale, D. 3.<br/>         Air, <i>adv.</i> before, 235.<br/>         Ald, <i>adj.</i> old, D. 63.<br/>         Almus, <i>s.</i> alms; <i>almus deid</i>, an alms-deed, 138.<br/>         And, <i>conj.</i> if, 284.<br/>         Anerly, <i>adv.</i> singly; <i>our anerly</i>, too much alone, 171; <i>all anerly</i> (all only), altogether, 71.<br/>         Anton, Antony (the name of some famous physician), D. 79.<br/>         Apon, <i>prep.</i> just after, D. 6.<br/>         At, <i>prep.</i> according to; <i>at hir power</i>, as she can, 146.<br/>         Athis, <i>s. pl.</i> oaths, D. 62.<br/>         Avans, <i>v.</i> to advance, 42.<br/>         Aw, <i>pr. s.</i> ought, 39.</p> <p>Baklukiŋ, <i>s.</i> looking behind, 208.<br/>         Bald, <i>adj.</i> bold, D. 61.<br/>         Band, <i>s.</i> bond; <i>goddis band</i>, God's bond, <i>i.e.</i>, matrimony, 141.<br/>         Banyst, <i>pp.</i> banished, 108.<br/>         Bares. <i>See</i> Ryn.<br/>         Barnys, <i>s. pl.</i> children, 221, 250.<br/>         Be mekill thing, by a great deal, 9.<br/>         Beis, <i>fut. s.</i> will be, 168; it shall be, D. 9.</p> | <p>Belif, <i>adv.</i> quickly, D. 34. M. E. <i>belive</i>, lit. by life, with life; hence, soon.<br/>         Betakynnis, <i>pres. s.</i> betokens, 149.<br/>         Billis of Amowris, letters of love, love-letters, 112.<br/>         Blekyt, <i>pp.</i> blackened, tarnished, 9. <i>See</i> <i>bleck</i> in Jamieson.<br/>         Bot, <i>prep.</i> without, 120; <i>conj.</i> unless, D. 68.<br/>         Both, <i>pp.</i> bought, D. 78. (Ill spelt; <i>see</i> the footnote).<br/>         Bred, <i>s.</i> bread, D. 3.<br/>         But, <i>prep.</i> without, 197.<br/>         Bydding, <i>s.</i> command, 135. To <i>kep bydding</i> is to observe a command, to do as one is bid.<br/>         Byndis, <i>pres. pl.</i> bind, 231.</p> <p>Cald, <i>s.</i> cold, chill, D. 1.<br/>         Cancryt, <i>pp.</i> ill-conditioned, perverse, 236. <i>See</i> <i>cankert</i> in Jamieson.<br/>         Cast, <i>v.</i>; to <i>cast perillis</i>, to forecast dangers, perceive perils, 99.<br/>         Chap, <i>v.</i> to escape, 230. Short for <i>eschap</i>; <i>see</i> <i>Eschaisp</i> in Gloss. to Bruce.<br/>         Chasty, <i>imp. s.</i> chastise, 247, 259.<br/>         Chastyment, <i>s.</i> chastisement, 279.<br/>         Cheld, <i>s.</i> child, <i>i.e.</i>, still young, 247 (MS. B reads <i>child</i>), 251.<br/>         Cheritabill, <i>adj.</i> charitable, 138.</p> |
|---|---|

- Claiss, *s. pl.* clothes, 56.  
 Cled, *pp.* clad, 35, 59.  
 Clerk-plays, *s. pl.* clerk-plays, miracle-plays performed by clerks, 83.  
 Clething, *s.* clothing, 29.  
 Contrar, *adj.* contrary, D. 71.  
 Contrefet, *v.* to counterfeit, 22.  
 Contyrnans, *s.* countenance, 41.  
 Correkit, *pp.* corrected, 194.  
 Costlik, *adj.* costly, 31.  
 Covat, *v.* to covet, 33; Couat, 190.  
 Couatiss, *s.* covetousness, 292.  
 Cowpe, *s.* cup, D. 6.  
 Coy, *adj.* coy (in a good sense), quiet, 19. O.F. *coi*, which is the Lat. *quietus*.  
 Crab, *v.* to annoy, tease, irritate, 60. Hence the word *crabbed*.  
 Craft, *s.* trade, means of livelihood, 299.  
 Creatour, *s.* creature, 24.  
 Crouss, *adj.* lively, nimble, pert, 15. See *Crus* in Glossary to Havelok the Dane; cf. Swed. *kry*, brisk, lively, pert.  
 Cummys, *pres. s.* comes, 158.  
 Cure, *s.* care; *in cure*, under guardianship, 251.  
 Custum, *s.* custom, 179.  
 Dalians, *s.* sport, play, D. 22.  
 Dampnit, *pp.* condemned, 272.  
 Danss, *v.* to dance, 113.  
 Dant, *imp. s.* cherish, pet, 77. A peculiar use of *daunt*, to tame, Lat. *domitare*. "*Dawntyng*, or grete chersyng, or greate cherisshinge;" Prompt. Parv.  
 De, *v.* to die, 290.  
 Debonar, *adj.* gentle, mild, 145.  
 Ded, *s.* death, 88.  
 Deid, *s.* act, deed, 71. 146; *pl.* Dedis, 70.  
 Delicat, *adj.* delicate, dainty, 29.  
 Delit, *s.* delight, pleasure, 69, D. 67.  
 Demyng, *s.* opinion, supposing, 170.  
 Dew, *adj.* due, D. 77. (See the footnote.)  
 Diffamyt, *pp.* defamed, *i.e.*, having an ill name, 155; of ill fame, 237.  
 Dishonorit, *pp.* dishonoured, *i.e.*, dishonourable, 75.  
 Dispit, *s.* dislike, contempt, D. 25.  
 Dissavable, *adj.* deceitful, D. 23.  
 Dissencioun, *s.* dissension, D. 26.  
 Doctryne, *v.* to indoctrinate, instruct, 244.  
 Doith, *used as auxiliary*; *doith the fale*=do fail thee, D. 9.  
 Dowbill, *adj.* double, false, D. 25.  
 Draw, *v.* to draw, 46; *pr. pl.* Draw entice, 80.  
 Dreid, *s.* dread, 45.  
 Dremand, *pres. part.* dreaming, 182.  
 Dronkyn-lew, *adj.* drunken, D. 1. An adaptation of Lydgate's *dron lew*; Chaucer also has it.  
 Dud, *for* do it, 233 (footnote).  
 Dur, *v.* to last, endure, 134. L. *durare*.  
 Dyetary, *a* dietary, D. 80.  
 Estir, *prep.* after, *i.e.*, according to 68; *adv.* afterward, 212.  
 Eld, *s.* old age, 248.  
 Enclynis, *pr. s.* inclines, 249.  
 Ententif, *adj.* attentive, D. 45.  
 Erand, *s.* errand, 173.  
 Erar, *adv.* sooner, 47.  
 Eschewe, *v.* achieve, *i.e.*, succeed, prosper, thrive, D. 43. O. *achevir*.  
 Ewe, *s.* eve, evening, D. 41.  
 Eyn, *s. pl.* eyne, eyes; "what e see not, the heart desires not," 21. See note, p. 297.  
 Eythar, *adv.* more easily, 9. A *zad*, easy.  
 Faid, *v.* to fade, 65; *pr. s.* *tra* Fadis, causes to fade, 76.  
 Fair, *s.* behaviour, conduct, 20.  
 Fale, *v.* to fail, D. 9.  
 Fall, *pr. s. subj.* may happen, 104.  
 Fallacioun, *s.* falsehood, D. 28.  
 Fals, *adj.* false, 96.  
 Falt, *s.* fault, defect, lack, 255.  
 Farest, *adj.* fairest, 10.  
 Fawng, *s.* (perhaps an error *fawming*), 192. But the reading *fauore*, *i.e.*, favour, is to be preferred.  
 Feir, *v.* to befit, beseem, 34. A contracted form of *affair* or *effair*. See *Afferis* in Gloss. to Bruce.  
 Feir, *s.* companion, 154; *pl.* Fer companions, 160.  
 Fend, *s.* fiend, 96.  
 Fenzeit, *pp.* feigned, 20.  
 Ferme, *adj.* firm, 147.  
 Ferst luf, first love, 198.  
 Feyd, *imp. s.* feed, 78.  
 Flawm, *imp. s.* 3 *pl.* let her display 125. I suppose the line to mean: "let her not redden any flourish (*i.e.*, marks of paint) that will fade." Mr Lumby explains it to "besmear, daub over;" but gives

- no reason, and leaves the rest of the line unexplained. I suppose *flaum* is the F. *flamber*, to flame, shine, give a red light; but here used transitively.  
*Fleschly*, *adv.* carnally, D. 5.  
*Fluriss*, *s.* a flourish, 125.  
*Flying*, *s.* chiding, 117. A.S. *flitan*, to chide.  
*Forfalt*, *v.* to offend, 286. The substantive *forfalt*, an offence, occurs in Ratis Raving, l. 3295.  
*Forfet*, *v.* to forfeit, 200.  
*Forouten*, *prep.* without, 230.  
*For-thi*, *adv.* on that account, 36.  
*Fra*, *conj.* from the time that, 91.  
*Fulis*, *s. pl.* fools, 301.  
*Fusiounne*, *s.* abundance, D. 31.  
*Geglortye*, *s.* giddiness, romping; *pl.* Giglortiss, romps, 159. See *Giglet*, a romping girl, in Halliwell.  
*Ger*, *v.* to make, 127; *pr. s.* Gerris, makes, causes, 290; *pr. pl.* Gerris, make, 3.  
*Get*, *pr. pl.* provide, 265. (The nom. *thai* means *the teachers*; if these provide no instruction, nor inflict any punishment, &c.)  
*Gif*, *conj.* if, D. 16.  
*Giglortiss*, *s. pl.* romps, 159. See *Geglortye*.  
*Gredynes*, *s.* greediness, 292.  
*Greiff*, *v.* to grieve, 118.  
*Grunching*, *pres. part.* grudging, *i.e.*, murmuring, D. 15.  
*Hailsome*, *adj.* wholesome, D. 3.  
*Hald*, *imp. s. 3 p.* let her keep, 128; *pp.* Haldin, holden, considered, 3. And see *Innys*.  
*Hame-ganging*, *s.* home-going, 184.  
*Hamly*, *adj.* homely, 19.  
*Hant*, *v.* to be together, lit. to haunt, said of two persons, 87; *imp. s. 3 p.* let her haunt, 171.  
*Harmesay* (an interjectional exclamation), alas! 102. Jamieson gives two quotations, which establish the meaning. It is, however, not to be accounted for (as he suggests) by any connection with the A.S. *earn*, wretched. The first part of the word is clearly *harm*. Also spelt *harmisay*, perhaps for *harm is aye*; but this is a guess.  
*Hazardouris*, *s. pl.* gamblers, players at the game of hazard, D. 56.  
*Hear*, *adj.* higher, 48, 55.  
*Hede*, *s.* head, D. 1.  
*Heill*, *s.* health, D. 1.  
*Hew*, *s.* hue, 133.  
*Hew*, Hugh (the name of some famous physician), D. 79.  
*Honeste*, *s.* honour, 144.  
*Hyde*, *s.* skin, 128.  
*Ill likynace*, likeness of evil, suspicious circumstance, 75. The adj. *ill likly*, suspicious, occurs in l. 72.  
*Indifferent*, *adj.* impartial (men), D. 80. See the note, p. 297.  
*Innys*, *s. pl.* lodgings; *hald thar Innys*, keep at home, stay at home, 116.  
*Keking*, *s.* peeping, 208. Du. *kijken*, to peep.  
*Kennis*, *pres. s.* knows, 246.  
*Kepand*, *pres. part.* keeping, preserving, 144; *pp.* Kepynt, kept, taken care of, 223.  
*Ladry*, *s.* rabble, 86. Jamieson explains it thus, with a reference; and derives it from A.S. *leodweras*, men (!), which see in Grein. It is obviously a derivative of O.F. (and mod. F.) *ladre*, a leper, leprosy; cf. F. *ladrerie*, leprosy. Here it means a set of lepers, vile rabble. The derivation is from *Lazarus*.  
*Lak*, *s.* blame, 74, 230.  
*Lak*, *imp. s. 3 p.* let her blame, 140. Cf. Dutch *laken*, to blame.  
*Lakar*, *adj.* more deficient, worse, poorer, 56. See '*Lak*, bad, defective,' in Jamieson.  
*Lakis*, *pr. s.* fails, is lacking, D. 16.  
*Langage*, *s.* language, talk, speech, 11.  
*Lauchtir*, *s.* laughter, 15.  
*Laute*, *s.* loyalty, faithfulness, 195.  
*Lawar*, *adj.* lower, 46.  
*Lawast*, *adj.* lowest, 45.  
*Lawlynas*, *s.* lowliness, 49.  
*Layff*, *s.* the rest, 238. Scot. 'the *law*.'  
*Le*, *v.* to lie, tell lies, 164.  
*Learis*, *s. pl.* liars, D. 54.  
*Lechis*, *s. pl.* leeches, *i.e.*, physicians, D. 9.  
*Lede*, *s.* lead, 132. (Alluding to its dull hue.)  
*Lefull*, *adj.* anxious, very desirous, 219; fond, much given (to a thing), 25. (The senses here apparent are unusual. There are three words of the same form; (1) *leful* (better



- lefful*) = permissible, from A.S. *leāf*, leave; (2) *leful* (better *lefful*) = faithful; from A.S. *gelaefa*, belief; and (3) *leful* (better *lefful*) = fond, from A.S. *leof*, dear. We have here the last, and by far the scarcest, of the three.)
- Leid, person; *all leid*, everybody, 102. A.S. *leoda*, people.
- Leif, *imp. s. 3 p.* let her trust; *nacht leif*, let her not trust, 159.
- Leif, *adj.* dear; *leif set*, to set dear, *i.e.*, to incline to, 211.
- Leiff, *v.* to leave; *leiff of*, to leave off, let alone, 170.
- Leil, *adj.* loyal, 142.
- Lest, *pr. s. subj.* may please, may list, D. 74.
- Lest, *v.* to last out, hold out; *lest with*, hold out against, resist, 94. See below.
- Lestith, *pr. s.* lasts, D. 64. [Observe the Southern ending.]
- Lettis, *pr. pl.* let, allow, 267.
- Lik drawis to lik, *proverb*, 156.
- Loyf, *imp. s. 3 p.* love, 140. (In B. the reading is *love*.)
- Luft, *pp.* loved, 198.
- Lufrent, *s.* lust, 90. 201. Corrupted (for *lufreid*) from A.S. *lufreiden*, lovingness. See *Manrent* in Gloss. to Bruce.
- Lusty, *adj.* merry, lively, D. 63.
- Lychouris, *s. pl.* lechers, D. 54.
- Lyffing, *s.* living, means of support, 285.
- Ma, *adj. pl.* more, others like themselves, 240.
- Mak, *s.* the make, fashion, 126.
- Makis, *pr. pl.* make, 4.
- Malicious, *adj.* ill-tempered, spiteful, D. 12.
- Malys, *s. pl.* meals, D. 67.
- Mancir, *s.* manner, 30.
- Mastres, *s.* mistress, 245.
- Maynteme, *imp. s.* maintain, D. 60.
- Mekill, *be mekill thing*, by a great deal, 9.
- Mengill, *v.* to mingle, 86.
- Menȝhe, *s.* household, 143; Menȝe, 201. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Merk, *adj.* murky, dark, D. 42.
- Mess, *s.* mass, 204, D. 43.
- Mesurabil, *adj.* moderate, D. 20.
- Met, *s.* meat, D. 2; *pl.* Metis, D. 21.
- Misfair, *v.* to go astray, behave ill, 282.
- Modreth, *adj.* moderate, D. 75.
- Mon, *pr. pl.* must, 301. Cf. Icel. *mun*, I shall.
- Morow, *s.* morning, D. 41.
- Mowthis, *s. pl.* mouths, D. 25.
- Moy, *adj.* affected in manners; *mak our moy*, not to pretend to be too delicate, 20. See *moy*.
- Jamieson; perhaps F. *mon*, La *mollis*.
- Myss, *s.* wrong, 259. (*Do myss*: commit a fault.) *Misse* is often substantive in Middle English.
- Myster, *s.* need, poverty, D. 46.
- Mystair, 281; *pl.* Mysteris, necessities, necessitous circumstance 288. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Mystis, *s. pl.* mists, D. 42.
- Mystrast, *v.* to suspect, 93.
- Na, *conj.* than, 34, 48; nor, 118.
- Nakit, *adj.* naked, 90.
- Neidliking, *s.* neediness, poverty, 28.
- Neyd, *s.* necessity, poverty, 281.
- No, *conj.* nor, 89, 117; Na, nor, 11.
- Noyne, *s.* noon, 209.
- Nychtbour, *s.* neighbour, 241.
- Nyse, *adj.* foolishly dainty, 21.
- Obeysand, *pres. part. as adj.* obedient, 27.
- Ol, *prep.* with, D. 14.
- On neyd, of necessity, 301.
- Or, *conj.* ere, 104.
- Our, *adv.* over, *i.e.*, too, 21, 22; *ofer*, too far, 42.
- Oyss, *v.* to use, D. 10; *oyss of*, to use to, 17; *imp. s.* let her use, her employ, 117.
- Pantre, *s.* painting, 129.
- Paramour; in phr. *for paramour*, love, *i.e.*, for the sake of illicit love, 65.
- Passit, *pp.* past, 91.
- Paynteyn, *s.* painting; *paynte vatteris* = painting-waters, water for painting, 127.
- Peir, *s.* equal, peer, 4.
- Pensiff, *adj.* too thoughtful, melancholy, D. 59.
- Perist, *pp.* perished, lost, 100.
- Plesand, *pres. part. as adj.* pleasant, 97, D. 67.
- Plicht, *s.* danger, 297.
- Porteress, female porter, D. 53. See the note, p. 297.
- Potyngary, *s.* apothecary, D. 77. (poor spelling; Lydgate would have written *polecarie*.)

- Preciously, *adv.* richly, 35.  
 Presoyne, *v.* to presume, suppose, imagine, 64; *gud presum*, think well, 180.  
 Pure, *adj.* poor, 137.  
 Pwnycioune, *s.* punishment, 263; *ma pwnycioune*, inflict punishment. *See* Get.  
 Pwnys, *imp. s.* punish, 275; *pp.* Pwnyst, 50.  
 Pynit, *pp.* afflicted, tormented, 289.  
 Pyteabill, *adj.* pitiful, kind, 137..  
  
 Quha, *indef. rel.* whosoever, 26.  
 Quhich (!), *an odd form, half-way between the Southern which and the Northern quhilk*, D. 30.  
 Quhilk, *pron.* of what sort, which, 2, 3. *Cf.* Lat. *qualis*, Goth. *hwaleiks*. Used as a relative, who, 246. *See* above.  
 Quhill, *conj.* until, 100.  
 Quhit, *adj.* white, 131.  
  
 Raddour, *s.* fear, timidity, 11. *See* Radd in Gloss. to Bruce.  
 Rage, *v.* to be wanton, 85.  
 Raging, *s.* romping, 215.  
 Rede, *adj.* red, 131.  
 Reherss, *v.* to repeat, 26.  
 Reirsuppers, *s. pl.* rere-suppers, D. 50. Late suppers were so called.  
 Remew, *v.* to remove, D. 76.  
 Repreuit, *pp.* reproved, 193.  
 Repruf, *s.* reproof, 199; Repruff, 212.  
 Rescript, *s.* piece of advice, prescription, D. 78.  
 Rew, *s.* street, 114. *See* Gloss. to Bruce.  
 Rewmys, *s. pl.* realms, countries, 109.  
 Richess, *s.* riches, D. 80.  
 Ross, *s.* rose, 10.  
 Rowk, *v.* to crouch, cower down, sit down closely to others, 18. *See* *rouketh* in Chaucer, Group A, 1308; and *see* *ruken* in Stratmann.  
 Rowme, *adj.* ample, *i.e.*, open, free, 153. *Cf.* A.S. *rūm*, ample. But the reading *rownd*, *i.e.*, round, plain, open, is better.  
 Rownaris, *s. pl.* whisperers, slanderers, D. 28. A.S. *rūnian*, to whisper. *See* Rowne.  
 Rownd, *adj.* round, 41.  
 Rowne, *v.* to whisper, 18. A.S. *rūnian*.  
 Ryn at bares, to run at bars, to play at 'prison-bars,' 115. *See* the note, p. 296.  
  
 Sad, *adj.* serious, grave, D. 63.  
 Sampill, *s.* example, 241.  
 Savis, *pres. s.* saves, 226.  
 Scant, *adv.* scarcely, 62.  
 Schamfulnes, *s.* shamefastness, bashfulness, modesty, 45.  
 Schawis, *pr. s.* shews, 1.  
 Scheyne, *adj.* beautiful, 127. A.S. *scīne*, beautiful; G. *schön*.  
 Scho, *pron.* she, 1.  
 Schrewis, *s. pl.* shrews, ill-tempered women, 6.  
 Seilden, *adv.* seldom, 250.  
 Sempill, *adj.* simple, 19.  
 Serwe, *pres. s. subj.* may deserve, 199.  
 Set, *imp. s.* place, put, make it, D. 24.  
 Sew, *v.* to follow, D. 74.  
 Slanderit, *pp. as adj.* slandered, 240.  
 Slee, *adj.* sly, subtle, 96.  
 Sleuth, *s.* sloth, D. 52.  
 Slyder, *adj.* slippery, apt to fall, frail, 8. A.S. *slidor*, slippery, liable to slide.  
 Smyrking, *s.* smirking, smiling, 208.  
 Smytabill, *adj.* infectious, 227. *See* *smit*, to infect, in Jamieson.  
 Smyttit, *pp.* infected, besmirched, 239. *Cf.* Scot. *smit*, to besmut, to infect.  
 Sowp, *v.* to sup, D. 8.  
 Spair, *v.* to spare, *i.e.*, let alone, 92.  
 Speir, *v.* to ask for, 26. *See* Gloss. to Bruce.  
 Stert, *s.* a 'start,' *i.e.*, a moment, 188. Jamieson quotes "ye mauna bide a start, you must be back immediately. *In a start*, in a moment." *See* *Styrt* in Prompt. Parv.  
 Stomok, *s.* stomach, D. 72; *pl.* Stomokis, D. 70.  
 Sturt, *s.* strife, discord, 117. *Cf.* Dan. *strid*, G. *streit*, strife.  
 Sueirnas, *s.* laziness, 157. A.S. *sweær*, heavy, lazy; *cf.* G. *schwer*, heavy.  
 Suet, *adj.* sweet, 19.  
 Sufficiand, *adj.* sufficient, 285.  
 Sufficians, *s.* a sufficiency, competence, D. 14.  
 Supple, *v.* to be of service, lit. to supply, 28.  
 Supposs, *conj.* although, 93.  
 Surfatt, *s.* surfeit, D. 76; *pl.* Surfattis, D. 49.  
 Suspekitt, *pp.* suspected, suspicious, 73. *See* *suspect* in Chaucer's Clerkes Tale.  
 Syb, *adj.* near akin, 89.  
 Syn, *s.* sin, 295.  
 Syne, *adv.* afterwards, 108.

- Taknyng, *s.* token, 38.  
 Takyn, *s.* a token, 217.  
 Tane, *pp.* taken; *tane a fall*, received a fall, fallen, 302.  
 Tayt, *v.* to toy, dally, 218; *tayt nocht*, let her not toy, 215. Cf. Icel. *teita*, to gladden; *teitr*, glad, light-hearted.  
 Techis, *s. pl.* faults; *ill techis*, bad qualities, 5. See *Tache* in Halliwell.  
 Tendir, *adj.* of tender age, very young, 89.  
 Tent, *s.* attention; *tak tent*, take heed, 274.  
 Than; *nocht than*, not but that, 53.  
 Thewis, *s. pl.* good manners, 2; *ill thewis*, bad manners, 5. A.S. *þeaw*, manner, rite.  
 Thoill, *imp. s.* suffer, allow, permit, 85.  
 Thoullass, *adj.* ill-mannered, 260. Perhaps wanting in *thews* or good manners rather than 'inactive,' or 'unprofitable,' as explained by Jamieson; whatever may be the modern meaning.  
 Thirst, *s.* thirst, D. 68.  
 Thus-gat, *adv.* in this way, 66.  
 Tratlyng, *s.* tattling, prattling, 17; *pl.* Tratlyngis, tattlings, 25. "Cutland and tratland in the toun;" Ratis Raving, 3039. Cf. Swed. *tråta*, to wrangle.  
 Trew, *adj.* true, 142.  
 Trowble, *adj.* troublesome, D. 27.  
 Tyg, *v.* to touch lightly, to play at touching, 218. An allusion to the game of *tig*, wherein a *tig* means a light touch; see Jamieson.  
 Tymly, *adj.* early (lit. timely), D. 43.  
 Tynis, *pr. pl.* lose, destroy, 298.  
 Tynsale, *s.* loss, 214. See Gloss. to Bruce.  
 Tynt, *pp.* lost, 106, 306. See Gloss. to Bruce.  
 Tyss, *v.* to entice, 251. *Tice* for *entice* is still common.  
 Vallowit, *pp.* withered, faded, 132. Cf. Du. *welken*, to wither, fade.  
 Vantoune, *adj.* wanton, 159.  
 Vanvit, *s.* want of wit, folly, 150. The prefix *wan-* signifies 'lack of.'  
 Variabill, *adj.* variable, 69.  
 Vaverand, *pres. part.* going idly about, 148. See note to the line, p. 296.  
 Vaveryng, *s.* idling about, 149. See above.  
 Velth, *s.* wealth, 150; *weal*, D. 73.  
 Vengabill, *adj.* revengeful, D. 18.  
 Verkday, *s.* workday, 124; *pl.* dayis, 123.  
 Veschyn, *pp.* washen, 123.  
 Vikit, *adj.* wicked, 228.  
 Vikkidnass, *s.* wickedness, 306.  
 Vilsumnas, *s.* wilfulness, 149.  
 Viss, *adj.* wise, 250.  
 Vit, *s.* wisdom, 248.  
 Vit, *s.* blame, 269, 294. M. E. blame.  
 Vnlaute, *s.* disloyalty, unfaithful, 200.  
 Vorschip, *s.* due regard; *kep vor* pay due regard, 24.  
 Voyd, *imp. s.* avoid, D. 54.  
 Vrechit, *adj.* miserable, 287.  
 Vrechitnes, *s.* misery, 291.  
 Wantonly, *adv.* wantonly, 189.  
 Wantownas, *s.* wantonness, 150.  
 War nocht fors, lit. were not; i.e., unless force were used, 1.  
 Wary, *pr. pl.* curse, 304. *wyrgan*, to curse.  
 Wik, *adj.* wicked, 237. A.S. a wizard; *wicce*, a witch; Eng. *wikke*, wicked.  
 Wise[t], *imp. s.* visit, D. 45. Southern form is *visite*; the Northern is *vesie*, without the *t*; see note, p. 297.  
 With, *prep.* against; *be war* beware of, D. 50.  
 Withgang, *v.* lit. to go with; *gang wantonly*, go with (them) a wanton way, have commerce (them), 189. Mr Lumby explains it by "tolerate"; but sure means very much more than.  
 Wittyn, *pp.* known; *had I w* if I had but known, 101. This clamation, in the form *had I* is common in Middle English.  
 Wycis, *s. pl.* vices, 228.  
 Ydilnas, *s.* idleness, 158.  
 Ythandly, *adv.* assiduously, 136. Gloss. to Bruce.  
 Jarnys, *pr. s.* yearns after, longs, 222. See the note, p. 297.  
 Jing, *adj.* young, 244.  
 Jouthage, *s.* youth, time of youth, 257.  
 Jouthede, *s.* lit. youth-hood, youth, 98, 99.

## INDEX VII.

### NOTES ON JAMIESON'S DICTIONARY.

---

\*.\* These remarks, here reprinted for convenience, refer to the old edition of Jamieson only. Nearly all the corrections here indicated have been made in the new edition by D. Donaldson, Paisley, 1882.

---

IN the course of writing the preceding Notes and Glossarial Index to the 'Bruce,' I have, of course, constantly consulted Jamieson's admirable 'Dictionary of the Scottish Language.' In general, I have found it sufficient to consult the excellent abridgment by John Johnston, as revised and enlarged by Dr Longmuir, published at Edinburgh in 1867; but in cases of special difficulty I have of course also consulted the unabridged work. The edition I have used is the second, printed in 1840, with the Supplement dated 1825.

Whilst thus engaged I have observed a few errors in the explanations or etymologies of words occurring in the 'Bruce,' and I proceed to make a note of these below, partly for the reader's convenience, and partly because some account of them may interest those students to whom Jamieson's work is well known. It is superfluous to add my testimony to the value of so standard a work; and it will, I trust, be understood that I venture to write these notes merely for the student's use and information, and out of respect for Dr Jamieson's memory. They are not written out of any captious spirit, but because honest criticism is a token of reverence.

In the words commented upon, I follow the alphabetical order.

Wherever references seemed to be lacking, they are given in my Glossarial Index, which should be compared with the present list.

ALLRYN. There is no such word; it is a misprint for *alkyn*.

APAYN. J. has—"Apayn, *adv.* 1. reluctantly, unwillingly; sometimes distinctly *a payn*." (Barbour quoted, ix. 87-90); after which—"i.e., they will fly, however reluctantly, because all men eagerly desire life. The play upon the word *fley* gives an obscurity to the passage."

There is no play upon the word *fley* (*fle* in MS. C.). It means "flee" throughout.

Again, J. has—"Apayn, *pp.* provided, furnished." He then quotes Barbour, ix. 60-66, and gives a wild etymology from F. *appaner*, to give a younger son his portion.

The word in both passages, which occur close together, is one and the same word; and the *latter* explanation is out of the question, the etymology being not to the purpose. The *former* one is not far wrong, but requires slight modification. See this discussed in the note to ix. 64, p. 257.

ARSOUN. J. has—"Arsoun, *s.* buttocks;" with a reference to xvi. 131. I have corrected this in the Glossary, at p. 323. Jamieson was strangely misled by the sound of the former part of the word.

ASSOUERIT. Omitted in the Dictionary; the word only occurs in the Cambridge MS., which was then unknown. See Glossary, p. 324.

BELEIF. J. quotes from Bk. xiii. 544 to illustrate—"Beleif, *Beleue*, *a. v.* to deliver up;" prefacing the quotation with the remark—"It is also used as a verb neuter with the preposition *of*." He explains the line by—"i.e., gave up the castle of Stirling into the king's hands." It means nothing approaching to this, which has already been said in l. 541; but it means—"that he remained amongst the king's household," i.e., that he entered into the king's service. The reading *become* of the Camb. MS. is much plainer, and shews the sense. The etymology is not from "A.S. *belawan*, tradere," but from A.S. *belifan*, to remain. The verb to *beleue*, or *bileue*, in the sense of 'remain,' is not uncommon, and occurs in Chaucer's Squires Tale, Group F, l. 583. And this enables us to correct the following entry in the Dictionary.

"BELENE, *v. s.* [sic] to tarry, or perhaps, to recline, to rest.

—— Schir Gawayn, gayest of all,

*Belenes* with Dame Gaynour in greues so grene.

*Sir Gawayn and Sir Gal. i. 6.*

A.S. *bilened*, inhabited; *vide* Leind. Or allied to Germ *le(h)nen*, recumbere.

Nearly the whole of this is wrong, including both etymologies. The right reading is, of course, *beleues*, and the article should be corrected as follows.

"BELEUE, *v. n.* to tarry, to remain, linger. Cf. A.S. *belifan*, to remain behind; also G. *bleiben*."

The necessity for this correction is really proved by the remarks upon this word in the Supplement, where we are told that, in another MS., "the reading is *by leuys*, which obscures the sense." Instead of "obscuring the sense, it is quite right. *By-leuys* is a correct reading, the prefix being written (as usual in MSS.) apart from the verb to which it belongs.

BETANE. J. quotes from Bk. iii. 159, with the remark that "the sense of this word is very doubtful. It cannot mean *beaten*, or *taken*, for neither of these was the case. Perhaps it may refer to the narrow place in which Bruce was enclosed. A.S. *betynan*, to enclose, to shut up."

I need not say that no ingenuity can grammatically twist *betane* out of the A.S. *betynan*. I believe the sense to be "pursued"; see Glossary, p. 327.

BOVIS. J. is in some doubt about this word; the solution "fetters," which he offers, is perfectly right. He is also in doubt about the etymology, and suggests, "Teut. *boeye*, compes, pedica, vincula pedis, pl. *boeyen*; *boeye* compedire; Kilian." Here again, he has got hold of the right word, but should rather have quoted the French *buie*, a fetter, Lat. *boia*. Our *buoy*, called because chained down to one place, is really the same word as Barbour's *boy*.

BREDIS. See my Glossary, p. 329. I can find nothing like it in Jamieson's Dictionary, though it occurs in his edition of Barbour.

**BROWDYN.** Rightly explained to mean "embroidered." But, of the three etymologies suggested, all are wrong. The verb is a *strong* one, as shewn by the ending *-yn* of the past participle; and it is, accordingly, from the A.S. *bregdan*, to braid; pp. *brogden*.

**CHAR.** It is needless to repeat what Jamieson says about this word, with reference to Bruce, viii. 257. The whole is wrong, etymologies included, for the right reading is *thar*; the reading *char* being a pure invention of Pinkerton's, who misled Jamieson in this passage. It is odd that, when the word recurs at l. 300 of Book xii., it is Pinkerton, not Jamieson, who has the right reading.

**CLEUE AND LAW.** J. quotes Barbour, x. 471. The whole is a misconception. The right reading is *clene*; see note to Book x. 471, p. 262.

**CONABILL.** J. remarks that "it is certainly formed from Lat. *conor*, *conabilis*, q. what may be attempted with any prospect of success." Where he found this Latin adjective with so remarkable a meaning he does not tell us. See this set right in my Glossary.

**ENCHAU SYT.** In Book ii. 395 (called Book ii. 201 in Jamieson's edition) the word *enchausyt* occurs. In the brief Glossary printed at the end of 'Wallace' is the entry—"Enchausyt, pursued." Probably Jamieson found out that this was wrong, as he omits all reference to it in his Dictionary. The right reading is *enchausfyt*, i.e., chafed, made angry.

**ENDFUNDEYNG.** See Bruce, xx. 75. J. spells the word with an inserted *d* after the first *n*, but rightly says that the *d* is not in the MS., which reads *enfundeyng*. His connection of the word with "Su. G. *and-faadd*, cui spiritus preclusus est, ut solet asthmaticis" is very desperate. It is not likely to gain credit, nor can it be built upon for shewing that the *d* is a part of the word. See *Fundying* in my Glossary; also *Mortfundying* in Jamieson.

**ENKERLY.** J. explains this by—"1. Inwardly," with reference to Bruce, ii. 138, and by "2. Ardently, keenly," with reference to x. 534. He accepts Ruddiman's etymology from the F. *en cœur*, in the heart! The word is little more than an expletive, and is certainly not French. See my Glossary.

**FAYNDING.** Referring to Bruce, iii. 289, J. says—"This cannot signify trial, endeavour. . . . Can it mean defection, flinching, or turning aside, A.S. *fundung*, recessus, recessus? Or perhaps shifting, guile, Su. G. *fund*, Belg. *vond*, dolus, technæ?" This is but all-round guessing, and by no means satisfactory. Literally, it means 'a tempting of Providence,' from the A.S. *fandian*, to tempt. And this sense suits the context very well. See quotation in my Glossary.

**FAYNTICE** (printed *Faintice* in the Dictionary). This J. interprets by "dissembling, hypocrisy;" and refers to Bruce, iii. 288. The meaning is very different, viz. faintness, cowardice, failing of spirit, a feeling akin to swooning. This is clear from the passage in *Piers Plowman* to which I have referred in my Glossary.

**FORBEFT.** See my Glossary; the better sense is "utterly baffled," or "forced to retreat."

**FORDID.** See *Fordid* in my Glossary, and see *Sordid* below.

**FRONTLY.** See *Frontly* in my Glossary, and see *Stoutlynys* below.

**FUNDYING.** See *Fundying* in my Glossary, and see *Endfundeyng* above.

**GYRD** (spelt *Gird* in the Dictionary). Jamieson enters "*Gird*, v. a." correctly; next he enters "*Gird*, v. n." with a reference to Bruce, ii. 417, and with the

explanation "to move with expedition and force." It means rather "struck about him," or "striking right and left." See the explanations given in Jamieson under the verb active.

LEFFYT. See *Leffyt* in my Glossary; misprinted *Lessyt* in Jamieson's edition, and omitted in the Dictionary.

LOMPNYT. The unsatisfactory speculations concerning this word must be disregarded. The better reading is *lounyt*, as in the Cambridge MS.

LOVERY, LUFRAY. (See *Lufre* in my Glossary.) These words have no connection with *love*, as Jamieson imagines. Nor do they quite mean "boon" which does not suit the former passage quoted from Dunbar. The word *lovery* is due to a scribal error for *leverè*, i.e., livery, delivery, allowance; and the scribe had once made this mistake, he proceeded to alter the word further into the form *lufray*. The etymology is from the F. *livrer*, to deliver.

MOWENCE. The word means 'mutation,' from O.F. *muance*, mutation, change. Jamieson's explanations of 'motion,' or 'dependance,' are wrong together with the etymology from F. "*mouvance*, motion." He does not say where he found this unusual French form, which should rather be *muance*. *Muance* is given in Burguy, s.v. *muer*.

NOTHIR. A misprint for *noy* in Jamieson's edition, vi. 666. *Noy* is not explained in the Dictionary.

PANTENER. So in the Dictionary. Read *pautener*. The explanation, however, is quite right.

PUNDELAYN. This cannot be *pantaloon*.

QUHYTYSS. The word is wrong, with all the explanations; read *quhytyss* which see in my Glossary.

REUK. Read *renk*; see my note on the line, ii. 365, p. 234.

SARIOULLY. The Edinb. MS. has *sariely*, v. 5; as J. notes. The reading "meraly" in C. is much better. See *Sarraly* in my Glossary. Perhaps the sense may rather be 'in full chorus,' lit. thickly, closely, serriedly; if the reading in E. is to be explained at all. See the other passages referred to.

SKOWURAND. There should be no such entry; read *skounrand*, i.e., *skunning*, the frequentative form of *shunning*. The word is rightly printed in the edition, but wrong in the Dictionary.

SLALK. So printed in Wallace, v. 656, and in the Dictionary. It should have been printed *slakk*, and it means 'to slacken.' See this explained in my Glossary, s.v. *Valk*.

SORDID. A misprint for *fordid*. Jamieson himself prints *fordid* in a passage. See *Sordid*, *Fordid* in my Glossary.

STOUTLYNYS. A strange misreading; it is not in the Edinb. MS. asserted. That MS. reads *frontlynys*; and the word *stoutlynys* must be struck out.

SYVEWARM, SYVEWARIN. Must be struck out. Read *fyswarin* Fitzwarren.

TAILE. This awkward word (xviii. 238) is best got rid of. The reading *thought all hale*, found in MS. C. as well as in the editions, is much the best.

THURCH. Must be struck out, there being no such word. The Edinb. MS. may be read *thurth*, an obvious error for *thurt*, which see in my Glossary.

TORN BUT. Cannot mean "turn about"; see note to ii. 437, p. 235.

# INDEX VII.—NOTES ON JAMIESON'S DICTIONARY. 431

TYRE. Must be struck out. The reading in E. is *cyre*, *i.e.*, leather; F. *cuir*. See note to xii. 22, p. 265.

VRE. Jamieson does not give the right derivation of O.F. *eur*. It is neither from Lat. *hora* nor from Icel. *urd*, but from Lat. *augurium*.

WANDYS. Explained by "*v. n.* to feel the impression of fear." And J. connects it with A.S. *wandian*, to fear. The word is French, as shown by the ending *-st* of the past tense; it means 'to retreat'; and it is connected with O.H.G. *wentjan*, cognate with E. *wend*.

WANE. One explanation given is "*s.* manner, fashion," with references to xvi. 454, and xvii. 249. It means nothing of the kind, but is the same as the word *wayn*, which J. correctly explains by "plenty, or abundance." In the first passage, the sense is—"in so great abundance," *i.e.*, so plentifully. In the second, "in very great abundance." The word occurs in the older version of Chevy Chase, l. 74. See *Will* below.

WARISON. The explanation is not very satisfactory. See the word in my Glossary.

WILL. Under this word, J. has "*will of wane*, at a loss for a habitation." It means something different, viz., at a loss for an opinion, *i.e.*, not knowing what to do. J. himself rightly explains *wane* to mean "opinion" in Wallace, x. 20. *Wane* is here the A.S. *wēn*, opinion, lit. a weening; it is not the same as the *Wane* above.

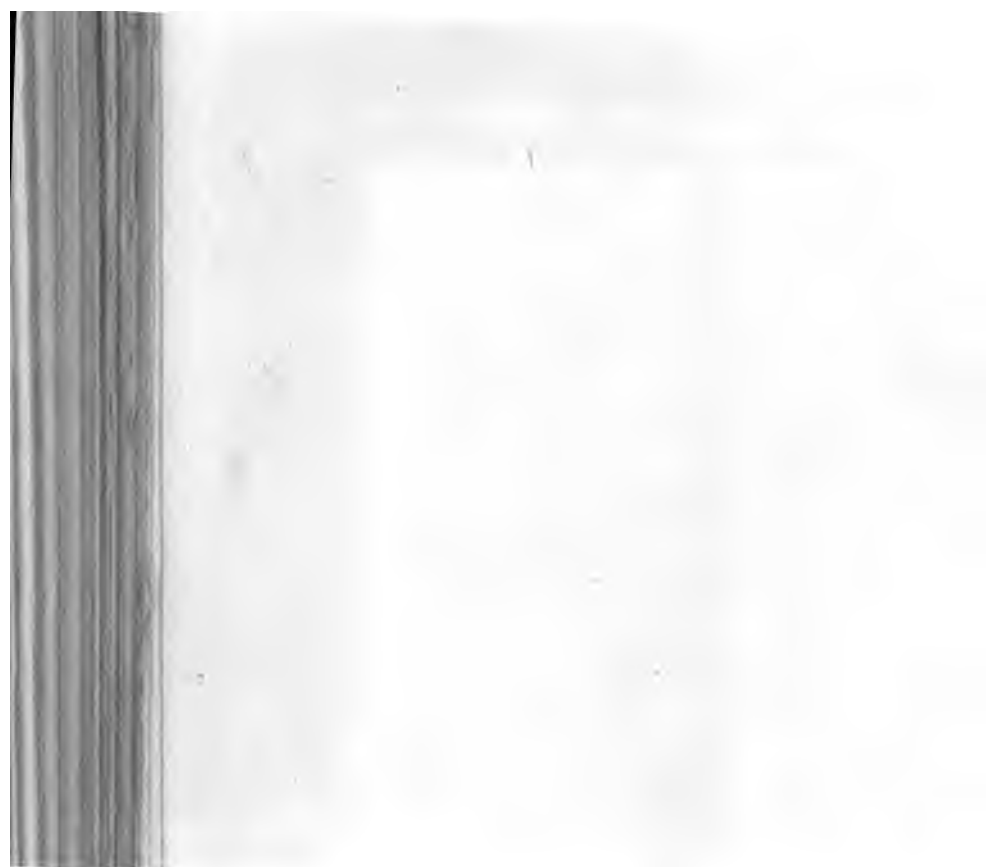
YAR. Not in the Dictionary, and rightly omitted. It is a misprint for *thar*.

THE END.

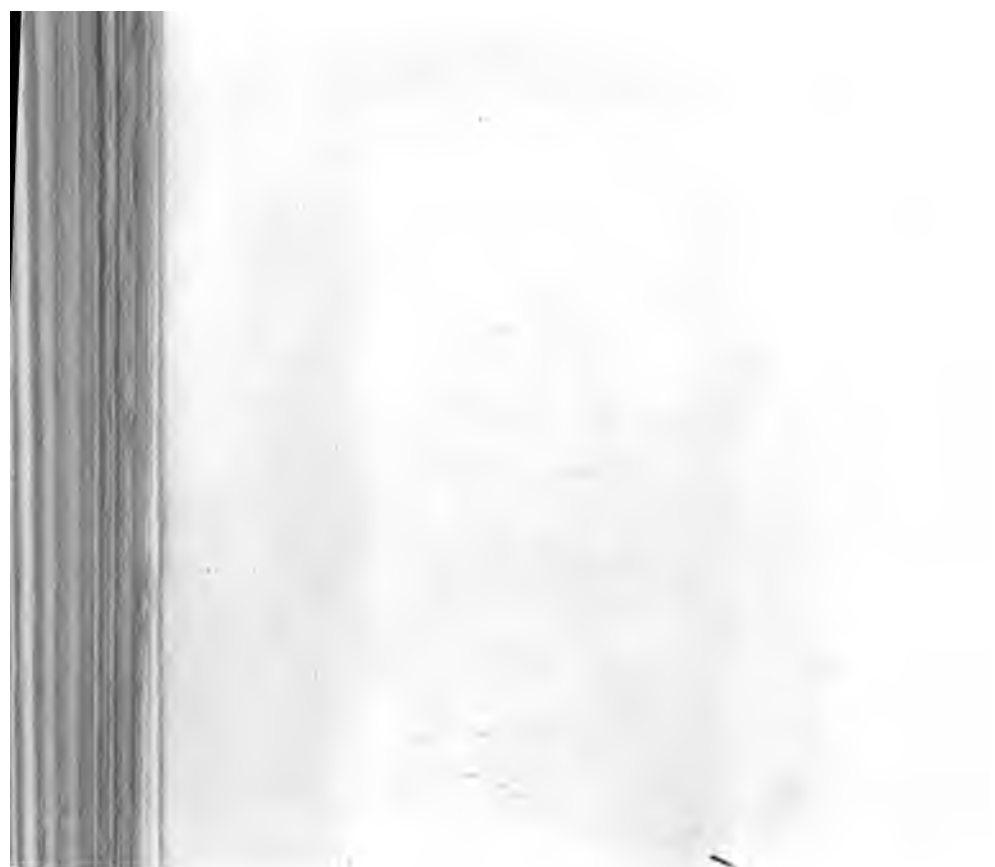














OCT 15 '88

MAY 20 '82

**Stanford University Library**  
**Stanford, California**

In order that others may use this book, please  
return it as soon as possible, but not later than  
the date due.



PRINTED IN U.S.A.

